





# MY DISCIPLE DIED YET AGAIN

BOOK 04

*Yóu Qián*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# My Disciple Died Yet Again

(我家徒弟又挂了)

by

**Mrs. Ago**

(Yóu Qián)

(尤前)

# Synopsis

---

The Revered Master, Yu Yan, known as the number one in the cultivation world, waited for sixteen thousand years, and finally took in a disciple. He taught her carefully, and took care of her diligently.

He watched her slowly grew stronger as she comprehended the laws, and just as she was about to soar into prominence... she died!

Hence, he once again took in another disciple, carefully taught her, diligently took care of her, and then... she died again!

Thus, he took in another disciple, and not long after... she still died!

Yu Yan: ...

Disciple: ...

(Why do I always get picked up by the same person every time I reincarnate? Haaaa... )

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Scrya @ [Scrya Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: Please Give a Proper Croak

---

Zhu Yao hesitated for a moment. She then instructed little tyrant and Little Eighth to wait for her outside, before entering that extravagant palace. Along the way, she stepped on several flowers, and when she finally closed in, she realized that the palace seemed to be constructed with gold. The moment the sun shone on it, that dazzling light...

Even Zhu Yao wished she could wear sunglasses right now!

Her master was right. There really wasn't any other formation placed here, and she was actually able to walk over smoothly without any obstructions. When she was finally left with about two hundred meters from the palace, she saw that huge dazzling golden door suddenly open with a loud boom.

With a flash of red light, something seemed to have rolled out, and it stopped right beneath her feet. Zhu Yao was dumbfounded...

It was actually a red carpet!

Was some sort of award ceremony being held right now?

Zhu Yao hesitated for a moment. Gritting her teeth, she decided to walk on that red carpet. After halfway through, a human figure suddenly appeared on the other side of the golden door. Could it be a prince...? I have a boyfriend, hey!

That person had white skin and beautiful complexion, his lips were glossy red with perfectly white teeth. His black hair was neatly tied in a bun above his head, and he had considerably handsome features... if only he wasn't dressed in golden robes, golden pants, and golden shoes.

Zhu Yao simply felt the words 'Prince Charming' shatter in an instant, revealing the words 'Nouveau Riche' behind them. If he had rows of golden teeth, then it would have been perfect.

That person seemed to be in a little rush, as he had a very

agitated look. In an instant, he had already arrived in front of Zhu Yao. Before she could even react, he had already pulled onto her hand, looking at her with sparkling eyes. “Miss, are you married? Do you want to marry me? Give birth to my son, please?”

“...” Were lunatic bosses trending right now!?

“Don’t worry, I can give birth in your stead, too!” He changed his words. “Why don’t we first...”

Before he could even finish, a ray of white light suddenly shot out from Zhu Yao’s chest, instantly deflecting him away. With a bang, he smashed back onto the gigantic golden door, shattering the door into smithereens. A white figure appeared in front of Zhu Yao, chilling aura emitted from his body. Even the surrounding flowers seemed to be closing their petals from the chill.

“ㄥ|`O'|ㄣ Ou~” A furious roar resounded from the destroyed door. Green light suddenly flashed, and with a loud boom, what appeared in front of the palace was a humongous, golden, winged... frog!

“...” Zhu Yao suddenly understood why the palace was golden.

That frog first roared furiously at Yu Yan, then its eyes shifted towards Zhu Yao at the back. In an instant, its little wings trembled as if they were electrified, and with a tilted head, it called out. “Meow~”

“.....”

“...”

Meow, your sister! You’re a freaking frog, please croak properly, hey!

The chilling aura emitted from Yu Yan’s body grew heavier. With a twist of his hand, explosive thunder began to resound in the sky. Bolts of lightning mixed with red and purple came crashing down in a wide area. The frog was still rather arrogant in the beginning, but in the next instant, it had already turned into a stir-fried frog

from the zaps. After its front was completely fried from the lightning bolts, its back was next, and after its back was completely zapped, its front was next to be zapped again. It was truly heated in an even manner, and the fragrance of its meat suffused in the air. Even the dazzling golden palace behind it was struck by the numerous heavenly lightning bolts, turning into smithereens. Zhu Yao's eyes instantly felt a little more comfortable.

Zhu Yao weakly took a step back, and another step back...

What happened to master? So terrifying!

These heavenly bolts which could be comparable to ascension tribulation lightning bolts, continued to pour for an entire hour. When the lightning clouds finally scattered and the sky regained its clarity, the fairy realm earlier had already completely turned into a scorched earth. A certain frog... was already seventy percent burnt.

Her master's frown finally loosened a little. A mere demonic beast dared to think of having his disciple!

He turned to look at his own disciple.

"Hi~~ Master." Zhu Yao greeted him from several tens of meters away.

His loosened brows earlier once again furrowed. "Come over here!"

"Master, you're done zapping?" Then can you scatter that chilling aura as well?

Yu Yan's expression sank, extremely unhappy at her unwillingness to move. With a wave of his hand, Zhu Yao simply felt a force of energy assaulting her, as her body uncontrollably flew towards her master. She directly landed right onto his chest which was still emitting out a thick chilling aura.

"Yu Yao..."



“Mn?”

“You’re not allowed to give birth to children for others.”

“Eh!?”

“You’re my disciple. If you want to bear a child... You can only bear your master’s child.”

“Uh...” Was her master jealous?

Seeing that she was taking a long time to answer, a certain master grew unhappy as he tightened his arms. “This is your master’s order! Do you hear me?”

“I heard you, I heard you! If I want to bear a child, I will definitely, only bear yours! We will bear one tonight!” So, please protect my waist well, alright? Any tighter and it’s going to break.

---

“Speak, is the Soul Summoning Banner in your hands!?” Zhu Yao stepped on the seventy percent burnt frog, the aura of a queen exploded forth.

“Meow~~” The frog returned to making that same cry. It did not look like it was in pain, as though it was saying: Ahh~! It feels so good~

This perverted beast!

At that moment, Zhu Yao felt like burning it a little while more, to eighty percent, ninety percent, hundred percent...

With a thunderous boom, a heavenly lightning bolt landed on the ground not far from it. Yu Yan coldly glanced at it.

The frog instantly trembled.

“Owuu.” Only then did it weakly return to its human form. It pitifully glanced at Zhu Yao. “This beastie doesn’t know about any Soul Beckoning Banners.”

“You’re lying. While we’re venturing here, only your place

contains the presence of yin energy.” There were still remnants of ghostly aura on its body as well. “The Soul Beckoning Banner is definitely on you.”

“On me...” The beastie was startled. It then began to throwing out stuffs. Golden rings, golden necklaces, golden bracelets, golden utensils... Everything that were golden instantly piled up on the ground. “Do you want them?”

“...” She was witnessing a tycoon, a live one!

“Not these? I still have others!” He then buried his head again as he continued to pull out stuff after stuff. The golden things on the ground grew in number, and faintly, they could soon blind the eyes of others once more.

“Enough, enough...” Stop reminding her how poor she was. Zhu Yao hurriedly stopped its gold rummaging actions. “I’m looking for something similar to a flag.” She roughly explained the looks of the Soul Beckoning Banner.

The eyes of the frog instantly shone. “Oh, you’re talking about this!” He pulled out a yellow scroll from its robe, and after shaking it a little, a golden flag revealed itself. A large word “soul” was written on it in runic symbols. Though it was golden in colour, yin energy was encircling it. At least several hundreds of ghosts were captured in it.

“And you still denied it earlier!?” Zhu Yao glared at it. “What’s with the ghosts within it, huh?”

“But... I picked this up!” The frog said with an innocent look.

“...” Could something like this be picked up so randomly?

The frog however explained in a self-serving manner. “While I was strolling in the forest back then, I encountered two human practitioners. Then... they died.”

“...” What did it mean by they died? “Did you kill them?”

It shook its head strongly. “Human practitioners stink, I don’t like to eat them at all! Little sister crane smells nicer, and it even comes over to the pool I materialized every day for a bath. Those pure white feathers, slender body, and...”

“Hey!” Just what kind of image are you imagining? You’re even beginning to drool! Though you’re a frog, there’s no need to think about a crane this dedicatedly, right?

“Cough cough... I’m sorry, let me continue.” He straightened his face. Sizing Zhu Yao up, his eyes began to wander off again. “But... beauty, you’re naturally more fragrant than little sister crane. Why don’t you come bathe in my pool as well!?”

A loud thunder boomed...

Eighty percent burnt!

“I was wrong!”

“Continue.”

“I saw that male human practitioner stab that female human practitioner. Then, that female human practitioner took over that male human practitioner. After that, the female human practitioner that turned into the male human practitioner was scared off by me.” The frog waved the golden flag in its hands after saying that. “I saw that this flag suited me a lot, so I took it back here after thinking it would be a waste to throw it.”

Though Zhu Yao was a little giddy from the chain of male and female human practitioners he used to describe the two, she somehow understood the gist of it. It seemed like it was the usual kill-and-loot ruckus. However, in order to take over others, that person should have the cultivation level of Nascent Soul at least. What the frog saw was most likely a Nascent Soul practitioner. Zhu Yao carefully inspected that Soul Beckoning Banner. Though there was a thick amount of yin energy on it, it was still glowing gold. This proved that the banner had yet to be dyed in evil energy

and had yet to take someone's life. Furthermore, the yin energy within was calm, with very few traces of violent aura. Most likely, a Ghost King had yet to be born.

“frog, there are several hundreds of ghosts inside this Soul Beckoning Banner. Their souls will scatter if they do not return to the Netherworld within three days, so I have to take this banner away.”

“Alright!” Not only did the frog not object to it, it even excitedly pointed at the pile of golden objects next to it. “Do you want anything else? I still have many, many things here? If they don't meet your standards, why don't I give myself to you? Free of charge.”

“Scram!”

“Ou.”

“Seventh elder sister, what happened?” Seeing that she hadn't returned after a long time, Little Eighth and little tyrant could not help but come over as well. “Did you find those ghosts?”

The frog was startled. It looked at the red feathered little bird on little tyrant's head, and its eyes instantly shone. It sprinted right towards the front of little tyrant like the wind, and stared at Little Eighth with blinking eyes. “This lady, how old are you? Are you engaged? Why don't you marry me? I have money...”

“...” Little Eighth was stunned. It wiggled up to a standing posture, opened its mouth, and spat out a huge ball of fire, instantly burning that frog back into its original form. “I'm male!”

Ninety percent burnt!

The stomach of the giant frog convulsed a little, its face twitching. That abused expression of his, looked as though what he had just experienced was not torture, but a reward.

Ah~ I really want to be a hundred percent burnt...

---

The frog was the lord of Peaceful Spiritual Forest, a tenth rank demonic beast, and single! Usually, it had a great personality. Other than sneaking peeks at the bathing crane and gathering golden items, it did not have any other special hobbies. Unfortunately, it had been single for several thousand years, yet it still had not been able to find a female beast that would be willing to be with it. It was very sad. Even after reaching the cultivation level needed to ascend, it was still unwilling to head up to the Higher Realm. No matter what, he wanted to get a girl before going into the Higher Realm.

This thus continued for more than a few thousand years, and it still remained as the same “golden” single frog. The life he had every day was extremely boring, until one day, he encountered the goddess (Zhu Yao), the god (Little Eighth), and the death god (Yu Yan) of his life. Thus, he changed and became a guard frog.

The goddess said. “Frog, I see that the spiritual energy over at your place here is very rich, a place where the five types of spiritual veins in Peaceful Spiritual Forest gather at. It’s very suitable for nurturing my disciple. Why don’t you lend it to me for a while?”

Frog: “Okay! Okay! Okay!” ~(~ ▽ ~)~

The god said. “Why are you so ugly? You don’t even have feathers. Stop going about naked in front of my eyes.”

Frog: “Okay. Okay. Okay.” (? \_ ?)

The death god said. “Scram!”

Frog: “Okay... Okay... Okay...” ㄗㄗㄗ

Thus, the place which the frog painstakingly set up for several thousand years, had its owner swapped so easily. It hopped back into the forest in tears, and could only look at the gods and goddess from afar. In order to relieve the sadness in its heart, it had

decided to snatch away the territories of the ninth rank beasties!

## Chapter 302: A Radish in a Single Hole

---

After finding out that this place was a spiritual pulse, Zhu Yao immediately decided to stay here. The frog's house which could destroy the scenic view of the place, had already been smashed into a pile of golden smithereens. Though a few spots were burnt here and there, it was still a place with a considerably wonderful scenery.

Thus, a certain master, with his especially good tastes, constructed a few straw cottages! After Zhu Yao instructed the little tyrant to tidy up the place, the sky was already dark. Only then did she pull out the Soul Beckoning Banner. After casting a few arts, the Soul Beckoning Banner instantly emitted out a golden light. White illusory figures floated out one after another, numbering several hundreds.

Those ghosts all had confused looks on their faces, as though they had no clue where they were. They blankly floated in the air.

One of the ghosts suddenly shouted. "Look, a person's over there!"

In an instant, as though something was broken, several hundreds of green lights came looking in her direction. The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched.

"It's really a person, and she's alive!"

"This is great, I found a person. Time to scare her, time to scare her!"

Among the several hundreds of ghosts, some took down their heads, some pulled out their bones, while some light up ghastly flames. The place was bustling, as they excitedly made the preparations to scare her.

Zhu Yao's expression back then was like this: o( ͡ ͜ ͡ )o

Sighing, she immediately circulated her spiritual energy and

chanted the Afterlife Incantation. In an instant, a large Afterlife Formation appeared in the skies above, shining with a bright white light. The formation immediately sent the bunch of ready-made ghosts back to the Gate to the Netherworld.

The only one who remained was a male ghost with his limbs scattered all over.

The male ghost glanced left and right. Though he did not understand why his little companions had gone missing, he still professionally continued set up balls of ghastly flames, and floated over with his legs, head, and body separately. In an ominous tone, he said. “Little miss, I’m a ghost... Are you afraid?”

Zhu Yao’s face darkened. “Chen Zhen!”

“Eh!? You know me?” He was startled.

“You don’t remember me?”

“You...” He circled around her. Suddenly, his eyes shone, and he excitedly said. “Huo Yuanjia! It’s actually you? You have actually reincarnated, and this quickly as well?”

“Uh... Right!” She could only nod to that question.

“It’s really you!” With a poof, he extinguished the two balls of ghastly flames, and sighed. “Nevermind. Seeing that we know each other, I won’t scare you. Let me tell you this, I’m really incredible at scaring people now!”

“...”

“Oh right, didn’t you become a ghost officer?” Chen Zhen said with slight disappointment. “Why did you go ahead and reincarnate? Being a ghost officer is great, you know? It’s a job with an incredible future ahead of it!”

What future?

Whatever! “Chen Zhen, your soul has been scattered apart by the Soul Beckoning Banner. Let me help you reattach them?”



“Don’t want to!” She never expected that Chen Zhen would reject is so strongly, as he instantly leapt a few steps back. “I managed to turn into several pieces after so long, if I were to reattach my parts, my scaring prospects would reduce. I look rather handsome like this, you know?”

Alright, it seemed like she was being bothersome. She had even kept him back here on purpose.

Since he was unwilling, Zhu Yao did not force it upon him either. In any case, as long as he were to return to the Netherworld, his scattered souls would naturally reattach themselves. Thus, she chatted with a little more, before sending him back to the Netherworld with the Afterlife Incantation.

Chen Zhen waved his hands at her while flying towards that Afterlife Formation. He even occasionally rubbed off the little beads of tears at the corners of his eyes, looking really sad and everything. Mn, if he wasn’t crying tears of blood, it would have been even more touching.

“Huo Yuanjia, remember to come see me often.”

“...” Who would go to the Netherworld to see you!?

---

Zhu Yao wondered just what that frog had buried underground, as the flowers above this spiritual pulse grew especially quickly. In but a single night, the land that was once burnt, had turned back into a sea of flowers.

Probably because her words from back then had incited him, little tyrant became even more diligent in his cultivation. He was already meditating in the early hours of the morning. In just two days, he rose from the first level to the third level of Essence.

“Not bad, little tyrant.” A good teacher would never refrain from praising his or her students. “You’re already at the third level. It seems like you can return to your former cultivation level really soon.”

Little tyrant smiled as he scratched his head. “That’s but the first three levels of Essence. I had experience before, so it’s natural for me to spend less time cultivating in them. However... Penta spirit veins require five types of spiritual energy. It’s really time-consuming to guide in one of them at a time. I’m afraid after the third level, it will be...”

“Guide in one at a time?” Zhu Yao grasped onto this key phrase. “What do you mean?”

“Grandma, I’ve got the penta spirit veins.” Little Bai’s expression sank. “Spiritual energy can’t be guided in while mixed. When I had duo spirit veins back then, I merely had to take in one type of spiritual energy, and then another type, in order to make a breakthrough in my cultivation. Now that I have penta spirit veins, a longer time is naturally needed.”

“Wait a minute.” Zhu Yao frowned, as she realized a key problem. “You’re saying, you can only take in one type of spiritual energy at a time, and only after one type has reached its critical point, will you then guide in another type. Only after five types of spiritual energy are filled, can you then finally make a breakthrough?”

“That’s right?”

“Right, my ass! Who told you that?”

“The cultivation method has always been like this though!?” Little Bai was confused. “Strange... Is it wrong?”

“Wrong, of course it’s wrong!” Zhu Yao had always wondered why various sects revered the heavenly spirit vein holders. In the beginning, she had thought that it was because of the amount of spiritual energy needed. Indeed, penta spirit veins would require more spiritual energy than the heavenly spirit vein, so she had never pondered deeply about it. Now that she thought about it, this difference wouldn’t influence one’s cultivation speed. She possessed many different types of spirit veins with her various

avatars, and though her cultivation speed was indeed faster when she had the lightning spirit vein, when she possessed the penta spirit veins or even the harmony spirit veins, her cultivation speeds did not drop that much though? Of course, putting aside her death-seeking actions of starting spiritual energy storms to rapidly raise her cultivation, even with her regular speed, it was not that much slower either.

But, within the cultivation world, why did disciples with penta spirit veins find it hard to establish their Foundations in their entire lifetimes, while those with heavenly spirit veins could do it in at most thirty years, and at the earliest, in ten odd years? The difference here was a little too huge.

Now that she heard little tyrant's explanation, she suddenly realized that this was most likely unrelated to the amount of spiritual energy needed. Rather, it's the difference in the paths of cultivation.

"Little tyrant, why do you have to take them in one at a time, and not take all five types of spiritual energy at the same time?"

"Eh? Is that possible?" He was stunned.

"How is it impossible?" That's how she did it all the time!

"But..." Little tyrant frowned "The spiritual energy in the air is mixed, and the five types of spiritual energy are in conflict with one another. Not to mention there are the three mutated spiritual energy – wind, lightning and ice, to consider as well. If I don't have the corresponding spiritual energy, I will definitely die from taking in spiritual energy that isn't compatible with me."

What he said was true as well, as little tyrant did not have the harmony spirit veins. "Then what if you only have to take in five types of spiritual energy at the same time? Use the method you're using to take in spiritual energy, but just exclude the three mutated spiritual energy!"

Little tyrant's eyes instantly shone, excitement filled his face. "Grandma, you're saying... If I take in five types of spiritual energy together at the same time, my cultivation speed will be..."

"The same as someone who has the heavenly spirit vein."

If a spirit vein is compared to the path towards the Dao, then the heavenly vein was a single driving lane, while the penta spirit veins were five driving lanes. While both followed the same traffic rules, the only difference was the amount of traffic. The driving speed of the vehicles should not be affected at all.

Bai Zhiyuan blanked for a moment, light of hope filled his face. A moment later, he suppressed the excitement in the depths of his heart, took in a few breaths, and said. "Grandma, let me try!"

"Mn!" Zhu Yao nodded, as she then sat down at the side to watch over him.

Bai Zhiyuan meditated for two entire days since then, and when the surrounding flowers had bloomed twice, he finally slowly opened his eyes. However, there wasn't the slightest bit of increase in his spiritual energy, as he shook his head in slight disappointment. "Grandma, Little Bai... can't do it. Distinguishing one type of spiritual energy is already depleting all of my concentration. I really can't... sense five types of spiritual energy at once." Let alone taking them into his body. "I can't distinguish them."

Can't distinguish them? Zhu Yao was startled. That can't be?

"Aren't the colours of spiritual energy different?" Little tyrant couldn't be colour blind, right?

"Colours?" He was startled. "What colours?"

"The colours of spiritual energy!" Zhu Yao grasped the air, and pointed at the center of her palm. "Look carefully, this green one here is wood spiritual energy, the golden one here is metal spiritual energy. Water spiritual energy is blue, the yellow one is

earth spiritual energy, and the fire spiritual energy is the same red as Little Eighth's feathers. And then this pointiest one that carries a tail and likes to tangle around my fingers is lightning spiritual energy."

Little Bai opened his eyes wide, his face looked completely blanked.

"Grandma..."

"Mn?"

"I don't see anything at all." There was clearly nothing in her hand.

"..."

---

Zhu Yao felt that something was really amiss, very amiss. The spiritual energy in this world was clearly floating everywhere like air. As long as she focused, she would be able to see them. She had thought that this was a necessary basic skill that everyone should have in order to take in spiritual energy into their bodies. She had believed that even as Essence disciple would be able to see them.

However, little tyrant was telling her that he didn't know what colours spiritual energy had. He had even never heard that spiritual energy had colours.

Could it be that the various colours of spiritual energy that was fluttering in the air, were something only she could see!?

This wasn't logical!

Thus, she spoke of this problem to the cultivation professional – her master.

The answer she received was actually the same as little tyrant's, her master was not aware that spiritual energy had their own respective colours either.

"But master, when you taught me how to take in spiritual energy into my body, you spoke of sensing spiritual energy. Didn't you

mean seeing the colours of spiritual energy?”

Yu Yan nodded. “Do you still remember how I guided lightning spiritual energy into your body and circulate them in a single revolution around your body?”

“I remember.”

“My goal back then was in order to have you familiarize yourself with the aura of lightning spiritual energy, so you could guide the same spiritual energy into your body.” He explained. “What is meant by sensing spiritual energy, is but a type of senses. I have never heard of spiritual energy possessing their own shapes and colours as well.”

Then what was she seeing? A colour palette?

“Master, don’t move!” Zhu Yao stuffed her head towards his chest, circled around his neck, and then lowered his forehead to touch hers. Then, she used her divine sense to look into his body, only to see a bunch of white gaseous bodies.

Gah, she had forgotten that her master was a High Deity. His body naturally would not have spiritual energy, but divine energy.

Just as she was about to turn around and look for little tyrant, Yu Yan had understood her intentions and pulled her back in. With a twist of his palm, various coloured spiritual energy instantly gathered on his palm. “If you are thinking of checking if the spiritual energy in others’ bodies have colours, here.” You can touch your master’s forehead, but not others’.

# Chapter 303: Even in Death, I Must be Beautiful

---

Zhu Yao was a little suspicious. Was being able to see the colours of spiritual energy a specialized skill which Realmspirit had given her? This was why she could raise her cultivation so quickly every single time. However, with something like Realmspirit's personality, he couldn't have given her a cheat without informing her. Even something as heaven-defying as the World Favourable Impression was openly hanging above her head, let alone something like this. Not filling up her vision with screens would have already been pretty nice of him, there wasn't a reason for him not to inform her of such a setting!

Furthermore, the things Realmspirit gave her were always different for each avatar, and they would disappear along with the avatar. This was the same for World Favourable Impression as well. Though it seemed like its effect was still active, the button above her head to toggle it was indeed gone. Yet, this setting where she could see the colours of spiritual energy, had persisted till now since she officially began cultivating.

Then there was only a single possibility...

The colours had always been there, while the difference was being able to see them. Back then, she had after all spent five years before being able to see them. Since she was able to see them, then others should be able to too. This was most likely related to a person's IQ.

Zhu Yao felt that such an important cultivation method should not be wasted, as she carefully recalled the feeling she had when she first saw spiritual energy. She gave little tyrant a rough explanation, before seeking out a place where the five types of spiritual energy were the most concentrated and letting go into closed-door training.

“Little tyrant, you can try sensing the five types of spiritual energy while taking them into your body. Use your heart to feel them. I can’t guarantee that you will be able to see them like me, but I hope you won’t give up easily.”

“Mn!” He heavily nodded.

Zhu Yao stroked his head satisfyingly. “No matter the outcome, I hope that you can establish your Foundation in five years, can you do it?”

His expression sank, yet his eyes slowly turned determined. “Grandma, I will work hard!”

“Good, grandma shall await the day you’re out of closed-door training!”

Only then did Zhu Yao walk out of his cottage and place down formations in the surroundings. She blankly stared at the cottage that shrouded with spiritual energy.

Suddenly, a slightly chilly hand landed on her head, stroking her hair. “Worried?”

“Mn.” Zhu Yao turned around and closed in, her head buried in his chest. “Master... Tell me. What should I do if he won’t be able to see spiritual energy no matter what?”

Yu Yan was silent for a short while, before he reached for her waist and said in a solemn voice. “If he can’t see it, will you give up on him?”

“Of course not!” Zhu Yao raised her head. “Am I someone that irresponsible? Since I have already decided on little tyrant, naturally, I will take responsibility till the end. If he really can’t do it, then there’s really no way to solve the bug in this world. Of course, even if it’s not for the bug, I will definitely cover for little tyrant.”

“Then what’s there to worry?” He stroked her hair and asked back.



Zhu Yao was startled as she raised her head to look at her own master. The dispiritness in the depths of her heart was swept away in an instant. She tightly hugged him back, and nodded heavily. “Mn, I’m not worried. With master here, I have nothing to worry.”

When he heard this, his face which was as cold as ice, gradually loosened. He lightly raised the corners of his lips, and at that moment, it was as if spring had returned to the lands, revealing beauty that was beyond compare. “Stupid.”

A moment later...

“Master.”

“Mn?”

“When are you going to make me a monkey?”

“...”

“Ah... I really want to get pregnant.”

“Nonsensical!”

---

Little tyrant was in closed-door training, the frog was chased towards the forest to watch over the place, and her master was pulled into the room. Zhu Yao who felt relaxed all over, believed that she should do some unique exercises in this dark, windy, and lonely night, in order to progress their master and disciple relationship.

“Yu Wang, what are you?” A certain master looked at his stupid disciple’s hand which was grasping onto his waist belt, frowning disapprovingly.

Zhu Yao chuckled. “You’re already calling me ‘Desire’, so I should live up to the name. Otherwise, I would be disgracing the name, you know?” Clothes, strip, strip!

“Your master is now but a strand of divine sense.”

“I don’t mind!”

“...”

“I don’t care. You said that you wanted to make a monkey with me.” Ever since they returned from the modern era, they hadn’t been doing anything embarrassing. This was her fighting for regular welfare.

“Yu... Yao.”

“Shut up!” Zhu Yao pulled apart his outer garments. “Even if you cry your lungs out today... Ah pui, in any case, I won’t let you go! No matter who comes, it won’t happen! So why don’t you obediently obey me...”

“Seventh elder sister! Seventh elder sister! Hurry and open the door!” Suddenly, bangs resounded from the door.

Zhu Yao: “...”

Feng Xiaoba, you’re dead meat!

Zhu Yao’s fury instantly surged, her teeth grinding. Yet that stupid bird outside which could not read the situation was still knocking the door to no end. It felt as if he wouldn’t relent till the door was open. She had to take a few deep breaths before she could stop her thoughts of eating his fat and juicy meat.

She walked over with heavy steps, strongly pulled the door open, and freaked out. “Little! Eighth!”

“Seventh elder sister...” A red fur ball came charging towards her chest like a cannonball. Before Zhu Yao could even react, Little Eighth had already begun crying out loud. “Seventh elder sister... Seventh elder sister, what should I do? Wuuaaahh... I don’t want to live anymore.”

Zhu Yao’s heart sank, her fury instantly dissipated. “What happened?” She had watched him grow for such a long time, yet she had never seen him cry like this. “Don’t cry, don’t cry. Tell your seventh elder sister what’s wrong?”

When she asked, Little Eighth began to cry even sadder than earlier. “I’m going to be as ugly as seventh elder sister now, I might as well die.”

“...” Stinky brat. He was already this saddened, yet he still did not forget to step her in the foot. This thing was definitely not related to her.

“What’s wrong? Did the beasties in the forest bully you?”

“Wuu...” He shook his head.

“You fancied one of the beasties, but was rejected?”

He continued to shake his head. “I wouldn’t court a beast.”

“Your auntie’s husband came?”

He still shook his head?

“Then what’s wrong?”

He nudged a little while, before finally stopping his wails. After a while, under her concerned gaze, he weakly stretched out one of his wings and pitifully said. “Look...”

Zhu Yao curiously closed in, only to see it was entirely covered in red feathers, and nothing else. “Look at what?”

“This... This!” He anxiously used his other wing to point at it.

Zhu Yao carefully looked at it once more. “Nothing’s there at all!”

Little Eighth instantly grew anxious. “Look carefully, at the top! Top!”

“Nothing!”

Left without a choice, he strongly waved his wing and did a throwing action. What she saw next was a fluff, the size of a fingernail, fluttering down from the air. Before it even landed on the ground, Little Eighth immediately grabbed it as if it was treasure, and then carefully held it with his wings. “See that?”

“Feathers?”

“Mn.” He nodded. In an instant, dispiritedness began to surface again. “Feathers. I’m shedding feathers. Seventh elder sister... I’m actually beginning to shed feathers. Wuaah... What should I do? Becoming a ball is already pitiful enough. If I were to shed feathers as well, I will become as ugly as seventh elder sister. I don’t want to become a phoenix with naked buttocks...”

“...” She really wished to cut off ties with him!

Zhu Yao took a deep breath and managed to suppress her fist. She picked up a certain bird which was still crying, flung him out, and then closed the door with a bang.

“Scram!” Go get someone prettier as your elder sister.

In the next moment, the desperate knocking sounds resounded again.

“Seventh elder sister, seventh elder sister! Come out, seventh elder sister!”

“I’m your only little brother, seventh elder sister!”

“You can’t just toss me aside, seventh elder sister!”

“I don’t want to die ugly!”

“I promise that I won’t despise you for being ugly anymore! Please help me think of something!”

“What if people don’t acknowledge me as a Phoenix after all of my feathers are gone?”

“Seventh elder sister... Seventh elder sister...”

“Being ugly is death itself!”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips were twitching to the point where it could even break out of a certain net novel author’s computer. Only after a long while did she finally manage to suppress the impulse to kill her biological younger brother. “Scram! You’re just

freaking molting, the hell you're crying for?"

"Molting?" That certain Phoenix who had long forgotten memories of his faraway youth, was startled for a moment. After a short while, even louder knocks resounded from the door.

"Seventh elder sister, what's molting? Is it really fine for me to shed feathers right now?"

"Will they grow again? Seventh elder sister!"

"When will they grow back? Seventh elder sister!"

"Will the newly grown feathers look even more beautiful than now? Seventh elder sister!"

"Am I still the most beautiful Phoenix? Seventh elder sister!"

"Do all Phoenixes go through the same thing? Seventh elder sister!"

"Will I still be able to return to my past form? Seventh elder sister!"

"Shut up!" Are you treating me as [Zhao Zongxiang](#)? Someone who's specialized in explaining the world of animals? And a Xianxia version at that!

Only then did the knocking finally stop. Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief. When she thought that this worry-filled little brother had finally walked off, his faint voice sounded once more.

"Seventh elder sister, I can't sleep. Why don't you accompany me on a talk about feathers?"

"How do you think my new feathers will look like?"

"Will they look the same as before? But I'm not really satisfied at the sixty-fifth feather at the third row of my left wing."

"Do you think they will look better after they are regrown?"

"What if I end up growing up to look like some other Phoenixes?"

"Mn. If it happens, I want to become like second elder brother, or

third elder brother, or even fourth elder brother...”

“As long as it’s not seventh elder sister.”

The hell, don’t stop me. I’m going to pull out all of his bird feathers!

---

Ever since he found out that his feathers would regrow, and discovered that new and completely clean feathers would appear on his own wings every few days, Little Eighth had stopped worrying about shedding feathers. However, his feather shedding problem grew even worse, and the process seemed to be pretty long. In order to conceal this uglifying process, he no longer caused problems for the demonic beasts that filled Peaceful Spiritual Forest. Before this, every day, he would snatch away the spiritual herbs that demonic beasts were protecting, or burn away the treasures that belonged to them. Yet, those demonic beasts that were being harrassed all looked as though it was their honour for such acts to have occurred on them. She had to be the one feeling embarrassed in her little brother’s stead.

And so, Little Eighth made a nest...

That’s right, he knew how to make a nest. Inside it was filled with various soft spiritual herbs. That’s right, they were all snatched away from those demonic beasts as well. The nest wasn’t huge, and it was placed in the courtyard of her home. He had even added in a lid, shutting himself inside like an egg shell. He had even sworn that before his feathers were completely changed, he definitely would not disgrace himself by showing himself to others.

He wouldn’t even budge when Zhu Yao used melon seeds to lure him out, swearing that even if he were to die, he would die beautifully.

Zhao Zhongxiang (赵忠祥): He was the host of the show ‘Animal World(动物世界)’, that talks about animal wildlife.

# Chapter 304: Picking Up Beasts Everyday

---

Zhu Yao felt that the forest was a little strange recently, as there would always be demonic beasts wandering nearby. Little Eighth should have already instructed the beasties not to approach this place casually, and ordinarily, with the absolute suppression of the God race's bloodline, the demonic beasts should not actually be approaching as told. Not to mention, there's a tenth rank toad watching over the entrance!

Zhu Yao pondered for a moment, and ended up deciding to take a look. Something might have happened, after all? Little tyrant was presently at an important point of his isolation training, and she did not want her education plan to be interrupted by anyone. Thus, she instantly walked out of the sea of flowers. The moment she stepped out, the scenery behind her immediately turned into a lake.

The forest was bustling with activities. After taking a closer look, she realized that a large number of demonic beasts had actually gathered, squeezing about, and they all had high ranks as well. Most likely, because they had intentionally suppressed their voices, she could not clearly hear what they were roaring about. The toad was presently blocking the crowd of demonic beasts with its huge figure, roaring something.

“What happened?” Zhu Yao asked.

The crowd of demonic beasts instantly quietened down. Dozens of large sparkling eyes swept towards her.

Even someone like Zhu Yao was frightened by the stares.

Their eyes were filled with excitement and agitation, and a while later, they were dyed with fluster. The crowd of demonic beasts began to cause an uproar. One beast after another, be they big or small, as though they were frightened by something, began to flee in all directions.

They ran in an especially anxious manner. Some stepped on claws, some fell, and some had even crashed into large trees. A series of cries and wails resounded, and clouds of dust and sand flew about in the forest. When she regained her senses, not one beast remained in front of her.

Was she that terrifying?

“Guruguru.” Suddenly, something furry came rolling over, bumping onto her feet. When she looked down, she saw a little beastie that looked like a mix of a fox, cat, and rabbit. It had the size of a little puppy, and its fur colour was not really uniform either. It was clear that it was a young beast at first glance.

“Which one of you left your child here, hey?”

The forest, was dead silent...

“...” They could even forsake their own child. Just how afraid were they?

Zhu Yao sighed. Bending down, she picked the little demonic beast up. It was presently staring at her curiously with its pair of large, black and shiny eyes.

“Meow~” It tilted its little head, exuding incredible beastly innocence. “Meow~ Stroke... fur...”

She suddenly recalled the fat cat that she treated like it was her first love, even though it abused her over a thousand times back in her office in the modern era. In an instant, she was caught by its cuteness. She placed it on the ground, and then patted its head. After careful inspection, she realized that there were some bruises on its hind legs. Most likely, it tripped over during the rush of demonic beasts earlier. With a flip of her hand, she instantly cast a healing art on it.

She then lightly patted on its furry little head again, and then pointed at the forest. “Go home now, little fellow. Don’t come out here so casually anymore. The world of adults is very dangerous,



alright?”

“Meow~” It approached her hand, and its little head leaned against her palm. “Stroke again... Fur...”

Zhu Yao happily stroked its little head again. Haah, her World Favourable Impression sure was a timeless treasure! It seemed like there was no need for her to worry about beasties at all. Thus, with her mind at ease, she returned to the sea of flowers.

Fifteen minutes later.

Under large trees, inside the bushes, and behind the boulders, one beast head after another slowly popped out, their eyes shining bright.

“Lord’s elder sister sure is kind. I like her.”

“I like her too, I really want her to stroke my fur.”

“Me too...”

“You don’t have any fur in the first place!”

“Then I want her to pat my head.”

“I want her to smile at me.”

“I want to bear monkeys for her.”

“...”

Zhu Yao, who unintentionally raised her favourable impression once again, had no idea about this at all. However, in the sea of flowers on the second day, she picked up a ninth rank beastie whose leg was injured, and it was presently looking straight at her with large, sparkling eyes.

“Lord’s elder sister, beastie’s paws hurt...”

The hell was ‘lord’s elder sister’?

Zhu Yao sighed. Seeing that it was a die-hard fan of her little brother, she decided to help heal its injuries. Then, she let it leave.

On the third day.

She spotted another demonic beast at the exact same spot.

“Lord’s elder sister, I’m hurt as well...”

“.....”

“...”

Were they treating her as a hospital?

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. Seeing that it seemed to have worse injuries, she decided to heal it as well.

On the fourth day.

Same place. Another beast.

“Lord’s elder sister, hurry and look at my paw...”

On the fifth day.

Another beast.

“Lord’s elder sister, both of my paws hurt...”

Sixth day.

Yet another beast.

“Lord’s elder sister, my three paws...”

Eighth day.

Again, beast.

“Lord’s elder sister, my six...”

On the ninth day.

Zhu Yao cancelled her strolling activity.

A certain eight-legged demonic beast was waiting at the patch of flowers. Heheh. Which paw will lord’s elder sister heal first? So excited, what to do?

---

Zhu Yao felt that the cultivation method of differentiating

spiritual energy through colours was possible, after all, she was a living example. However, as a Game Master, her body possessed too many cheats, unlike a regular player. Though the theory was sound, she was still worried that it could not be put into actual practice.

This worry worsened as little tyrant's closed-door training continued. In a blink of an eye, little tyrant had been in closed-door training for almost a year. However, she was still unable to sense any abnormal activities within the room. Little tyrant's cultivation, though, had risen to the fourth level of Essence, but this also meant that he most likely had yet to discover the method.

Zhu Yao felt like giving up, when suddenly, she sensed abnormal movements from the surrounding spiritual energy. However, it did not come from little tyrant's direction, but from her own cottage!

She immediately sprinted in, only to see her own master leisurely standing within a pile of spiritual energy of all five types. His surroundings were glowing with colourful lights, looking especially eye-catching.

“Master...”

Yu Yan waved his hand at Zhu Yao, and then swept a glance at the surrounding bunch of spiritual energy. “Yu... Yao. You're right, the spiritual energy of this world is indeed differentiated by colours.”

Zhu Yao's heart skipped a beat. “Master, you can see them now too?”

“Mn.” Yu Yan nodded. “I had a sudden thought of verifying it, so I meditated for a short while. Then, I could see them.”

“That's great!” She stepped forward to hug him out of excitement. “Since master can see it as well, it proves that it's possible to directly take in five types of spiritual energy at the same time. People who possess the penta spirit veins can cultivate as fast

a those who possess the heavenly spirit vein, and their cultivation will immediately...”

Eh, wait a minute!

The person with penta spirit veins is little tyrant, and the one who should raise his level of cultivation is little tyrant as well, then...

What’s the use if her master could see it!? -faints-

o(´ □ `)o

Don’t be angry, don’t be angry. If master can see it, it means that little tyrant can do it as well. Recalling the events then, she spent a whole five years before being able to do so!

“Master, how long did it take you to see them?”

A certain master pondered deeply for a moment. “Four hours.”

“...” Shot in the chest!

“Master...”

“Mn?”

“Tell me honestly, you have cheats activated as well, right?”

“...”

---

Her master was able to see spiritual energy. Looking at it from a broad perspective, it was good news. It meant that the spiritual energy in this world indeed possessed colours. Furthermore, by differentiating them through their colours, it was the fastest and most convenient method to take in spiritual energy. Zhu Yao listened to her master’s experience, and then recalled her own. Then, she once again imparted these knowledge to little tyrant, as descriptively, as seriously and as thoroughly as possible. She completely reformed her teaching policy.

Since the structure was already given to him, all she could do now was wait, and see if he could apply these knowledge.

“Little tyrant, don’t be anxious, work on it slowly. Seeing spiritual energy is a very complicated matter, and you’re still young. Spending seven to eight years is understandable.” After all, I myself spent five years.

“Mn. Grandma, I will work hard.” Little tyrant obediently nodded, and continued his closed-door training.

Three years later...

“Grandma, grandma! I see them, I see many spots of light!”

Zhu Yao: “...”

One used four hours, while another spent three years. Zhu Yao of the Five Years Party suddenly felt that she had retained in the same school year twice in a row! Why did she feel so irritated?

“Grandma, what should I do next?”

“Train!”

Geniuses like you two should leave, don’t speak to a retaineer like me.

She had to admit that little tyrant was a gifted child. After truly being capable of sensing spiritual energy, his cultivation rose like a speeding rocket. Adding that he had once attained the Paragon level, he was extremely familiar with the arts at the Essence stage. After cultivating once more, there was not even a need for his meridians to expand again. In just a short one year, he returned to the cultivation level of Essence Paragon.

Zhu Yao decided to have him establish his Foundation right away.

“Little tyrant, whenever and wherever you fall, you have to lay... ah pui, you have to climb back up right there and then. Establishing Foundation isn’t terrifying, rather, the most difficult part is overcoming your fearful heart. Humans should spend more of their time looking at the future, and not dwelling within the

mistakes made in the past. Remember what you're trying to achieve at the very end."

Little tyrant was silent for a short while, and then he nodded his head. The worry in his eyes instantly scattered away. He failed once before, causing a knot to form in his heart. Without untying this knot, he would most likely be stuck here for his entire lifetime.

He spent a full five days before he walked out of the cottage. Though he looked entirely fatigued, and that there were even traces of his meridians being damaged, he did not disappoint her and was able to successfully establish his Foundation.

"Grandma." His eyes clearly carried dazzling lights that were never there before. Only today, ever since he turned even a penta spirit veins holder, did that strand of gloom hidden at the depths of his eyes finally disappear for good.

"Not bad! As expected of someone I taught." Zhu Yao stroked his head as she praised. In four years, he had already turned from a childish looking youth into a tall and sturdy young man with a manly demeanour. Now, whenever she wanted to pat on his head, she even had to tiptoe.

Little tyrant scratched his head out of embarrassment. On his slightly resolute face, he revealed a simple and honest smile. "Grandma, do I still have to continue my closed-door training and raise my cultivation?"

"There's no need to rush!" Zhu Yao shook her head. She had him establish his Foundation quickly because his mental state had already reached that level in the first place. If he were to cultivate blindly forward, and if his mental state could not keep up, it wouldn't be good either. After all, working behind closed doors was not something good. "It's time to put things into practice now."

"Practice?"

Zhu Yao signalled him to follow her, and then brought him to that “demonic beast collection point”. As expected, there was already a seventh rank beastie waiting there with its limbs injured due to some unknown reason. The beast looked like an ape, but it had six limbs. Pinching onto one flower with one paw, it was presently plucking out one petal at a time, and it was even murmuring softly.

As it pulled one petal out, it spoke.

“Lord’s elder sister will come...”

Pulling out another one, it then said.

“Lord’s elder sister will not come...”

# Chapter 305: Towards Wandering City

---

Question. What was the best method to raise one's skills?  
Answer: Practical experience!

The training method which Zhu Yao had taught of, was through actual battles. When she recalled the time she was training her sword techniques, she refined her skills through the daily abuse of her master, where even her face would swell and her nose would turn green. Now, it was little tyrant's turn. Naturally, it would only be fair if she were to beat him up till he had a greener nose and a more swollen face than her.

Then, she invited a bunch of thugs... ah pui, partners. Just who was more suitable as sparring partners than demonic beasts which had lived in the forest since they were young, and had lived their lives just for battles? After she had treated the injuries of quite a bit beasties, so she should receive some visiting fees, right? Though, a large part of their injuries came from themselves trying to cripple... themselves.

With helpers, Zhu Yao officially turned into a spectator. Every morning, she would head over to the "demonic beast collection point" and heal a beastie. Then, she would task them to be a sparring partner for little tyrant. After completing it, she would reward them by stroking their fur, before bringing the lifeless little tyrant back home.

Thus this continued on and on...

Three months later, she was rewarded with an undying little tyrant, and a crowd of loyal beastie fans.

"Grandma..." A certain youth who had already been cruelly treated by the beasties, felt like crying.

"Mn?"

"Do I really have to defeat this beastie?"



“Of course!”

“Can’t we change it with another one?”

“This is to train you, young man!”

“But, this... is a third rank Weeping Spirit Beast.”

“Don’t underestimate your enemy, young man!”

“...” This was not a problem of underestimating it, this spirit beast did not have any offensive abilities at all, alright?

“Don’t hesitate, defeat this monster! Go, all in order to save Earth! Ultraman!”

The hell is an Ultraman? Little tyrant had no choice but to take two steps forward, and then, threw a punch straight at the furball that was looking at him with watery eyes. His fist, instantly sunk into the furball.

A moment later...

“Wuaahhh...” An earth-shaking cry resounded through the skies.

This Weeping Spirit Beast was indeed a spirit beast with no offensive capabilities, it’s only unique trait was... it was great at crying! Known as the proudest demonic beast in history, it would cry if it was cold, would cry if it was hot, and would cry if it was in pain. Just offending it a little would make it cry in front of you!

Furthermore, its cry was certainly the sound of a devil to one’s ears, with its reverberations being capable of lingering for three days, no matter how cute or how frail it looked. Furthermore, it had a pure personality. Just by being slightly nice to it, it would cheekily follow after you. However, it was a beastie that neither practitioners nor demonic beasts would dare to offend the most. Without a single exception.

If other demonic beasts were hard to handle, there would still be methods to deal with them. However, the moment a Weeping Spirit Beast were to cry, its tears of sorrow would definitely be

capable of reversing the flow of a river. It would not stop till it was satisfied. Yet, it just had to possess defensive capabilities that other beasts could never have, resistant to all type of attacks.

The Weeping Spirit Beast's ultrasonic wave attack was still persisting...

Shaking the two surrounding audience.

"Grandma..." What happened to the promise of beating demonic beasts?

"Uh..." It seemed like she had gone too far this time. "Ahem... Little tyrant, I say!" Zhu Yao patted on his shoulders. Mustering a stern and heavy tone, she said. "You must understand that there always many accidents in one's lifetime. You must learn to be firm and strong. Just treat this as a test. I shall leave this Weeping Spirit Beast in your hands. Gambatte!" It was definitely not because she wanted to experience the cries of a Weeping Spirit Beast due to her utter boredom, it definitely wasn't!

After saying that, she ran out with dust clouds trailing behind her. Mn, she went back to place down noise cancellation formations.

Little tyrant: "...". He was fooled, right!? He definitely was.

Turning his head back, he glanced at the furball which had already turned red from the crying.

"Don't cry, okay?"

"Wuaahh..."

"I was wrong, alright?"

"Wuaaah..."

"I won't hit you anymore."

"Waaahhh..."

"Haah..."

The Weeping Spirit Beast's cry lasted for an entire day and night. When Zhu Yao went to check up on little tyrant again, he was already hugging onto white furball. With a face that looked like he wanted to cry to death, he was waiting at the courtyard for her.

“Eh? Little tyrant. Is this the spirit beast that you just took in? You have great taste!”

“Meow~”

A certain youth who sold his body to stop the wails of a beast: “...” Can I overthrow my master?

---

A year later.

Through the cruel acts... ah pui. Through the enthusiastic spars of the crowd of demonic beasts, little tyrant's actual combat capabilities had improved leaps and bounds. He was already capable of dealing with a fifth rank demonic beast. Though he might not be able to beat one, at the very least, protecting himself from one was no problem at all. Back then, she was once thoroughly abused by a fifth rank fox demon when she was already a Foundation Paragon practitioner, which directly resulted to her first disconnection.

It could be seen that little tyrant's comprehension abilities and IQ were really high, far surpassing hers. When she thought about it, she really felt a little... envious!

Haah, the radiance of a genius was definitely far out of her reach.

In order to calm her heart... ah pui. In order to ensure the peace of the world, Zhu Yao decided to begin her role model raising project.

“Going to Wandering City?” Little tyrant was startled. Keeping the sword in his hand, he said with a puzzled look. “Why?”

“Little tyrant, I say!” Zhu Yao began to lead him on. “You have already cultivated for so long, it's about time to check on your

results. It all boils down to this, in order to see if you're able to apply what you have learnt."

The corner of little tyrant's lips twitched, his face was cold. "Grandma, are you certain it's not because you want to head out and play?"

"Uh... Little tyrant, how can you say that about your grandma? Do I look like someone that playful?"

"Yes!"

"..." She was actually unable to refute it. As expected, the older a child was, the less cute he would become. "Nonsense, grandma is doing this for you."

"Yesterday, you were even talking about trying out the spirit fruit which Wandering City is known for."

"Uh..." Why did you remember something like that so clearly? Where did that obedient and cute little tyrant go? Why did every single disciple she raise end up having such cold faces?

"Haah!" Little tyrant let out a long sigh, and with a helpless look, he said. "Forget it, let's go then. Let me make some preparations..."

"What's there to prepare?" Zhu Yao asked on reflex.

Little tyrant stopped, and then he looked at her with a 'when will she ever learn' face. "Grandma... Do you know where Wandering City is? Do you know how many spirit stones it costs to stay a night there? Do you know much a kilogram of spirit fruits costs?"

"Uh..." She was stabbed in the chest.

"Haah... Let me prepare." Little tyrant turned around and left with a sad look.

Zhu Yao: "..."

Why did she feel like the disciple she raised was looking down on her? It was as if her forehead was plastered with the word

“Useless”!

Her position as a parent was in danger of crumbling, what to do? Emergency, I’m waiting online for an answer!

Zhu Yao pondered deeply for a moment. In the end, she found the answer. Mn, it was definitely because her master did not teach her well.

She then silently turned to look at the white-clothed figure next to her with a resentful look.

Receiving the resentful lightwaves, light swirled within a certain master’s eyes, and then, he lowered his head. Smooch! He sealed his disciple’s lips.

Alright! Her master taught her really well!

---

In the morning of the second day, without knowing where and how little tyrant managed to gather a pouch of spirit stones, he prepared all the required items needed for the trip and then informed her that they could depart.

The few people gathered at Zhu Yao’s courtyard, and little tyrant’s furball spirit beast was responsible for the headcount.

It first leapt in front of Zhu Yao and obediently called out. “Meow~”

“Good boy!” Zhu Yao stroked its head.

It then leapt in front of Little Eighth, and called out. “Looord...”

“Ou.” Little Eighth who had successfully grown out all his feathers and finally had the look of a bird, responded in a proud manner.

It then leapt in front of her master. “...” It did not dare to let out a sound.

Finally, it leapt back to its own master’s side, and looked away. “Tch~”

Little tyrant: “...”

Was this really his spirit beast? What happened to the promised contract between master and servant?

The lot of them then flew in the southern direction. After flying for an entire day, they managed to arrive at Wandering City.

Wandering City was where most wandering practitioners were gathered at, and it was also the biggest city for them. It was bustling with activities. There were rumours that the city lord was a Demigod Sovereign, and he was the only person among wandering practitioners who had managed to become a Demigod. Though his lifespan was approaching its limit, it was still because of him living here that no one dared to easily offend Wandering City. A long while after that, this city became the largest gathering site for wandering practitioners.

Over here, birthright was of no importance, only strength and abilities mattered. Wandering practitioners and regular sect disciples did not discriminate against each other. Let alone heretic practitioners, even the various clans and sects were unable to exert their influence here.

However, the reason why Wandering City was famous was not just because of this. This city was the only place where the “Scentless Fruit” could bear fruit. It was said that this fruit was formed by chaotic spiritual energy. No matter what spirit veins one possessed, after eating it, the fruit would turn into the person’s corresponding spiritual energy. Compared to spirit fruits of other types, this fruit could be eaten by anyone of all ages. Though the spiritual energy improvement it provided was not large, it was still a rare fruit that many practitioners would fight over for.

It was unfortunate that the Scentless Fruit Tree could only grow within Wandering City. Even if one tried to forcefully move it, the fruit tree was unable to survive outside the city. Thus, this fruit

became the specialty of this place.

Of course, the reason why Zhu Yao was here in Wandering City was for this fru... Ah pui, it was of course not because of this fruit.

A mere fruit was naturally unable to allow this city hold the title of number one city for wandering practitioners. What practitioners are truly excited about, was the Great Wandering Practitioners' Tournament held here once every ten years.

That's right. The various sects had their sect tournaments, while wandering practitioners had their own tournaments as well.

Similarly, they were split into three groups – Essence, Foundation, and Azoth. The difference was that the Great Wandering Practitioners' Tournament was a sports competition completely, and purely for the common masses. Though the scale was not as huge as the Great Inter-Sect Tournament, it was still very popular among many wandering practitioners.

Zhu Yao felt that compared to idols that experience regular growth paths in clans and sects, these heroes of the common people were much more able to engrave themselves in people's hearts.

“Little tyrant, good luck! Don't be careless, become the champion of the Foundation group!” Zhu Yao patted on Little Bai's shoulders. “The champion's prize awaits you!”

Little tyrant's face darkened. “Grandma... You're not just thinking about obtaining that ‘Scentless Fruit’, right?”

“Hohoho...” Zhu Yao rubbed his head. “How can you think of your grandma that way? It's a very important event. Something like the ‘Scentless Fruit’ or whatever... it's not like I really want it that bad!” Geez~!

“...” She clearly wanted it really bad.

“Go, Pikachu! You must become the champion, alright?”

“...” What’s a Pikachu?

Little tyrant let out a long sigh. Forget it, he indeed needed to test out his abilities, after all. He handed over Little Eighth and the furball, who had gotten used to lying on his shoulders, to his grandma. Then, with a light push from his feet, he flew into the participants’ venue.

Because there were simply too many wandering practitioners, and that this was also the most authoritative tournament among wandering practitioners, the degree of enthusiasm people had was no less than the olympic games. This was why the preliminaries of the tournament were very easy, and no registration was needed either. The participants simply had to head over to the corresponding competition stage. The way to advance? A battle royale!



# Chapter 306: Practitioners' Great Tournament Reality TV

---

Zhu Yao was really confident in little tyrant. Though his cultivation level was not really standing out in the Foundation category, his actual combat experience was more than sufficient. Him being beaten by various high rank demonic beasts all these years were not for naught.

As expected, an hour later, little tyrant easily advanced into the next stage. Among the several hundred Foundation practitioners, only twenty or so of them remained, and little tyrant was the one and only early-stage Foundation practitioner among them.

The groupings for the other two categories were all decided as well. In the Essence category, there were forty-two participants, twenty-one in the Foundation category, and Azoth being the smallest, with only sixteen participants.

At this moment, the organizers from Wandering City came. A tall, red stage was casually erected in front of them, and it suddenly began to slowly rise. The red sheet was removed, revealing a stage made of white jade, and a row of exquisite-looking chairs were placed on top of it, emitting out an immensely overbearing aura. However, there were no one seated on them. Above the chairs, there was another empty floating square platform.

A middle-aged man, possessing the cultivation level of late-stage Azoth and wearing the Wandering City's staff uniform, flew on his sword and landed on the stage. He took a step forward and swept a glance at the practitioners who were densely packed together, and with a solemn voice, he transmitted his voice throughout the entire tournament venue. "Fellow daoists, welcome to Wandering City. Firstly, I would like to congratulate all of you for advancing past the preliminaries." He looked at the practitioners that

advanced, and began to voice out large paragraphs of official statements. “Our Wandering City was built many thousand years ago with the support from many daoists, and also the protection from our old ancestor, even till now... bala bala...” After singing a string of praises, his tone changed as he began to introduce the sponsors. “This tournament is brought to you by Tower Master Zhao of Treasure Passing Tower, Pagoda Master Li of Source Spirit Pagoda, and Boss Yuan of Treasure Retrieving Mark. All who advanced past the preliminaries will be awarded with one ‘Scentless Fruit’. The top three Essence practitioners will be awarded with...”

He continued to introduce a row of prizes. For each prize he introduced, a practitioner would take up a seat on the stage and greet the various people present with a smile. Though, the cultivation levels of the practitioners were really varied, with some being at the Foundation stage, or even the Nascent Soul stage. However, every single one of them was seated in a row on the stage.

Zhu Yao faintly felt as if she was spectating a reality TV programme, and the introductions she was hearing instantly changed accordingly.

“Welcome everyone, you’re presently watching the TV programme ‘Wandering Practitioners’ Great Tournament’ sponsored by “Treasure Passing Tower”, “Source Spirit Pagoda” and “Treasure Retrieving Mark”. We like to thank Source Spirit Pagoda, your great companion for spiritual herbs, and great guarantee to the quality of medicinal pellets. We would also like to thank Treasure Passing Tower, your wisest choice for mystic artifacts for a smooth cultivation journey, for greatly supporting the programme. Lastly, we like to thank Treasure Retrieving Mark, the professional escort services that’s worth your money, for sponsoring the prizes today. The tournament this time is fair, just, and open to the public! It is hosted entirely by Wandering

City, and is split into three categories. The matches are randomly assigned, and ultimately the top three will be greatly awarded. For this programme, Wandering City holds the say in all the rules! Now, let us welcome the judges of this tournament with a warm applause! Tower Master Zhao of Treasure Passing Tower, Pagoda Master Li of Source Spirit Pagoda, Boss Yuan of Treasure Retrieving Mark, and their close friends!”

Clap clap clap...

Zhu Yao clapped her hands on reflex.

The entire place was instantly dead silent.

Several hundred eyes swept towards her.

Zhu Yao, an audience who had the courtesy to clap for the performance: “...”

“Hohoho...” The hell. Zhu Yao’s face darkened. “Umm... My hands were dirty, hoho, so I was dusting the dirt off...” Thus, she had no choice but to strongly patted her hands under the intense gaze of the crowd. See, this is the trouble you get into for acting on reflex! Know some shame!

In an instant, she received several hundred stares that felt as if they were looking at an idiot.

So uncomfortable!

The silence of the crowd did not persist for long, as their attention was drawn away an instant later by a growl coming from the not so distant skies.

That roar could be heard wide and far, and it felt as if it carried endless might. Though it was not releasing any pressure, it could not help but stir the hearts and senses of people, causing them to feel at awe.

Zhu Yao frowned. Why did this roar sound so similar to the roar of a dragon?

As expected, not even a moment later, a humongous beast came flying over from the horizon. Its entire body was covered in pitch-black. It had the looks of a snake did not have any legs. Its pair of eyes were like lightning, and horns grew above its head. It constantly swirled about in the sky. It was actually a ninth rank demonic beast.

“Scaled Dragon! A ninth rank Scaled Dragon!” The crowd cried out in awe.

“It’s Sovereign Hua Lin of Wandering City.”

“Sovereign Hua Lin has arrived.”

The crowd was instantly in an uproar. With revering eyes, they looked above the Scaled Dragon where the Demigod Sovereign, dressed in azure robes, was standing.

The Scaled Dragon seemed to have intentionally circled around in the sky twice, before coiling towards the highest seat.

“Sovereign Hua Lin is actually able to tame a Scaled Dragon as his spiritual beast. He’s really amazing.”

“That’s right. That’s a Scaled Dragon! It’s said that its species carry the bloodline of the Dragon race, and that it’s the species of demonic beasts that’s closest to the God race.”

The crowd began to fervently discuss about that Scaled Dragon.

Little Eighth who had been lying on Zhu Yao’s shoulder like a corpse shifted his head away in disdain. “Tch!” Stupid humans, just which part of that looks like a Dragon?

That Scaled Dragon seemed to be extremely satisfied with the commotion it caused. After arriving at the highest seat, it did not rush to make a landing, but instead, it brought its master up in the air and once again flew a perfect circle in the sky, showing off its demeanour. With its mouth wide open, it let out the same draconic roar from before.

Zhu Yao frowned. “So noisy.”

Little Eighth was even more direct. “Shut up!”

His voice was not loud. The practitioners next to them were most likely unable to hear him either. However, that Scaled Dragon which had yet to show off completely suddenly twitched, and fell straight onto the stage with its face planted onto the ground. Even the Demigod Sovereign on its back wobbled, and had almost fallen off its body.

Hua Lin desperately clung onto his reputation as a Demigod practitioner. What happened to this spiritual beast today?

The Scaled Dragon however, opened its large, black pearly eyes as it looked straight at Zhu Yao’s direction. Its eyes first shone from excitement, and then it dimmed right away. Finally, it began to shiver, emitting out an unclear growl.

“Heisha, what’s wrong?” Hua Lin asked a little worriedly. After all, it was a spiritual beast he managed to tame through great difficulties.

The Scaled Beast however ignored him, and had instead began to shiver even more, like a leaf being blown by the wind. Its voice grew even sadder, and tears began to well in its eyes.

No one else could understand, but Zhu Yao heard it really clearly.

“Wuu... Lord hates Tiaotiao now. Tiaotiao is so sad. Tiaotiao wants to cry. Wuu...”

Zhu Yao’s face darkened. Tiaotiao? Wasn’t it called Heisha? To have such a distasteful name for a demonic beast, was it named by its parents?

Hua Lin inspected his spiritual beast for a long while, but was unable to find out what was wrong. Sighing, he had no choice but to leapt down from its body. The Scaled Dragon however immediately coiled up into a spiral, and then occupied the stage like a round flat pie. A pair of broken-hearted, black pearly eyes

were what's left that could be seen at the center, and the surroundings were suffused with a low and dispirited atmosphere.

Little Eighth, the culprit, glared in that direction for a while, and muttered. "Stupid."

That Scaled Dragon immediately shivered even more than before.

"Wuuu... I'm being hated. I really want to die!"

Zhu Yao immediately pressed on Little Eighth, and whispered. "Stop scaring it already. If you scare it any further than now, you will cause a commotion."

Can't you see that even Hua Lin is being pushed to the very end of the stage due to its large figure? Anymore than that and he's going to fall.

#Informed on the importance of the God race's bloodline#

"Ahem..." Hua Lin finally regained his senses from his spiritual beast's anomaly. He secretly felt fortunate that these practitioners had never seen a Scaled Dragon before and believed that this coiling of its body was the usual stance it would always take. Not a single person suspected it. His reputation was kept safe, but because of this commotion, he no longer had the mood to say the speech he had initially prepared. Thus, with a wave of his hand, several types of formations were placed on the wide tournament venue. With incredible seriousness and might, he said. "Let the tournament begin."

---

The layout of the wandering practitioners' tournament was actually really simple. Two people would face each other and the winner would move onto the next round. The number of Azoth and Essence practitioners who advanced were coincidentally an even number, while only the Foundation category had an even number of twenty-one people. Probably because little tyrant was

the only early-stage Foundation practitioner and had the lowest cultivation level in the Foundation category, he had the honour of directly skipping through two of the rounds. When the third round finally started, including him, there were only six people left. Without doing anything, little tyrant had the honour of advancing into the top six.

Zhu Yao consoled the fortunate participant who was about to head onto the arena. “It’s fine, little tyrant. Luck also plays a part in competitions.”

“...” Grandma, can you not say such things while nibbling on melon seeds? You’re not even the slightest bit persuasive that way, alright?

“Good boy. Win this round, and you will be in the top three!” It’s so fortunate of him to enter the finals straight away!

“Haah...” Little tyrant sighed. “But, I have never exchanged blows with the rest, so I don’t know the depths of their power. What if...”

“Little tyrant, do you really think that when you encounter an enemy, he will give you time to understand his abilities completely before making his move?”

He was stunned. “...”

“The importance of competitions lie in your own personal growth. The competitions themselves are of no concern.”

The worries in his eyes instantly swept away. “I understand now, grandma.”

“Mn, remember to win a few more Scentless Fruits!”

“...” In the end, it’s still for the Scentless Fruits, isn’t it? It felt so saddening to have a senior who did not go by the book!

“If I’m right, you’re facing an intermediate-stage Foundation practitioner in your upcoming match.” Zhu Yao pointed at a

practitioner in grey clothes not far away from them. He was the only intermediate-stage Foundation practitioner in the top six, while the rest were either at the late stages or at the Paragon level. Unlike little tyrant who was seeded into the semifinals, he advanced with his own strength. “As someone who is able to stand above many with just his intermediate-stage cultivation level, he is most likely really hard to deal with compared to other practitioners. Watch out, and don’t underestimate your opponent.”

Little tyrant nodded. “Mn, I understand.”

After the break at half-time, the tournament between the top six drew its curtains. Zhu Yao’s guess was right. Little tyrant’s opponent was the intermediate-stage Foundation practitioner.

If her eyes proved reliable, his opponent should possess the fire and wood spirit veins. In the previous matches, he had been using mystic arts of these two types.

Little tyrant had the penta spirit veins, so he was not afraid either. Adding that his opponent had just gone through two matches, while this was little tyrant’s first match, little tyrant had the advantage in terms of stamina. However, his opponent’s abilities should not be limited to just these, and that he was still hiding some.

The match between the two was the third and last match of the round. When the front two matches had just ended, little tyrant rose in the air and landed at the center of the arena. Zhu Yao instantly felt a sense of pride welling inside her.

Watch. A new star is about to be born.



## Chapter 307: Rising New Star

---

Almost at the same time, that intermediate-stage Foundation practitioner descended from the air as well. The two of them landed on the arena at the same time.

“Fellow daoist, please advice.”

The opponent courteously hugged his fist and returned a greeting. In the next moment, he summoned a spiritual sword and initiated an attack. It had to be mentioned that he was a participant with great techniques. Every single one of his attack and art was used at the most opportune moment, maximizing the effects of his attacks. Little tyrant, on the other hand, was a power-type participant. His attacks and methods were after all largely developed through countless matches with various demonic beasts. They were quick and ruthless, with great force behind them. Compared to flashy moves, most of them were practical and efficient attacks.

Both of them had their strengths, and it was hard for either of them to gain an advantage on the other. Zhu Yao however was not worried. Though little tyrant only had the cultivation level of at the early-stage Foundation, his abilities were capable of resisting a fifth rank demonic beast. Furthermore, the demonic beasts that sparred with him were different every day, and they all had various abilities. This way, he was not reliant on a specific element, and he was now able to deal with various types of mystic arts handily. Almost at the same time he were to realize that his opponent was using a certain element of mystic art, his body would on reflex use a mystic art of the opposing element.

Thus, in just a few moments, the technique-type practitioner was slowly driven into a disadvantageous position.

He could not help but look flustered. He had initially thought that this would be the easiest match so far, as, after all, his

opponent's strength was a level lower than his. Never did he expect that he would instead be suppressed by his opponent instead. He had believed that his usage of mystic arts could already be considered unparalleled, but he never thought that his opponent could use various mystic arts faster than him, as if he was using them on instincts alone. Furthermore, his speed on casting any type of mystic art was incredible. Could he be a penta spirit veins holder? Is a penta spirit veins holder supposed to be this terrifying?

If this were to go on, he would most likely lose! The practitioner's expression sank, bringing out his hundred and twenty percent of concentration. With a wave of his hand, he constructed a wood-type mystic art – Heaven-Earth Net. In an instant, countless vines grew at rapid speeds, speeding towards little tyrant in all directions.

Bai Zhiyuan leapt far into the air, wanting to dodge them. Those vines however immediately followed after him, growing all the way to the skies and grabbing hold of his legs, which restricted his movements. One sharp thorn after another approached his figure.

Little tyrant's expression sank as he instantly summoned a large fireball to burn away the vines restricting him. Furthermore, the flames were even spreading towards the ground. His opponent immediately cast a water-type art.

Huaaaa. A heavy rain came pouring down, extinguishing the huge flames in an instant. When little tyrant landed on the ground, the ground was already completely wet.

A good opportunity! The practitioner's eyes shone, as he immediately unleashed the formation which he used the vines to construct earlier. In an instant, a great white light flashed beneath little tyrant's feet, and the surroundings began to freeze up. Little tyrant was quickly frozen in ice.

It finally ended.

The practitioner heaved a sigh of relief.

This was all completed in a mere instant. His speed of casting was extremely quick, and before everyone could even react, little tyrant was already frozen.

So he had the fire, wood and ice spirit veins. Zhu Yao understood and nodded, it seemed like the thing he had been concealing till now was his ice spirit vein. However... no matter how fast he was, it would not be any effective at all.

Before the practitioner could celebrate his victory, that iceberg suddenly made a crisp, crackling sound.

A figure flashed past. In the next moment, a regular second rank sword was already held right at his neck. In the face of absolute strength, speeds would just be paper tigers.

“Fellow daoist, good fight!” Little tyrant courteously spoke, as shattered pieces of ice scattered onto the ground behind him.

“That’s... That’s impossible!” The practitioner looked at Bai Zhiyuan, who had charged out from the ice, in complete disbelief. His cultivation level was clearly lower than his own, so how could he possibly be able to charge out of it?

Little tyrant slowly retracted his sword. No matter if this practitioner believed it or not, this battle was won by little tyrant. The practitioner was however, still standing on the arena with a dazed look.

The entire place was in an uproar.

“Tch, idiot!” Little Eighth silently spat out.

Even the Demigod practitioner, who had been standing on the highest point of the stage and was unable to escape from being squeezed by his own spiritual beast, nodded in satisfaction as well. He stroked his slightly white beard, and said. “Mn, such a talented youth.”

Zhu Yao silently shifted her eyes away. This was why she said little tyrant was a power-type participant. Every day, he was beaten up by various types of demonic beasts with various attack patterns, so it would be impossible not to gain a rough skin and hard muscles from that, and it would not be unexplainable if his resistance stat was maxed out either. The iceberg of a mere Foundation practitioner could not possibly block the tail of a fifth rank demonic beast, right? Furthermore, it was the type where he would be smashed by tails without knowing that those demonic beasts were capable of doing that. Zhu Yao had initially wanted to raise him up into a sword cultivator, but unknowingly, she had instead raised a physique cultivator.

Uh... This was definitely an unexplainable mistake on the side of operations.

Fortunately, little tyrant had a good base. Even when his physical parameters were raised, he did not turn into a bulky man with muscles filling his face. He still had the same little white face with unlimited potential.

---

Little tyrant won beautifully in that particular round. At the very least, the group that were in the finals, had all been successfully stunned. Other than the Azoth practitioners who felt a little disapproving of him, every Foundation and Essence disciple was dumbfounded.

Initially, to all practitioners, they would put emphasis on training their arts, while those who cultivate their bodies were of a miniscule amount. Using gaming terminology, practitioners were ranged magic users with high intelligence, high magical power, and high magical defense, but incredibly terrible stamina and physical defense. Little tyrant however was an abnormal case. While raising his three main stats at the same time, he had even unlocked the physical route of the skill tree. This was why the rest were this stunned.

In the following finals, he had undoubtedly suppressed the Foundation Paragon through sheer force, and was able to successfully become the champion.

The exciting award ceremony began. Only nine practitioners remained in the arena, being the champion and runner-ups for the respective categories. Filled with spirit and valiance, they walked onto the podium. Standing on the podium were the various sponsors and leaders, and they personally awarded and encouraged the practitioners. Furthermore, they took a group shot together to mark the occasion. At this moment, the winners represented the backbone of the new cultivation world. They were the honor and pride of the cultivation world, each and every single one of them was a rising star. Ah~ My country...

Ahem! Stop there!

Everything above was just an imagination on her part.

The actual scenario was different. Someone that seemed to a manager chuckled as he handed a storage pouch to every single winner, while not forgetting to ask each one of them a question. "Congratulations, fellow daoist. Do you have any intentions of joining our Wandering City? We have great salary, few missions, and we will arrange a cave residence with rich spiritual energy for you. Every month, we will even issue Scentless Fruits."

Everyone: "..."

The manager asked every single winner, but unfortunately, not a single one of them gave a positive answer. Then, he sighed as he returned to the stage, and just as he was planning on ending this tournament...

"Wait!" The Demigod Sovereign above suddenly called out. With a wave of his hand, a light breeze blew towards the few people who had just received their prizes. Little tyrant's figure lightened and his body flew towards the tall stage.

Sovereign Hua Lin raised him towards his own seat at the tall stage, then, he glanced at the stage which was already being completely occupied by his spiritual beast. He had no choice but to give up and place little tyrant on the stage beneath his, where the sponsors were.

With a stern and esteemed look, he said. “Practitioner, are you willing to become my disciple, and come under my tutelage?”

When these words were spoken, everyone on-site held their breaths. A Demigod Sovereign wanting to take in a disciple was a huge matter, and it was even Sovereign Hua Lin the number one wandering practitioner no less. Never did anyone expect that a mere wandering practitioners’ tournament would make a Demigod practitioner think about taking in a disciple. Envy appeared in everyone’s eyes, as they looked at Bai Zhiyuan with excitement.

“I’m not willing.”

“In that case, let’s... what?” Hua Lin was stunned, and only then did he realize what Bai Zhiyuan had just said. Unwilling. Someone actually rejected the proposal of becoming a disciple of a Demigod practitioner!

Everyone on-site began to gasp at this moment.

“Have you truly thought about it?” Pass this village and there won’t be anymore stores. “I don’t take in a disciple often!”

“Thank you, Sovereign, for your goodwill.” Little tyrant hugged his fist and said. “However, I already have a master, and my abilities were cultivated by my master. Bai Zhiyuan is unwilling to do something that’s akin to betraying her.”

Only then did Hua Lin understand the situation, however, he was still unwilling to give up. “May I know who your master is?”

“She’s right here.”

“May I see her?” As a wandering practitioner, stealing disciples or whatever, was something he was best at.

Little tyrant turned his head and looked in Zhu Yao's direction.

"Little Eighth, stop eating. It's time for us to shine." Zhu Yao brought down the pouch of melon seeds from Little Eighth's foot, and then flew towards the tall stage. Little Eighth was unable to stabilize his footing in time, and a corner of the pouch under his other foot loosened, causing melon seed shells to scatter along the way.

"Grandma." Little tyrant happily took a step forward.

"Not bad, little tyrant. You're simply incredible." Before Zhu Yao even landed, she had already raised her thumb and praised him.

"You are his master?" So she's just an Azoth practitioner. Hua Lin was relieved. When she landed on the ground, he was planning on saying something when the Scaled Dragon that had been acting dead the entire time suddenly trembled, as if it had received some sort of shock. Its tail slammed towards him just like that.

Smack...

Sovereign Hua Lin, the number one wandering practitioner who was still carrying the demeanour of a celestial deity earlier, fell.

With his face planted on the ground!

Zhu Yao: "..."

Little tyrant: "..."

The various sponsors: "..."

"Hohoho... May I know how I should address fellow daoist?" Sovereign Hua Lin stood up at lightning speed, and looked towards Zhu Yao with a harmonious look. It was as if that tragedy earlier had never happened.

Zhu Yao: "... If you want to act, at the very least, wipe away the dirt on your face first, hey.

This instant face-changing quality could already be considered top-tier.

“Yu Yao.” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched, but she still returned an answer.

Hua Lin nodded. “So it’s fellow daoist Yu. Do you specialize in the arts of beast taming?” He glanced at Little Eighth and said.

“Uh... You can put it that way!”

“What a coincidence. I am proficient in the arts of beast taming as well.” He stroked his beard as pridefully glanced at the Scaled Dragon above which was still trembling.

“...” Please remove the word “proficient”. Earlier, you were clearly smacked down here by your own spiritual beast, hey.

“Since both you and I are wandering practitioners, and we are familiar with these arts, it can be said to be fate. Why don’t you come under my tutelage as well?” If his master were to come under him, then her disciple would naturally become his grand-disciple, and he would still be considered as one of his people. Mn, Sovereign Hua Lin was quick-witted as expected.

“No need...” Just how much does this person want to take in a disciple? “I have a master as well.”

“What!?” Hua Lin was stunned. He never thought of this possibility. “How can you possibly have a master as well? Where is he? What’s his cultivation level? Call him here as well, and have him come under...” Eh? Why is the surroundings so cold? Did the temperature drop?

Zhu Yao held onto the pea that was about to charge out from her chest. Master, you must calm down, bullying the elderly is wrong!



## Chapter 308: Hua Lin, Don't Cry

---

Hua Lin sincerely wanted to take in the youth called Bai Zhiyuan as his disciple. As a good owner that loved his spiritual beasts and a Demigod practitioner who had focused on the spiritual beast taming business for several hundred years, Hua Lin could not resist a good youth who had a tenacious body akin to a spiritual beast. He was itching to take him in, and wanted to nurture him properly, train him meticulously... Eh, things are starting to sound weird?

As for spirit veins, the hell were they?

It had been many years since he encountered a good seedling that could stir his heart in such a manner. No matter what, he had to take him in under his tutelage. In order for that to happen, he would not hesitate to do anything, even if it's taking in his master, or his master's master under his tutelage as well.

In any case, being a master, grandmaster, or great grandmaster was of no concern. He felt that he could still accept those titles.

“Daoist Yu, just who is your master? Why don't you call your master out? Don't worry, I'm a really good master.” In the world of wandering practitioners, he had a very big say in things.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. If I call him out, you're dead meat!

Even little tyrant silently turned his head away as well.

“Ahem, Sovereign Hua Lin, come over here for a bit.” Zhu Yao sighed, as she waved her hands at him with a darkened face, motioning him to come over.

“Mn?” Hua Lin was startled. Could it be that she was troubled with something? Thus, he curiously leaned over.

“I say, Hua Lin...” Zhu Yao brought him towards a corner of the stage, and patted on his shoulders. In an instant, she released her

Demigod pressure, while restricting it to the area they were standing in.

Hua Lin's legs trembled, and he was this close to kneeling down.

Late-stage Demigod!

Zhu Yao chuckled. "Who do you think my master could be?"

"..." His expression turned deathly pale. When did a late-stage Demigod appear among wandering practitioners? No one had informed him about it!

"Do you still want to meet my master now?"

He shook his head wildly!

"Hoho... Fellow daoist's master has the blessings of a celestial, and the lifespan of the sky!"

"Mn, good boy!" He just had to force her hand. She was a kind person in the first place, you know? "Oh right, this is a secret. You understand, right?"

Hua Lin: "I understand." ㄗㄗㄣㄗㄗ

When Zhu Yao brought him back to the center of the stage, Hua Lin's legs were still trembling a little. The girls now sure are brutal. As I thought, am I already outdated?

"Haah..." He looked at Bai Zhiyuan with a resentful look. If you already have a Demigod practitioner as your master, say so earlier! You made me lose face. "Daoist Bai, an encounter is still a form of fate. Though we do not have the fate of being of master and disciple, why don't we... become friends?" Is it too late to mend our relationship?

Little tyrant was startled for a moment. He turned to look at Zhu Yao, and when he saw her nodding her head, he nodded as well.

Hua Lin instantly revealed a flowery smile. Since they were friends, then let the matter of stealing away a disciple earlier be bygones.

“Oh right. Earlier, I saw that you address yourself as Bai Zhiyuan during the tournament. I believe that must be your mortal name. May I know what is your daoist title?”

Little tyrant was startled, and then, he turned to look at Zhu Yao. Uh...

The hell, why did she forget about this matter?

Isn't it just giving a name? Giving a name or whatever, is something she's best at.

“He's my disciple, so he naturally has to carry my surname Yu. His name is Yu... Ba!”

Hua Lin: “[Yu Ba](#)! Mighty and domineering! Such a good name!”

Zhu Yao: “Hoho, you have good eyes!”

Bathroom Heat Lamp ([Yu Ba](#)) Bai Zhi Yuan: “...” Why did he feel something was odd?

Hua Lin chatted with the two of them for half a day. Only then did Zhu Yao realize that this Demigod Sovereign, was a chattering box. If she had not interrupted him, she believed that he could have continued on for the entire day, all the way to the next morning. When Zhu Yao finally clearly expressed her intentions to leave, he unwillingly let them off.

Presently, the people around the arena had long gone off.

“Remember to come back often to play!” Hua Lin waved his hands at the two of them.

Just as Zhu Yao was about to fly off on her sword, from the corners of her eyes, she glanced at the Scaled Dragon which had been crying all day long on the tall stage. Sighing, she could not help but walk over.

“Stop crying.”

The Scaled Dragon was startled for a moment, and then he raised

his head from the spiraling coil. Its large, reddened eyes glanced in her direction, and in an instant, they sparkled. It then let out a frail sound.

“Meow~”

“Good boy!”

The Scaled Dragon’s sadness finally began to dissipate, as it weakly stretch out the tip of its tail.

“Not angry?”

Finding it funny, Zhu Yao held onto the tip of its tail, and then shook it twice. “Mn, not angry.”

Its body instantly shook about...

It no longer kept its body in a coiled state, recovering its demeanour as a tyrannical Scaled Dragon, and it began to playfully twist and turn.

Hua Lin: (◡‿◡)

As expected of Daoist Yu! She really had skills in the arts of beast taming! Even this Scaled Dragon of his was no longer throwing a tantrum. As expected of a late-stage Demigod Sovereign.

Seeing Zhu Yao who had already flown off on her sword, admiration instantly filled Hua Lin’s heart.

Eh, wait a minute. What was that black figure following behind her?

The hell, it was his Scaled Dragon.

Come back! You’re my spiritual beast, hey!

---

Reputation Establishing Achievement, unlocked!

Zhu Yao had initially decided to return to Peaceful Spiritual Forest, but the spiritual energy within little tyrant’s body suddenly began to stir abnormally, and there were traces of him making a breakthrough. She had no choice but to change her plan in an

instant and rented a cave residence to settle down in.

A week later, little tyrant successfully broken into the intermediate-stage Foundation level. It seemed like this tournament had greatly influenced the growth of his mental state. Just this single trip alone had risen his cultivation. In the future, she had to consider putting study trips and the like into her education plan.

“Grandma, let’s return to Peaceful Spiritual Forest tomorrow!”

“What’s the rush?” She was planning on going on a study trip now!

The corner of little tyrant’s lips twitched, as he shook the storage pouch in front of her eyes.

“What does that mean?”

“It’s empty!” He let out a long sigh. “Grandma... We don’t have any spirit stones left.”

“Uh...” That was a huge problem. “What happened to the spirit stones we brought out?”

He silently lowered his head, and looked at her hands.

She was holding onto a basket filled with Scentless Fruits.

“... Hohoho. Aiya, don’t mind such small details.” It was just that her mouth was itching a little, so she bought a little more than expected.

Little tyrant looked at her resentfully. “The spirit stones we brought out were gathered by demonic beasts.”

“...” Why did she feel like she was being seen as a prodigal?

“Why don’t... I refine some mystic artifacts and sell them?” She was rather confident in her crafting skills.

“We don’t have the materials.” (˘?˘)

“Why don’t... I craft a few talismans...”

“We don’t have the materials.” (˘?˘)

“Then let’s sell a few formation banners...”

“We don’t have the materials.” (˘?˘)

“Alright, let’s go home!” Let’s go and oppress that rich tycoon frog!

Just as they stepped out of the cave residence they rented, they bumped into a joyful Hua Lin who came to look for them. His dimples showed when he smiled, as he enthusiastically waved his hands at the two of them from afar.

“My dear little sister!”

“Little sister?” Who’s your little sister?

“Uh... Dear elder sister!”

Little Eighth spat out a mouthful of flames. She’s my elder sister!

“Uh... Dear friend!”

Cold air enveloped the surroundings. A certain master: A friend like this will steer my disciple astray.

“...” Then what should I address her as?

A while later.

“Fellow daoists, where are you two planning to go?”

“We ran out of money, so we’re returning home.” Zhu Yao replied.

Hua Lin was startled. A moment later, he let out a smile again. “So it’s because of such a small matter. Fellow daoists, say so earlier! If you don’t have spirit stones, I do!”

“...” You’re just here to flaunt your wealth, aren’t you?

Seeing that the two of them were not looking too good, he realized the ambiguity in his words. He immediately attempted to save himself. “What I’m meaning to say is, every single small or

large establishment belongs to my Wandering City. If fellow daoists wish to stay, putting aside the cost of renting them, it isn't even a problem to gift a cave residence to fellow daoists." As he said that, he waved his hand. The formation core at the entrance used to place spirit stones with instantly flashed green.

"Thank you, Hua Lin!" Zhu Yao grabbed onto his hand in excitement. "We are friends from now on."

"It's my honor!"

"In that case, can you return me the rent we spent the last few days?"

"....."

"..."

Seeing that Zhu Yao did not look as if she was kidding, Hua Lin pulled out a pouch for storing spirit stones with a darkened expression. From it, he took out a high-grade spirit stone.

Before he could even pass it to her...

Zhu Yao casually swiped away... the pouch he was holding.

"Thank you. You're truly a good person."

The good person who was left with a single spirit stone: "..."

Zhu Yao immediately passed the pouch full of spirit stones to little tyrant, her household finance manager, and winked. Hurry and keep it. If it's still not enough, we can ask this old man for more. In any case, he's stupid and has lots of money.

"Ahem. Oh right, why are you looking for us?"

Hua Lin was startled, and only did he regain his senses. He suppressed the pain from losing a pouch of high-grade spirit stones, and said. "It's like this. This one has a presumptuous request, which requires the help of daoist's... disciple. This matter concerns the reputation of all wandering practitioners, and the face of my Wandering City. This is why I have no choice but to

seek aid from fellow daoist.”

“Oh?” Zhu Yao was a little curious. “Tell me more.”

Hua Lin straightened his expression, and said with a stern tone. “Daoist Yu, do you know about the Great Inter-Sect Tournament?”

Zhu Yao nodded. “Of course! But what does that have to do with wandering practitioners?” The Great Inter-Sect Tournament naturally involved the participation from various sects and clans, but it did not have any relations with wandering practitioners which did not belong to any faction, right?

“In the past, yes. However, it’s different now.”

“Mn?” What did he mean?

Hua Lin sighed, motioning them to enter the residence. With a wave of his hand, he placed down a few formations before he began to explain. “Us wandering practitioners have always been on the weaker end, and most of us consist of disciples with a terrible mix of spirit veins. This led to us not being fated to enter the various sects, and had no choice but to take the four seas as our home. This was an ill fate in the first place, yet we still had to succumb to the pressure by the various sects and clans, leading to our ever dwindling resources. If we were to start calculating, we are basically worse off compared to heretic practitioners.” At the very least, heretic practitioners could still openly snatch what they wanted, while wandering practitioners had to take care of their own reputation. “When I constructed this Wandering City back then, I merely wanted to provide wandering practitioners a peaceful and safe haven. However, in these few years, though the various sects did not dare to do anything in the open, they had constantly made small movements in the dark. Not to mention, they are always watching my Wandering City. It’s still fine if I’m around, but once my lifespan is depleted, I’m afraid that no one will be able to protect this city.”

Zhu Yao frowned. Wandering practitioners were indeed



experiencing the worst lives out of all practitioners. Many of them were people who were disqualified by the various sects due to their terrible spirit veins. However, because they did not want to reduce themselves to mere heretic practitioners, they continued to live on without feeling embarrassed. Naturally, they would be oppressed everywhere they went.

“Then, what plans do you have?” Could it be that he wanted to seek revenge against the various sects and clans?

“I wish to prove the power of wandering practitioners to the various sects.” Hua Lin smiled, his old face seemed to be emitting a radiant glow. “I wish to prove to the various sects, that even with poor aptitudes, we are not just targets that can be bullied easily. So, in this upcoming Great Inter-Sect Tournament, my Wandering City will participate as well.”

“You’re thinking of having my disciple, represent Wandering City in the tournament?”

玉霸 (Yu Ba) – 霸: Domineering/tyrannical

浴霸 (Yu Ba) – Or Bathroom Master, a term coined by the Chinese, is short for Heat/Fan/Light 3-in-1 products made for bathrooms. Usually they are heat lamps though. Something like this: [here](#)

## Chapter 309: Run, Little Tyrant

---

“Fellow daoist Yu, this concerns the future of all wandering practitioners. To tell you the truth, I have already made the utmost preparations, and have already found the participants for the Essence and Azoth category. Presently, a Foundation practitioner is all I’m missing.” Hua Lin’s expression sank, and then sighed. “I am aware that my lifespan is running out, and though I do not regret dying, I am unwilling to see wandering practitioners stay in such a low standing forever.”

Zhu Yao was a little hesitant. Hua Lin’s thoughts were good, and they were all for the sake of wandering practitioners as well. Just by looking at this Wandering City alone, he indeed had thoughts of expanding the wandering practitioner business into greater heights. Towards an elderly with such enthusiasm for public service, she really found it hard to reject him. However, unfortunately, the place where the Great InterSect Tournament was being conducted in had to be Ness Cesary Sect out of all places.

Zhu Yao unconsciously tapped her fingers on the table, and after a moment of silence, she said. “I have to consider this matter for a while more, I can’t give you answer right now.”

Hua Lin’s enthusiasm instantly extinguished, and he glanced at her with slight disappointment and regret. With a bitter smile, he nodded. “Alright! Three days later, the disciples and I will set off from Gathering Frust Mansion. Hua Lin shall patiently wait for fellow daoist Yu’s good news.” After saying that, he turned to look at little tyrant with a face filled with unwillingness. His mouth moved up and down, yet he still kept his words to himself and left through the door.

Only after they were no longer able to see his figure, did an inquiry sounded behind Zhu Yao.

“Grandma, why didn’t you agree to it?”

Zhu Yao turned her head around, looked at little tyrant for a moment, and lightly smiled. “Shouldn’t I be asking you that? The one participating isn’t me, but you.”

He was stunned for a moment. “But... You’re my master.” Shouldn’t such matters usually be decided by one’s master? This was why Hua Lin asked for her opinion earlier.

“A matter as huge as this naturally has to be decided by the one involved in it.” She valued human rights greatly, after all. Zhu Yao immediately pulled him over to sit, and spoke in a serious tone. “Then tell grandma... are you truly prepared to return to Ness Cenary Sect once more?” As part of the wandering practitioners’ faction.

Little tyrant was stunned. He slowly lowered his head, and his hands cycled between loosening and tightening. After a while, he finally spoke up. “I don’t know either...”

“What? Are you afraid of losing?”

He shook his head. His brows furrowed, showing a complicated look.

“Then... Do you still hate Qu Jiang and the rest for ousting you out of the mountain?”

“Of course not!” He strongly shook his head. He had long since thought those things through. “I can’t put them into words either.” He just did not want to return to that place.

“I know now. Something like that is rather understandable.” Zhu Yao nodded in a profound manner.

“...” I’m not even clear of it myself, grandma, just what did you understand?

“This is called post-traumatic stress disorder.”

“Ah?” Little Bai was puzzled.

“This is a very professional term.” Zhu Yao pondered for a

moment. “To give an example somewhat...”

“What? Nut!?” The glutton Little Eighth who was sleeping on her shoulder immediately woke up. “Where?”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched, as she pressed Little Eighth’s bird head back down.

“The meaning of post-traumatic stress order, is a condition when even after one has fully recovered from injuries, he or she would still unconsciously try to protect one’s injured spot.”

“...” Was grandma trying to tell him that there was a knot in his heart?

“Little tyrant!” Zhu Yao stroked his head. “I understand that you have already put behind those things from a few years ago, but a scar has already been formed in the depths of your heart. However, you can’t possibly turn your eyes away from people of Ness Cesary Sect all your life, right?” You must not become a shut-in, alright? “To give an analogy, let’s say you once have accidentally fallen into a latrine, no matter how averse you are to latrines from then on, you can’t possibly hold it in forever and never take a dump again, right?”

Little tyrant: (\_\_\_\_)~

What kind of analogy was that, hey?

“Grandma, I have already abstained from food.” So there’s no need to take a dump anymore.

“Uh...” Alright, she had forgotten that practitioners were all ‘clean’. “Why don’t I give you another analogy?”

“No need, grandma!” Little tyrant immediately stood up, the corner of his lips twitching. “I already understood.”

“Ou...” What a pity. She had actually wanted to use the taste of vegetables as an example!

Eh? Why did she say taste?

“Since you have already understood, then think about it carefully. No matter what your decision is, grandma will respect it.” Zhu Yao gave him a thumbs up. After pondering for a moment, she added. “However, I hope that the decision you make is an outcome of your deliberation, and not just to vent out your frustration.”

Little tyrant’s figure twitched for a moment.

Zhu Yao had nothing else to add, so she turned around and left the room.

This time, little tyrant began to ponder about it seriously. Just like that, he stayed in his room for three whole days pondering about this issue. Zhu Yao was even planning to pack up and head on home, when he suddenly opened the door to her room. It seemed like the depressing atmosphere surrounding him had been swept away, as he looked more refreshed than before. It was as if the dark clouds had scattered, revealing the warm sun behind them.

“Grandma, I want to participate in the tournament, in the name of Wandering City.”

“You have decided? You’re not going to change it?”

“Mn.” He smiled, as though he had returned to being that sunny and handsome youth of five years ago. “I’m a wandering practitioner. No matter if I take a good position in the tournament or not, I just want to prove that penta spirit veins are not trash spirit veins.”

“Then what are we waiting for?” Zhu Yao pulled him out. “Hurry and inform Hua Lin, he might even give us some money for taking part.” After all, he was a star practitioner who had just become a champion in the recent tournament.

“.....”

“...”

---

The Wandering City today was especially bustling, with people filling every corner of the streets. Most of them were in groups, just that those practitioners did not comprise of just wandering practitioners, but uniform wearing sect practitioners as well. Wandering City was located at a rather central position in the cultivation world. These sect disciples were heading to participate in the Great InterSect Tournament as well, and were here to take a break or to replenish their supplies.

As Zhu Yao and little tyrant made their way over, they saw several waves of people. Compared to the leisureliness of wandering practitioners, these uniform wearing disciples evidently looked more excited. Some would occasionally bring up the matters concerning the tournament, basically making it impossible for others to not recognize them as participants for the tournament.

“I heard that an Azoth Core practitioner with penta spirit veins appeared in Ness Cesary Sect!”

Zhu Yao’s feet stopped. Penta spirit veins? It couldn’t be fellow student Ye Qingcang, right?

“Penta spirit veins, are you serious? Isn’t it hard for penta spirit veins holders to even establish their Foundations?”

“I know right? And I heard that he had merely used twenty years.”

“Isn’t that even faster than heavenly spirit vein holders then? Who is it?”

“He seems to be called... Ye Qingcang.”

“I have also heard that this senior-martial uncle Ye is proficient in the arts of pellet refining as well. Presently, he is already a fifth rank Pellet Refining Master.”

“Isn’t that a little too heaven-defying? Can a penta spirit veins

holder truly become this incredible?”

“I have also heard that the Peak Lord of Talisman Spirit Peak has betrothed him his personal succeeding disciple.”

“The personal succeeding disciple of Talisman Spirit Peak? Are you talking about junior-martial sister Qu Yi?”

“That’s right! A hero is worthy of a beauty, after all! Even I want to get to know someone like him. That way, I will be able to rub off a cup of wedding wine from him too.”

“Hahahaha...”

The people in front slowly walked far off, and in a few moments, Zhu Yao and little tyrant could no longer hear their voices. Zhu Yao could not help but glance at little tyrant next to her.

“Sad?” I can lend you my shoulder, you know.

Little tyrant was startled, and asked back. “About what?”

“Qu Yi...” Zhu Yao reminded him. His childhood friend was about to get married, and the groom wasn’t him.

He instead smiled it off. Let alone any pain or dejection on his face, not even a hint of regret could be seen. He shook his head and said. “Grandma... I have long seen through that matter five years ago.”

“Are you really alright? Not sad? Not frustrated?” Zhu Yao bore a suspicious look. “Don’t worry little tyrant, no matter of you smack your love rival to a pulp, or spit at him with a mouth full of cola, I will always... cheer for you.”

“...” Is she not going to help him? “I really am fine!”

“Really?”

“Really!” He nodded heavily, and sighed. “Actually, thinking back about it now, back then, I might not have truly loved junior-martial sister Qu Yi. Most of my feelings came from wanting to take care of her as my sister, just that it had already become a habit

of some sort after being with her from young. Otherwise, I wouldn't have realized that she liked junior-martial brother Ye." His eyes shone, as he spoke with slight envy. "Though, junior-martial brother Ye sure has startled me. I never expected him to form his Azoth Core so quickly."

"Alright, I believe you now." It seemed like little tyrant truly did not love Qu Yi, and she suddenly felt things had become rather boring. "Why don't we still try to crash their wedding and steal the bride or something?"

"....."

"..."

"I shall lay out the plans for you. I promise you that you won't get beaten to death~"

"....."

"..."

"It will be perfect. It will be safe, reliable, and no damage to public properties will be made!"

Little tyrant immediately left.

Haah, as expected, the older he gets, the less cute he becomes.

---

When they arrived at Gathering Frust Mansion, Hua Lin clearly broke down from happiness, as he left a trail of dust behind him to welcome them from afar.

"Dear..." When he recalled the addressing problem, a series of words appeared in his mind. From, little sister, to elder sister, to friend, and finally, he decided. "Daoist!"

"..." The hell was 'dear daoist'? Why did she feel like he was calling out to a pair of fake fortune tellers!?

"I knew you two will definitely come." He was thoroughly



moved. Just when he was about to start singing praises and give his leader's speech, Zhu Yao immediately stopped him from chattering.

"Let us just hurry to Ness Cesary Sect."

Hua Lin was startled. Looking at the sky, it was indeed getting late. Only then did he suppressed his tongue and turned to ask the Azoth Core practitioner next to him. "Has Wu Jia not arrived yet?"

That practitioner's face paled, as he replied with a bow. "To reply old ancestor, this... Wu Jia promised that he would send it over at this time. It should be soon... soon."

"What's wrong? Is there still a participating disciple who hasn't arrived yet?" Zhu Yao asked.

Hua Lin's expression stiffened. "He's not actually a participant."

Then what was he? Zhu Yao had yet to ask when suddenly...

A fatty came running over noisily from the other side of the streets. As he ran, he gasped heavily for air. "I'm... I'm... I'm here, old ancestor. This lowly one is here."

"Mn." Hua Lin nodded. "Where's the thing?"

"Here!" The fatty pulled out an item from the storage pouch on his body. It was a jade scepter embedded with various gems, and it was dazzling to the point of being overboard. Evidently, it was the mark of an arriviste.

"It's this!?" Hua Lin opened his eyes wide with scorn.

The fatty chuckled, as he tried to fawn over him. "Old ancestor, this is the one and only eighth rank mystic artifact which this Wu has seen all these years. There isn't any other than this!"

Hua Lin stared at the jade scepter for a while with a complicated expression, and in the end, he simply gritted his teeth as he made a compromise. "Nevermind. With how things are now, there's no other way left."

After saying that, he received the scepter. Throwing it into the air, he chanted a sword flying art, and the jade scepter instantly turned several hundred times later. It looked even more luxurious and dazzling. Zhu Yao felt that she was about to be stabbed blind.

“Jiang Cheng, call over all of the participating disciples now. We will depart immediately.”

“Yes!” The Azoth Core disciple next to him nodded, and then left while leading the fatty to their destination.

Wait a minute!

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “Old man, we can’t be riding on this mystic artifact to Ness Cesary Sect, right?” Even if you beat me to death, I won’t do it, alright? This will simply make me lose fans!

Hua Lin had a complicated expression as well. He glanced at his surroundings, and then spoke with a suppressed voice. “Daoist Yu, you should be aware of this as well. We wandering practitioners, since the start... do not have any sort of reserves. Furthermore, I can only refine talismans, and not artifacts. This mystic artifact is already the one with the highest rank which I can find.” He had a dispirited look. In order to hold some face during their entry, he went through a great deal of trouble. “Furthermore, this one is merely a rental, and he had only managed to get it through his connections.”

“...” He had to find a sponsor for something like an eighth rank mystic artifact!? “You guys are seriously not doing well at all!?”

“There’s no other choice...” He shook his head. “We can’t possibly have the wandering practitioners fly over on their own, right? That Scaled Dragon of mine is indeed shocking, but unfortunately, it isn’t in a good condition recently. If something were to happen there later on because of it, in front of the various sects, the wandering practitioners will be even more...”

Zhu Yao: “...”

For this wandering practitioner business, he sure had taken quite intense pain and worry.

Raising her head, she looked at the jade scepter which was still emitting light and heat...

But she really did not want to lose any fans!

“Master, master! Emergency, please reply.” Zhu Yao immediately transmitted her voice in order to look for support.

“Speak.”

“Please assist me by sending a transportation tool which many people can ride, one that exudes a quiet extravagance, which looked as if there’s meaning behind it. It would be best if it is of a higher rank.” After pondering for a moment, she added. “Other than a brick!”

The moment her words fell, the storage pouch on her body shook.

“Master, I love you. Muuacks!”

Zhu Yao immediately pulled it out, and realized it was a green-coloured jade boat. He immediately passed it to Hua Lin.

“Daoist Yu, this is...” Hua Lin was startled.

“The return gift for the spirit stones from before.”

Only then did Hua Lin carefully inspect the article in front of him. As he looked, he took in a couple of few cold breaths. “Tenth... Tenth... Tenth rank mystic artifact.”

“To be more precise, it is a tenth rank mystic artifact of the extreme grade.” If her master was the one who created them, then their qualities were ensured.

Hua Lin’s hands trembled, and was this close to dropping it with his unstable hands. Tenth rank. An extreme grade even. This was

not logical. He had lived... for so long, and though he had seen a tenth rank mystic artifact before, one with an extreme grade was just a legend, right?

“Daoist Yu...” Hua Lin’s eyes were a little red. I really want to cry, what to do?

“Uh...” Old man, do you have to be this moved? Wipe off your snot, hey!

Hua Lin sniffled. “Daoist, please feel at ease. Once this Great InterSect Tournament ends, I will return this artifact with my own hands.”

“No need.” Zhu Yao waved her hand without a mind. “I have a lot of it at home.”

“Ah!?”

“Uh... I’m speaking about reciprocity! You gave me something a few days ago, so I returned you a gift.”

This gift is a little too expensive, isn’t it!? I feel like I’m in a dream. Though he knew that she was a late-stage Demigod Sovereign, and that she would most certainly have several good items on her, he never expected that she would take out something like this so casually.

Hua Lin fiercely rubbed his nose. His heart was feeling a little sour, and even the hand he was holding the mystic artifact with felt slightly heavy. This was the friendship between him and Daoist Yu!

A moment later.

“Daoist Yu...”

“What is it?”

“Can I hug you?”

“Scram!”

# Chapter 310: Hua Lin Sent a Friend

## Verification Notification

---

The so-called Great InterSect Tournament was actually a convention for the various clans and sects to display their strength. The ones who took the top three positions for each category were usually talented disciples from the first grade sects, and in these hundreds and thousands of years, disciples of Ness Cesary Sect always had the most abled people that could take the top spots. In every tournament, there would always be one or two incredible individuals making their names known.

However in the recent years, because of matters concerning Skybond Peak, many sects were dissatisfied with Ness Cesary Sect. Though Ness Cesary Sect now had five more Nascent Soul practitioners and their overall power had risen, this situation had even more so deepened the people's desires to obtain Skybond Peak. There would always be people wanting to snatch away the treasures within, be it openly or secretly.

As the Sect Master, Qu Jiang was piled with worries that could seriously shatter his heart. Just a few days before the Great InterSect Tournament, he had even sensed the presences of heretic practitioners. Furthermore, he had no idea how they managed to sneak in, and all the formations protecting Skybond Peak had even lost their effects. Though the formations now were personally constructed by their Demigod Sovereigns, and their effects were naturally stronger than before, there would always be possibilities of leaks. Compared to constantly mending and patching the formations, he would have rather not be able to enter it like before!

Not to mention ,this Great InterSect Tournament might looked the same on the surface, anyone would be able to figure out that the goal of the various sects was basically not the tournament

itself, but Skybond Peak. He had no choice but to put forth hundred and twenty percent concentration to deal with the tournament while staying vigilant, afraid that a leak somewhere would cost them Skybond Peak.

Compared to these worrisome days, he would rather have the days when senior-martial aunt Zhu was still here!

Qu Jiang sighed deeply. He wondered just how his little martial aunt was doing now.

Eh? Was he hallucinating? Why was he seeing his little martial aunt flying over here?

Aaaaaaah! It really is her!

“Sovereign Hua Lin of Wandering City arrives!” A resounding announcement sounded, stunning the crowd on the grandstand.

In the sky that was clear of clouds for thousands of miles, space suddenly distorted, and an enormous spiritual ship instantly appeared before everyone’s eyes. The ship was jade green, and glossy lights were faintly flowing around its surface. It was enveloped by auspicious clouds, and abundant spiritual energy filled its surroundings. It was actually a tenth rank mystic artifact. Standing atop the deck of the ship was two people, one old and one young. The man had the cultivation level of Demigod, while the woman had the cultivation level of a Azoth Core Paragon.

For a moment, the entire crowd was stunned still by this overbearing entrance. Even the disciples who were fighting on the ring all looked up towards that spiritual ship one after another.

Hua Lin desperately maintained his might as a Demigod, but in actual fact, his heart was already blooming with flowers of happiness, and he could not wait to transmit his voice towards Zhu Yao. “Daoist, fellow daoist! What happened just now? How did we arrive at Ness Cesary Sect in a blink of an eye, the moment we entered the ship? This speed is too incredible.”

Zhu Yao glanced at him. “Mystic ability.”

Hua Lin’s eyes shone even brighter, as though light itself could shoot out at any moment. “Mystic ability! You’re talking about the special skills which all extreme grade artifacts above the seventh rank are born with? Then the mystic ability of this celestial ship is...”

“Void Break.” The ability to slice through the void and immediately arrive at one’s destination. Just that it required a considerably long casting time, and it even had a twenty-four hours cooldown as well. It could only be used once a day.

Hua Lin could not help but hold his breath. It was actually Void Break! It was a skill which only Demigod practitioners could use. This mystic artifact was actually able to use it! What to do? I really want to jump in excitement for a bit!

“Qu Jiang of Ness Cesary Sect, welcomes Sovereign Hua Lin.” Qu Jiang stood at the spectator stand not far away from them and greeted loudly.

Only then did Hua Lin finally suppress the thoughts of jumping with joy. Mn. I’m an esteemed and mighty Demigod Sovereign. I can jump in excitement when we get back.

He controlled the spiritual ship and left it above the grandstand. Then, he shrank it into size of his palm, before leading his group of disciples towards Qu Jiang who came forward to welcome them.

Qu Jiang first bowed in front of Hua Lin. “May I ask for what purpose has Sovereign made his visit here for?”

Hua Lin stroked his beard, and said with a smile. “Today is the day of the Great InterSect Tournament. This Sovereign has naturally brought disciples to participate.”

“Wandering practitioners wish to participate in the tournament!?” Qu Jiang was startled.

“What? We can’t?” Hua Lin frowned.

“Of course not!” Qu Jiang immediately recovered. “The Great InterSect Tournament is but a means for the various sects to interact and learn from each other. If Sovereign has this interest, then Ness Cesary Sect will naturally welcome your participation. Are these the disciples who will be participating this time?” He turned to glance at the few dozen of people behind Hua Lin, and his line of sight stopped at Zhu Yao.

“Little... Daoist Zhu, long time no see.” He quickly change his way of addressing her at the end. “Are you here to participate in the tournament as well?”

“Nope.” Zhu Yao shook her head. “I’m purely here as a spectator. The one truly participating is little tyrant.”

“Zhiyuan?” Qu Jiang then looked at little tyrant behind her, and his eyes instantly shone. A hint of excitement could be seen within his eyes. “You... Y-You established your Foundation!”

“Sect Master.” Little tyrant bowed in front of him.

“Great, great, great!” Qu Jiang sized little tyrant happily. His face was filled with joy. He never expected that little tyrant would still establish his Foundation successfully, and he had even risen to the intermediate stages as well. He could finally heave a sigh of relief.

Qu Jiang instructed the disciples of his sect to arrange the wandering practitioners’ participants into the tournament, before leading Hua Lin and Zhu Yao onto the grandstand, onto the spectator stand where leader-level people are situated at.

Zhu Yao’s appearance had made the entire place fall into a strange awkward atmosphere. A few Elders of Ness Cesary Sect especially, had incredibly darkened expressions. Most likely, other than Qu Jiang, there really wasn’t anyone else who wished to see this former senior-martial aunt whom they had for only five years once more.

Though the other sects have heard rumours of her departure



from Ness Cesary Sect in these five years, Ness Cesary Sect did not openly acknowledge these claims, so the other sects could do nothing about it either. Furthermore, when she formed her Azoth Core back then, Ness Cesary Sect had especially hosted an introduction ceremony. A large portion of the Nascent Soul practitioners all recognized her.

Now that she had openly made her way to the tournament with Hua Lin, this paper wall had finally been completely torn apart. The various sects were not saying anything on the surface, but their hearts could not help but scorn of Ness Cesary Sect's action of killing the donkey the moment it left the millstone.

Even Sovereign Wu Fu's face sank as well.

Hua Lin did not care about such details though. Along the way here, Zhu Yao had already informed him of these broken matters she had with Ness Cesary Sect. To Hua Lin, Ness Cesary Sect throwing away a late-stage Demigod, and he picking her up after that, was not just a bad thing, but a heavenly good fortune. He could not even wait to thank the eighteen generations of ancestors of Ness Cesary Sect. Thus, he openly brought her towards the highest seats, where the highest level of personnels were made to sit. There were already five Sovereigns sitting there.

Hua Lin sat right at the chair that was just added in, and unconsciously glanced at Zhu Yao.

Eh, this isn't right. If there's only one chair, what about my good friend?

Seemingly in the next second, he stood right up again.

Should I let her sit? But my good friend is presently concealing her cultivation level, wouldn't I be exposing her?

He had no choice but to sit back down again.

But, my good friend has already helped me so much. If I sit down here alone, while she remains standing, it still hits on my

conscience a little.

Thus, he stood up again...

But, my good friend already mentioned that her cultivation level was a secret.

So he sat down again...

This continued on for seven to eight times.

The row of Demigods... were all looking at this lunatic.

Zhu Yao finally could not hold it in any longer, and sent him a voice transmission. "Are you constipated or something?"

Hua Lin stopped, maintaining his half sitting posture. With a complicated look, he replied. "My good friend... why don't you... sit on my lap?"

"Scram!" You old pervert, are you trying to take advantage of me?

"But if I let you stand, my heart won't feel at ease! Why don't you..."

"Shut up!"

"Ou!"

He finally settled down and obediently sat on the chair, looking all awkward.

"Junior-martial sister Zhu, long time no see. I never expected that you would go under Sovereign Hua Lin's tutelage so quickly." Sovereign Wu Fu suddenly spoke up, as he looked at Zhu Yao with a kind face. However, the meaning behind his words was not as kind. He was clearly saying that she had betrayed her sect.

"Sovereign Wu Fu, not only have you grown older, have your eyesight worsened as well?" Before Zhu Yao could even speak up, Hua Lin rushed in head-on. He glared at Wu Fu, and then said with a cold smile. "Who told you that Daoist Yu is a disciple under my

tutelage?”

Wu Fu was startled. “Is she not?” Then why did you parade her around?

“Of course not.” Hua Lin said with a proud look. “Daoist Yu has an extraordinary aptitude, and is furthermore a genius in the arts of beast taming. This Hua can’t even compare, and to be able to friends with her, is already a blessing worth three of my lifetimes.”

Wu Fu however did not take his words seriously, and had thought that he was merely speaking that way to protect her. “Why didn’t I know she’s capable of taming beasts as well?”

“I found it strange as well. Ness Cesary Sect had actually lost such a dazzling pearl.” Hua Lin looked at him mockingly, and said that he was blind right in his face.

Wu Fu’s expression stiffened, and he had no choice but to quell the fury in the depths of his heart. He turned back and continued to spectate the tournament, snorting coldly. “I sure wish to see just how bright this dazzling pearl of Wandering City can be.” Though, he was still a little cautious of Hua Lin. However, this Great InterSect Tournament pitted disciples with cultivation below Nascent Soul against each other. Mere wandering practitioners with trash spirit veins actually dared to participate as well. They truly did not understand the difference between heaven and earth.

The other practitioners seated actually had the same thoughts as well, and had thought that Hua Lin was merely here to flaunt his might. Some even thought that he might be here for Skybond Peak. However, those disciples had nothing to be feared of.

However, just a few hours later, these proud, arrogant and famed sects finally felt the taste of being smacked right in the face.

The Essence category was the very first to end its battles. The one who won at the end, was not a disciple belonging to any clan or sect, but a quad spirit veins disciple at the level of Essence Paragon

who was brought over by Hua Lin.

If this was just a fortunate victory, then the battles in the next Foundation category had stunned them even further. Among the two finalists, one was an earth heavenly spirit vein disciple with the late-stage Foundation cultivation level, but he was beaten into a pulp by a disciple with penta spirit veins. That earth wall which said to boast the strongest defense, was sliced like tofu by his opponent's spiritual sword. No matter was it speed, mystic arts, or strength, he was basically unable to gain even the slightest bit of advantage. Furthermore, his opponent's cultivation was a level lower than his, a mere intermediate-stage Foundation disciple.

"It sure is rare to see a disciple with such a robust figure. Could he possibly be a physical-type practitioner?"

"However he is especially proficient in mystic arts as well, so he can't be a physical-type practitioner."

"To think there's actually a talented individual in both the physical and mystical arts. Though he possesses the penta spirit veins, he can still be considered as a genius."

"To actually have such a helper, it's no wonder they would dare come to the Great InterSect Tournament. I wonder who this person is? Does he has a master?"

The people of the various clans and sects began to look at this penta spirit veins disciple with shining eyes. All of them had stunned looks, and had long forgotten that they were being slapped in their faces.

The people of Ness Cesary Sect were the only ones who had darkened expressions. Because the genius everyone was talking about, was exactly the disciple they personally chased out five years ago.

This was especially so for Qu Ying, who had an especially tough stance back then. The sound of a face-slap was ringing especially

loudly in his ears.

# Chapter 311: Can the Gift be Converted to Cash?

---

The entire place was in a sullen mood. Forget about Ness Cesary Sect which hosted the tournament, the faces of the people from other clans and sects did not look all that good either.

Among the top three of each of the Essence and Foundation categories, other than the champions being wandering practitioners, the runner-up of the Foundation category was also a wandering practitioner brought here by Hua Lin as well. There were only a total of six people, and Wandering City actually occupied half of the positions.

When did wandering practitioners become so incredible? Why weren't they aware of it?

In an instant, everyone could not help but worry about the Azoth Core category as well. It couldn't be that wandering practitioners would win it as well, right?

"Grandma." A voice transmission suddenly sounded in Zhu Yao's ears. She looked around, and her eyes landed on a tall youth in the outer ring who was nodding at her. "Grandma, it really is you. You're finally back."

"Student Little Cang?"

"Mn." He hurriedly nodded. "It's been five years. I thought that I would no longer be able to see grandma."

"..." Why did she feel like he was cursing her to die?

Zhu Yao sized him up for a moment. So this is the male protagonist all grown up. He sure has grown taller, and his looks have changed as well. If not for the word 'bug' on his face, she really wouldn't have been able to recognize him. In the past, he had a face with common features, like a random passerby. Now that he had grown... He still looked like a passerby. It was too hard

to discern him from anyone else.

“Not bad, student Little Cang. You managed to form your Azoth Core so quickly, rather incredible.”

“It’s already been five years...” He smiled, replying. Earlier, I saw Brother Bai’s battles. I heard that... I never expected in just five years, he managed to once again reach the Foundation level. He’s the one that should be called incredible.”

“Mn, he’s rather incredible alright.” She acknowledged this point. After pondering for a moment, she added. “The main point is that I taught him well.”

“...” Is it alright to praise herself like that? “Grandma, you’re still the same as ever.”

“That’s right, I’m still so youthful and beautiful.”

“...” That’s not what he meant, hey. “Grandma, it will be my match up next.”

“Ou, break a leg!”

Ye Qingcang smiled. With a joyful mood, he nodded towards her and turned to step onto the ring.

Suddenly, at the very center of the ring, the light of a formation flashed. A disciple whose body was covered entirely in blood suddenly fell from the sky.

With a thud, he slammed onto the ground, stunning the entire crowd.

“Sect... Sect Master...” That person only had a single breath left, yet he still struggled to reach out his bloodsoaked hand, looking towards a man standing on the right side of the grandstand.

“Kan Yong!” That man suddenly stood up, recognizing the disciple on the ring. No longer in the mood to care about the tournament, he flew down to lift the disciple up. The expressions of the crowd changed as well, as they headed down onto the ring

one after another.

“What happened? Why are you injured so badly?” Office Shell Sect’s Sect Master Gu frowned, and asked in a sullen voice.

“Sect Master, return... return to the sect.” He held onto the Sect Master Gu’s sleeves, and said as he spat out blood. “Heretic practitioners... broke the barrier formation. The sect disciples are...”

“Heretic practitioners!” How was that possible? Heretic practitioners actually dared to openly attack a deity sect!

“Return... immediately! There’s a Demigod...” The disciple spat out his final mouthful of blood after he spoke. He had already drawn his last breath.

This time, everyone else, and not just Office Shell Sect Master, was stunned.

“How is that possible?” Qu Ying was the first to express his doubts.

Heretic practitioners had always acted on their own, and there were hardly any instances of them appearing in a group, let alone working together to attack a deity sect. Furthermore, a Demigod practitioner was present among them! When did a Demigod practitioner appear among the heretic practitioners?

Office Shell Sect Master immediately pulled out his sect’s Order Talisman and circulated spiritual energy into it. However, there wasn’t a single reaction from the talisman. He circulated several times more, but the talisman suddenly popped, burning up and turning into ashes.

“This...” His face instantly paled. If he was still doubtful earlier, then presently, he had certainly grown anxious. Order Talismans were necessary equipment for every Sect Master. With the talisman, no matter where one was, he or she would be able to see the situation of the sect. Furthermore, this talisman was usually



connected to a Great Mountain Barrier Formation. If it were to lose its effects, it would mean that the formation had already been destroyed.

His expression turned cold. Putting his hands together in front of him, he spoke to the crowd of sect masters. “Fellow sect masters and sovereigns, we deity sects had always been working hand in hand. The heretic practitioners presently are acting brazenly, daring to attack my Office Shell Sect. I hope that, as fellow upright deities, everyone here will aid my sect in escaping this predicament.”

When his words fell, the various Sect Masters that were still harmonious with each other earlier, revealed complicated looks one after another. Clearly, they were unwilling to lend their support. Are you kidding? They were here for Ness Cesary Sect in the first place. They were waiting for the tournament to end, and then seek an opportunity to snatch a portion of Skybond Peak. Wouldn't their efforts be wasted if they left now?

“Sect Master Gu, the situation is still unclear, and the legitimacy of this piece of news hasn't been ascertained. You must be act too impulsively.”

“That's right, Sect Master Gu. If Office Shell Sect is indeed in a crisis, we will naturally lend a helping hand. However, this matter has yet to be made clear of, wouldn't it be a little inappropriate if we head over now?”

“Presently, the tournament has yet to end. Many disciples from the various sects have worked hard all for this very moment. If we leave now, the disciples will have to wait many more years for the next opportunity.”

“That's right, that's right. Everything can be discussed after the tournament.”

Sect Master Gu of Office Shell Sect was trembling with anger. He never expected that the various sects would add insult to his

injury. His Order Talisman was already destroyed, yet they actually still dared to say that the situation was unclear. Clearly, they just wanted nothing to do with him.

“Hmph!” Hua Lin however disdainfully snorted. He swept a glance at those Nascent Soul Sect Masters that were filled with unwillingness on their faces, and he unconsciously released his Demigod might. “Didn’t fellow esteemed ones hear from this disciple that there’s a Demigod among the heretic practitioners? They actually dared to attack Office Shell Sect today, and most likely, they might not be too far off from your various sects the next day.”

The expressions of the other Sect Masters changed one after another, and only then did they realize the severity of this issue. This was especially so for those who did not have any Demigod Sovereigns in their sects, looking even more flustered than the rest. He’s right. There’s already a Demigod among the heretic practitioners. They might not dare to force their way into large sects like Ness Cesary Sect, but when it comes to those without a Demigod, wouldn’t they be able to come and go freely?

“Sect Master Gu, if they’re not going, I will go with you.”

“Many thanks, Sovereign Hua Lin!” Office Shell Sect Master’s was instantly filled with gratitude.

Since Hua Lin had spoken up, the other Demigod Sovereigns did not feel appropriate to stand by and watch either, and they had no choice but to express their intentions to head over as well.

With the Demigods taking the lead, the other Sect Masters had no choice but to go too.

Thus, the Great InterSect Tournament was put to a halt. With the Office Shell Sect Master taking the lead, all of the Nascent Soul and Demigod practitioners who lead their parties to the tournament, mightily rushed over to provide aid, while the other disciples went back to their respective homes. Even a large portion

of Nascent Soul practitioners had followed the main group as well, leaving only three of them behind to keep watch.

---

Zhu Yao felt that little tyrant had done well in making his existence known. He had successfully garnered fans from the various sects and clans. It was about time to go home and raise his skills. Once he were to look a little better, she would then slip out again... Uhh, bring him out to garner more fans, she meant.

“Little tyrant.” When Zhu Yao found little tyrant, he was being surrounded by a circle of fans.

“Grandma.”

Zhu Yao curiously looked at the crowd of fans behind him. “These are?”

“They are all my former senior-martial brothers and sisters.” He honestly replied.

“Ou.” So they’re not fans, huh.

“Grandma, are we returning now?”

“Mn.” Zhu Yao pointed at the little bird on her shoulder, who seemed like he was slowly pecking on rice grains. “Little Eighth is already asleep.”

The two of them rose into the air. Just as they were about to fly out of Ness Cesary Sect’s mountain gate, Ye Qingcang came chasing after them.

“Grandma, brother Bai, are you two going to leave already?” A hint of unwillingness flashed across his face.

“Mn.” Zhu Yao nodded.

Little tyrant spoke up as well. “We will meet again if fate allows it!”

Ye Qingcang pondered for a moment. Then, he took out a bottle

and passed it to little tyrant. “Brother Bai, this is an Azoth Formation Pellet I refined. However, I have already formed my Azoth Core, so I am no longer able to use it myself. I believe that you will soon have the prospects of forming your Azoth Core, so I shall give this to you.”

Little tyrant’s face twitched for a moment. It was something good, and he had good intentions as well. However...

He unconsciously recalled a matter from when he was young. Medicinal pellets were refined from corpses of plants like Grandma. Within that pellet was all Grandma. Lots and lots of Grandmas...

Ugh...

“Many thanks to brother Ye for your goodwill, but Grandma has never allowed me to use medicinal pellets.”

A certain Grandma: “...”

→\_\_→

What does this have to do with me? I didn’t forbid you from eating any, it’s just that I don’t have any, alright?

Ye Qingcang turned to look at Zhu Yao.

“Uh... Little Cang, you should keep it to yourself. Refining a rare treasure like the Azoth Formation Pellet is not easy. If you truly wish to give something, why don’t you... convert it into cash and give it to me!” Ever since she found out the importance of spirit stones, her entire being had commercialised. “How much is one Azoth Formation Pellet in the market again...? Ehhh? Little tyrant, why are you pulling me?”

“Brother Ye, goodbye!” Little tyrant pulled onto a certain person who was still trying her best to obtain cash, and flew off. So embarrassing.

“Wait... Wait a minute! How about exchange it for a bag of high

grade spirit stones? It's a very good deal! Actually, why not give me a fifty percent discount... or even thirty percent is fine too!"

Little tyrant flew even faster. As he flew out of Ness Cesary Sect, he ignored a certain person's resentful glare.

"You wastrel!"

"..."

"Inverted elbow."

"..."

"You are unaware of the value of oil and rice when you're not the master of the household!"

"Grandma!"

"What?"

"The spirit stones Sovereign Hua Lin gave us back then hasn't been spent yet!"

"Who ever complains having too much money? You must know how to save for rainy weather, young one. Do you understand the feeling of not being able to eat a single fruit? Do you understand..." Zhu Yao paused. "Heretic practitioners!"

"What?" Little tyrant was startled.

"Not good, Ness Cesary Sect is in trouble!" He sensed the presences of heretic practitioners, and then turned to rush back in the direction they came from.

Not far away from where she was, a blinding white light flashed. The mountain that was still floating in the sky earlier suddenly exploded like extravagant fireworks, the explosion resounded through the clouds. The place was filled with scattered pieces of rocks and thick smoke. The Great Mountain Barrier Formation instantly activated, enveloping Ness Cesary Sect along with the exploded parts.

Little tyrant's and Zhu Yao's expression changed, as they increased their speed and raced back.

However, they were instantly stopped outside by the Great Mountain Barrier Formation, while dust clouds had already filled the place within. This entire situation happened too quickly, and the start of this incident occurred right in the direction of the Main Peak of Ness Cesary Sect. Many disciples from the various clans and sects who had yet to leave were gathered there, and almost eighty percent of Ness Cesary Sect disciples were all there as well.

If they were fortunate, they would have been able to raise their barriers in time. For those who are unlucky, however, they had most likely died on the spot.

The entire place was in chaos. Screams of injured disciples could be heard everywhere.

Above the shattered Main Peak, an enormous teleportation formation suddenly appeared. Dozens of Nascent Soul practitioners appeared from within it. They were dressed in various ways and they comprised of both genders. Furthermore, every single one of them was shrouded with a trace of ominous aura.

Heretic practitioners!

---

Inverted Elbow (胳膊肘儿往外拐): Elbows are usually bent inwards, which signifies "being selfish". While "turning outside", or simply the elbows being inverted, in a derogatory sense, signifies the type of selflessness where you do not recognize what's right or wrong. Basically, this is a metaphor to describe someone who did something harmful to a close friend or colleague.

# Chapter 312: Suicide Attack

---

“Heretic practitioners!” Someone shouted out. The disciples who had just escaped death by an inch earlier, were instantly thrown into panic once more. There were even disciples who flew on their swords in the direction away from the mountain, but were blocked by the Great Mountain Barrier Formation, unable to leave. The formation that could block foreign enemies in the past, was now a cage trapping them within.

“Calm down!” A loud roar resounded. Immediately after, a Nascent Soul pressure was released, silencing the disciples from various sects.

The person who called out was Qu Ying. Presently, his heart was filled with panic as well. Though the enemies were similarly Nascent Soul practitioners, he could not fight off dozens of them after all. There were only three Nascent Soul Elders who remained in the sect, and they were basically not their match. If the place were to grow even more hectic, then it would be disadvantageous for them. Thus, he had no choice but to do his best and lead the disciples far away from the Main Peak, towards a secluded mountain farthest away.

The dozens of Nascent Soul practitioners watched this entire situation unfold with expressionless faces. When that teleportation formation finally disappeared, as though they had suddenly received some sort of order, they began to throw attacks at the crowd.

Qu Ying’s expression paled. He immediately brought up a barrier to protect the crowd of disciples behind him. He had thought that these Nascent Soul practitioners were aiming for Skybond Peak. Never did he expect that they would first initiate attacks on them.

The other two Elders reacted as well, as they raised their hands to support the barrier.

“Hurry, inform Sect Master and the Sovereigns.” Qu Ying turned his head and instructed a disciple.

That disciple had a panicked look as he pulled out a voice transmission talisman with trembling hands. However, no matter how he cast the art, the runes on the talisman would not light up. “Elder, the voice transmission talisman... is ineffective. It can’t connect to Sect Master.”

“Then head out and chase them back here.”

“But... the Great Mountain Barrier Formation has already activated. We can’t get out at all.”

Qu Ying’s expression was deathly pale, and only then did he realize that the sects had tricked. They had done well in luring the tiger out of the mountain. Most likely, these heretic practitioners had long planned on taking down Ness Cesary Sect. Taking the opportunity while the crowd was present at the tournament, they intentionally first made a commotion in the faraway Office Shell Sect, luring them over to provide aid. Once all of the powerful practitioners had left, they then initiated their attack. Furthermore, they had long cut off all of their escape paths.

Qu Ying gritted his teeth so forcefully that they cracked. The heretic practitioners sure had ambitions of wolves. Presently, this place was filled with elites from the various clans and sects. All of the seedlings with great aptitudes were gathered right here. As long as these disciples were killed, the various sects would definitely have a lack of successors, and their decay would be inevitable. Furthermore, now that they had lost the protection of the powerful practitioners, these disciples who had cultivation levels below Azoth Core did not have any strength to retaliate at all.

It was no wonder these heretic practitioners did not charge towards Skybond Peak right as they appeared, but instead, headed directly towards the crowd of disciples. As long as they were to kill



these disciples, it would be akin to destroying all of the sects in the cultivation world.

Because he understood all of these in an instant, his will to stop them from succeeding grew even further. He desperately maintained the barrier, protecting the people within. As for those who did make it into the barrier in time however, he was powerless to help them. He could only watch on as the heretic practitioners massacred them.

Even if that was the case, how could three Nascent Soul practitioners block against dozens of people who had the same cultivation level? In less than fifteen minutes, cracks had already appeared on the barrier. One mystic art after another was still heartlessly bombarding onto the barrier.

Unable to hold it out any longer, Qu Ying puked out a mouthful of blood, and that barrier shattered resoundingly. Lights emitted out from several mystic arts came flying towards the crowd, carrying heavy killing intent.

His heart was filled with despair. Could it be that the heavens wanted Ness Cesary Sect destroyed?

Boom—

Suddenly, countless lightning bolts came descending from the skies, slicing through the Great Mountain Barrier Formation and tearing the air. In an instant, all the pressure was scattered, and the Great Mountain Barrier Formation shattered resoundingly. The entire area was filled with dazzling lightning sparks.

Lightning type mystic arts!

He raised his head in disbelief, only to see two people standing atop the sky. The two people whom he never thought would appear.

“Little... Little martial aunt...” The lightning bolts that seemed to carry the might of the heavens earlier, were actually released from

her body. How could that possibly be!?

In the next moment, the pressure of a Demigod came pressing down on the dozens of Nascent Soul practitioners. Even though the pressure was not descending on his body, Qu Ying felt his heart clench, and the shock on his face grew heavier. A Demigod! The little martial aunt whom everyone had silently acknowledged to have left Ness Cesary Sect, was actually a Demigod Sovereign. Furthermore, this power she possessed... was far richer than the two Sovereigns presently in their sect. He instantly felt as if he was seeing things.

Towards these dozens of heretic practitioners who were clearly here to massacre the entire sect, Zhu Yao did not hold back in the least, as she released her Demigod pressure without concealing it in the slightest. Initially, she had thought that they wouldn't be able to hold up against her, but strangely, they were actually standing firmly, as though they were not affected by her pressure at all. There were even two of them who initiated attacks against her.

The hell! These people must be on steroids!

"Little tyrant, fall back, towards the crowd." Zhu Yao instructed him, and then summoned lightning bolts with a wave of her hand, instantly scattering the mystic arts shot out by the two people. The two white lightning bolts did not dissipate right after, but had instead gone on to attack the two heretic practitioners. Like chains trapping the two of them, the powerful lightning might instantly rendered them powerless.

After Zhu Yao captured the two of them, like firing artillery shells, she once again cast an art, attacking the rest of the heretic practitioners and successfully capturing another two.

With the difference in levels, even if there were dozens of them on the other side, they could not possibly match her.

Only about nine of them remained. Zhu Yao was still

continuously releasing her power, when the remaining few suddenly retreated with haste, towards Skybond Peak at the very top.

As expected, they're here to loot a burning house? Just as she was about to chase after them...

"Yu Yao!" Her master suddenly called out.

Zhu Yao paused, instantly sensing four abnormal spiritual auras behind her. When she turned to look, she saw the four people whom she had captured earlier was beginning to emit out a red glow, and it continued to grow brighter.

"Self-destruction!" Her master's voice clearly resounded in her ears.

Zhu Yao just wanted to say: The hell!

Self-destruction. Nascent Soul practitioners even.

Furthermore, this was even the first time she had experienced a suicide attack. It was already too late to stop them. In a flash, Zhu Yao appeared amidst the crowd. Circulating all of the spiritual energy in her body, she raised a defensive barrier. Then, she hurriedly added a few more mystic arts, crafting a formation in an instant.

In the instant the formation was formed, the four Nascent Soul practitioners exploded like nuclear bombs, and the blasts bloomed in all directions. Her line of sight was instantly enveloped by the white light of the explosion. The entire Ness Cesary Sect turned into ashes right at this moment. All of the plant life and buildings had all turned into mere flying ashes. Even the floating mountain that they were standing on, had instantly turned into dust.

If not for the formation Zhu Yao placed, even if they were not caught up with the explosion, the crowd would have already fallen to their deaths.

Even though Zhu Yao was a Demigod, she was unable to hold up

against the self-destruction of four Nascent Soul practitioners at once. Adding that she had to protect the few hundreds of disciples behind her as well, for a moment, she felt her mind trembling, and there were even traces of the spiritual energy in her body going into a rampage. After finally managing to safely land the crowd onto the ground, she opened her mouth and puked out blood.

“Granny!”

“Grandma!”

Little tyrant and Ye Qingcang shouted out. Zhu Yao immediately sat down to adjust herself. Taking a few deep breaths, she then took a look within herself. Probably because she possessed the Chaos Origin spiritual energy, she realized the spiritual energy in her meridians had already calmed down. The lightning spiritual energy which she guided out earlier was in a rampage earlier, but was immediately suppressed by those transparent strands of spiritual energy.

In an instant, she had already opened her eyes.

“Little martial... Sovereign.” Qu Ying took a step forward, his face was filled with immense guilt. Never would he have expected that the person who saved the entire Ness Cesary Sect, would be her! He opened his mouth several times, as if he wanted to say something. However, he felt as if no matter what he were to say now, it was already too late.

“Do a roll call.” Zhu Yao however did not care about his complicated emotions. Looking around, he realized that not only Ness Cesary Sect, even the entire forest had turned into a flat piece of land by the explosion earlier. From her line of sight, everything was just scorched earth.

As expected of a weapon of mass destruction. If she hadn't been here earlier, most likely, not a single person from Ness Cesary Sect would have survived. She could not help but question just what were these heretic practitioners trying to accomplish. Normally

speaking, though heretic practitioners had ruthless personalities and would not hesitate to use any means to accomplish their goals, they were people who cherished their lives the most as well. To self-destruct without any hesitation, and four of them altogether even, was indeed a little strange. It seemed like it was not as simple as taking revenge or robbing resources. There must be an even larger goal behind all these.

“Hurry and look up in the air!” Suddenly, a disciple exclaimed out.

The crowd raised their heads one after another, only to see a lonely single mountain floating in the air.

“Skybond Peak!” Qu Ying stared with wide eyes. “How... How is that possible?”

The self-destruction earlier had even destroyed the forest within a hundred kilometers radius, yet Skybond Peak was still intact!

“There’s people over there! It’s those heretic practitioners!”

There were indeed several people standing on their flying swords in the vicinity of Skybond Peak. They were the few remaining Nascent Soul practitioners from earlier. They distanced themselves several meters away from each other, forming a strange formation. Furthermore, the dazzling lights of a formation could be seen between them.

“Hurry and look at Skybond Peak!” Another disciple cried out. The entire Skybond Peak suddenly shook like a blurred image for a moment, and then, in a blink of an eye, they disappeared in front of everyone’s eyes. It was as if it had been erased from the sky itself.

“This... What in the world...” The crowd exchanged glances as they astonishingly watched this strange event unfold. They could not believe such a large floating mountain like Skybond Peak would disappear from everyone’s eyes just like that. Even those

few Nascent Soul practitioners had disappeared without a trace.

Even Zhu Yao could no longer sense their presences in the slightest.

The hell, just what in the world was that formation?

“Teleportation formation!” Her master’s voice resounded in the depths of her heart.

Zhu Yao was startled. “Can teleportation formations transfer an entire mountain?” Those few practitioners were the Foolish Old Men, right!?

“That formation must have been activated by an unique energy, and not spiritual energy.”

“Unique energy...” Zhu Yao’s heart clenched. She suddenly recalled that Pervert Cheng from that dimensional space. “Is it an unique energy like Little Eighth’s blood of a God Race?”

“Yes, but it’s not godly energy.”

If it isn’t godly energy, then what is it?

“A formation like this isn’t capable of transferring long distances. Its exit most certainly requires a large amount of spiritual energy as support for it to succeed. Most likely, the place the mountain has been transferred to, possesses spiritual energy far richer and denser than usual.”

Spiritual energy far richer and denser than usual? Zhu Yao was startled for a moment. It seemed as though something was popping up in her mind, but she just could not recall what it was at all.

---

“Foolish Old Men” is a reference to the Chinese fable “Foolish Old Man Removes the Mountains”. You can look it up on Google, though be warned that the attached picture on the Wikipedia article about this is a little... ahem... lewd.

# Chapter 313: Protect the Dandelions

---

“Grandma, do you know the goal of these heretic practitioners?” Little tyrant frowned as he asked. “I’m getting the feeling that Skybond Peak isn’t simply their goal.”

Ye Qingcang nodded as well. “Furthermore, these people seem to be extremely familiar with formations and barriers. They appeared within the sect without making the slightest sound.”

“Barrier!” Zhu Yao felt a light bulb flashing in her mind. She instantly recalled the matter that she couldn’t think of earlier, and immediately after, her heart skipped a beat. Gritting her teeth, she cursed out. “The hell!”

She turned around, and with her feet on her flying sword, she flew quickly in a certain direction.

“Grandma...”

“Granny...”

Before the two could even react, they could no longer see Zhu Yao’s figure. They exchanged glances, and then, pulling out their flying swords one after another, they chased after her.

Zhu Yao flew extremely quickly, panic filled the depths of her heart. She wished that she could teleport right in this instant. She finally recalled of a nearby place where there was dense and rich spiritual energy. Tranquil Valley! The demons’ gathering site she appeared in. Though the amount of spiritual energy within the valley itself was extremely scarce, the barrier outside the valley was constructed with condensed spiritual energy. Back then, with just a slight touch of her hand, the spiritual energy that seeped into her body directly pushed her towards the Foundation level. It could be seen just how dense the spiritual energy within it was.

Most likely, the spiritual energy of the entire Tranquil Valley was being used by that barrier, in order to protect the demons within.

According to her master, such a large-scale teleportation formation would not be able to send something too far away, while Tranquil Valley was the closest to Ness Cesary Sect. The more Zhu Yao thought about it, the more panicked she became. If those heretic practitioners truly did transfer Skybond Peak over there, then the demons at the valley would...

She was not naive to think that heretic practitioners would have such good hearts to let off the residents that were living there.

Zhu Yao flew quickly, and the span of a few breaths, she arrived at Tranquil Valley. However, from afar, she could see an enormous mountain floating in the sky, and it was slowly sinking into Tranquil Valley.

Her heart instantly beat faster, feeling enraged to point of wanting to cuss out at their moms. Sizzling flames of fury seeped out. These heretic practitioners sure are motherf\*\*king imbeciles. At first, she thought that they would have merely transported Skybond Peak over. Looking at things now, they were actually thinking of sinking Skybond Peak into Tranquil Valley itself, wanting to use the advantageous barrier of Tranquil Valley to conceal it!

If Skybond Peak were to fall, it would be strange if those demons did not turn into flattened pancakes.

Zhu Yao's heart clenched. While she charged into the barrier, she began to chant an art. Several dozens of lightning streams flew towards the few Nascent Soul practitioners. The formation between them instantly scattered, and they flew off in several different directions. With the lack of the formation supporting it, Skybond Peak began to descend even faster.

Zhu Yao did not even have the time left to cuss out at their moms as she directly flew to the depths of the valley. Like a construction jack, she then desperately pushed against the entire mountain, slowing down its descent.



“Grandma...” Little tyrant and Ye Qingcang came rushing over at this moment as well, as they looked at Zhu Yao whose face was flustered red from supporting the mountain.

“Head down, scatter the demons. Have them flee to the edges.” Zhu Yao gritted her teeth as she held on.

“But, you...”

“Hurry and go! Just say it’s ‘Grand Qian’s’ order. They will follow you two.” At the brink of life and death, she had no choice but to become Grand Qian once more.

Ye Qingcang and little tyrant exchanged glances for a moment. Then, as they gritted teeth, they obediently turned around and went to scatter the indigenous people.

Zhu Yao took in a deep breath, and then circulated her spiritual energy to meticulously cover Skybond Peak. She wanted to use her spiritual energy to move it out of Tranquil Valley, however, she saw those few Nascent Soul practitioners coming back. They did not initiate their attacks at the very first moment, instead, they simply looked in her direction with cold and expressionless faces.

“Just who are you people? And what’s your goal?” Zhu Yao asked in a sunken voice.

However, they did not have any reaction!

A few moments later, one of them suddenly flew towards her, the spiritual energy around his body began to tremble intensely.

The hell! Self-destruction again!

These people must have entered a cult, right? Why did they like killing themselves so much?

Like hell I will allow you to self-destruct here!

“Little Eighth!” Zhu Yao shouted out loudly.

A ray of red light suddenly charged into the skies, the cry of a Phoenix resounded through the clouds as boundless fiery light

shone across the horizon. A fiery sea of purple flames instantly formed in the air, and any object in contact with the flames was instantly turned into ash. Even the heretic practitioner that came charging over disappeared into the flames.

The entire Skybond Peak was surrounded by purple flames. An enormous purple Phoenix occupied the sky, dancing and spiralling. With every flap of its wings, a large sea of flames would emerge. The Skybond Peak that was still incomparably large earlier, like an ice-cream which was placed in an oven, began to slowly melt, decreasing in size at a speed visible to the naked eyes. In a few moments, Skybond Peak was reduced to one-fifth of its original size.

“Great, good job, Little Eighth!” Zhu Yao silently gave his little brother a praise.

The moment those words fell, the Phoenix in the sky suddenly seemed to have its flames extinguished. With a sizzling sound, it returned to the size of a pigeon and fell down. All of the flames earlier disappeared without a trace.

The hell, do you have to be that weak to praise!?

Zhu Yao caught him. “Little Eighth...” How can you run out of battery at the key moment?

“So tired!” Little Eighth pattered towards her shoulder, and then, like a dead bird, he laid on it, motionless. “So tired. I want to sleep! Seventh elder sister, you’re abusing a young Phoenix.”

“...” The hell, you didn’t even finish your work, yet you have the face to say I abused you!?

Zhu Yao had no choice but to cast the Nine Heavenly Lightning Art and summon a lightning bolt with the thickness of a bucket from the skies, instantly striking onto Skybond Peak which had long been burnt beyond recognition. The entire mountain began to turn into countless pieces of shattered rocks, exploding in all

directions. She then immediately cast a wind-type art to blow all of the shattered rocks out of the barrier of Tranquil Valley.

“Yu Yao!” Her master’s voice once again resounded.

In the next moment, several air tearing noises came from her side. Zhu Yao dodged to the side as several icicles brushed past her body. In the next moment, a woman wielding a crescent wheel knife came attacking her.

Zhu Yao immediately summoned a spiritual sword and parried, the crescent wheel knife instantly shattered into two.

Not the slightest bit of shock could be seen from the female heretic practitioner’s face, as she summoned yet another spiritual sword to attack Zhu Yao. The remaining few Nascent Soul heretic practitioners surrounded her at this moment as well. Most of them summoned spiritual swords and icicles, and the attacks rained down in a dense manner.

Zhu Yao placed down a defensive barrier to block against the rain of attacks. Though the attacks were concentrated, she was not afraid at all. At the very most, dealing with them was but an inconvenience. Furthermore, she had to be careful and prevent the attacks from falling onto Tranquil Valley, so it was inevitable for her to be a little tied up.

Just as she was busy dealing with the attacks, the spiritual energy surrounding the female practitioner closest to her, suddenly began to tremble once more.

The hell, just how dedicated are they to self-destruction? They will self-destruct whenever they get the chance. Are you all paparazzis?

Zhu Yao grew anxious. Turning a lightning stream into a whip, she attached it onto a spiritual sword and strongly swung it. The female practitioner’s Dantian was struck head-on, stopping her spiritual energy from gathering. Under this strike, her spiritual

energy scattered completely, so her self-destruction naturally stopped. Furthermore, she received a grave injury and she began to puke out a large amount of blood. However, she merely paused for a moment before continuing throwing other mystic arts to attack her. Not a single change could be seen on her face.

This wasn't right! Something was very wrong. The longer Zhu Yao fought, the stronger the strange feeling she had in the depths of her heart. Something was very amiss... with these few people. The way they were attacking was akin to throwing away their lives. However, every single one of them was strangely calm, as if they were not afraid of pain.

Are they really villains? Aren't villains supposed to be talkative? Before every single fight, they will always say a couple of lines to threaten, instill fear or gloat at our demise, right? Looking at their behaviour, they had clearly picked up the wrong cold and mighty characters' scripts!

It was if... they were puppets that only knew how to attack.

Zhu Yao whipped broken another heretic practitioner's Dantian when he was prepared to self-destruct, as the suspicion in the depths of her heart grew even heavier. Just what in the world are these heretic practitioners?

Those few heretic practitioners suddenly stopped, and then scattered quickly in all directions. Zhu Yao thought that they wanted to flee, but they then stopped not far away, and the distance between them was coincidentally out of the range of the lightning streams in her hand.

In the next moment, the remaining eight people began to self-destruct their Nascent Souls.

Zhu Yao's heart skipped a beat! The hell! The hell! The hell! Do you guys have to be so persistent in dying!?

If eight of them were to self-destruct together, it would be akin to

a nuclear bomb!

And from the looks of things, she would be unable to stop every single one of them in time. As long as one of them were to succeed, Tranquil Valley below would be completely doomed.

I definitely musn't let them self-destruct. However, even if she were to expand her barrier like before, it was impossible to protect the entirety of Tranquil Valley.

What to do? What to do?

Realmspirit, you ass, hurry and lend me a hand! Earth is about to be destroyed by nuclear weapons!

The red glow from their bodies grew even denser, and just as they were about to explode...

Suddenly!

"Pea..." A green light flashed from her chest. An enormous pea appeared in the sky and with an 'aahh' sound, it opened its mouth wide. The eight people who were still in the process of self-destructing earlier, instantly turned into eight rays of light and entered Peapea's mouth.

"Ahmmuu!" Peapea closed its mouth and then returned to the size of a basketball, before flying back to her hand.

Zhu Yao: ... What happened just now?

"Peapea, why did you eat something strange again?" Zhu Yao could not help but want to pull open its mouth. "Putting aside the demonic beast you teleported back then, they're living human beings this time! Even if you're hungry, you can't just eat anything! It doesn't matter if you get gastric pain, but what about my master who's stuck in there as well!?"

"Pea..." Peapea rolled about, and then suddenly opened its mouth. "Burp~" It let out a resounding burp.

A light white wisp of air floated out from its mouth, and Zhu Yao

trembled from the sight of it.

Was it her imagination? Why did she feel that the wisp of air had the figure of a human, and that it had a head, face, and body? Furthermore, the word “soul” seemed to be written on its clothes.

“Peapea...”

Zhu Yao instantly went crazy. This wasn’t teleportation! Peapea had truly just eaten humans! And it had even spat out a soul! “Don’t turn into a zombie, hey! This is a cultivation novel, not post-apocalyptic world novel, hey!!”

“Yu Yao...” Her master’s voice suddenly sounded from within Peapea. “Those few heretic practitioners are not humans.”

“Eh?” What did he mean?

“Their bodies are entirely covered in deathly aura. They had been dead for a long while, but their souls were forcefully trapped within their bodies, turning into puppets.”

“Puppets?” Zhu Yao was startled. “But they are capable of using mystic arts, and they were casting them with ease.” If they were puppets, they could not have possibly retained the cultivation levels of their former lives.

Yu Yan sank into silence for a moment. “Using mystic arts naturally require costs. Earlier, I mentioned before that the formation they used require an unique spiritual energy to perform the teleportation.”

“Unique spiritual energy...” Zhu Yao opened her eyes wide.

“They used the souls that were sealed within their physical bodies!”

“...”

## Chapter 314: Victims' Delusional Stone

---

After these people died, their souls were sealed within their physical bodies and could not escape, and their bodies were then refined into puppets by someone, this was what her master meant. The person controlling them was using the energy of their own souls to cast the mystic arts they had in their former lives. The more they used arts, the more their souls would be consumed.

Zhu Yao felt a chill as she heard this. Just what kind of venomous mystic art was this? This was clearly an act of scattering people's souls. It was no wonder the soul she saw earlier was but a thin wisp of smoke.

“Then what Peapea did earlier was to...?”

“It's Bai Yuan's Dantian.” Yu Yan replied with a sunken voice. “The purest water of River of Forgetfulness found at its very source. That was why it was able to separate the deceased souls from their bodies.”

As he spoke, Peapea consecutively burped out seven times. With every burp, white smoke with the shape of a human being would emit out from its mouth, and every single one of them was incredibly thin. They were several times weaker than the ghosts she saw in the Netherworld. It was as if they could be scattered with just a light breeze of the wind.

Zhu Yao cast an Afterlife Art, sending those souls into the Netherworld. Pondering about this, the appearance of these few heretic practitioners were truly extremely ominous. Just who in the world could refine such human-shaped puppets?

Back then, no matter how much of a bastard Cheng Qingdiao was to use demonic beasts for experiments, his goal was to ascend. The level of this experiment had however jumped to experimentation on primates, right into human experimentation. This development was too quick, she couldn't process it at all! Just what kind of

world did she find herself in? Why was every single person here a technological genius!?

Zhu Yao had Peapea revert back to the size of a pearl and then kept it. With a chest filled with suspicions, she flew back to Tranquil Valley. The appearance of Skybond Peak earlier had torn through a hole in Tranquil Valley's barrier. Strangely, the barrier seemed to possess a self-regeneration ability, as it was already beginning to close the tear.

A self-regenerating barrier was very rarely seen! At the very least, based on her knowledge, there hadn't been a single one. She wondered just who built it?

Wait a minute!

Earlier, those Nascent Soul practitioners wanted to use this barrier to hide Skybond Peak. In other words, they knew from the very beginning that it could regenerate itself?

"Master, have you ever seen such a barrier?" Zhu Yao asked a little anxiously.

"No."

Even her master did not know about it, yet those puppets were aware of it. Could it be that the person controlling those puppets was related to the barrier of Tranquil Valley? Zhu Yao felt a chill in her heart. Just who was that person? What did that person want to do to Tranquil Valley? The ones living there were just indigenous people with IQ that had stepped into the borders of idiocy!

"Master, are you able to find out who placed down this barrier?"

Yu Yan was silent for a moment, before replying. "There should be three thousand minor formations within this formation, and all of their properties are different. It had circulated on its own for a very long time, and does not require to draw spiritual energy from practitioners. If we wish to find the practitioner who constructed this formation, I'm afraid it might not be easy. However, as long as



it's a formation, there should be a formation core and a mantra to activate it.”

Zhu Yao's eyes shone. “You're saying it's possible to find the formation core in this valley?”

“Mn.”

If the formation core could be found, then at the very least, she could find out some useful information.

Little tyrant and Ye Qingcang came right at this moment. Zhu Yao immediately took the strong men in by force, and then headed to look for the formation core. Taking the opportunity when the barrier was still regenerating, there should be ripples of spiritual energy emitting out from the formation core.

She immediately expanded her divine sense to the maximum, and in an instant, the entire Tranquil Valley was within her eyes. She had at first thought it would be easy, but because spiritual energy was pouring in from outside the barrier due to the tear, there were several places emitting out ripples of spiritual energy. She remembered every single one of these locations, and then headed to each one to have a look.

In the end, she found an anomaly in front of a stone wall. That stone wall which looked regular at first glance, did not look any different from the rest of the stone walls all around Tranquil Valley, however, one could faintly sense spiritual energy seeping out of it, though not really evident. Strangely, when she swept her divine sense across it, she did not feel the slightest bit of obstruction, but an endless stretch of an empty, void world.

“Grandma, what is that?” Little tyrant suddenly pointed at a small shattered rock beneath the wall.

That rock did not look all that unique, however, after careful observation, she realized a hint of golden light would occasionally flash from it, as though it was emitting out flowing light when

sunlight refracted from its surface. However, this refraction was occurring a little more frequently.

It seemed like this was the formation core.

Zhu Yao immediately descended onto the ground with her flying sword, and then walked there at a quick pace. Squatting down, she carefully looked at that rock. Suddenly, that rock seemed to have its power turned off, as it stopped shining. Was it just her imagination?

“Little tyrant, the rock that we were looking at earlier was this one, right?”

“Mn.” He nodded. “It’s this exact piece.”

“Then why isn’t it shining anymore?” The barrier in the sky was still not yet completely restored either. “It can’t have run out of battery, right?”

Zhu Yao repeatedly sized up the piece of rock, and had even used her divine sense to inspect it. There was not the slightest bit of irregularity to it at all, let alone any flowing of spiritual energy.

Could it be that she was wrong? Zhu Yao looked around her surroundings, stood up, and then looked at the large stone wall in front. She knocked on it forcefully as a test, and it was a stone wall alright. It was rather hard too, and it did not look like a formation core either. Why did she not sense anything when she tried inspecting it with her divine sense then!?

“Granny!” Ye Qingcang suddenly cried out, as he pointed beneath her feet with a shocked look.

“What is it?”

“The... rock, I saw it moving a little earlier.”

Zhu Yao was startled. She carefully looked at that piece of rock from earlier. It was still quietly staying put on the ground, without any noticeable difference to be seen. “Are you certain?”

“Mn.” He heavily nodded.

Zhu Yao then inspected it carefully again.

It was a formation that not a single person had discovered for many years, and even the demons were unaware of it as well. Could it be that this formation core was able to move on its own? This was simply too intelligent, right?

However, even after looking at it for such a long time, she didn't notice anything at all. She had no choice but to give up.

In the end, when she took two steps back, Ye Qingcang once again sounded out. “It... It moved again.”

She had no choice but to inspect it again, but she found nothing off about it again.

The moment she stood up, Ye Qingcang called out for the third time. “Granny, believe me. It moved again just now.”

The hell! You're making me out as a fool here!

This time, Zhu Yao had kept an eye on it, and then carefully compared it from before. Indeed, several centimeters of the soil around the rock had loosened a little. The rock had truly moved.

“This can't possibly be a rock spirit, right?” Zhu Yao nudged the rock and rolled it about. It was completely impossible to discern that it had turned into a spirit. “Little Cang, if you have an eye disease, you have to cure it!”

“Granny...” Ye Qingcang felt like crying.

“Alright, alright. I believe you.” Zhu Yao was irritated as well. With a flip of her hand, a ball of flames appeared above her palm. “Whether it can move or not, we will know once we test it out, right?”

She intentionally leaned the flames towards the rock. In the end, before she had even gotten close, that rock immediately rolled far away.

The rock once again emitted out the golden glow they saw earlier. Two large words flashing with golden light, like captions, appeared above the rock – You beast!

Zhu Yao: “...”

Little tyrant: “...”

Ye Qingcang: “...”

Was it cussing at her? It definitely was, right!?

Those two words slowly floated up. Like a projection, it floated up a meter high. Not only did the words grow larger, they became bolder as well. And then, a golden light flashed as the words changed – You’re not even letting off a rock!

Yo, it sure has a huge temper. It seemed like it was truly the formation core, and an intelligent type at that.

“Be obedient and stay put!” Zhu Yao immediately stepped forward to grab it. “Let me look at you.”

That rock however was extremely defiant, flying right up. The row of words above it changed once more – What are you trying to do to my body?

“...” Why did she feel like she was an evil tyrant trying to tease a young girl? She just wanted to inspect the heart of the formation core and deduce the shape of the formation.

The rock nudged and then flew five meters away – Don’t come over here, I rather die!

Everyone present: “...”

Just how much did it hate people touching it? You’re a freaking formation core, do you have to be that concerned about your chastity!?

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. She immediately cast an art to form a net of spiritual energy in the air, blocking the formation core rock’s escape route. Then, as she retracted her

hand, the rock came flying towards her.

The formation core rock began to forcefully smash against the spiritual energy net, but its effort was in vain as it continued to fly towards her.

The words above the rock began to change like a flooding message board.

– You greedy beast who covets my body, don't touch me!

– You all will regret this!

– Don't, don't touch me!

– Please let me go?

– Ah! Don't!

– It hurts~

Zhu Yao: “...”

Little tyrant: “...”

Ye Qingcang: “...”

The hell, just what version of intelligence does this rock have? Just what kind of things are inside its head? I clearly haven't done anything yet!

Zhu Yao held onto the rock with a darkened expression, and she could not help but add. “Don't be afraid, I will be gentle.”

The two little ones: “...”

Eh? This seems to be developing in a strange direction?

Just as Zhu Yao was about to insert a strand of divine sense into the rock in her hand, it suddenly began to heat up. As Zhu Yao was not prepared for this, her hand fumbled and loosened. The rock immediately flew out and emitted out a light dozen times more blinding than before. Even Zhu Yao could not help but narrow her eyes.

A row of words once again floated above the rock – You guys will pay for violating me.

The hell am I violating!? -Faints!-

This old lady did not do anything at all. Also, just who in the world has the fetish of violating a piece of rock!?

Just as Zhu Yao was about to retort, she shockingly realized she could not move any part of her body at all. What was going on?

“Grandma!” Little tyrant suddenly cried out.

Zhu Yao looked forward. The stone wall that did not have the slightest of movement earlier, suddenly revealed an enormous golden formation, as foreign symbols filled the entire wall. Before she could even clearly see what the formation looked like, she was assaulted by a powerful pulling force.

Even little tyrant and Ye Qingcang was sucked into the formation. Right before she entered the formation, she could faintly see a new row of words appearing above the rock.

– Other than my owner, no one else is allowed to touch me.

In the next second, light flashed in the surroundings. The place was filled with golden flowing lights, and they flowed towards the back, as though her entire being was speeding forward.

In less than ten minutes, she once again fell downwards. Right at the moment she was about to land face flat on the ground, the restriction on her body was released. She hurriedly cast a wind-type art, preventing the three of them from meeting the fate of being crippled in time. However, her head was still stuck into a pile of mud.

Pueeh...

It had been a long time since she crawled on the ground. Just as she was about to check on the other two, she heard a female voice behind her.

“You did pretty well, rock spirit.”

# Chapter 315: You Should Have a Heart Demon Inside You

---

A woman in black robes suddenly appeared in this barren space. She had a very bewitching appearance, and charm was exuding out from every single one of her movements. Raising her hand, she looked like she wanted to touch the rock that was floating in the air. However, her hand simply passed through it, and her entire body swayed a little right after.

“You did pretty well, rock spirit.”

That rock sparkled with golden light, a row of words appeared above it – At your service, mistress!

“These people will definitely die from the heart demon, and they sought it themselves as well. Though it’s a pity about those puppets of mine... However, this way, no one will know about my mistress... Ehhh!?” That woman’s expression gravely changed, as she looked at Zhu Yao who was crawling up, astonished. “Y-Y-You... Why are you fine?”

“Ah?” Zhu Yao patted off the dust from her clothes. “Should something have happened to me?”

“You... Why aren’t you in deep slumber, trapped within your heart demon?” Her eyes were wide open, and her face was filled with utter disbelief.

“How should I know?” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “Most likely, your heart demon system has short-circuited?”

“Impossible... Everyone possesses obsessions, and through desires will one fall into a land of dreams.” She muttered. “Everyone has their own heart demon, so how you possibly not have one?”

“And you’re blaming me?” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “If you can’t figure out this problem, then don’t think about it



anymore. Let's have a nice chat about what you're plotting here, shall we?"

Zhu Yao immediately threw a lightning bolt over. With a loud bang, she instantly turned the soul and rock charred black on the outside, and tender on the inside.

Rock: — What happened to the promise of having a nice chat?

Woman: Same question!

Zhu Yao immediately summoned a set of soul imprisoning chains, trapping that woman's soul. With a flash of lightning light, like a screen with bad reception, the woman's figure distorted a few times, before slowly turning white and falling onto the ground.

Seeing this, the rock spirit shone with a brilliant golden light and charged right at Zhu Yao.

Not even bothering to glance at it, she sent a slap right towards it, instantly slamming the rock into the ground. With the pressure of a Demigod released, that rock instantly lost the strength to retaliate. Three words appeared above it.

— Ah. It hurts~

Zhu Yao did not pull any punches this time, as she directly sat right on the rock. Her eyes swept towards the white soul on the ground.

"Speak. Were you the one who launched a surprise raid on Ness Cenary Sect, and created those Nascent Soul puppets?"

That woman was unable to resist, yet she still pulled the corner of her lips and laughed out ominously. "So what if I am?"

"Why did you do all those things? What's your goal?" Zhu Yao continued to ask.

The woman did not reply immediately, and her eyes were filled with contempt. "Heheh, you think you have what it takes to know

of my masterplan?”

Zhu Yao flipped her hand, and lightning sparks once again filled her entire body. “With what I’m capable of, you don’t even have the strength to retaliate at all.”

“Speak. Just what are you trying to do? Who is this mistress you speak of?”

The woman’s expression stiffened for a moment before immediately returning to normal. She did not reply, but the rock which Zhu Yao was sitting on could not hold it in any longer. Golden light shone brightly. As though it was afraid Zhu Yao wouldn’t see it, the light even tilted towards the side, revealing a string of words.

- Mistress will never forgive you!

Zhu Yao was startled for a moment, and right after, she thought of an idea. “I really wish to see how is your mistress going to take me on?”

– Hmph, my mistress is incredible. Everything in this world should listen to her commands.

“Yo, who doesn’t know how to make up a lie? Where is your mistress? Call her over here and let me have a look!”

The rock seemed to have grown anxious, as golden light shone even more brightly than before. Just as a string of words were about to appear...

Suddenly, the trapped soul emitted out a bright red light, instantly breaking through Zhu Yao restraints and then flew in her direction.

Zhu Yao’s figure moved, taking a few consecutive steps back.

That woman however stopped next to the rock. With her five fingers hooked, she suddenly struck at the rock. Her fingertips passed directly through the rock.

“Hmph, useless!”

The rock that was still shining with brilliant golden light earlier, flashed a few times, revealing a final string of words.

— You’re, not mistress’s envoy...

Then, it completely dimmed. It no longer had any signs of life, turning into a regular shattered rock.

The hell, what’s this situation? Internal conflict?

Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. Just as she thought about restraining the female soul again, the red light from her body shone even brighter. This simply looked just like – self-destruction!

The hell, why self-destruction again?

Zhu Yao cast an art, wanting to stop her. However, strong winds suddenly blew around her, instantly blocking her entire line of sight. That ominous and slightly complacent laughter sounded from within.

“This dimensional space will soon be mine. The Three Realms will all be mine!”

Three Realms? This person’s goal is to unify the Three Realms? Isn’t this something the Devil race always desire for? Does a soul like you have to really act like an avant-garde?

“I suggest that instead of stopping me, why don’t you keep watch over those two who had fallen into their heart demons? They are destined to die here!”

When her words fell, a powerful push force assaulted her. Zhu Yao immediately retreated towards the area next to little tyrant and Ye Qingcang, and then brought up a barrier.

An enormously loud explosion resounded. The woman was all blown apart, and her pieces scattered in all directions. Red light filled her front line of sight, and only dense smoke could be seen from all around her.

Zhu Yao cast a wind-type art, slowly dispersing the dust and smoke. The place where that woman was standing on earlier was now replaced by an enormous hole.

Died?

What happened to the promise of unifying the Three Realms?

Was it all talk?

“Master?” Come and resolve my doubts.

“That woman earlier was most likely a strand of divine sense away from her original body.” Yu Yan said in a deep voice.

“Divine sense?” Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. “And I thought she was a ghost.” She clearly had yin energy circulating around her body.

“That was just a disguise.”

“In other words, her original body isn’t here.”

“Mn. She most likely knew that she isn’t able to defeat you with just a strand of divine sense, and thus decided to self-destruct.”

Being capable of separating her divine sense proved that she was most likely a Demigod. The number of Demigods in the cultivation world could be counted by hand, yet she had never seen one that looked like that woman.

Furthermore, who was this mistress the rock spirit spoke of?

Why was she getting the feeling that this instance was becoming even more difficult?

\*\*\*

A thousand kilometers away.

A person in white robe wobbled, and a scent of blood suffused from her body, as if she was about to puke out blood. Clenching her fists, she suppressed the urge down.

In front of her, a kind-looking middle-aged man walked over. He

bowed, and then said. “Sovereign, we were still a step too late. Office Shell Sect is already... Haah, we did not discover any remnants of those heretic practitioners. What should we do now? Do we still head back to Ness Cesary Sect to continue the tournament?”

“Mn, let us go!”

---

It had already been four hours, yet little tyrant and Ye Qingcang was still asleep. Zhu Yao had used several methods, yet no matter what she did, she could not wake up the two from their deep slumber. She had even tried to enter the two’s divine senses, but no matter how she called out to them, they did not have the slightest of reactions.

It felt as though the two of them had already entered a deep state of hypnosis, and were unable to wake up no matter what.

Furthermore, as time went past, their expressions worsened. It looked as though they had encountered a difficult question that they could not solve.

Earlier, that woman mentioned that the two of them had fallen to their heart demons. Heart demons originated from the desires found in the deepest parts of the humans’ hearts. How could she possibly know what their desires were!? If they wanted to escape, they had no choice but to rely on their own realizations. Zhu Yao instantly felt a sense of powerlessness.

What to do? At the very least, it would be good to see what kind of heart demons they had!

Ting!

Just as she pondered about it, a familiar sound suddenly rang. The notification bell that was silent since the start of this version finally rang once more, even Zhu Yao was startled a little.

A conversation window instantly appeared before her, and a

string of damnable words were on it.

“Heart Demon Mirror” Artifact. A good partner for souls. Do you want to know the secrets of others? Do you want to know the other face of the person you love? The Heart Demon Mirror can satisfy all of your requests. Let all secrets be exposed, and let all lies be forced upon ghosts! Heart Demon Mirror, an item that you deserve to have. The rights to interpretation of this product lies with the user. If it is used to break the law, then it’s all done by the user!

Why did she feel as though she had become a paparazzi.

Ting!

Please choose:

*Go alone (That’s a little lonely)*

*Go with a partner (With a man and woman paired, work will never be tiring)*

*Go with a group of three (Dear, you have very unique tastes)*

*Go with a group of many people (Cover your eyes, those below eighteen years of age please exercise caution)*

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. What’s with this immoral set of options? Was this truly not a selection panel for certain unhealthy videos?

Though she had long known that Realmspirit had terrible morals, she did not expect it to be this incredibly horrendous.

With a darkened expression, she tapped on B.

The conversation window flashed, instantly disappearing before her eyes. What replaced it was a pair of screens, which looked as though had come from a television set. They appeared above little tyrant and Ye Qingcang, who were still lying on the ground. Furthermore, they were even fifty-one inches in length, and had high definition.

She was beginning to feel even more like a paparazzi who was peeking at others’ secrets, what to do?

“Sound Storing Stone?” Her master’s cold voice suddenly rang in her ears.

Zhu Yao was startled, as she directly pulled Peapea out. “Master?”

Peapea flashed with a white glow, and her master’s figure appeared next to her right after. “This floating object is very similar to the ‘Sound Storing Stone’ (television) of your world!”

“You can see it!?” Zhu Yao was completely dumbfounded. Why did she feel as though her master’s functionalities had leveled up after that trip to her world?

“Mn!” He nodded. He stepped forward, and then actually tapped on the “On” button, something he had taught himself to do.

Zhu Yao: “...”

The screens flashed, and then slowly showcased the videos. Zhu Yao was able to recognize little tyrant in the middle at first glance. Was that his heart demon?

The content of the videos was rather similar to that precognitive dream she had back then, but the scenario was very hectic, and that it was starting from when little tyrant was young. Similar to what Zhu Yao knew, he was first an astounding disciple in the Inner Sect. However, after he failed to establish his Foundation and exposed his penta spirit veins, he was chased out of the sect. What’s different from reality was, she did not appear. Little tyrant became a wandering practitioner, but because of his cultivation level which had dropped to incredibly severely, he was bullied everywhere he went, and had gone through a very difficult life.

The final scene was little tyrant curling himself up in the corner of a wall, trembling. Then, an ominous voice resounded. “No one cares about you, no one is worried about you. It’s fake. Everything is fake...”

Even little tyrant’s actual face was beginning to turn green, as a

strand of deathly aura rose from his body.

“Little tyrant!” Zhu Yao could not help but call out.

The person in the screen seemed to have paused for a moment. The person who curled up into a ball, slowly raised his head. His pair of eyes slowly regained clarity, as he shouted out. “Grandma?”

In an instant, the entire scene began to collapse and shatter...

Zhu Yao was stunned as well. Her voice was effective? Joy filled the depths of her heart, only to see that scene change right after, as a new scenery replaced the former.

The hell, there’s a series of heart demons?



# Chapter 316: Heart Demon Immunity Skill

---

The scenes shown on the screen continued to change. Every single time, the two of them would experience different lives, yet they were all different from their lives in reality. Various incredible developments would surface halfway through, and they would routinely have their hearts questioned, with every question deepening their despair. It was basically a documentary on “just how many possibilities are there in my life”. There was even a faint feeling that whenever it was time to choose the path of their lives, they would powerlessly be guided into despair.

Ye Qingcang at the side was the same as well. Though the contents were different, the methods were completely the same.

So this is a heart demon. It was simply an all-rounded psychological harassment, and the type which used negative examples. Should she celebrate the fact that the two of them had sufficient immunization, preventing the heart demons from breaking through their final line of defense?

However, if they were going to be tested like this over and over again, their minds would crumble eventually. They would be influenced by the scenarios within, and then, they would be submerged within their own minds, unable to escape ever again.

“Master... What should we do?” This was simply an endless cycle of nightmares. Though they should be aware that they were all fake, they would still be influenced by them after staying inside for a long time. She could see that as the number of times they experienced the heart demons increase, the more they were unable to discern an illusion from reality.

Yu Yan sighed. “These are their own knots in their hearts. If they are able to see through them, their state of mind and resolve will naturally improve, and their cultivation will rise. If they are unable to see through them...”

Then they will die! The little radish that she raised through great difficulties had yet to ripen, how could she possibly watch on as he continued to drown? She could do nothing but watch...

Eh, wait a minute!

Why didn't she get caught up by her heart demon? If her master was not affected because he was just a strand of divine sense, then why was she standing here alive and well? This was illogical!

Ting!

A conversation window suddenly popped up.

Congratulations on discovering a hidden skill – Heart Demon Immunity, a passive skill. You receive the title: Pui! You shameless bystander!

The hell is this Heart Demon Immunity? Clearly, it was added later on, right? Also, the point of this message was the retort at the back, right? Also, what are you trying to say by bolding that?

Before she could even retort, the screens hanging above little tyrant and Ye Qingcang suddenly vibrated, and then, they actually began to close in on each other. The two fifty-one inches high definition screens turned into a single screen of a hundred and two inches!

(+\_\_\_+)~

Was this to cut costs?

The scenes being shown synchronized as well. Little tyrant and Ye Qingcang appeared inside at the same time, and the contents were uniform too. However, probably because they had passed the trials before this, the scenario this time was different from the miserable lives from before. It was a scenario where they had paved their way through the Great Dao, and the time was set several hundred years later. The two of them had both nourished their Nascent Souls, though Ye Qingcang had become the Sect Master of Ness Cesary Sect, while little tyrant had become the

leader of wandering practitioners. The both of them had immense fame behind their names, and were both high-leveled individuals.

While Zhu Yao was wondering what the trial was this time, Ness Cenary Sect and Wandering City were suddenly attacked. When she saw the leader behind the assault on both locations, Zhu Yao simply felt like cussing out – motherf\*\*king b\*tch!

Wasn't that extremely familiar face... hers? How did she become the boss of the villains!?

Behind the screen, little tyrant and Ye Qingcang both had shocked expressions as well. Fortunately, she had merely flashed her face before leaving the scene right after. Otherwise, she would have truly wanted to look for the person who came up with the scenario for this heart demon, and give him some counselling.

However, the moment she flashed her face, the scenario within the screen instantly changed. She was cussed by the people inside as a b\*tch, and the Great Dao paved by little tyrant and Ye Qingcang was in complete turmoil. Filled with killing intent, the various clans and sects, along with wandering practitioners, all surrounded and attacked Tranquil Valley. On one end was the crowd who wanted to take revenge and seek justice, while the other were two people who had been nurtured to how they were now because of the guidance of that person.

The two youths fell into a dilemma.

That strange voice suddenly resounded once more. Different from the tempting nature that clearly wanted to pull them into the abyssal depths like before, this voice was dull and merely asked a single question: Which side should I stand on?

The hell! She could not help but cuss out at the person who came up with this question. This was too hard to choose, wasn't it?

This was basically a dead question! If they choose to stand on her side, they, who stood at such a high position but decided to cover

for their enemy, would betray the trust of the masses. If they were to choose the greater good and exterminate her, then they would turn ungrateful, people that repay good deeds with blood. No matter which side they choose, they would be wrong. It was basically asking them: Are you going to forgive her and become an unjust bastard? Or are you going to kill her, and become an ungrateful bastard?

Either choices would lead them down the path of depravation!

Zhu Yao could not help but hold her breath. This should be their final heart demon. This question is even harder than the ones in university entrance exams, hey.

She could do nothing else other than watching their two faces and their final decisions. Little tyrant was already covered in sweat, and his face looked like it was in pain. Ye Qingcang was the same as well, and even the word 'bug' on his face was fading and darkening over and over again, making its presence known.

For some reason, Zhu Yao had a feeling that the answer to this question could possibly remove this bug once and for all. Ye Qingcang became a bug because his sins were too heavy, as he killed to stop killing. However, because she forcefully intervened, he had still yet to walk on the path of slaughter, and neither was his hands stained in blood yet. However, no matter which answer he were to choose, he would most likely be destined to walk on the same old path.

She could not help but keep her eyes on the screen and hold her breath, as she awaited his choice.

He suddenly raised his sword and closed his eyes. As if he had made some sort of decision, he loudly said. "Granny is my benefactor, and thus this Ye cannot lay his hands on her. My fellow daoists trust in me, and I cannot betray their trust either. This Ye doesn't have a way to appease both sides, nor will I make a decision to stand on either side. I hope that with my life alone, it

will be sufficient to pay for all her past sins.” After he said that, with a twist of his sword, he instantly stabbed into his own body.

Zhu Yao was completely dumbfounded. He actually gave up on choosing and did not stand on either side. Instead, he firmly held onto his own heart. In a certain sense, he had indeed managed to find a win-win solution. After that stab, the erratic spiritual energy around his body instantly calmed down, and even the word ‘bug’ on his face had faded quite a bit. Only a faint and shallow mark remained.

Zhu Yao grew excited. Could this be considered as a blessing in disguise?

Little tyrant was left!

She hurriedly turned her head back to the screen. Behind the screen, Ye Qingcang had already committed suicide, and his body began to turn transparent. He was leaving the heart demon, and little tyrant was standing right next to him. Strangely, the crowd did not pay much attention towards Ye Qingcang who was lying on the ground, and was instead looking intensely at the standing little tyrant. In the first place, they were illusions born from their hearts, so naturally they would not possess much emotions.

That voice once again sounded: What is your choice?

The crowd behind the screen shouted out in unison as well: What is your choice?

Little tyrant’s expression was clouded. He could not help but glance at the “dead” Ye Qingcang on the ground, and was stunned for a moment. Then, he raised his head and swept his eyes across the approaching crowd. His eyes, however, began to clear up little by little, and he suddenly laughed out loud.

As though he had thought of something funny, his laughter ripple across the air, spreading towards every corner.

“What’s my choice? I don’t choose anything.” He suddenly

spoke, giving an answer that was out of everyone's expectations. "Why do I have to answer such a nonsensical question? I have known grandma since I was ten. Though he has a sharp and bad tongue, she is the first person to ever truly care about me, even when that child was not even the slightest bit related to her. In this world, she is the only person left who kept a piece of pure and unadulterated kindness, kindness that not a single other person in the cultivation world ever possesses. In her eyes, it felt as if the world looked completely different from ours. Not only did she teach me how to cultivate, she is more importantly someone who has taught me how to be a person. During the time when everyone gave up on me, she was the only one who said it didn't matter. With someone like that, you're saying she's the one who attacked Ness Cesary Sect and Wandering City? Don't make me laugh. You people are asking me what my choice is? I choose, to believe her! I believe that she wouldn't do something like that. I believe that these choices do not exist in the first place. I believe that everything, everything here, is but a mere illusion."

Zhu Yao was instantly moved. As expected, she did not pamper him for nothing. He actually saw through the heart demon's nature.

With every "believe" he said, his body would shine with a white light, and it was growing brighter and brighter. Then, the screen cracked, shattering resoundingly!

Ye Qingcang who was lying at the side sat up at this moment as well, panting out loud. He finally woke up from his heart demon.

"You woke up!"

"Granny..."

Zhu Yao was joyous, and she hurriedly turned to look at little tyrant at the side.

The hell, what was going on? Clearly, little tyrant was the one who broke through the heart demon, so why was his present state

even worse than before? Sweat was not the only thing coming out of his body, as even blood was leaking out now, hey!

“Little tyrant!” Don’t scare me, hey!

“Grand... Grandma...” He tried his best to open his eyes. Though he was awake, his expression showed that he was in worsening pain, and the spiritual energy surrounding his body was incredibly chaotic!

“He’s about to form his Azoth Core.” Yu Yan said in sullen voice. He had received an enlightenment from the heart demon.

Eh? So soon?

Yu Yan sliced his hand in the air, breaking open a passage of flowing light. “There is no spiritual energy here, bring him out to form his Azoth Core.”

Only then did Zhu Yao regain her senses. She hurriedly carried little tyrant up and walked into the passage. “Little Cang, follow after me!”

“Ou!” Ye Qingcang was stunned for a second, before hurrying after the three people into the void space that was suddenly sliced open. The moment he entered it, flowing light flashed across his eyes. In the next moment, they had already returned to Tranquil Valley.

“Take the opportunity while the barrier has yet to restore completely, and head out!” Zhu Yao pointed to the remaining small hole in the barrier in the sky, and then flew out on her flying sword while carrying little tyrant.

The moment they got out of the barrier, the surrounding spiritual energy began to rapidly pour into little tyrant’s body.

Zhu Yao brought him to stable ground and sat him down. “Little tyrant, focus and calm yourself down. Don’t think of anything else and concentrate on forming your Azoth Core. Understand?”

“Mn.” Little tyrant nodded, a streak of blood leaked out from the corner of his lips again. Sitting in a lotus position, he then began to guide spiritual energy into his body and break into the Azoth Core Realm. The chaotic five types of spiritual energy slowly calmed down, and they began to orderly gather in little tyrant’s body.

Zhu Yao placed down a few formations in his surroundings. Then, with Ye Qingcang, they took a few steps back and kept watch over him.

Probably because his state of mind and resolve had risen by a huge amount this time, little tyrant was very successful in forming his Azoth Core. Other than the rampage of spiritual energy in the beginning that caused his meridians to receive some injuries, the process had been really smooth and steady.



# Chapter 317: Removing the Bug of Righteousness

---

Just like that, little tyrant spent three whole days meditating.

Three days later, the spiritual energy that was endlessly pouring into his body finally began to calm down. His wounds were also beginning to close on their own, and faintly, the pressure of an Azoth Core could be felt.

The core was formed!

A certain master who had been silently watching this entire process while standing by his disciple's side all this while, suddenly took a step forward. With a wave of his hand, he placed down a barrier surrounding his stupid disciple.

“Eh?” Zhu Yao curiously turned her head around. What was this about?

Yu Yan silently glanced at him. “His core has been formed.”

“I know.” I can see that myself though?

“Yu... Yao!” He sighed, as he gave her a ‘Why is my disciple so stupid?’ expression. “After the formation of an Azoth Core, lightning tribulation will definitely descend.”

“Uh...” Zhu Yao instantly understood. Hell, she had actually forgotten about this. Most likely, the one being zapped would still be her!

The corner of her lips twitched a few moments, and then she silently placed down countless formations for herself, including another defensive barrier. “Hoho... Master. Let me handle something like this on my own!” It felt like whenever her master's about to be zapped by lightning, he's exceptionally unreliable, and something like that had already happened several times as well.

Yu Yan frowned. As though he had recalled some very bad

memories, he silently acknowledged her actions.

After pondering for a moment, he still felt a little dissatisfied. He reached out his hand pulled his stupid disciple into his embrace. Mn, he felt better now.

“Gran... Granny, this is?” Ye Qingcang however was confused. Was something big about to happen? Or was an enemy about to attack? To the extent that such powerful defenses were necessary?

“Hoho... You will understand in a moment.” Zhu Yao bitterly smiled. She raised her head and glanced at the sky, her face turned stern. “It’s here.”

Ye Qingcang raised his head to take a look, only to see the sky which was still clear for thousands of kilometers a second earlier, had begun to darken. Large amount of lightning clouds gathered. This was the lightning tribulation directed at the formation of Azoth Core! So she was actually worried that Brother Bai wasn’t able to beat the lightning tribulation?

“Granny, don’t worry. Brother Bai has a firm heart, he will definitely beat this lightning tribulation safe and sound.”

Zhu Yao replied with two words: “Ho ho!” Raising her head, she glanced at the sky. “I say, student Ye, are you sure you’re not going to stand a little further away from me?”

“Eh!?”

Boom!

A snow-white flash of light tore through the skies as a tribulation lightning bolt descended. It struck towards... Zhu Yao.

Student Ye who was zapped charred black: “...”

Countless unidentifiable animals galloped through the depths of his heart.

Wasn’t it Brother Zhiyuan who formed his Azoth Core? Why were the tribulation lightning bolts striking at granny instead?

Furthermore, it seemed like granny was very certain that this situation would occur too, as she had placed down barriers beforehand, which lead to the lightning bolt striking straight at him, leaving her completely unscathed!

“Gran... Granny...” This did not make sense!

“Haah! I already told you to stand further away from me!” Zhu Yao reached out her hand and pulled him into the formation.

The lightning bolts in the sky grew even more excited, as they crackled and struck down relentlessly. Furthermore, all of them were striking in their direction, with not a single one landing on Bai Zhiyuan.

Student Ye Qingcang felt incredibly confused. Just who was forming his or her Azoth Core here, hey?

His heart was filled with doubts, yet a chilling intent suddenly shot out from the side. His heart trembled from the chill. When he turned to look, he saw a man was currently glaring at him coldly next to granny. In an instant, he felt like two ice daggers were stabbing right at his chest.

Ehh?

Earlier, granny seemed to have called him her master. Why was he looking at him this way? What did he do wrong?

So cold, so scary. He suddenly felt like heading out to get struck by lightning instead, what to do?

Yu Yan: Someone familiar with my disciple, is hateful as I have expected!

“Seven, eight, nine, ten...” Zhu Yao very patiently counted the lightning bolts. Don’t you dare troll me. A total of eighty-one lightning bolts, and not a single one more. Otherwise, it’s a loss for me.

“Granny...” Ye Qingcang meekly wiped off the dust off his arms,

which were soon to be frozen stiff due to a certain someone's gaze. Trying to divert his own attention, he spoke up. "You... knew that the lightning would fall on you right from the beginning, right?"

"Ah? Fifteen... Sixteen... Seventeen..." Zhu Yao was focused on counting, so she did not hear him well.

He had no choice but to repeat his words. "I said, granny, you're intentionally blocking Brother Zhiyuan's tribulation lightning bolts, right?"

"Intentionally?" Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at him. "Who the hell would intentionally do such a thing? How about you try to intentionally do it in front of my eyes!?"

"Then the formations that you placed down earlier were..."

Zhu Yao glanced at him. With a heart filled with sour emotions, she sighed. "Habits become second nature, dear youth!"

"..." What did that mean? Were the lightning bolts actually striking her on their own accord? He was stunned for a moment. After pondering for a little, he felt that it was impossible. Lightning tribulation was the manifestation of the laws of the Heavenly Dao itself, how could it possibly strike the wrong person? In order to bend the laws of the Heavenly Dao, incredible power was required. Granny must be worried about Zhiyuan, and thus was willing to endure the pain of the lightning tribulation on her own accord. The more he thought about it, the more it made sense to him. He turned to glance at the figure at the back, whose Azoth Core was growing firmer by the minute. In his eyes, a hint of envy could be seen floating about.

Within the heart demon earlier, he had actually heard Bai Zhiyuan's answer as well. Speaking of which, both of them were pitiful people, as they both had the poorest aptitude. Though he had the fortune of being taken into the Inner Sect, the number of rolling and scornful eyes he received were still no less than being an Outer Sect disciple, while Bai Zhiyuan was once a genius with

duo spirit veins, who had fallen to the very bottom of the valley. Their fates were similar, and they had both encountered a grandmother who treated them both with sincerity. Before this, he had thought that Bai Zhiyuan was even more pitiful than he was. After all, he climbed up from the very bottom, so he had nothing to lose. However, Bai Zhiyuan once had everything he wanted, but in the end had everything snatched away. A reality even crueler than his. However, right now, he was a little jealous of Bai Zhiyuan. Because, no matter what were to happen to him, granny would always stand by his side.

“Twenty... three, or was it four? The hell, I think I might have missed one. Just how many have I counted?”

Ye Qingcang smiled, the envy in his eyes grew brighter. “Granny sure treats Brother Zhiyuan really well.” It’s a pity that no one has ever treated me with wholehearted sincerity.

Zhu Yao was startled. She turned to look at him. “What’s wrong with you?”

“What is it?” He had a confused look.

Zhu Yao frowned. For a moment, the word ‘bug’ on his face grew a little darker. Earlier, it was so light to the point only a mark was present, but now, a greyish colour could be faintly seen. Oh young one, just what kind of thoughts did you have just now? Don’t go back to your former path!

“What did you just say?”

“I said, granny sure treats Brother Zhiyuan really well.”

“Don’t I treat you well too?” Zhu Yao asked back.

“...” Ye Qingcang blanked for a moment, only to shake his head slowly right after. “That is indeed true.”

Zhu Yao sighed, and then said as she patted on his shoulder. “Little Cang, do you have something you want to tell me?”

He stiffened. The expression on his face changed a couple of times, yet he did not speak up for a long while.

“If you have something to say, then say it! Don’t be wishy-washy like a girl!”

Ye Qingcang clenched his fists, and then took a deep breath. He turned to look towards her and said. “Granny... Actually, I have always wanted to ask you this. Back then, when you brought Brother Zhiyuan out of Ness Cesary Sect, you did it because you were afraid that he would be bullied for possessing the penta spirit veins, and hence you were willing to hand over Skybond Peak. Furthermore, you even took him in as your disciple and brought him away. I’m... a penta spirit veins holder as well! Why didn’t you inform me...” He did not continue after that. Zhu Yao however, understood his intentions.

“You wish to ask why I chose to take in little tyrant as my disciple, and not you, right?”

He nodded, and then immediately explained in anxious manner. “I... It’s not like I want to have a dispute with Brother Zhiyuan, it’s just... I just want to know the reason.” He wanted to know just why she had always thought Bai Zhiyuan was more talented than he was.

“I know!” If he truly was jealous of Little Bai, he wouldn’t have risked his life along with them. Zhu Yao sighed. Then, he looked at him sternly and said. “Little Cang, tell me this. If back then, if we have truly gone to look for you, and told you about us being ousted from the sect, what would you have done? Would you have left with us?”

Ye Qing was dumbfounded, and then his expression paled.

“You wouldn’t! Zhu Yao replied on his behalf. “Because if you had gone with us, it would be akin to betraying the sect. Most likely, you would even be chased after by the sect.”

“I...”

“I’m not trying to lecture you!” Zhu Yao continued. “It’s understandable that you would choose not to leave. After all, even if you had come along with us, it would just be an additional baggage for me. Then, let me ask you this as well. If you were little tyrant, and I wasn’t a Demigod practitioner trying to conceal my own cultivation level, but a mere Azoth Core practitioner, would you have left the sect?”

No! Ye Qingcang lowered his head. Because, with his personality, even if he were to find out that he possessed the penta spirit veins, he wouldn’t accept being ousted out of Ness Cesary Sect so easily. Even if he were to be thrown into the Outer Sect, he would still think of ways on his own, and seek opportunities for himself to make a stand.

“See, this is your difference from little tyrant.” Zhu Yao patted on his shoulder and sternly said. “The reason why little tyrant followed me out of Ness Cesary Sect, was because he trusted me enough. He believed that his grandma wouldn’t hurt him. Even if he were ousted from the sect, even if were labeled as a wandering practitioner, even if he had to cultivation from the start once more, he believed in me. Not to mention, when he left, he once resented the sect, resented his past master, and had even resented everyone, except me, whom he felt indebted to. The first thing he thought of, was not what he should do for his own future, but how he could repay his grandma for enduring all these grievances. With all his heart, he believed in a senior, a friend, or even an elder sister like me. How can I possibly not pamper him a little bit more?”

Ye Qingcang was stunned. His face was filled with astonishment and confusion, as though he understood her words, but felt that things had turned even more blurry as well.

“Little Cang, you asked why I didn’t choose you? Both of you possess penta spirit veins, and both your cultivation levels were

similar as well. However, have you ever thought that you yourself are different from little tyrant in the first place? The two of you have never stood at the same spot. Have you ever place your trust on someone from the depths of your heart, like little tyrant has?”

“.....”

“Little Cang, we are cultivating to become deities. However, the premise is that we have not become deities. We are all humans, and all humans have feelings. No one in this world will treat you well for no reason. Nothing ventured, nothing gained. Little tyrant ventured. He believed in his grandma with all his heart. Even when he understood that he would become a wandering practitioner living a harsh life from then on, he did not turn his back, and followed me without any hesitation. But Little Cang, what have you ventured on? Have you ever believed in someone with all your heart? If not, why should I have chosen you?”

Ye Qingcang was dumbfounded, and he did not regain his senses for a long while. The echoes in the depths of his heart grew louder, and a single word filled his heart – trust!

He was alone ever since he was young. Because of his stubborn personality, he had always relied on his own to grow stronger a single step at a time. He felt that as long as he worked hard, even if he did not have a good aptitude or talent, he would still be able walk on this path. He had never requested help from others, so naturally he would not have comprehended the meaning of trust. Even way back then, when he had a miraculous encounter, the first thing he thought of was to conceal that fact. He only told granny when he had no other choice.

However, the stronger he became, the larger the hole in his heart was. Especially when he saw granny and Bai Zhiyuan together, the feeling that he was missing something grew even more intense than ever, and a sense of inferiority faintly grew. All this while, he could not understand why this was happening. However, he now understood that the thing that he was lacking in the depths of his



heart, was trust. The true goal behind that heart demon, was to have him clearly see this fact.

At that moment, he felt that the things he chased after and tried to conceal with all his might, were a little laughable. Joy suddenly filled the depths of his heart, as if the sun had appeared behind the drifting clouds.

Zhu Yao however widened her eyes in utter disbelief.

“Young man, let me look at your face!”

The bug... disappeared!

# Chapter 318 Come One Come All, Let's Conduct a Meeting

---

Zhu Yao could not help but want to raise Ye Qingcang's face for a clearer look. Before she could even reach out her hand however, she suddenly felt an icy intent next to her, and something cracked resoundingly next to her ears. The formation she placed down to resist the heavenly lightning bolts had instantly shattered apart.

The bright heavenly lightning bolts roared out, zapping all three of them.

Zhu Yao who reached out her hand: "..."

Before she could even react, she felt her waist tightening, and then, she was pulled into the embrace of someone who similarly had a charred smell. With a stern look, Yu Yan cast a Dirt Removal Art on him and his stupid disciple, then he calmly placed down a new formation. His face was calm and collected, as though the person who broke the formation earlier was not him.

Looking at a certain disciple who was still half-stretching out her hand and glancing at Ye Qingcang, he frowned. He reached out to hold her chin, and then forcefully turned her face towards him, and was only satisfied when he was the only figure in her eyes.

Then he turned his head and looked at that unknown substance at the side with narrowed eyes. His cold aura flowed in all directions.

Unknown substance Little Cang simply trembled, and cold sweat constantly dripped from his forehead. Though he did not know what he had done wrong, he faintly sensed that he should take a few steps back.

However, in the next second, he was no longer able to continue pondering for the reason, as the next heavenly lightning bolt was already striking down. Not to mention, he was not in the range of

the newly placed formation!

---

In a single day, two of the righteous deity sects were lost. Practically all of Office Shell Sect's disciples were massacred, and when the reinforcements of the various sects had arrived, the entire Office Shell Sect had already turned into a sea of blood. Most of the survivors were in a daze, as though they had suffered from some immense shock. Even after questioning them back and forth, the reinforcements still could not piece everything together, let alone finding clues about that so-called Demigod heretic practitioner. Furthermore, this was not the end. When the crowd had rushed back to Ness Cesary Sect, the sight in front of them had dumbfounded every single one of them. Ness Cesary Sect, who had been passed down for over thousands of hundreds of years, was destroyed in a single day, levelled to flat ground. Fortunately, there were no grave casualties among the disciples. However, the laughable thing was that the people who saved them from this crisis, were the two people that Ness Cesary Sect had ousted a few years ago. For a moment, the crowd from Ness Cesary Sect felt exceptionally conflicted in their hearts.

When Zhu Yao rushed back to meet up with the sects, she was shocked to see that other than Qu Jiang, Qu Ying had come forward to welcome her back as well. Though, his face was an exceptional sight to watch, as it continued to switch between being green and pale, as though he did not know how he should face this former little martial aunt. The colour of his face continued to change again and again. Even Zhu Yao could not stand giving him a few more glances.

“Thank you, little martial aunt, for your saving grace.” Qu Jiang bowed in front of Zhu Yao.

“It's best that you call me Zhu Yao.” She said without a mind. “I'm no longer your little martial aunt. You're making it sound so strange right now.”

Qu Jiang was startled, and even Qu Jiang at the side had stiffened. A moment later, he changed his way of addressing her. “Sovereign... Thank you, Sovereign, for your help. If not for Sovereign’s protection, not just Ness Cesary Sect, I’m afraid the entire world of deity sects would have encountered an inescapable huge tribulation.”

“It’s just a small matter, there’s no need to be polite.” Zhu Yao replied with a smile.

Qu Jiang did not keep up with the courteous talk either, as he lead Zhu Yao into the inner hall. His intention of burying the hatchet was part of the reason he came out to welcome her as well, as he wanted her and Bai Zhiyuan to return to Ness Cesary Sect. In this present state where their nest had been destroyed, Ness Cesary Sect was indeed in a dire need of a protector like her. However, her earlier words evidently meant that she no longer had the intentions to return, so naturally he had no choice but to lay these thoughts to rest.

When Zhu Yao entered the inner hall, the various clans and sects were already in a great uproar, arguing with each other. When they saw that she had appeared, they quietened down for a moment as they bowed towards her. Zhu Yao nodded in return, before she walked towards the highest row of seats while following Qu Jiang’s lead. This time however, she no longer had to stand.

Hua Lin enthusiastically waved his hands at her. “Old... friend. Over here, over here.” He called out as he looked at his own surroundings. Realizing that there were no longer any empty seats, he unceremoniously nudged an early-stage Demigod Sovereign on his right. “Hey, move over.”

That Demigod Sovereign was startled, as if he had never thought that a Demigod practitioner like him would be given such a disgusted look in the open. His face had turned green from fury. He turned to look at the other Demigod practitioners, and they had all turned their heads away, acting as if they hadn’t seen anything.

He could not help but let out a cold snort, and then unwillingly moved to an empty seat near the edge.

“There’s an empty seat here, quick, come over.” Hua Lin shamelessly pointed at the seat that was given up just earlier, as he called out to Zhu Yao. The practitioner who just left earlier tripped and almost fell. Even if you’re a wandering practitioner, you shouldn’t be this shameless, hey!

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. Ignoring that practitioner’s resentful glare, she sat next to Hua Lin. Why did she feel as if she had inadvertently garnered a bundle of hatred?

“The heretic practitioners sure have gone mad. On this day alone, they dared to openly launch attacks on Office Shell Sect and Ness Cesary Sect. They will most certainly attack the other deity sects in the coming days. If this danger is not eliminated, I’m afraid the deity sects would be uneasy day and night.” A Nascent Soul practitioner said indignantly.

“Though that is the case...” Someone however had an opposing opinion. “The heretic practitioners have always been scattered, blending among the wandering practitioners. It is extremely difficult to locate them. Furthermore, the various sects have sustained damage from this incident. We should instead focus on recovering our forces and build up our strength.”

When one of the practitioners heard this, he immediately flared up. “Wait a minute! How long are we supposed to wait? The disciples of our Office Shell Sect had all died in the hands of those heretic practitioners, when should be the right time to avenge them? Not to mention the heretic practitioners must have sustained some degree of damage from this incident, we should be taking this opportunity to push for victory.”

“Right not, the situation surrounding the enemies are unclear, it would be extremely unwise to make a move on them now!” Another person stood up to object. “It should be clear from seeing

Office Shell Sect's situation. Our enemies were actually capable of retreating all their forces even before our prompt arrival. This indicates that the capabilities of the heretic practitioners shouldn't be underestimated."

"That is sound." Another person spoke. "Earlier, the disciple that came to report this incident mentioned that there was a Demigod practitioner among them. Furthermore, when we arrived, we were unable to catch a glimpse of even a single heretic practitioner. Who knows just how many Demigod heretic practitioners are there?"

"However, if we don't make a move on them now, I'm afraid that they would pose a greater threat in the future."

The hall was once again filled with intense debate, and Zhu Yao frowned at the sight of this. She finally understood why these people had been here for several days. Clearly, they were split into two factions – one which wanted to let go of this incident, and one which wanted to fight. The faction which wanted to fight believed that they should take this opportunity to deal with the heretic practitioners in order for them to cultivate peacefully in the future. The other faction however felt that the damage they had received this time was too huge, no good outcome would result from further fighting, and that it wouldn't be too late to fight after recouping their losses.

In general, the faction which was keen of fighting was comprised of sects which had more losses, like Office Shell and Ness Cesary. The faction that wanted to let things go was made up of the rest which did not have any losses to speak of.

The more Zhu Yao listened in, the more frustrated she became. If this argument was to carry on, there wouldn't be an end.

"Umm..." She could not help but voice out. The hall was instantly silent, as the crowd turned their eyes towards her. As the new Sovereign who had saved the disciples of the various clans and sects, the crowd trusted her to some degree. "Uh, I just wish to

ask... Just who are the heretic practitioners who had assaulted Office Shell Sect?”

The crowd was stunned for a moment, and they began to exchange glances.

“So no one know?” Then the fart are you guys fighting about!?

The faces of the crowd paled, as though they had truly never thought of this problem till now.

The hall was silent for a short while, before a Nascent Soul practitioner finally stepped out and spoke. “Putting aside who did it, all heretic practitioners in this world simply do not have any good in them. They should be exterminated as soon as possible.”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. This logic was simply too incredible. “Then how are you planning to find these heretic practitioners?”

He instantly went mute.

In a broad sense, the term ‘heretic practitioner’ was just a label. It referred to opportunistic practitioners who did not cultivate in ways acknowledged by the public. They were practitioners who were even more lawless and disorganized than wandering practitioners. Without a clear goal, how were they going to find them just by this single label? Heretic practitioners wouldn’t write the word ‘heretic’ on their faces after all.

“Junior-martial sister Zhu’s words are logical...” Sovereign Wu Fu who had been sitting at the top suddenly spoke as he looked at her with a smile. “We should indeed clearly locate our enemies before taking action. However... presently, our Ness Cesary Sect’s Skybond Peak is already in the enemies’ hands. Countless treasures can be found within, and I’m afraid heretic practitioners will make use of the items inside to strengthen themselves. Presently, they already possess the guts to openly launch assaults on deity sects, once they strengthen themselves...”

Before he even finished, the faces of the people below paled one after another. Oh, right! Our enemies already possess such huge amount of resources. If they were to strengthen themselves even further, it will spell trouble. At that moment, the practitioners belonging in the faction of letting go, were clearly shaken.

“Oh, you’re talking about Skybond Peak?” Zhu Yao said without a mind. “Don’t worry, it’s not in the hands of those heretic practitioners.”

“It’s not?” The crowd was stunned. Clearly, they did not believe her words.

Zhu Yao chuckled at Qu Jiang. “I’m sorry, Sect Master Qu. I accidentally burnt that mountain away. Completely.”

“What?” Wu Fu immediately stood up. Even the crowd below was giving her faces that looked as if they were looking at an idiot. “You... Y-You... You burnt away Skybond Peak?”

“Uh... It was an operational mistake!” When speaking of this, she really felt a sense of guilt from burning down someone’s house. “Umm... I saw those heretic practitioners move Skybond Peak away, so I chased after them at the heat of the moment. But I can’t possibly move it back on my own, right? You guys should understand that I’m a frail woman... So I... Hoho, I think you guys understand by now!”

Crowd: ...

They didn’t want to understand her words in the least, alright? That was Skybond Peak, left behind by an ascended ancestor. There were countless treasures within! How could she possibly burn it away just like that!?

Everyone could not regain their senses for a while from this shock. Every single one of them felt like scratching the walls right now!

“Haah, so be it!” Unexpectedly, Qu Jiang was the first to collect



his calm, as he let out a long sigh. Though his heart was bleeding, he still spoke in a consoling manner. “At the very least, it’s much better than being left in the hands of the heretic practitioners.”

The crowd all looked as if they wanted to cry as well. In the first place, they participated in the tournament for the sole reason of attempting to take a slice of the pie. Who would have known that the pie would be stolen in an instant, and that it would be burnt into a crisp the next moment? Not a single one of them managed to get even a bite into it. These fluctuating emotions were simply too much to handle.

“Junior-martial sister, have you truly burnt Skybond Peak away? Or did it disappear because of other reasons?” Wu Fu suddenly asked in a meaningful manner.

Zhu Yao frowned. “Other reasons?” What did he mean?

Wu Fu chuckled. “This lowly one is simply curious at the fact that such a huge mountain could actually be burnt into ashes.”

“What are you trying to get?” Little tyrant instantly flared up. “Are you saying that grandma has taken Skybond Peak as her own?”

“I didn’t say that.” Wu Fu continued to speak with a smile. “I just pointed out a suspicion, that’s all. Back then, the ones who chased after the heretic practitioners consisted of junior-martial sister and two disciples, and these two disciples...” He glanced at little tyrant and Ye Qingcang. “Their relationships with junior-martial sister are more than just superficial. When it comes to what actually happened back then, no one else knows for sure.”

When he put it that way, the crowd began to reveal doubtful expressions as well. Indeed. Skybond Peak possessed countless treasures, how could any sane person be willing to burn them all away?

“Sovereign, your words are too degrading.” Ye Qingcang could

not help but speak up as well, his tone was filled with anger. “If granny had coveted the treasures within Skybond Peak, when she was the only person who could enter Skybond Peak back then, she could have taken all she had wanted. Why would she wait till now? Furthermore, granny has long attained the cultivation level of a Demigod, what use to her could the items in Skybond Peak possibly have?”

“They are of no use to her, but that might not be true to others.” Wu Fu intentionally swept his eyes across little tyrant and Ye Qingcang, and then continued. “Furthermore, other than medicinal pellets and talismans, Skybond Peak contains countless mystic artifacts, and some at the tenth rank as well. How could anyone not be moved?”

“Like we would even want the items inside!” Ye Qingcang immediately refuted.

Wu Fu however simply let out a cold snort, and did not reply. The crowd could not help but look at Zhu Yao with suspicious gazes after listening to his words.

Just as little tyrant and Ye Qingcang was about to speak up, Zhu Yao immediately pulled them back.

She turned to look at Wu Fu, and with seemingly good mood, she said. “Sovereign Wu Fu, what you’re meaning to say is, I have hidden Skybond Peak, and then intentionally told you all that I have burnt it, so that I can keep it all to myself?”

“Junior-martial sister, naturally, I believe you. I simply wish that you can explain to us in more depth about this matter, so that everyone here can better understand the situation.” Wu Fu gave an even more harmonious smile, and his expression looked as though it was saying he was doing this for her own good.

“I don’t have anything else to explain!” Zhu Yao swept her eyes across the crowd, instantly feeling a little fatigued. It seemed like seeking justice and thwarting the heretic practitioners were all but

empty talk. In the end, everything fell behind the word 'benefits'. "Skybond Peak has been burnt away. End of story."

The suspicion in the eyes of the crowd grew heavier.

Zhu Yao continued. "However, I indeed did not take a single item from within, nor did I hide the mountain itself. If you guys truly want an explanation..." She sized up the crowd. "Then let me analyze the situation for you!"

"The items within Skybond Peak are categorized to nothing more than a few – medicinal pellets, talismans, cultivation arts and mystic artifacts. Now that I have already become a Demigod, unless it's a medicinal pellet that can allow me to ascend instantly... am I supposed to keep the rest of the pellets and eat them like they're candies?"

"As for talismans, you guys should be aware that I have the penta-spirit veins, right? Activating the talismans can't possibly be faster than casting the arts myself. Unless I'm bored with my longevity and sacrifice speed during battles, I will simply be seeking death if I use talismans to engage my enemies."

"Of course, there's cultivation arts inside as well! Just how retarded must I be to cripple my present cultivation level and choose to pick up a new cultivation art? What, I got bored to the point of cultivating it for fun?"

"Then what about mystic artifacts?" Wu Fu asked in a sullen voice, his smile grew deeper. "I believe junior-martial sister is extremely aware that there's even tenth rank mystic artifacts among the mystic artifacts in Skybond Peak. Presently, there's not many tenth rank mystic artifacts in the cultivation world."

"As a matter of a fact, I really don't covet them." Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at him, as she continued to drop disdainful remarks on Skybond Peak. "I am a tenth rank artificer myself. The products refined by Wang Shang are neither stylish nor equipped with good functionalities. Do you think this old lady would even want

them?”

“...” The hall was instantly enveloped in silence.

“You... You’re a tenth rank artificer...?” Wu Fu was stunned as well. “That’s... That’s impossible.” The flying sword she was using was even at the second rank. Just what kind of artificer would be so frugal like her?”

“Daoist Yu is right.” Hua Lin stood up and pulled out the spiritual ship. “This spiritual ship I have in my hands is something she refined and bestowed to me. It is a tenth rank mystic artifact at the extreme grade.”

When his words fell, everyone in the hall collectively held their breaths.

Zhu Yao: “...” Uh... That wasn’t something she refined!

Student Hua Lin, it is not good to lie. The original creator himself is listening over here!

# Chapter 319: Truth Behind the Sect Massacre

---

With Hua Lin as a witness, the suspicions of the crowd instantly disappeared.

Wu Fu's expression however sank. Gathering his earlier smile, he stepped forward and looked at the mystic artifact in Hua Lin's hand. Then, he said. "What can one mystic artifact prove? Is there a mark on it that can possibly prove her words?"

This time, even Hua Lin could not help but frown. "When I say this mystic artifact is something she refined, naturally, it is refined by her."

Wu Fu still did believe it. "I simply feel that it doesn't look too realistic for a tenth rank extreme grade mystic artifact to appear. Furthermore, since she's a tenth rank artificer, she can't possibly have only made a single mystic artifact, right?"

"You wish to look at my other products?" Zhu Yao glanced at him.

"I hope that junior-martial sister can give me some pointers."

"Are you certain?" Zhu Yao asked once more.

Wu Fu frowned, and still nodded his head.

"Fine then!" Zhu Yao sighed. "Actually, back then when I was still in Skybond Peak, I had refined several mystic artifacts, but I did not bring them along with me."

Wu Fu's expression turned joyous, evidently not believing her words as he said in a mocking manner. "Now that sure is unfortunate."

"But..." Zhu Yao's tone changed. "That doesn't mean they're not being held onto by someone else!"

“What do you mean?” Wu Fu’s expression changed. At that moment, he had a bad feeling.

“I’m saying, I did not bring out even a single one of the items that I have refined, and left them all in Skybond Peak.” Zhu Yao looked at the crowd. “After so many years, I believe there should be one or two disciples in the sect who have fancied my mystic artifacts, and have tried to keep and use them.”

“Hmph, you’re saying that some of the mystic artifacts in Skybond Peak are refined by you?”

“You don’t believe me?” Zhu Yao chuckled. “It’s fine if you don’t believe me, but back then, I learnt of an interesting formation, and had thus inscribed it into the mystic artifacts. If one wish to use one of these artifacts, he or she needs to first chant an incantation. We will be certain one I chant out this incantation.”

After saying that, Zhu Yao did not care about his changing expression, and immediately shouted out loud within the hall. “Cheng Qingdiao, you sick-ass pervert!”

When her words fell, flashes of light appeared one after another. Dozens of mystic artifacts instantly flew up and floated in the air, emitting a white radiance that looked as if they were responding to her call. Even a bell-like eighth rank defensive mystic artifact had flown out of Wu Fu’s storage pouch.

Zhu Yao turned to glance at him, and chuckled. “It seems senior-martial brother Wu Fu likes the mystic artifacts I refined as well. Oh right, do you want me to repeat the basic functionalities of these mystic artifacts, and their respective construction methods? After all, you even carried one with you for so long, but this is the first time you have heard of it’s activation incantation, so it being inconvenient at times is inevitable.”

Wu Fu’s expression was instantly dyed in green, looking especially fascinating. He no longer let out a single croak.

The various clans and sects were now looking at the people of Ness Cesary Sect differently. They were clearly using the artifacts that she had refined, yet they were instead biting her back and accusing her of theft. This course of action by Ness Cesary Sect was truly shameless.

Zhu Yao did not intend to shame Ness Cesary Sect at first either, after all, this sect was once her former home. However, Wu Fu continued to bite on her without letting go, which infuriated her a little. Furthermore, that Skybond Peak had almost killed the demons in Tranquil Valley. Little Eighth had even expended all of the godly energy he managed to gathered so far because of this matter, and had yet to wake up even now.

As for those mystic artifacts, they were indeed refined by her. Back then, when she came out of the dimensional space, though Little Eighth had resurrected, at the bottom of her heart, she still hated that pervert Cheng Qingdiao. Thus, out of boredom, she secretly learnt from Wang Shang and refined a bunch of mystic artifacts, while inscribing this incantation, which taught by her master, within them. However, who would have expected that the mystic artifacts she refined would actually be more popular than the original products in Skybond Peak. These Nascent Soul and Demigod practitioners of Ness Cesary Sect actually hauled them in.

As someone who was so cooperative in digging his own grave, Wu Fu could be considered the best in this aspect in the cultivation world.

\*\*\*

“Sovereign, how do you think we should deal with this matter concerning the heretic practitioners?” The crowd finally circled back to the matter at hand. Probably because they found out that she was tenth rank artificer, there were now faint hints of them seeing her as a leader figure, as they began to ask for her opinion.

Zhu Yao had thought about this. “I feel that no matter the

decision to fight or rest, there is a need to first find out who are the culprits behind the destruction of Office Shell Sect.”

The crowd nodded. Indeed, finding the true culprits were indeed the most important task.

“However... Countless Office Shell Sect disciples have already lost their lives, and those who were fortunate to survive had all turned insane... With our chain of clues broken, I’m afraid that no one else had seen the looks of the culprits...”

“That might not be the case!” Office Shell Sect Master Gu suddenly stood up, as though he had just thought of something. With an excited look, he said. “I recall that there’s a piece of Visual Recording Stone at the core of the Great Mountain Barrier Formation. It’s usually above the formation core, and because it’s required to supply the formation with spiritual energy, it has never been activated. However, the assault of the heretic practitioners had coincidentally destroyed the Great Mountain Barrier Formation. With the destruction of the formation, the spiritual energy from the Visual Recording Stone which could no longer supply the formation...”

“You’re meaning to say that this Visual Recording Stone might have recorded everything that happened back then?” The crowd instantly revealed excited faces.

“If the Visual Recording Stone isn’t destroyed!” Sect Master Gu nodded.

“Bring us to the formation core!” Zhu Yao immediately pulled onto Sect Master Gu and left. The crowd exchanged glances and then immediately followed after them. Even the Demigod practitioners at the back were keeping up as well. Wu Fu’s eyes sank, and had no choice but to go along with the crowd.

As Zhu Yao flew over, she could already see the so-called Visual Recording Stone mentioned by Sect Master Gu, from afar. How could that possibly be a stone? It was clearly a stone wall! It was no



wonder Office Shell Sect would use such a common material as a formation core. It was a shattered mountaintop, and the rock on the broken wall of the mountain was a piece of Visual Recording Stone. Furthermore, it was pointing right at Office Shell Sect.

Sect Master Gu inspected it carefully for a moment. Other than a few traces of blood on it, it did not sustain much damage. Thus, he quickly cast an art and inserted it into the stone wall. A bright light flashed, and there was a blurry image appearing faintly behind it. The image grew clearer with each second. It was the exact recording on the day of the sect massacre.

The crowd could not help but watch carefully with widened eyes, afraid that they would miss some sort of detail.

When they managed to clearly see the situation behind the screen, the crowd was dumbfounded. They were simply unable to believe their own eyes. Some were even beginning to rub their own eyes, wondering if they had been mistaken.

Behind the screen, corpses filled the land and blood flowed like rivers, just like what they had seen when they arrived before. The only strange thing about this was... there wasn't a single heretic practitioner!

Forget about heretic practitioners, not a single villain-like figure could be seen. The place was filled with just Office Shell Sect disciples. They were actually... killing one another!

Furthermore, there were even occasional glows of self-destruction, and every single one of them had crazed looks on their faces, shouting something at the top of their lungs. Unfortunately, the Visual Recording Stone was unable to record sounds.

The person who was the most shocked was no doubt Sect Master Gu. He had turned numb from astonishment!

“What is this? An internal conflict?” Someone expressed his doubts.

“Absolutely impossible!” Sect Master Gu quickly shook his head. “My sect has always been harmonious, how could an internal conflict possibly occur? Furthermore, look at these two over there. One of them is Elder Yu, and his opponent is his son who had just formed his Azoth Core...” It was indeed strange that an old man and his son was locked in a battle to the death.

Zhu Yao watched carefully. These people looked a little like...

She could not help but look at the sky within the displayed image, and her eyes sank. “What is that?”

# Chapter 320: Villains Should Not Talk So Much Crap

---

When Zhu Yao voiced out, everyone raised their heads and looked at top of the screen. In an instant, all of their faces changed.

Hidden amidst the clouds, the corner of a green cloth could be faintly seen, swaying with the wind. With a closer look it could be seen that it was the corner of a flag. What's strange about it was that there wasn't any trace of a person around it, though a green gas would occasionally emit out of the flag and seep into the surroundings.

“Sect Master Gu, hurry and rewind the Visual Recording Stone, so that we can find out when and how the flag is placed?” Everyone could see that the flag wasn't normal, and someone reminded Sect Master Gu to replay the incident.

Sect Master Gu immediately circulated his spiritual energy. The Visual Recording Stone could only store three days of records at best, and presently, it had been three days since the incident. Even if he could rewind, it could only return to the point where the chaos and the slaughter among the disciples had just begun. It looked as if the flag had appeared there out of thin air.

“Hurry and look at the surroundings!” Someone shouted. Everyone focused, and they could see tiny flashes of white light seeping into the flag. The sparks of white light were actually flown out of the bodies of the Office Shell Sect disciples.

“Could that possibly be... a Soul Beckoning Banner!?”

Everyone present held their breaths, their faces were filled with utter disbelief.

“That's impossible!” A Nascent Soul elderly practitioner was the first to step out and refute. “Soul Beckoning Banners can only be used to beckon ghosts. These disciples of Office Shell Sect were still

all alive and well. How can a Soul Beckoning Banner possibly beckon the souls of living humans?”

“But those sparks of white light are indeed parts of those disciples’ souls.” That person stood in front of the Visual Recording Stone. He pointed at the disciples who were fighting wildly and said. “Look at these disciples, everyone single one of them is in such a crazed state, completely devoid of logic and reason. If they had been struck with Heart Assimilating Arts, who could possibly control so many hearts at once? Clearly, their main souls were beckoned away, which resulted to such a situation. This flag isn’t a Soul Beckoning Banner at all, but a Soul Assimilating Banner used to assimilate the main souls of living humans.”

“Nonsense!” There were still people who were unwilling to believe such a thing. “Never have I heard of a Soul Assimilating Banner. How can a mystic arts or mystic artifact that can freely control a person’s soul possibly exist in this world? If such a mystic arts truly exist, wouldn’t that mean that everyone in the world can have their souls assimilated by the culprit?”

“Umm...” Zhu Yao raised her hand. “I don’t know if there’s a mystic artifact that can control souls, but if it’s mystic arts that can achieve soul control, I’ve seen it before!”

The crowd was startled for a moment, and then they immediately swept their eyes towards Zhu Yao.

She had no choice but to tell them about the Nascent Soul puppets that had attacked Ness Cesary Sect. Qu Ying and a few of the sect disciples present on that day had all seen it happened before their eyes as well, so when Zhu Yao brought it up, they suddenly came to realization and understood that arts to control those puppets’ souls had been used.

For a moment, everyone was silent. The faces of the various Sect Masters especially were incredibly ugly. Such a terrifying heretic practitioner actually appeared in the world, and he was capable of

controlling the souls of living beings easily. Then how could the deity sects possibly have any chance at victory?

“We must find this person with haste, otherwise the consequences will be immense.” The sects that were formerly in support of first building up their strength had instantly changed their minds.

“However... If that person were to return again, and use that mystic arts...” Some were still worried.

“This person developed the Soul Assimilating Banner, yet he does not dare to reveal himself. There must be some form of weakness in it. If we don’t locate him now, I’m afraid he will grow even more powerful while we become even more powerless as time goes by.”

“Right, we must find him immediately.”

In an instant, the situation where they were incessantly arguing over their own safety had disappeared, and they had finally become united. A few of the Sect Masters in-charge of large sects had already begun discussing about their course of action in finding the culprit. Even the Sovereigns were taking this matter seriously.

Zhu Yao instead took a step back and chuckled at Sovereign Wu Fu, who was standing at the side. “I wonder what brilliant idea does fellow Sovereign have to take this matter?”

Wu Fu who had just been thoroughly beaten earlier, was now looking at her with incredible irritation. He no longer acted courteous either as he coldly snorted. “I can’t accept such flattery, with how smart junior-martial sister Zhu is, it seemed like we have to rely on junior-martial sister to capture this heretic practitioner.”

“Of course! That should be how it is!” Zhu Yao shamelessly acknowledged his words, giving him a “you are absolutely right, I am very incredible” look.

Wu Fu's face instantly turned green from irritation.

“Junior-martial sister Zhu, it was just a fit of anger on senior-martial brother Wu Fu's part. Please don't fuss with him.” Sovereign Wu Hua, who was behind her, took a step forward and came in as a mediator.

“Hoho... How can that be? As an adult, I have never fussed with a tiny person!” Zhu Yao especially emphasized on the phrase “tiny person”. As expected, Wu Fu's expression turned darker. “Look, I even informed fellow Sovereign on the incantation to activate the bell. As someone with such a benevolent heart, how could I possibly be angry at him? Isn't that right, Hua Lin?”

She intentionally brought in Old Man Hua from the side.

As a professional follower, Hua Lin immediately nodded like a shaking scallion, and then said with a stern look. “That's right, that's right. Fellow Daoist Yu is very kind.”

“...” Wu Hua's face stiffened, before he let out a dry laugh. “That's... That's good... Hoho.”

While Wu Fu's face had already begun to turn dark.

“Haah, I like to help others. If I don't help one person a day, my body will itch all over.” Zhu Yao continued to fan the flames. “You guys should be aware of this. As someone who has incredible cultivation like me, I don't have much going on usually, and since I don't have much hobbies, I like to refine some tenth rank or ninth rank little toys, and then throw them all around the place. Didn't I refine a large golden banner for you guys in the past?” She paused for a moment, as though she had just thought of something. She looked towards Wu Hua and said. “Oh right, Sovereign Wu Hua, I forgot to ask you. Do you still have that golden banner I gave you? Haah, back then, I was concealing my cultivation, so I didn't tell you that it was a seventh rank mystic artifact. Sorry about that~”

Wu Hua was startled for a moment. Then, something seemed to

have flashed past his mind as he spoke with a smile. “Sovereign, you’re too courteous! I’m already elated to have been bestowed with your mystic artifact.”

“Actually, I’m to blame for my lack of education during my youth. The word on that banner was written with such crookedness that it has affected the circulation of spiritual energy of the mystic artifact. Otherwise, it could have possibly become an eighth rank mystic artifact. Eh... What was the word I wrote back then? Sovereign Wu Hua, take it out for a moment. Why don’t I help you alter it a little right now?”

“There’s no need for the hassle.” Wu Hua courteously said. “To tell you the truth, this lowly one has accidentally lost it.”

“Ah!?” Zhu Yao frowned. “How could it be lost? Where did you lose it?”

“This...”

“Is it in Peaceful Spiritual Forest?”

Wu Hua was startled, the smile on his face instantly stiffened.

Zhu Yao’s voice turned cold as she continued. “I suddenly remembered. The word ‘soul’ was written on it. The ‘soul’ of a Soul Beckoning Banner!”

When her words fell, his expression changed, while Hua Lin had already reacted in an instant. With all of his spiritual energy at once, he struck out his palm.

Wu Hua dodged to the side and then flew up into the air. Hua Lin’s palm missed, and right after, an enormous crater appeared on the ground. Wu Hua who still had a harmonious smile earlier, instantly made a ruthless and cruel face as he summoned a spiritual sword.

“What are you two trying to do?” Wu Fu at the side instantly flared up as he furiously glared at Zhu Yao and Hua Lin who attacked earlier. Just as he was about to stop them, Zhu Yao

stopped him with her glare.

“Idiot, do you still not get it? He’s the culprit behind refining the Soul Assimilating Banner, exterminating Office Shell Sect, and flattening Ness Cesary Sect!”

“What?” This time, it wasn’t just Wu Fu. Everyone present was looking at Wu Hua in the air with looks of utter disbelief.

Zhu Yao coldly snorted. “I have never given him a banner-shaped mystic artifact, but I had seen that golden Soul Beckoning Banner in Peaceful Spiritual Forest five years ago. If my guess is correct, a Soul Beckoning Banner is one of the materials needed to refine a Soul Assimilating Banner.”

Everyone present collectively held their breaths.

“Impossible!” Wu Fu was still denying it with all his might. All of the Ness Cesary Soul disciples also had looks of disbelief on their faces. “He’s a Demigod Sovereign of Ness Cesary Sect in the first place, why is there a need for him to deal with his own sect?”

“Then what if he’s not Wu Hua?” Zhu Yao said, with emphasis on every word.

Everyone present became even more shocked.

“You... What are you trying to say?” Wu Fu had a look of disbelief.

Zhu Yao solemnly said. “Soul takeover.”

Everyone was dumbfounded. Soul takeover... Taking over a Demigod Sovereign’s soul... How was that even possible?

“A bunch of lies. He’s a Demigod!” Wu Fu furiously reproved.

“He’s also someone who can refine the Soul Assimilating Banner.” Zhu Yao reminded.

Everyone’s faces instantly turned pale. That’s right. Since he was capable of pulling out the souls of living people, taking over the soul of a Demigod Sovereign did not sound too far-fetched any



longer. Then who was the person in the air?

“Hohohoho...” Wu Hua instantly laughed out loud sinisterly. However, strangely, it was actually a female voice. “I never thought that even after many years of planning, I still ended up getting discovered. That’s right, I’m not Wu Hua. That old snitch agreed to cooperate, but he quickly went back on his word right after and attempted to plot against me. I had no choice but to remove this snake in the grass. After thwarting his schemes, I used him to infiltrate Ness Cesary Sect...” She suddenly looked down and landed her eyes on Zhu Yao. “I believed that I have concealed myself really well for these five years. How did you see through my disguise?”

“Why should I tell you that?” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at her. “We’re going to fight, right? Why do you villains always have so much crap to say?”

Zhu Yao immediately summoned a heavenly lightning bolt and struck it in his direction.

Right from the very start, she had suspected that the culprit behind this chain of events was most likely within the various clans and sects present. Because from the beginning till the end, other than those few puppets, she did not see the shadow of even a single heretic practitioner. Furthermore, heretic practitioners had always moved on their own and did not have a single gathering site. Wanting to gather them together to strike down a deity sect was even harder than ascending to the heavens.

That was why she had thought that there might be a mole. In the beginning, she had suspected Wu Fu who had been harbouring ill will against her the entire time, until Wu Hua spoke up to rescue Wu Fu. Though the two of them had always belonged to Ness Cesary Sect, and were martial brothers of the same sect, they had always been on opposing sides. They were like kings who refused to acknowledge each other. If not for the occasions themselves, the two would rather stay away and die from old age than see each

other. Even back then when she was at Skybond Peak, when the two of them were supervising her cultivation, they had never appeared together. Yet, Wu Hua spoke up for Wu Fu earlier, which was an incredibly strange event.

What made her certain was when her master suddenly spoke up. This person's soul is unstable.

What kind of person would have an unstable soul? Either when that person had parts of its soul missing, or when his or her soul had been taken over.

Furthermore, with the appearance of the Soul Assimilating Banner, she could not help but recall the time when she was in Peaceful Spiritual Forest. When the toad talked about the Soul Beckoning Banner it saw, it mentioned about seeing a soul takeover occurring. The toad said that a male practitioner had killed a female practitioner, and then that female practitioner took over the male practitioner's soul. In the beginning, she had thought that the two of them had Nascent Soul cultivation. When she thought about it now, with a beastie's personality, why would it have waited till the female practitioner had finished taking over the male practitioner's soul if he had complete confidence in taking it, especially when it was something it liked?

The reason why it quietly watched the entire scene before taking action, was most likely because one of the pair was most likely a Demigod Sovereign. The toad did not have the confidence for absolute victory, and so decided to wait till he was taken over, before snatching its beloved golden banner away.

That male practitioner was most likely Sovereign Wu Hua, while the female practitioner was that heretic practitioner. Wu Hua probably wanted to work with the heretic practitioner in the beginning, and that Soul Beckoning Banner was most likely his creation as well. However, after a while, he must have regretted his actions and thus wanted to kill the female practitioner. Having his soul taken over was most likely something he never expected

would happen.

Earlier, Zhu Yao had just casually mentioned the Soul Beckoning Banner to test her, but Zhu Yao never expected that she would really take the bait and thought that Zhu Yao was the one who refined the Soul Beckoning Banner which Wu Hua brought!

Presently, within Wu Hua's body was the female practitioner who took over his soul. In the heart demon site which she along with little tyrant and Ye Qingcang were in, the strand of divine sense she saw back then belonged to a female practitioner as well!

She was the mastermind behind everything.

With Zhu Yao's opening strike, everyone regained their senses and summoned their own mystic artifacts as they moved to surround 'Wu Hua'.

'Wu Hua' dodged that heavenly lightning bolt. Glancing at the surrounding people, she coldly laughed. "With the likes of you people, trying to capture me is but a pipe dr-"

Before she could even finish, with a splat sound, she fell from the skies and slammed onto the ground.

Zhu Yao once again strengthened the pressure she was releasing and sighed. "I already told you that villains shouldn't talk so much crap, right?" She was already surrounded, yet she still did not forget to throw down some trash talk. Are you here to act for a show?

Everyone present: "... " Such a ruthless Sovereign.

Zhu Yao instantly called upon a stream of lightning bolts and struck them down at her. The ground was instantly covered in clouds of dust.

"Damn it!" 'Wu Hua' flew out from the minefield. Her hair was dishevelled and even her clothes were ripped. She glared at Zhu Yao with gritted teeth. This time, she no longer started off with her trash talk. She immediately pulled out an item and threw it

into the air.

In an instant, a green banner shrouded over Zhu Yao's head.

“Soul Assimilating Banner!” Someone recognized this was the banner within the Visual Recording Stone with a glance. “Sovereign, watch out!”

“It's useless!” ‘Wu Hua’ smiled sinisterly. “No one is able to escape my Soul Assimilating Art. So what if you have a higher cultivation level than me? Become my puppet!” She hurriedly cast an art with her hands, and the green banner instantly released a pale green aura akin to ghostly flames, enveloping Zhu Yao.

“Daoist Yu!” Hua Lin's face paled.

“Hahahaha...” ‘Wu Hua’ laughed even more maniacally, sparkles of excitement filled her eyes as she stared intently at Zhu Yao who was within the green light. She's about to become my Demigod Sovereign. Very soon! Very soon...

A moment later.

Nothing happened...

Zhu Yao stably stood within the green light. Forget about her soul leaving her body, not even a strand of hair was lost.

“That's impossible!” ‘Wu Hua’ immediately cast the art again. However, no matter how she cast it, Zhu Yao was affected in the slightest.

Hua Lin and the rest of his little companions were dumbfounded, as they looked suspiciously at ‘Wu Hua’. You're just here to play a prank, right? Where's the promised puppet?

“Daoist Yu? How... are you feeling?”

“Mn, it's a little chilly!” I'm sorry, I just found out I'm immune to soul manipulating abilities too.

Everyone: ...

Zhu Yao waved her hand and summoned two lightning bolts. One landed right on the Soul Assimilating Banner, while the other struck fellow student 'Wu Hua' who was already beginning to seriously suspect her own character setting.

With a loud thunderous boom, she was immediately slammed onto the ground.

# Chapter 321: Don't Want to be a Good Girl

---

Zhu Yao did not hold back with this lightning bolt of hers. It was a Nine Heavenly Profound Lightning bolt, and adding the suppression in levels between a late-stage Demigod and an early-stage Demigod, 'Wu Hua' was basically helpless as her meridians were completely severed from the lightning strike. Even the surrounding practitioners could sense the pressure and intensity, as they unconsciously took a few steps back.

'Wu Hua' raised her head with all her strength, glaring ruthlessly at Zhu Yao. Her eyes were filled with hatred and intent to rip her into shreds. Her face which was already charred crisp and indiscernible was constantly distorting, looking especially frightening. However, she still managed to utter out. "Mistress will definitely not forgive you!"

Zhu Yao stopped her feet, and she asked with a solemn voice. "Who is your mistress?" This was already the second time she heard this term. Could it be that there was still another secret final boss behind her?

She however simply laughed in an ominous manner. It was clearly a male body, yet it was letting out a female voice, and it grew even off-putting as time went by.

"Do you want to know who my mistress is?" She coldly snorted. Suddenly, a red light began to seep out of her entire body, and it continued to grow even brighter. Even the surrounding spiritual energy was beginning to rumble. "Find out yourself in hell!"

The hell, self-destruction again! Can you use another method for once? Zhu Yao's hands moved quickly, instantly casting an art to shatter her Dantian, wanting to scatter all of the spiritual energy in her body to prevent her self-destruction. Just as she was about to activate the art, 'Wu Hua' suddenly reached out her hand.

"Yu Yao!" Her master's anxious call suddenly sounded in her

ears.

A green formation instantly appeared beneath their feet. With a bright flash of green light, before she could even react, she simply felt empty air beneath her feet. It was as if the space beneath her had suddenly been sliced open as she fell right down.

Zhu Yao felt her body lightening. The surrounding scenery changed, and in an instant, she landed on the ground. Her vision was instantly covered in darkness. Lustrous green light could be faintly seen all around, fluttering in the air, as though they were like fireflies in the night sky.

Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. ‘Wu Hua’ next to her however, had begun limping towards the direction behind her. As she ran, she continued to shout out. “Mistress... Mistress, save me! Save, save me...”

Zhu Yao turned to look.

Tree. An enormous tree.

Though it could not be compared to the Parasol Tree that inhabited the Phoenix race back then, it was still outrageously tall and very ancient. It was impossible to see its peak with a head held high, and even the tree bark was at least as thick as a football field. The entire tree was even emitting out green glimmering lights which were slowly flying up into the air, lighting up this entire pitch-black world.

“A parasol tree...” Little Eighth who had been sleeping on Zhu Yao’s shoulder the entire time, suddenly woke up. He used his little wings to rub his eyes. “I got a whiff of a parasol tree’s scent. Am I home?”

Zhu Yao was stunned. This was a parasol tree?

Little Eighth however immediately gave a definitive no. “Eh, it’s not a parasol tree? It has such a similar scent! Seventh elder sister, what is this?”

Zhu Yao shook her head. She did not know either, but she strangely felt that it looked familiar. Had she seen it somewhere before?

On the other side, 'Wu Hua' had already reached her destination, and she shouted out loud at the tree. "Mistress, hurry and wake up. She wants to kill me! Save me..."

Her mistress was this tree?

Suddenly, that tree moved, shaking the earth for a moment. One enormous root after another shot out from the ground. The glimmering lights that were still calmly floating up into the air earlier suddenly began to rampage, gathering at the center of the tree.

The hell. Could this possibly a tree demon!?

Zhu Yao's heart clenched as she hurriedly placed down a defensive barrier.

More green glimmering lights began to gather, and they slowly condensed into a bright human figure. The surrounding spiritual energy began to grow chaotic as well, making the spiritual energy rampage she caused back then look like nothing. It could be seen just how strong this person was. 'Wu Hua' grew even more excited, looking as though she had suddenly found her pillar of support. She was already beginning to laugh softly to herself.

She did it on purpose. She clearly knew that she incapable of defeating Zhu Yao, and had thus sent her here, wanting to make use of that 'mistress' to kill her.

Zhu Yao began to grow a little anxious. She tightened her grip on the sword in her hand. Looking at the surrounding spiritual energy that was so concentrated it could liquefy at any moment, her heart began to tremble. She did not want to face the final boss so quickly! Was it too late for her to flee?

The figure formed by the glimmering lights began to grow



clearer. In a few moments, a young lady dressed in a light green robe appeared beneath the tree. She looked extremely beautiful. Compared to Zhu Yao, her skin was even whiter, her hair was even darker, and her lips were even redder. The hell! Even her breasts were bigger!

Zhu Yao felt as if her life had been struck with a blow. Why don't I just slip away now?

"Mistress! You're finally awake, mistress!" 'Wu Hua' hurriedly knelt down, paying her respects with incredible excitement. An instant later, her eyes sank as she pointed at Zhu Yao. "She is the person who obstructed our plans."

That young lady had her eyes closed this entire time. Looking as if she had just heard 'Wu Hua', she took in a deep breath and then slowly opened her eyes. Her deep green eyes locked onto Zhu Yao.

"Mistress, it's her!" 'Wu Hua' stood up and pointed straight at Zhu Yao, unremittingly telling on her.

The young lady with overbearing aura looked straight at Zhu Yao. A strange smile broke from her lips as she slowly opened her arms wide.

Zhu Yao felt her heart skip a bit. Turning her feet, she was just about to run when suddenly...

A light, tender voice sounded in her ears. "Yaoyao!"

In an instant, a light breeze blew as a green figure came charging over. Along the way, she had even kicked away an unidentified object. Before Zhu Yao could even react, her body was already tightly wrapped by the green-robed young lady's pair of steel-like arms. Like a doll, she was carried up and twirled around in various manners.

"Yaoyao! Yaoyao! Yaoyao... I finally got to see you. I'm so happy, I'm so happy!"

As she said that, she even rubbed her face strongly against Zhu

Yao's. Zhu Yao felt as if a layer of her skin was about to peel off.

Eh!?

What kind of situation was this?

What happened to the promised final boss of the villains? The atmosphere changed so quickly!? Give me an explanation first, hey!

“Yaoyao, Yaoyao... You finally came to see me. I miss you, I miss you so much! I want to hug, I want to kiss, I want to hug you even tighter!” The young lady seemed to be uncontrollably excited as her two slender yet strangely strong arms wrapped around Zhu Yao intensely.

Kacha...

Something similar to bones breaking in her body could be heard.

“Bre... Breathe...” If she were to continue hugging her, she would die. As expected of the final boss, her killing power was top-notch.

I'm going to die, I'm going to die, I'm going to die!

Suddenly, a white light flashed from her chest. Her master, Guanyin who saves people from misery, finally appeared. Putting one hand on each side, he broke the two people apart as though he was breaking an apple.

Zhu Yao only managed to calm herself down after taking several deep breaths. The hell, is this young lady Nezha? I was about to suffocate to death here.

“Yaoyao...” The young lady was unwilling to separate from her, as she raised her hands and tried to pounce on Zhu Yao once more.

“Don't come over!” Zhu Yao immediately leapt two steps back from fear, retreating behind her master. The girls of this world are so scary.

The young lady was stunned. After being dumbfounded for two seconds, her face which was still glowing with the light of spring

earlier, instantly collapsed. “Yao... Yaoyao...” Tears began to well up in her eyes, and then she cried her lungs out. “Wuaah... Yaoyao doesn’t like me anymore... Yaoyao hates me now! Wuaaaah... I knew it... I don’t want to be a good girl anymore, I want to rebel against society... Wuaaaaaahhh...”

Zhu Yao: “...”

# Chapter 322: Packing Up and Heading Home

---

Looking at the young lady on the ground crying as if her world was growing dimmer and dimmer, Zhu Yao's face darkened. Who are you?

"Don't cry already?"

"Wuaahh..." She began to cry even louder.

"..." She's the one who wanted to cry, alright? Comrade, you took the wrong set of scripts, right? "Who in the world are you?"

The young lady was startled for a moment, and then tears began to flow out even more violently than before. This was the first time Zhu Yao understood what "cry me a river" really meant. "Wuaah... Yaoyao has forgotten about me. So sad... So heart-aching..."

"D-don't... Don't cry!" The hell, there's no way to persuade her, is there?

Her cries were filled with incredible sadness, and she had even begun to hiccup. The anxiety in Zhu Yao's heart melted. Taking a few steps forward, she reached out her hand and stroke her head. "Don't cry, alright? Tell me, who are you?"

Only then did the young girl sniffle and stop her heartbreaking cries. Her pouting lips could even be used to hang a piece of bacon right now. After a few hiccups, she finally managed to control her emotions. Raising her reddened eyes, she pitifully glanced at her and then let out a sound.

"Chick..."

"Eh?" Zhu Yao was startled. What does this mean?

The young lady instantly grew a little anxious again. Tugging onto Zhu Yao's hand, she pointed at her own nose. "Chick... Chick chick!"

"The hell is Chick Chick?" Why did she suddenly start to use

foreign language, when they were conversing fine just earlier? You're bullying me for my poor education, aren't you!?

"She's the Wood Spirit!" Standing by her side, her master suddenly spoke up.

"What?" Zhu Yao quickly turned her head back, her face was filled with disbelief. "Master, she... she..."

Yu Yan nodded. "She is the Wood Spirit that you planted in the Desolate Ground back then."

"This is the Desolated Ground?" Zhu Yao looked around. As expected, other than the tree right in front of them, the place was a desolate wasteland. She lowered her head and glanced at the young lady in front of her. She indeed possessed a body of wood spiritual energy, and her aura was extremely familiar as well. "You're really Wood Spirit?"

"Chick..." The young lady pitifully called out again.

"You cultivated a human form?" Zhu Yao was pleased. She never expected that she would still be able to meet the Wood Spirit here.

"Yaoyao..." She buried her head into Zhu Yao's chest, her two arms hugging tightly onto her waist. "I really miss you... I really miss you. You said that you would come and see me. I waited for so, so long..."

"Uhh..." She couldn't be blamed for this. Her work itinerary was always full. Furthermore, she wasn't able to buy a travel ticket back either.

"I finally got to see you. As I thought, Realmspirit did not lie to me. You're really here!"

"Realmspirit!" Zhu Yao was stunned. "You know him? Was he the one who said that I will be coming over?"

"Mn." Wood Spirit nodded heavily. "He said that you're in the vicinity, and that I will definitely get to see you this time around."

Just as he had said, I got to see you.”

Zhu Yao’s heart sank, a strange feeling rose in her chest. “When did Realmspirit tell you this?”

Wood Spirit was startled for a moment, her beautiful brows furrowing. “He told me right after I woke up.”

“When did you get to know him?”

“I knew him right from the start!” She said with a matter-of-factly expression.

“When?”

“Mn...” She tilted her head as she pondered, yet she did not seem to be able to find a term or phrase to describe it. “In any case... I know him. I knew him when I began to understand things.”

Then when did she begin to understand things? Zhu Yao’s face darkened. Other than the River of Forgetfulness, this was the second time she heard of Realmspirit from someone else. However, his identity continued to grow even more mysterious, and she could not find a single lead about him at all.

She once again rubbed the Wood Spirit’s head. Zhu Yao used a lot of effort before she was able to bring down the arms that wrapped around her waist.

“Wood Spirit, I have something I wish to ask you!” Zhu Yao’s expression sank as she sternly said. “Tell me honestly. That Soul Assimilating Banner in the cultivation world, and the matters concerning the construction of puppets with people’s souls sealed inside them, were they all your doings?”

She tilted her head and pondered about this question, and then said with a curious look. “Yaoyao... What’s a Soul Assimilating Banner?”

“You don’t know?” Zhu Yao was shocked.

“Wood Spirit only wants Yaoyao!” Wood Spirit waved her arms

at her. “Hug.”

“Then why did that ‘Wu Hua’ call you mistress?” Zhu Yao turned to look at ‘Wu Hua’, wanting to seek confirmation. “Where did he go?”

She looked around for a long while, and then raised her head, only to see a body hanging on a certain tree branch. The spiritual energy in her body had already completely scattered, whites showing from her eyes. Her face was facing the sky, and her mouth was like a small fountain spitting out blood.

“.....”

“...”

When Wood Spirit sprinted towards her, she seemed... to have... indeed pushed a little something away?

Uhh... It seemed like she used quite a bit of force.

A sense of helplessness instantly overwhelmed Zhu Yao. It was as if she had prepared a bunch of equipment to defeat a boss, only to see him commit suicide before she could even raise her sword.

“Yaoyao, are you talking about Sesame?” Wood Spirit pointed at ‘Wu Hua’ on the tree branch and said.

“Sesame?” How was that thing like Sesame?

“He called me mistress, so he is Sesame.” Wood Spirit explained with a serious look.

“Uh...” So there was actually a relationship called ‘Mistress and Sesame’ in this world? Just what did you learn in the few years when you were in my divine sense? “How did you get to know... this Sesame?” Zhu Yao asked in another manner.

“She came in on her own and I knew her then.” Wood Spirit explained. “Realmspirit said Yaoyao will be coming, so I waited here. While I was waiting, she came in.”

Wood Spirit told her about their entire encounter, and Zhu Yao’s

face darkened after hearing the entire story. In summary, this was a story of a naive young lady being tricked. Realmspirit said that Zhu Yao would appear in a world near the Desolate Ground. In order to meet her, Wood Spirit opened an entrance in the cultivation world – that stone wall in Tranquil Valley. She waited for Zhu Yao to come into the Desolate Ground to see her. In the end, before she got to meet her, she met this heretic practitioner who took over Wu Hua.

Wood Spirit was the manifestation of wood spiritual energy itself, and possessed the purest of heart. After a short chat, the heretic practitioner found out about her desire to look for someone. In order to leave this Desolate Ground, the heretic practitioner pretended to revere her as her mistress, and promised to head to the cultivation world to search for that person.

It would have been fine if that was all, but Wood Spirit had even split a part of her own source energy and gave it to the heretic practitioner. The consequences were thus imaginable. This heretic practitioner however sure possessed incredible technical talent, as she was capable of unleashing the source energy to its fullest potential and had actually discovered the arts of soul control. The puppets of human practitioners, Soul Assimilating Banner and even the heart demon grounds were all things she came up with.

However, her luck was just terrible. In the end, Zhu Yao saw through her, and coincidentally, she transferred her here.

“This Sesame sure is a good Sesame! As expected, she brought Yaoyao over to me!” Wood Spirit did not seem to have realized that she was tricked, as she waved her hands at ‘Wu Hua’ with an incredibly brilliant smile. “Sesame, thank you so much.”

Wu Hua’s reply was: Puaah... She spat out even more blood than before.

Right at this moment, Zhu Yao did not know if Wood Spirit was the one she should be pitying, or ‘Wu Hua’.



---

Zhu Yao did not stay in the Desolate Ground for too long and returned to Office Shell Sect. If she had stayed any longer, most likely, ‘Wu Hua’ would have surely died. Though she had done many evil deeds, Zhu Yao was still not the one who should decide her fate. No matter what, she should be handled by the members of Office Shell Sect, whose sect was destroyed by her hands.

She had Wood Spirit retrieve the source energy from her body, and then instructed Wood Spirit not to hand over such power to anyone else ever again. Not even Zhu Yao herself. Wood Spirit agreed with teary eyes. Then, she hugged onto Zhu Yao’s thigh and cried for a long time, not wanting her to leave.

Zhu Yao’s lips were even beginning to dry up from all the persuading she did, yet Wood Spirit was still unwilling to let go. She continued to cry her lungs out.

“Wood Spirit doesn’t want to be alone, wuaahh...”

“I will stay behind then!” Little Eighth suddenly spoke up. Then, he flapped his wings and flew towards Wood Spirit’s shoulder.

“Little Eighth!” Zhu Yao was stunned, immediately rejecting his proposal. “You can’t.” When did he become so kind-hearted?

“Seventh elder sister...”

“I’m telling you no, and it means no!” Zhu Yao frowned. “You’re presently still a fledgeling. I don’t feel at ease leaving you here.”

“Tch. You sound as if it’s really safe staying by your side.”

“Uh...” His reasoning made so much sense, she actually had no words to refute him with.

“Seventh elder sister, I’m no longer young. I even possess the memories of two lives, so nothing will happen.” Little Eighth said. “Furthermore, Wood Spirit here carries the scent of a parasol tree, and it’s really beneficial to us of the Phoenix race. Other than this

place, I really have no idea where else I should go. There's even a chance... that one day, other Phoenixes will sense this place and come over as well. When that time comes, I will no longer be alone."

"..." Zhu Yao's heart clenched, she had nothing to follow up with. In her heart, she faintly understood just how low the chances of two Godbeasts appearing in a single world were.

"Seventh elder sister, don't worry. Nothing will happen to me."

Even after Zhu Yao tried to persuade him for a long while, Little Eighth seemed to have made a resolution to stay here. He was right. Staying by her side was the most dangerous thing he could do. Who would know just how many bugs were there left for her to fix? In this Desolate Ground where only demonic beasts would roam, it was the safest place he could be in. Wood Spirit was the life force of this domain, and no creature could harm her. If a human practitioner were to barge in, as Little Eighth had already gotten tricked once, he would not get tricked so easily again.

In the end, she had no choice but to let him stay behind.

A tree and a bird stood there as they waved their hands (wings) goodbye. Only when Zhu Yao's figure slowly disappear into the spatial tear, did they finally put them down.

They stood still for a long while.

"She's gone..."

"Mn."

"Will Yaoyao still come back?"

"... She will."

"I really want to cry, what should I do?"

"Shut up!"

"That's my Yaoyao..."

“That’s my seventh elder sister!”

“... Wuuwuu.”

“Stop crying, don’t you know tears are contagious!?”

“Wuaaah...”

“.....”

“...”

A long while later...

“Little Eighth Eighth, are you going to make a nest on my body?”

“Not going to!”

“Then how are you going to sleep?”

“You’re annoying!”

---

After returning to the cultivation world, Zhu Yao immediately handed ‘Wu Hua’ over to Sect Master Gu. As to how she was going to be dealt with, Zhu Yao was unaware of it.

However, the various clans and sects of the cultivation world conducted a meeting that lasted several days, their agenda being the investigation and study of this huge incident, and the drafting of a series of emergency deployment programmes. They had even summarised several of the experiences and lessons learnt.

Ness Cesary Sect received an immense blow from this incident, and even their base was crushed. Coincidentally, Office Shell Sect’s base was still present, yet they no longer had anyone occupying it. Zhu Yao did not know how the discussion between Qu Jiang and Sect Master Gu went, but the two sects actually merged in the end, taking up the name Officesary Sect! One provided the human resources, while the other provided the base! It was a rather harmonious move. Furthermore, the one to take up the title of Sect Master, was not Qu Jiang, but Sect Master Gu.

Because of Ye Qingcang's exemplary performance in this campaign, he became the sect's foremost target for nurturing, and his fame began to spread even more. Little tyrant had even more so become an idol. Not just Ness Cesary Sect, even the other sects and wandering practitioners were praising him to no end.

Initially, Sect Master Gu wanted little tyrant to stay in Officesary Sect, but he did not agree to it. Instead, he followed Hua Lin back to Wandering City. A choice like this was beloved by all. Ye Qingcang was already in Officesary Sect. A cave could not hold two tigers, unless one was gong (on top) and the other shou (bottom)... Ah pui, she meant male and female.

Zhu Yao recalled about the incident. The disappearance of the 'bug' on Ye Qingcang's face was most likely related to the transformation of his self and thoughts. Even till today, she still could not figure out just which words of hers had stabbed right into his sore point, making him give up on the opportunity to become a brutal role model.

"Granny, are you going to return to Wandering City?" Ye Qingcang asked.

"Mn, maybe?" The bug was gone, and she suddenly felt she had nothing to do. "What about you? What are your plans?"

His smile was incredibly dazzling, as he showed a magnanimous look. "I created a new set of cultivation arts for penta spirit vein holders. I plan to teach this to all of the disciples in the sect who hold the penta spirit veins."

Zhu Yao was stunned. She was aware that Ye Qingcang had a net set of cultivation arts, as the scenario had brought it up once. It was also the reason for his incredible growth as well. She never expected that he would take it out so easily and teach it to others.

"Just as granny had said, I must learn to trust someone with all my heart."

“...” Zhu Yao blanked for a moment. After a long while, she patted on his shoulders. “Good luck!”

She suddenly felt a sense of achievement, as though her own son had all grown up!

“When are you planning to take in disciples?”

“When the mountain gate opens once more.”

“Not bad, fellow student Little Cang! You’re about to become a teacher. Then, in the future, should I call you...”

Aoi-sensei!

○|▬|\_

“Little Cang, are you really going to take in disciples? There’s still time to go back on your word! Aoi-sensei isn’t someone that anyone can become. You must be cautious, young man!”

“.....”

“...”

---

Zhu Yao suddenly felt a clear aura coming from the sky above, and she could even faintly hear a crackling sound. The sky had even gotten a little brighter.

“The Heavenly Door has opened.” Yu Yan suddenly said.

Zhu Yao was startled. “Heavenly Door?” What did he mean?

White light flashed from her chest, and her master suddenly appeared above her sword. He raised his head and glanced at the sky. “The Heavenly Door of this world has just been opened.”

“Ah!? Has the Heavenly Door even been closed before?”

Yu Yan reached out his hand and stroked his stupid disciple’s head, sighing. “Do you know why not a single person has ascended from this world for so many years?”

“I don’t know.” Could it be because they all looked ugly?

“Presently, in the Higher Realm, the Heavenly Doors leading to the Lower Realm had all collapsed.”

“What!?” Zhu Yao was stunned. She was somewhat aware of the Heavenly Door collapse incident, as she saw it once in the Higher Realm herself. However, that was just one example. Just how long had it been since then, that all the Heavenly Doors of the Three Thousand Worlds were now closed?

“However, the Heavenly Door of this world has just been opened again.” Yu Yan frowned. He found it incomprehensible as well.

Before the two of them could even figure it out, the Light of Guidance broke through the skies and landed right on the two of them.

“Master!” Zhu Yao grew anxious, as she hurriedly grabbed onto his hand.

The lot which was just about to return to Wandering City was also shocked by the sudden appearance of the Light of Guidance.

“Grandma...” Little tyrant looked dumbfoundedly at the two people enveloped within the heavenly light.

Yu Yan sighed. He wrapped his arm around Zhu Yao’s waist, and held her in his embrace. Lowering his head, he pressed down on her forehead. “Yu... Yao. The matters concerning this world have been settled, you shall accompany me back to the Higher Realm.” It was best to bind his disciple to his side.

Zhu Yao nodded. The bug was already dealt with, and her master’s divine sense could not be away from its main body for a long period of time either. Furthermore, it’s been a long time since she broke into the late-stage Demigod level. She turned to face little tyrant and waved her hand. “Little tyrant, hurry and come up here to look for me, alright?”

# Chapter 323: Forced Disconnection

---

Zhu Yao felt her body loosening as she flew towards the depths of the light.

This was the first time she was ascending into the Higher Realm through the standard passageway, and she could not help but feel a little anxious. She really wanted to give an acceptance speech of some sort. It continued to grow brighter in front of her eyes, and white was the only thing that she could see above her.

Her master's figure next to her was growing fainter. Suddenly, he turned around and pressed on her lips. Then, he said with a sunken voice. "Return to Lightning Divine Palace with haste. Your master shall be waiting for your return."

Zhu Yao nodded, and only then did his figure completely disappear. Most likely, he had returned to his main body.

The light continued to grow brighter, and Zhu Yao's little heart was beating rapidly. As long as she were to cross this white light, she would arrive in the Higher Realm, and she would then be able to reunite with her master. Finally, she could spend time loving for real. She suddenly felt the world had become even more beautiful than before!

Zhu Yao's entire being was enveloped by the white light, brighter... brighter... and even brighter...

Crack.

Everything went dark!

What happened? Was the electricity cut off? Where's the promised beautiful new world?

Ting! A conversation window popped out right at this moment.

You have disconnected. Please choose one of the following options:

[Login with a new avatar] or [Give up on login] or [Retort]

Zhu Yao: “...”

-flips table- Realmspirit, wait right there with your neck cleaned!

The conversation window flashed, and a new row of words instantly appeared. User has chosen [Retort], switching to conversation mode.

The screen shook, and a familiar QQ chat window immediately popped up.

Realmspirti: Welcome back! Young maiden, the bug was fixed perfectly! You shall receive a five-star rating, yo!

Realmspirit: Eh? Young maiden, what’s wrong? Why is your face so dark?

Realmspirit: Young maiden, why are you taking off your shoes... Ah! Don’t throw... Don’t throw it at my face!

Realmspirit: Why are you still throwing... That’s Bai Yuan’s inner core! Hey... Young maiden...

Realmspirit: Stop throwing already! If you can, then throw your chest pads at me too!

Realmspirit: The hell! You’re actually throwing them!

A moment later...

Realmspirit: Young maiden, I was wrong!

“Speak, what the hell’s wrong with you? Why did I end up in this stupid place when I was ascending so perfectly?”

Realmspirit: I’m just worried that young maiden might be a little tired. You must watch out for your health and log off on time. It’s work-life balance, you know?

Zhu Yao cracked her knuckles, emitting out resounding crackling noises. “Speak human!”

Realmspirit: An urgent bug has appeared, that’s why I forcefully



disconnected you.

“The hell! So I was murdered by you this time!?”

Realmspirit: Haah, young maiden, I don't have a choice this time around. You know this, right? Spirits have three urgent needs!

“Piss off!” There's something wrong with me if I believe your words! What's this urgent situation you had to disconnect me for? Do you know how exhausting maintaining this avatar was? Yet, you disconnected me like it's nothing!” Back then, Cheng Qingdiao had broken her avatar to an incredibly sorry state, yet she was still able to live past that. One will grow attached to an avatar after using it for a long time, you know?

Realmspirit: Young maiden, the bug this time is really special. That world is already at the verge of collapse.

“Then what can I possibly do if I were to head...”

Before she could even finish, a video player suddenly appeared on the screen. Within the screen, the place was in complete chaos. The earth was shaking and spiritual energy was running amok. It was like an apocalyptic film. Even the practitioners that were flying in the sky were unable to escape. The entire world was enveloped in fear of death.

Zhu Yao suddenly recalled the moment when the world of the God races was at the verge of collapse. This was a very similar scene. However, back then she was able to open the World Crossing Door in time, while this world no longer had any presence of life.

“This is the world where the next bug is in?”

Realmspirit: That's right! This is a scene from not too far away in the future. Young maiden, if it wasn't because of an especially urgent matter like this, I wouldn't have needed to forcefully disconnect you. Please work overtime!

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at him. “Among the scenarios you have

given me, which world wouldn't have ended up like that?"

Realmspirit: Young maiden... It's really different this time. This is extremely urgent. Please consider, kajima...

"Do I even have a choice to make here?" Zhu Yao smiled coldly.

Realmspirit: ...

The screen was silent for a moment. After a long while, the next row of words finally showed.

Realmspirit: Yaoyao... I'm sorry!

"You don't have to apologize!" Zhu Yao smiled. "Because I won't accept your apology." This time, she was truly angry. In my past reincarnations, at the very least, she got disconnected because of her own fault most of the time. She had always told herself that in a certain sense, Realmspirit was actually saving her each time.

But what about now? Was he dissatisfied that she was taking too long to die, and thus made the move himself? Then what was he treating her as? A puppet that could be disposed of at anytime? People shouldn't behave this shamelessly!

"Realmspirit! You have always told me that we are friends, but does real friends actually act like this?" Zhu Yao took a deep breath, the flames in her heart could not be quelled no matter what she did. "If things go on like this, I don't know how far this so-called friendship can truly last."

The screen was quiet for a very long time. The next row of words did not appear even after a long while.

After a long while, the screen flashed and suddenly disappeared. A human figure took its place, and this time it was actually the figure of a woman. The woman's face was very familiar, because she looked exactly the same as Zhu Yao herself.

"Yaoyao..." She called out.

Zhu Yao did not have any reaction. She simply turned her head

away, and no longer gave her another glance.

Realmspirit lowered her head, and walked over with a guilty look. “I’m sorry...”

“I already told you, I won’t accept your apology!”

She was silent for a moment, and then gently said. “I know you have a lot of questions, and that you’re very angry as well... But there are some matters that I still can’t reveal to you yet, it’s still too soon for you. I was... too impulsive this time. I shouldn’t have done this to you, I apologize. I guarantee that this won’t happen again.”

She looked sincere, and the anger within Zhu Yao finally quelled a little.

Realmspirit smiled, and then, with her eyes looking straight at Zhu Yao’s, she said. “But, Zhu Yao... Please believe me. I have never thought of harming you. If there comes a day when you truly do not wish to continue, even if I have to use all of my power, I will send you back.”

“...” Zhu Yao clenched her fists, and finally after taking in a deep breath, she could not help but push her face away. “Don’t say something so disgusting with my face, hey!”

“Hoho... Young maiden, you’re clearly enjoying it!” Seeing that her anger was quelled, Realmspirit instantly returned to her rough attitude.

“Scram!”

“Don’t be like that~ Help me fix this bug of mine again~ Because of the increase in difficulty, I will be providing you with all-round technical support, along with great rewards~”

“What kind of support specifically? And what are the rewards?” Everything you gave her had always been shocks, alright!?

She suddenly snapped her fingers, and a screen once again

appeared in the air. A certificate could be seen in it. “Do you still remember that Plane Movement Permit?”

“Are you going to help my master make one?” After all, she returned to this place because of this exact reason.

“Uhh...” Her face stiffened. “I can help you submit an application to the Plane Transmigration Inspection Bureau!”

“Tch!” One glance and Zhu Yao knew she wasn’t that reliable.

“Really, young maiden, you must trust me! I have a pretty great reputation, and there’s a very huge possibility that the application will be successful. The success rate is as high as 3.8%!”

“Scram!” She actually dared to bring up a measly 3.8%.

“Young maiden... Don’t be so heartless!”

“Are we going to fix that bug or not?” This person sure had lots of nonsense to talk about.

“Fix, fix, fix, of course! Immediately!” Realmspirit hurriedly nodded. That reincarnation loading bar instantly appeared before her eyes.

Realmspirit had an unwilling look. Out of nowhere, she pulled out a small handkerchief, and waved it frantically at Zhu Yao. “Hurry and come back, dear!”

“...” She suddenly had a bad feeling.

---

The Plane Movement Permit was mentioned in chapter 269 if you guys are wondering.

# Chapter 324: All-round Technical Support

---

When Zhu Yao woke up, she found herself in a spacious room. There weren't any other furniture in her surroundings other than a single bed. The bed was carved with spiritual jade, looking especially exquisite as spiritual energy flowed out of it in abundance. The floor was paved with an unknown stone material that was seamlessly snow white. With one glance, it could be seen just how rich the owner of this room was.

However, not a single other person was in the room, and Zhu Yao... was lying on the ceiling supporting frame.

Setting her resurrection point on a ceiling supporting frame was truly a little too 'high'-end. The moment she opened her eyes, she had almost fallen onto the ground, you know? Fortunately, she managed to grab onto the frame with her quick reflexes, otherwise with the height of this ceiling, at the very least, her lower body would have been paralyzed. After looking at the room for a short while more, she then slid down the pillar and onto the ground.

With Realmspirit's, sense of morality, the first thing she did when she landed on the ground, was investigate her avatar. At the very least, she had to ascertain its gender! She grabbed onto her waistband, and just as she was about to pull it out and verify her lower body, she saw two bundles of erect, snow-white peaks.

What were these?

Zhu Yao pinched them with slight disbelief.

They hurt! They're mine!

Breasts! I actually have breasts! And I can even see them when I look down!

Having flat plains for several lifetimes, Zhu Yao felt weight from the breasts in front of her for the very first time and was beyond ecstatic.

Looking at these wavy curves and towering elevations, they were at least E!

This isn't a dream, right? If it's a dream, let me gently pinch them a little.

She suddenly felt like she could forgive Realmspirit for anything now!

Eh, wait a minute!

Looking at her past experiences, since her points on her body figure were off the charts, her face couldn't have been hit with demerit points, right?

Zhu Yao's heart sank. She calmly circulated spiritual energy in her body, and realized that her body had already built on its Foundation. She immediately summoned a water mirror, and then looked at her face as she closed in on it.

After looking at it, Zhu Yao took in a deep breath.

This incredible face was completely illogical! Even Zhu Yao felt like she was incapable of describing what kind of face it was. Even the four beauties of ancient China couldn't possibly compare to her present look! Even when she reincarnated as one of the God races back then, she wasn't this beautiful either. If she really had to describe it, then 'dreamy' was the only word she could think of.

Did Realmspirit finally found his conscience? He was treating her so well all of a sudden! She couldn't adapt to this at all, hey.

Let me enjoy my beauty to my heart's content for a little while more...

She glanced at the face in the water mirror, and then pinched on her breasts again. She could play like this all day.

Recalling that she had a mission on hand, Zhu Yao had no choice but to unwillingly retract the water mirror. Presently, she had yet to receive the scenario, so she decided to first head out for a look.

The room was huge. Zhu Yao had to walk a few dozen steps before arriving at the door. Just as she was about to pull it open, she suddenly heard a chime as a conversation window popped up in front of her.

“Congratulations on activating the ‘Five Minutes Timed Trial’ mode.”

(This is a passive skill with no cooldown.)

Zhu Yao: ...

The hell was this Five Minutes Timed Trial? Math Olympiad?

Before Zhu Yao could even figure out the situation, the conversation window flashed and disappeared. She did not really pay it any mind either and instantly pulled open the door. A white flash of light appeared in front of her eyes as it shot straight towards her. It landed heavily on her chest. She felt a piercing pain as her entire body flew backwards.

“Puaaah!” She puked out a mouthful of blood.

Her vision blackened!

Ting! A conversation window appeared again.

“Congratulations on unlocking the ‘Disconnecting in the Shortest Time Possible’ achievement. The time you spent online was five minutes. You disconnected the moment you came online! Title Unlocked: Black Face!”

Zhu Yao: “...”

-Flips table-What’s with this ‘Disconnecting in the Shortest Time Possible’ achievement? Why was there an explosion talisman outside her door? Why did she reincarnate in such a dangerous place? She finally managed to attain a beautiful lady avatar. She had the breasts, and even the gorgeous face. She just wanted to quietly spend a little time enjoying her beauty... And the hell, she really spent a very little time enjoying it alright!

Realmspirit, come out! I shall bash you to death right here and now!

Ting!

“Five Minutes Timed Trial” mode passive activated. Countdown begins. 5... 4... 3... 2...

In the next instant, the scene before her eyes flashed. Just as she was about to take a step forward, her feet touched on empty air. When she looked like she was about to fall, she immediately reached out her hand to the side and managed to hug onto something which saved her from the fall.

When she looked around. The hell! She returned to the ceiling supporting frame!

Wait a minute. Five minutes timed trial. Time couldn't have been rewound by five minutes, right?

She immediately crawled down with support of the pillar and summoned a water mirror. As expected, it was that beautiful face from before. She clasped down below. Phew! The breasts are still here.

So there isn't a need to change avatars! Say so earlier! You frightened me!

Zhu Yao immediately heaved a sigh of relief and once again arrived at the doorstep. Recalling her experience of being bombed to death, she did not open the door instantly this time. Instead, she circulated her spiritual energy to sense the location of the explosion talisman, poked a hole straight through the paper panel door, and tore it down.

Only then did she open the door!

Rich spiritual energy instantly poured towards her. Zhu Yao took a deep breath, and what entered her eyes were sheets of white misty clouds. Occasionally, spiritual cranes would fly past. With just one glance, it could be seen that this place was a celestial



mountain with blessed lands. Other than the clouds in front of her, there seemed to be a human figure as well.

Just on time. She could ask about the situation regarding this avatar of hers. Her heart was filled with excitement as she stepped out. “May I ask...”

Flop...

Zhu Yao stepped on empty air, falling straight down.

Her vision once again blackened.

Ting!

Congratulations, you fell to your death!

Ting!

“Five Minutes Timed Trial” mode passive activated. Countdown begins, in 5... 4... 3... 2...

The scene in front of her flashed, and she returned to that ceiling supporting frame.

Zhu Yao: “...”

The hell. Her door was right at the edge of the cliff. Just which idiotic architect would come up with a design like that!? If you have guts, then don't you dare leave after school!

Her third resurrection...

She first tore down the talisman. Then, she quietly stood in front of the door and stared outside for five minutes. Just as she was planning to look for a usable mystic artifact...

A disciple dressed in a green robe suddenly came flying from afar. He looked at her with a shocked look, and his expression seemed to have changed a couple of times, before he hurriedly bowed in front of her.

“This disciple greets Sect Master. Sect Master, you... have ended your closed-door training?”

Zhu Yao was startled. Sect Master? A Foundation disciple like her? The summit of life of this world was a little too short, don't you think?

Though she had long guessed that this avatar most likely had a scenario attached to it, she never expected that her identity would be this incredible.

"Uh... About that. What sect am I Sect Master of?" Zhu Yao asked.

That disciple was stunned for a moment. Then, he straightened himself up and replied. "Naturally, you are the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace."

"Ou." With the power backed by the scenario, it would be useless even if she tried to deny it. She might as well admit it. "Oh right, what's your name?"

The disciple frowned, as a thought seemed to have quickly flashed past his face. With a smile, he replied. "Sect Master sure is forgetful. I am your junior-martial nephew, Luo Shi!"

Junior-martial nephew? In other words, she had a senior-martial brother as well?

"I wonder what instructions Sect Master have for me, since you have ended your closed-door training ahead of time?" This disciple named Luo Shi asked, his attitude indeed looked respectful, but for some reasons, she felt that something was off.

"No need!" She had enough of staying in the room. It was time to start her job of locating the bug. "Do you have a flying artifact on you? How about lending me one?"

"Yes! Sect Master!" Luo Shi turned to pull open the storage pouch by his side, and said. "I wonder where Sect Master is heading to?"

"I'm not sure. I will just be looking around." Zhu Yao turned to look at the snow-white clouds outside. With how high her house was at, she wondered what it would look like below.

“In that case, why don’t junior-martial nephew send you off?”

“Ah?” Before Zhu Yao could even react, she heard an air-tearing sound next to her. LUo stood in front of her with a sunken face.

A dagger stabbed straight into her chest.

The hell!

What was this situation? Why did he make a move against her without giving a single explanation!?

Ting!

“Victories and defeats are natural occurrences in the art of war. Great deity, please try again!”

“Five Minutes Timed Trial” mode passive activated!

She once again returned to that ceiling support frame.

.....

The hell, just what kind of ridiculous scenario did Realmspirit arrange for her this time!? -faints—

Why did she die three times consecutively before she could even step away from this room? Was this the price of having a gorgeous face? Could she get a refund?

An unprecedented sense of danger rose in Zhu Yao’s heart. This time, she did not dare to step out of the door so easily again. The world outside was too dangerous. She looked around the room carefully, hoping to see if she could locate a usable mystic artifact. In the end, the room was so clean, not even a speck of dust could be found.

Seeking help from others was not an option. She did not know if she would encounter someone like Luo Shi who would stab her, after all.

What should she do?

Suddenly, she focused her line of sight on the silk blanket on the

jade bed. When she picked it up, she realized that it was made of Hibre Thread, a second rank refining material. She immediately pulled the entire blanket out and cast the Fire Control Art, slowly refining the silk.

After a while, a silk handkerchief the size of her palm was refined to completion. Probably because of the strength of her flames, the product was just a first rank mystic artifact. However, she was already satisfied that she could fly with it.

She immediately tore down the talisman, opened the door, and flew out. This was a dangerous place, and she did not wish to stay there for even a single moment longer.

Just when she had merely flown for several meters, she suddenly crashed into something.

A formation!

Before she could even react, the formation instantly shone. Several hundred icicles immediately tore through the skies and shot in her direction.

Ting!

‘Congratulations, you have died stupidly!’

The hell! This old lady won’t believe it! I will leave this house no matter what!

Zhu Yao once again refined the Hibre Thread. This time, when she left the door, she did not charge out in a hurry. Instead, she took a deep breath and circulated out spiritual energy to investigate the formation. After taking a closer look, she realized that there was a circular defensive formation several dozen meters away in the sky. The formation surrounded the house she was in.

The formation was ice-type, and would only activate when one attempted to leave, and not enter. In other words, this formation was used to defend against her.

Just who was this avatar of hers? Why were there so many traps and mechanisms outside?

After scanning the entire formation, Zhu Yao then began perform calculations on it. A short while later, she found the formation core, and it happened to be right on the roof of the house. Zhu Yao flew closer to take a look, only to realize that it was actually a mirror.

After pondering for a moment, she decided against breaking the formation core. Instead, she directly held onto the corner of the mirror and temporarily disabled the formation. As she had expected, the surrounding formation shook for a moment and then disappeared. She took this opportunity to release the mirror and fly out with all her strength.

The moment she flew out, the formation was once again restored.

After escaping, she flew all the way down, and she flew through the cloud layer in a few moments. What she saw was a forest, and not far away from it was a range of overbearing floating mountains. A towering palace could be seen up above as well.

Most likely, that was the Spirit Heaven Palace Luo Shi mentioned.

Zhu Yao, who was completely unaware of the scenario, decided that it was best to stay further away and immediately rushed into the forest. Just as she was about to head in the opposite direction, a loud furious roar could be heard from within the forest.

A large demonic beast fiercely leapt out.

It was actually a beastie. Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief. Demonic beasts were of her own kind, after all! So touching!

She stepped forward, wanting to give it a hug filled with love. She watched as that beast leapt towards her.

“Hi, beas-”

The demonic beast opened its huge mouth, ahhmuu...

Ting!

‘Congratulations, you were bitten to death!’

Zhu Yao who returned to the ceiling support frame: “...”

What happened to the promise of being each other’s angel?

# Chapter 325: High-Level Scenario

---

Realmspirit mentioned that this world was at the verge of collapse, forcing her to disconnect in order to fix the bug here. She did not know for sure if this world would actually collapse, but she herself was about to collapse very soon. As someone who had rich reincarnating experience, she realized at this very moment that her past experiences were nothing at all.

There were actually this many methods of death in this world. Death by exploding. Death by falling. Death by stabbing. Death by formation's activation. Death by biting from a demonic beast. Death by walking into a pit and ended up being pierced. Death by activating a trap and being smashed. Death by choking on water. Even when she was just walking, she would even be suddenly slammed by a falling tree.

Zhu Yao who had countlessly rewind time by five minutes, was deeply suspecting whether if this avatar was carrying a innate talent for suffering, and a talent that surpassed all records at that. If this were to keep up, she could even write a book when she finally get to head back. The title of the book would be:《My Hundred and One Ways to Die》

Zhu Yao heavily panted as she observed the terrain in the surroundings. Phew, safe! Only then did she sit on the grass. Let me make a save file first! She silently counted five minutes in her heart. File saving has been completed. If she were to die again later on, at the very least, she did not have to return to that ceiling support frame.

She raised her head and looked at the place she came down from. For some reasons, this Spirit Heaven Palace was constantly giving her a dangerous feeling. She faintly sensed that she shouldn't continue staying there. This feeling was really strange, and she did not know what reason was causing it either.

The various mechanisms and formations outside the room earlier had especially shaken her heart. She wondered just who was trying to deal with her. However, from the looks of the present situation, if she were to continue on like this, she would definitely be embroiled in the entire matter. She decided it was best that she leave as quickly as possible.

Zhu Yao stood up. Just as she was about to continue forward and leave this forest, she suddenly heard wails from the side...

Who the hell is crying in broad daylight?

She cautiously scanned her surroundings, yet she couldn't see a single human figure. She could not sense any presence of life around her at all.

However, the wails grew louder.

"Who is it?" She could not help but ask, yet she did not receive a reply. She couldn't have encountered a ghost, right? She instantly recalled various midnight horror movies, where ghosts had severed heads, were dressed in red gowns, or had long tongues. Immediately after, memories of her time in the actual Netherworld flashed in her mind. Instantly, her fear was dispelled. Uh... With the intellect of those ghosts, they are most likely nothing to be afraid of.

Just as she was in doubt, she suddenly felt a chilling sensation crawling on her arm. Several drops of water appeared on her skin. She wiped her face out of reflex, and realized her hand was now wet.

The hell, she was actually the one crying? When did she start crying? Why wasn't she aware of it at all?

Zhu Yao strongly rubbed her eyes, only to realize tears were dropping faster than before. She might not even stop at this rate. Just what was going on?

Could it be...



Her heart clenched. After calming down and sensing her own body, she realized that the wails were coming from within her body. She instantly felt a chill rising from the bottom of her heart.

She immediately sat down in a meditative posture, and then looked into her Dantian.

At the very corner of her Dantian, a ghost dressed in white robes was squatting there. Her two arms were wrapped around her knees, and her head was buried within her thighs. With her arms trembling, she constantly let out her cries.

“Who are you?” Zhu Yao was shocked. “Why are you in my body?”

That female ghost was stunned for a moment. She slowly raised her head, unexpectedly revealing a face with flowery features. Eh? Why does she look a little familiar?

The hell! Doesn't she have the appearance of my current avatar?

“No... I'm not... inside your body.” The maiden sniffled and said. “You're the one... in my body.”

“Eh!?” Zhu Yao instantly felt like she had been struck by lightning. “Y-y-y... You're saying the body I'm in right now, is yours?”

“Mn.” The maiden nodded her head strongly.

“The hell!?”

And here she was wondering why Realmspirit was treating her so well all of a sudden, giving her such a high quality avatar and all. So this avatar was actually owned by someone else! Then what was Zhu Yao? Did she take over this girl's body? And she was about to strip herself naked too!

“I'm sorry, I shall return this avatar to you immediately.” Realmspirit, come out here right now!

“No!” The maiden suddenly turned anxious, as she stepped

forward to hug Zhu Yao's thigh. "I... I, I'm not going back! I beg you, don't leave!"

"..." There's actually a weirdo in this world that begs others to take over her body. Girl, your resolve is a little too strong, don't you think?

"I don't want to be a pillar anymore! Realmspirit told me... that you can help me. I beg you, help me!"

"Realmspirit?" Zhu Yao was stunned. Could this girl be the scenario herself? Pulling apart the arms that were clinging onto her thigh, Zhu Yao then sat down next to her. "Tell me, just what is going on? What did that bastard Realmspirit tell you?"

Only then did the girl rub her eyes and stop her tears. She pulled out a crystal-like transparent small ball and passed it to Zhu Yao. "Realmspirit gave me this. He mentioned that you will understand once you see it."

"What is this?" Zhu Yao received it, and with a bright flash of light from the ball, a lightscreen instantly appeared in front of her. Yo, it's actually a projector. This screen... Is the scenario about to be played?

Zhu Yao straightened herself and immediately turned serious.

Three minutes later...

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. She glanced at the lady next to her. "I say, girl... Did you take out the wrong disc?"

"I didn't?" The girl had a serious look on her face. "This is the only one I received from Realmspirit."

"Are you certain?"

"I'm certain!"

Zhu Yao's face darkened!

Certain, my ass! These action scenes involving a woman and a man, or a woman and two men, or a woman and n number of men,

in various indescribable postures, were obviously part of an AV film! Where's the scenario in here?

“Girl...” Zhu Yao took in a deep breath. “Do you have a boyfriend?”

“Ah?”

“It's fine if you don't have one, I do!” She said earnestly.” Haaah! I can understand you single little kitties possessing one or two special collections like this, but if you want to learn these moves from observation, at the very least, find another man to watch these with you! What are you trying to pull by making me watch this with you?” Even fellow lesbians won't watch something like this together, my friend!

The girl had a dumbfounded look, as though she was unable to comprehend the situation at all. She kindly glanced her in direction. “Eh? Realmspirit clearly mentioned that you would understand after watching it... Ah, you held it wrongly.”

“Ah?”

The girl immediately reached out her hand to turn the direction of the ball, and then she said with a naive and pure look. “It's correct now.”

Zhu Yao wasa stunned. This disc had different recordings on different sides?

After a closer look, the scenes were clearly purer than before. Like the past scenarios, a young girl appeared on it. Most likely, the young girl was the bug in question this time. Zhu Yao watched the scenario unfold seriously, all the way to the end.

Immediately, a disgusting feeling welled up inside her, as though she had sneakily watched an extremely controversial movie while being drenched in dog's blood.

The first part of the scenario was till rather normal. The female lead with the bug this time was called Fan Zhishan, who was part

of a well-known aristocratic family. Aristocratic families were always good at producing babies, and Fan Zhishan was a daughter birthed by a concubine. Because she was mentally ill, she was not highly regarded by the family. Then, when she was six years old and was tested to possess quad spirit veins, she was cast away even more so than before. She was basically left to fend on her own. Adding that was she mentally deficient, she was naturally bullied by other children. However, on the year she turned ten, everything changed.

Her mental illness was suddenly cured, and she turned smart and sharp. She was actually able to recite poems with ease and converse with a linguistic tongue. Often, the arguments she gave would even stun the adults. Her talent was instantly spotted by a manager of the main family, and he made the decision to bring her into the school of the main family, marking her start in cultivation basics. The female lead was very hardworking. Though she had aptitude of quad spirit veins, her cultivation level rose to the fifth level of Essence in just three years.

Thus, along with a pair of sisters of the main family, she was fortunately chosen by the main family to head over to the number one deity sect – Sleipoup Sect, to look for a master. During the entrance examination, because she broke through a profound mechanism of one of the checkpoints with her Dao of Language, she was actually fancied by a Demigod Sovereign of Sleipoup Sect and was taken in as his disciple.

After that, Fan Zhishan journeyed towards the summit of life. She tamed beasts, obtain treasures, cleansed her meridians, her cultivation rose, and she finally dominated the world, before ascending into the Divine Realm...

Uh... Fine then, that's how the regular path should look like. However, Fan Zhishan was a female lead, and female leads had never taken the regular path to the summit. That's why, on her fifteenth birthday, with a "smack", her entire style changed along

with a incredible turning point. She activated the ‘heavy taste’ mode. As though some sort of seal had been broken, her charm level rose explosively, attracting a large number of fans. Furthermore, she did not go for the ‘uncertain’ play, but instead went for physical relationships.

Thus, on the screen, the scenes from earlier appeared.

Fan Zhishan was taken in by a master, and then... papapa~

Fan Zhishan had a new junior-martial brother, and then... papapa~

Fan Zhishan encountered a genius of the cultivation world in a tournament, and then... papapa~

Fan Zhishan picked up a tenth rank human transformed beastie, and then... papapa~

Fan Zhishan encountered a heretic practitioner, and then... papapa~

Fan Zhishan got to know a Hall Master of Spirit Heaven Palace, and then... papapa~

Fan Zhishan’s spiritual artifact birthed a spiritual consciousness, and then... papapa~

Fan Zhishan encountered...

“Girl... Can we fast-forward this part?” Zhu Yao nudged the girl next to her.

She had confused look. “What’s ‘fast-forward’?”

“Uh... Nevermind, forget I said anything.” Zhu Yao hardened herself and watched through it.

The screen was already beginning to show the scenes of forbidden realms, and those n number of male leads who had an... no, a lot of affairs with her, still loved her to death in the very end. Even though they were fully aware that she was a public bus, they were still willing to find their own place in her heart.

If that was all there was to it... Zhu Yao would just treat it as though she had just watched a movie with an especially heavy taste. PS: Along with another girl.

However, this female lead actually inserted an advertisement in such a movie!

The female lead said:

Master, senior-martial sister doesn't seem to like me very much, and she often prevents me from bothering master... I'm helpless... Uuuu... I can't have master kick her out of your tutelage, right? No, of course not! She's my senior-martial sister, everything is my fault... Master, don't blame senior-martial sister. I will work hard... and become a good junior-martial sister.

And then, that senior-martial sister suddenly died from going overboard in her cultivation.

The female lead said:

Junior-martial brother, I met your cousin. She mentioned that she's engaged to you since young... Uuuu... How can you cheat my feelings? It's best... that you return to her side. Let us never meet ever again...

And then, that cousin encountered an assault and was eaten by a beast.

The female lead said:

Senior-martial brother Lang Chen, you're the disciple of Everyday Clan, and your Sect Master strongly rejects us being together. He says that I'm not worthy of you... It's best that we break up!

And then, Everyday Clan was annihilated.

The female lead said:

Hua Hao, you move my heart so incredibly so, but... the other beasties of Seero Forest all looking so terrifying... I don't dare to look at them.

And then, the other beasties of Seero Forest were chased away.

The female lead said: Hall Master Cao...

Balabala...

In any case, no matter who was advertised by the female lead, murder would definitely occur in their surroundings. Countless cannon fodders were sacrificed. She was simply a mass murdering machine. With just her single word, a river of blood would flow.

Zhu Yao was simply dumbfounded. Isn't this a little too unreal? She suddenly recalled the girly Yi Ling who had walked on a similar path, where both their harems were made of countless men. However, Fan Zhishan's was clearly of a much higher level. At the very least, the men by her side were not of the shallow 'love at first sight' type, but unconsciously grew attracted to her after getting to know one another.

Though Zhu Yao still found it a little ridiculous.

Just like that, Fan Zhishan grew her harem while raising her cultivation and inserting advertisements. And then... the world collapsed.

At the very final scene, the female lead finally stood at the summit of the cultivation world. Suddenly, the earth shook, and the entire world began to collapse, turning into nothingness at the very end.

What was this situation?

Zhu Yao was shocked. She did not understand at all? Though Fan Zhishan was a bug and had shot at a few cannon fodders, she did not bring about a world war, nor had she done anything remotely close to cause something as serious as the collapse of the world. Why did this suddenly happen?

"What's going on here?" Zhu Yao pointed at the screen and asked the former owner girl by her side. "Why did the world collapse just like that?"

The girl's lips curled up, and she suddenly cried again. With a saddened look, she said. "I died!"

"Ah?" What did she mean?

"Over there... I'm already dead." The girl once again said.

"I know!" Zhu Yao had a puzzled look. Within the scenario, the girl was also one of the crowd of cannon fodders. In the action film, Fan Zhishan advertised her to Hall Master Cao of Spirit Heaven Palace: Little sister Ling Tian became a Sect Master at such a young age, she's truly amazing... I can't even be compared to at all. She definitely doesn't like me...

Thus, that Hall Master Cao instantly overthrew the girl and had the female lead become the Sect Master. From this event, it proved that the female lead was the only shining moon in his heart, and other women could not even be compared to the toenails on her feet. Only the heavens knew that Sect Master Ling Tian had never even met the female lead.

That's right, Ling Tian was this girl's name, and she was the final cannon fodder that was sacrificed in the scenario.

"But what does that have to do with the collapse of the world?"

The girl rubbed her eyes, and said while sobbing. "Because I'm a pillar of the world, it's final pillar."

"What?" Zhu Yao was dumbfounded. She sized her up for a moment. Does a new term have to pop up here and now?

"You don't look like a pole at all."

"Not a 'pole'." The girl grew anxious. "I'm a form of existence that maintains the world's balance, preventing it from collapsing. If I'm gone, this world will no longer be balanced."

So she's not a pole, but a balancing scale?

"In other words, you're not human?"

She shook her head. "I'm human!"



“...” Zhu Yao grew even more confused. Then what’s with this pillar deal?

“Realmspirit told me that because a piece of this world was missing, as it was destroyed once before.” The girl said seriously. “Then, this missing piece was patched up before the world finally gained a new life. However, the patched piece after all did not belong to this world, yet it was something that could not be lacked. Thus, after this piece gained a spiritual consciousness, it went into a reincarnation cycle. The purpose was to make use of this method of reincarnation to slowly integrate the piece into this world. Coincidentally, I am that piece in this stage of reincarnation cycle, and it’s also the final stage of integration. As long as this stage passes, this world will be complete.”

“Then, the integration this time is interrupted?” Zhu Yao asked. “Your death will cause the world to lose a piece, and thus cause the collapse of the world?”

“Mn.” The girl nodded, her face looked a little saddened. Suddenly, as though she had recalled something. “Not just that...”

“...” Don’t tell me there’s something even worse than this...

## Chapter 326: The Magical Brush

---

Zhu Yao finally understood what the more dire situation was. It was not her prone-to-death physique, nor was her avatar which was actually another person's body, and nor was it turning into cannon fodder. It was actually... the fact that more than half of the scenario had already been gone through, and the cannon fodder was about to lose her life!

She looked at the scenario again, and then only found this out after carefully piecing the timeline together. Momma's egg! The scenario has already begun playing, and the female lead Fan Zhishan's harem had already been officially established since ages ago. That Hall Master Cao of Spirit Heaven Palace was beginning to get rid of this cannon fodder called Ling Tian.

Those formations and traps outside her house back then were all placed by them.

She finally understood why she would wake up on the ceiling supporting frame. The girl hid up there because she was afraid!

Then what's the point of passing this scenario to her!? She had lost the initiative completely, alright? When she thought about how the girl Ling Yian was just a fodder with Foundation cultivation level, she suddenly felt her organs were aching with pain.

Since Realmspirit was able to reverse five minutes of her time, why didn't he return her back to fifty years ago at one go!?

Wait a minute! If she were discovered by others when she left her closed-door training site earlier, wouldn't that mean...

The hell!

Zhu Yao immediately woke up from her inner view, and then released her divine sense with all her might to investigate the area. As expected, there were presences of practitioners nearby, and she

were unable to discern their cultivation levels. Most likely, their power towered over hers, and from the direction they were heading, they were clearly coming straight towards her.

It was already too late for her to run now. What should she do? Was dying once more the only option left? The hell, what happened to the promised all-round technical support?

“Ling Tian girly, other than this projector, did Realmspirit give you anything else?” Zhu Yao calmed down, and then she sent a voice transmission to the former owner girl within her body.

“Realmspirit said that this was everything you need.” The girl replied, and she had even kindly brought the ball out of the body, making it appear in Zhu Yao’s hands.

“What’s the use of a ball!?” -faints-

Wait a minute!

It wasn’t that simple.

Realmspirit said that he would provide all-round technical support. She didn’t believe that a five minutes time reversal skill and a projector were all he had prepared. With that trolling mind of his, he definitely still had something up his sleeves.

Zhu Yao carefully inspected the ball in her hands. Could this projector possess several features as well? For example, turning into a mass murdering machine or something similar. After willing it, that ball actually began to light up. Unlike the projection earlier, it actually emitted a green light like a fluorescent ball this time, and it’s shape began to change right after.

This is actually electrocardiographic!

Zhu Yao grew a little agitated, and she began to be more cautious while holding onto the ball. She silently hoped for the weapon that was about to appear to be easy to wield, and it would be even better if it was a peerless godly artifact. Oh right, it must not have any level restrictions either. A safe-to-use, ultimate universe-class

slaughtering weapon fit for all ages and gender. Only a weapon like that could enable her to retreat safe and sound.

The light grew brighter, and the ball began to stretch out as its shape constantly changed. With a final sizzling sound, it seemed to have completed its transformation, revealing a snow-white cube. On it, there was a neatly written word – Vinegar!

Zhu Yao: “...”

Why vinegar!? Do you think we’re in an anime!? This old lady here is encountering a pursuer, not SARS! What’s the use of vinegar here!? No wait, vinegar is useless against SARS too, alright!?

Realmspirit, your sister! Why don’t you just give me a brush, so I can just write us off as dead!?

The vinegar cube that that had been splattered all over the ground flashed with a green light... and turned into a brush!

“...”

Give me a moment to think of where I should begin retorting in order to make it sound classier.

Realmspirit definitely wasn’t sincere about wanting to save this world, definitely!

“Eh? Saintess, there’s wordings on the brush.” Ling Tian girly’s voice suddenly resounded.

Zhu Yao picked up the brush. With one glance, it could be seen how cheaply made it was. It was covered in dark spots, and the tip of this brown brush was not even sharp to begin with. On its shaft, two words were printed on it in Times New Roman font – Magical Brush!

Hoho, and I’m Ma Liang!

“Saintess, they’re here.” The girl once again called out.

Zhu Yao gritted her teeth. Whatever, let’s do this! Using the dew

on the leaves from the tree next to her, she wrote two words on her body – Passerby A!

In the next moment, five Azoth disciples suddenly appeared in the sky above her. Dressed in blue and white uniforms, they looked at her with arrogant faces.

“Who are you?”

“Hi!” Zhu Yao tremblingly raised her hand. “Hello, I’m Ma Liang!”

“Why did you trespass into our Spirit Heaven Palace’s Misty Forest?” The disciple asked again.

“Uh... I’m lost.” Do you believe me?

“Lost?” The disciple frowned. “To actually be lost in a place like this. As expected, wandering practitioners sure are stupid.”

The hell, he actually believed it! Is your surname Stupid?

That disciple seemed to be extremely impatient. Just as he was about to repulse her, he was stopped by the other disciple next to him. “Senior-martial brother, why the need to waste so much of your breath on a wandering practitioner? Looking at him, he most likely wishes to come under our Spirit Heaven Palace. No need to care about him any further, we have to find Sect... that demonic woman, that is our main priority.”

Only then did that disciple calm down a little. He glanced at Zhu Yao below and said. “Hey, the one surnamed Ma!”

“Yes!” Surnamed Stupid, is there something you want from me?

“Did you see a Foundation female practitioner pass by here? She dresses... in a white robe with a green top.” He asked.

Zhu Yao tugged her own white robe with green top a little uneasily, and wildly shook her head. “Nope! Definitely not!”

The disciple frowned, whispering. “Strange, she shouldn’t have run far, why haven’t we found her yet?” He once again looked at

Zhu Yao with a scornful glance, and coldly said. “Spirit Heaven Palace does not welcome outsiders, you can leave by heading east. Hurry and leave, otherwise, I won’t be courteous again the next time we meet.”

After that, he spoke with the other martial brothers, before leaving in a mighty manner.

“Thank you!” Zhu Yao waved her hands at the crowd. “Have a safe trip...”

Only when she no longer saw their figures did she pull out the first rank mystic artifact she just refined. With trembling hands and legs, she crawled on top of it and flew wildly to the east. In a few moments, she had already exited the forest.

Phew~ That was close!

Zhu Yao pulled out that cheap and dirty brush. She never expected that it was actually an actual godly artifact! She wrote ‘Passerby A’ on her own body, and those people actually treated her as a passerby! It was as if the possibility of her being Ling Tian had been automatically removed from their brains. Realmspirit was finally reliable for once!

“Saintess, we managed to flee. That’s wonderful! You’re so incredible!” Ling Tian girly excitedly said. “With this item, we no longer have to be worried about being discovered.”

“That might not be the case!” Zhu Yao glanced at the three words that were about to dry on her body. She added a little more water to the brush and then patched it up again. If her guess was right, the effects of this brush should be similar to Word Enchantment which Qu Qu had mentioned before. However, the scope of the Word Enchantment brought about by this brush was a little broader. “Those few people earlier are just at the Azoth cultivation level, I can’t guarantee that people with higher cultivation levels will be fooled by this.”

Ling Tian girly was silent for a moment, before gently speaking up. “At the very least, Saintess and I are safe right now.”

“Why are you calling me Saintess?” Zhu Yao had wanted to ask her this for a long while, though she did not manage to find the opportunity earlier.

“You came here especially to save me, so naturally you’re a Saintess.” The girl happily said.

“Just call me by my name. I’m Zhu Yao.” When called a Saintess, Zhu Yao automatically thought of its nearest synonym – virgin!

“Alright, Saintess! Then where are we going now, Saintess? Do you have any other plans, Saintess?”

“...”

---

Zhu Yao felt that the final goal of this mission was to protect Ling Tian girly and prevent her from dying. As long as the girly’s alive, this world would not collapse, and there would not be many similar incidents happening after that. However, looking at the present situation, this goal was difficult to accomplish.

Firstly, that Hall Master Cao of Spirit Heaven Palace would not let her go, otherwise, he wouldn’t have sent such a large number of disciples to capture her. Clearly, he had already torn down his entire face for this.

Speaking of which, Zhu Yao could not help but look down at the girly a little for her management skills. She was being abused by her subordinates, yet she did not have the strength to fight back. It sure was saddening to see how bad she was at her job as a Sect Master. Zhu Yao wished that she could get Zi Mo, who had abundant experience as a Sect Master, to give her some lessons on how to become an incredible leader.

Furthermore, looking at the scenario, the female lead Fan Zhishan became the new Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace, so

how could she possibly let former owner girly off? With the vast number of men on her side, and every single one of them was an elite with huge forces backing them, a Foundation fodder who had just came online was basically the chopping block. She basically had no strength to retaliate at all.

So, the most important thing to do right now was to power up. Only the strongest fist could beat sense into others.

Zhu Yao was filled with confidence. To her, cultivation was just a matter of time. However, when she tried drawing in spiritual energy into her body, she realized she was simply too naive.

She could not draw in spiritual energy!

Earlier, she clearly could control the spiritual energy inside her at will and use arts, but when she tried guiding spiritual energy into her body, there was not a single reaction coming from the spiritual energy in the surroundings!

“What’s going on?” This was illogical.

“Saintess, that’s because... this is my body.” The girl’s voice weakly resounded. “Though you can control it at will, but... my soul is still present. You are unable to help me raise my cultivation.”

Zhu Yao’s face darkened. “In other words, it will only work if you cultivation on your own.”

“Mn.”

“Then, how long have you cultivated for?”

“Fi...”

“Five years?”

“Fi...fty years!”

The hell, she wanted to cuss out at her mom. This speed was simply too slow.



“Saintess...” Ling Tian suggested a little guiltily. “Why don’t... we seek help from Grandhall Sect? Grandhall Sect and Spirit Heaven Palace has always been on good terms, furthermore, Reverend Fa Yu and I are old acquaintances. If I inform him of the matter concerning Hall Master Cao’s betrayal, he will definitely exact justice for me.”

“Are you certain?” Why did Zhu Yao feel that this was a little unreliable? “You must think this through. That one surnamed Cao and the female lead from Sleipoup Sect... that Fan Zhishan, they are already hooked up together. Will Grandhall Sect really go against Sleipoup Sect for your sake?”

Ling Tian grew a little hesitant after hearing that. “If this doesn’t work either... We will have no choice but to go to Itshavenwill Secret Realm. I heard from rumours that there’s an ancient technique there that can instantly raise someone’s cultivation to that of a Demigod, though it is surrounded by danger. Even its borders are being guarded by tenth rank mutated beasts, I’m afraid...”

“Let us talk about seeking help from Grandhall Sect then.”

“...”

---

In the end, Zhu Yao decided to head over to Grandhall Sect. From what she heard from the girl, the relationship between Grandhall Sect and Spirit Heaven Palace is indeed far from shallow.

The Spirit Heaven Palace in the early ages was the strongest deity sect in this world. Because of the reincarnation of the Heaven’s Pillar, every generation of Sect Masters was someone with extraordinary aptitudes, and all of them were called Ling Tian. However, the Heaven’s Pillar was a patch for this world in the first place. Following the subsequent reincarnations, the patch upload was beginning to near its completion. Thus, the aptitude of the reincarnated Sect Masters began to worsen, with every subsequent

generation growing weaker than before. The Ling Tian girly now was the final one, which was akin to the patch upload from the previous Sect Masters totaling to ninety-nine percent, while Ling Tian girly was that final one percent.

Thus, Spirit Heaven Palace no longer enjoyed its former glory. Furthermore, compared to other sects where power was revered, Spirit Heaven Palace neither chose their Sect Masters through popular vote nor through judging of one's strength. Instead, at the moment of each Sect Master's lifespan was about to be depleted, they would first prophesise where and when the next Sect Master would appear, and have the sect disciples look for him or her. Thus, Ling Tian girly was already a Sect Master at the moment of her birth.

Of course, in the cultivation world, no matter how great someone's status was, it was all but a false image without absolute strength. The past Spirit Heaven Sect Masters were revered in altars by the masses, and this could be understood due to their incredible aptitude and future impressive cultivation levels. This was why the masses accepted Spirit Heaven Palace's method of passing down leadership back then. Not to mention, it faintly added some flavour akin to legends. However, as the quality of the Sect Masters continued to dip in a straight line, this method naturally began to garner suspicion from the rest. This was especially so for people with actual strength, and division was something that was bound to happen.

Grandhall Sect was once one of Spirit Heaven Palace's branches. Later on, it slowly grew larger and stronger, gaining independence. However, it still had a subtle relationship with Spirit Heaven Palace. The Reverend Fa Yu that the girl spoke of was presently the Sect Master of Grandhall Sect. From what Zhu Yao heard from the girl, he was also her childhood friend, though it had been a long time since she they last met. However, they seemed to be the type with a tight relationship.

When the girl spoke of this, even her tone had become rather spirited, carrying a flavour of pride that even she didn't realize herself.

Zhu Yao frowned. That unreliable feeling grew heavier. Speaking from her experience, childhood friends would all die and all that would be left were memories of them.

Thus, when they finally managed to infiltrate into Grandhall Sect and saw that man conversing happily with the female lead Fan Zhishan in the hall, Zhu Yao did not feel shocked in the least at all.

“Then I will entrust this task to Sect Master Fa Yu.”

“Little sister Fan is too courteous, this one naturally believes little sister. To tell you the truth, I had long seen through that demonic woman Ling Tian. She's dangerous and sly, possessing a deep scheming heart. She has been acting for these few years. This one has never understood how such a person is worthy of becoming the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace. I have to thank little sister Fan for the reminder, as thanks to you, I was able to receive an enlightenment.”

“Big brother Fan Yu, you're too courteous! I just find it unbearable to see the masses being lied to, so I came here especially to inform you. I was born at the same time as her, so it is understandable that the entrusted Elder that came to pick me up took someone else by mistake. Big sister Ling Tian can't be blamed for this... I had been wandering outside for many years, and I finally... I have never resented big sister Ling Tian.”

“Haah! You're just too kind-hearted. You're actually still speaking on her behalf. If not because she deliberately concealed this fact, why would I only find this out now? You're the true Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace. If not because you incidentally awakened the Spirit Guiding Beast, no one would have been able to expose that fake. Don't worry. Everyone knows about that

poisonous woman now. My Grandhall Sect will also use all available resources to aid you in capturing her.”

“Big brother Fa Yu...”

“Little sister Fan...”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. It was as if she could hear an in-game announcement:

Congratulations, Female Lead has received Number Nth Male Lead x1

Harem Members +1. Current Total: \*\*

The life of a R-18 female lead sure was blinding to the eyes!

It seemed like this help-seeking route was a dead end. Just as Zhu Yao was about to retreat, she felt a chill on her cheeks, as water began to flow out of her eyes. The water droplets dripped straight onto the ‘transparent’ word written on her chest, instantly smudging the stains. “The hell, Ling Tian girly, don’t cry!”

“Who is it!?” A loud roar sounded from the hall.

We’re doomed!

---

1. The name Ling Tian is actually the same as the sect (Spirit Heaven Palace) itself.

2. Ma Liang is actually the main character in an old stop-motion film named ‘Ma Liang and his Magic Brush’. Basically, whatever he draws with the magic brush, it would come to life.

3. During the SARS outbreak in 2003, many people in China believed that vinegar fumes were able to disinfect the virus. The price of vinegar surged due to panic buying, going up to about 200 to 300 yuan per 200g bottle, when it’s usually about 6 yuan (USD\$1) for one.

# Chapter 327: A Clown That Could Topple Countries

---

Zhu Yao had completed all preparations before arriving here. Furthermore, in order to become a well-fledged Ma Liang, she even tested the effects of the magical brush at a practitioners' town nearby. After ascertaining that Nascent Soul practitioners were unable to find her out either, she then headed towards Grandhall Sect. She never expected that even the most perfect of plans could be rendered useless in the face of a single piggish party member.

She was captured, firmly tied up like a large dumpling. The female lead Fan Zhishan and Sect Master Fa Yu were presently looking at her coldly.

"I never expected you would actually be so stupid to send yourself here." Fa Yu coldly snorted.

"I never expected that either!" Zhu Yao felt like crying. "Why don't you let me go now, so that you can capture me again in the future? You might feel a sense of achievement that way."

"Let you go?" Fa Yu's face stiffened, and he instantly raged. "I have yet to make you pay the price for harming little sister Fan, and you want me to release you? Are you taking me as stupid?"

"..." Fine then, I now know you're not the slightest bit stupid.

"If I let you off now, when your cultivation improves in the future, wouldn't you seek me out for revenge?"

His words had so much sense in them, she actually had nothing to refute with.

"Big brother Fa Yu..." Fan Zhishan gently spoke up, carrying a tone filled with endless sadness. "Don't be angry! Little sister Ling Tian actually came back on her own, as long as she apologises to me, I can let bygones be bygones."

“Little sister Fan.” Fa Yu’s face softened, and then he said in a pampering manner. “You can’t be this kind. You have already suffered for so many years, and everything was because of her. If you forgive her here, aren’t you just fueling her arrogance? We finally managed to capture the culprit, so we can’t let things slide just like that.”

Fan Zhishan had a complicated look. “I know big brother Fa Yu is doing this for my sake, but she is after all my biological sister... How can I possibly be this heartless?”

“Haah, how can you think that way? You treasure your sibling love, but have she ever thought about you in the slightest? No matter what, I will have her held accountable today!”

“Big brother Fa Yu... I believe she didn’t do this on purpose.” Fan Zhishan suddenly began to cry like rain droplets falling off pear blossoms. Turning around, she walked a few towards Zhu Yao and said with a regretless look. “Big sister... This little sister has no other request. As long as you apologise, I will forgive you.”

“Uh...” Zhu Yao was startled. She looked at the female lead in front of her who was crying her lungs out. “Auntie, who are you?”

The female lead’s face stiffened a little, but she quickly regained her composure. Turning around, she pounced into the Reverend Fa Yu’s embrace, and cried as if she had suffered a heartbreak.

Nth flower guardian instantly exploded. He pointed at Zhu Yao’s nose and reprimanded. “As expected, you have a poisonous heart. Little sister Fan is willing to let go of the past, yet you actually do not know what’s good for you.”

Please. I just asked her who she was, how is that poisonous at all? Why don’t I know what’s good for me?

“If you guys want to pour dirty water on my name, at the very least, let me know what’s going on, right?” Please stop with the wilful double act, alright? “I have never met your little sister Fan,

alright?”

The two were stunned for a moment, and they only regained their senses a short while later. Fa Yu's fury grew fiercer. “You still dare to lie even now!” Fa Yu glared at her and said. “Little sister Fan and you were born under the same mother. Little sister Fan was supposed to be the Sect Master selected by Spirit Heaven Palace, yet you posed as her and become the one who entered Spirit Heaven Palace instead. Not only are you but a dog in the manger, but you have also suppressed her with your evil doings! You made her youth miserable, and when before she was six years old, she was even treated as a mentally ill child! With a poisonous heart such as yours, you're simply not worthy of being a Sect Master.”

Zhu Yao was dumbfounded for a moment. She faced the female lead Fan Zhishan and carefully inspected her.

“Big brother Fa Yu, there's no need to go any further...” Fan Zhishan however turned her head away, the tears on her face flowed even more than before. She looked as though she could no longer bear to bring the subject up again, and was willing to keep all her sadness in her own heart.

Zhu Yao could not help but praise her acting skills! She had finally encountered a bug of the highest level. In order to become the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace, she sure had gone all out. She was actually able to come up with such an absurd story. Not to mention she did not hesitate to forsake her own identity and become the twin sister of Ling Tian girly. She came up with a drama of a child being mistakenly carried away, and wanted to take up the position of Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace right and proper. It was truly a shame that this lady was not in showbiz.

However...

“Umm... Sect Master Fa.” Zhu Yao sighed. “You're saying, I intentionally posed as her back then, so that I can become the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace and harm her at every possible

moment?”

Fa Yu frowned. He did not reply and simply let out a disdainful snort.

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “Then, may I ask, how old was I when I arrived at Spirit Heaven Palace?”

Fa Yu said impatiently. “The Sect Master succession of Spirit Heaven Palace has always been done swiftly. Naturally, it’s on the day you were born.”

“So, in other words, I was in Spirit Heaven Palace right after I was born?” Zhu Yao said in a sunken voice. “You’re saying, when I was still a baby, I intentionally swapped with her? You sure think highly of my intelligence!”

Fa Yu’s face stiffened, as though he had just thought of this point as well. “Then what about the pain she had suffered?”

“How would I know?” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “She was unable to retaliate when she was being harmed before she was six years old, are you saying that I knew how to dispatch people to harm her when I was six years old? Even if my IQ is off the charts and am truly smarter than all of you, if I truly wanted to pose as her from the very beginning, since we are born on the same day, I would have to concoct this scheme in my mother’s womb!”

Where are your logic and reason? Have they all disappeared from the ‘papapa’?

The two of them were stunned from this line of questioning! Fan Zhishan’s face had especially turned miserably pale for an instant, a hint of fluster flashed across her eyes. Immediately after, she regained that gentle and frail flower look, looking as though she was suffering from grievances, yet tried her best to squeeze out some words of goodwill. “Big sister... It’s alright. It doesn’t matter if you don’t admit it. It’s my fault... It’s all because of me. I shouldn’t have gone to Spirit Heaven Palace, I shouldn’t have



awakened the Spirit Guiding Beast, I...”

The suspicion on Fa Yu’s face was instantly swept away. He held onto Fan Zhishan and said with an even angrier tone. “Ling Tian, you can stop lying now. Little sister Fan treats you so well, yet you actually still wish to frame her! Putting aside the past incidents, from the fact that little sister Fan was able to awaken the guardian beast of Spirit Heaven Palace, the Spirit Guiding Beast, it’s sufficient to prove that she’s the true Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace!”

The hell. Zhu Yao could not be bothered with these illogical people. Looking at them, they were definitely not going to let her go today. Zhu Yao began to calculate as she wondered if that ‘Five Minutes Timed Trial’ passive skill was still in effect.

“Big brother Fa Yu...” Fan Zhishan glanced at Zhu Yao, her eyes were completely red. “It’s fine... No matter how big sister treats me, I won’t ever blame her. Let the Hall of Law of Spirit Heaven Palace... judge her sins! I shall bring her over now.”

As she said that, she walked towards Zhu Yao who was bound tight.

Fa Yu however suddenly stopped her tracks and sighed. “Little sister Fan, I know you are soft-hearted, and that you’re still trying to protect her even now. However, your kind deeds might not be rewarded. Since you are unwilling to do it yourself, I shall be the one to judge this vile person. Let me handle her!”

“No!” Fan Zhishan blurted out, a hint of fluster flashed across the depths of her eyes. She immediately regained her composure, and then, she spoke with the same gentleness and frailness. “She’s a member of my Spirit Heaven Palace, and according to the rules, she has to be handled by Spirit Heaven Palace. I have already owed big brother Fa Yu so much, how can I trouble you even further than this?’

“Little sister Fan!” Fa Yu however suddenly became angry, and

he looked at her as though she was being stubborn. “You’re thinking of letting her go secretly, aren’t you?”

“Ah?” Fan Zhishan was dumbfounded.

Fa Yu frowned deeply. “Little sister Fan, you can’t be too kind, you must make your decision decisively!”

“I’m not...”

“You don’t have to speak further. I will definitely not let you bring this person back. You will definitely release her.”

“I...”

“That settles it then. Since you cannot bear to judge her, I shall do it myself. I will definitely exact justice for you.”

Filled with indignation, Fa Yu did not wait for Fan Zhishan’s reaction and had already called over two disciples. He pointed at the “Dumpling Yao” on the ground and said. “Throw this person down to the lowest pits of prison, and put her on a strict watch. understand?”

“Yes!” The two disciple nodded in unison. Before Fan Zhishan could even regain her senses, they had already dragged Zhu Yao out.

Zhu Yao silently turned to look at the speechless Fan Zhishan’s miserably pale face. See, this is what you get for acting too far! He truly sees you as a gentle and frail flower who can’t bear to make a move on your enemies now!

---

Zhu Yao was imprisoned in Grandhall Sect’s prison. She spent more than two hours to release herself from the mystic arts that sealed her movements. She wondered if it was because of their confidence in the prison’s formation, as there was only a single restriction placed in the cell. She tried to condense the gather energy within her body, attempting to break out of the formation,

only to realize that she was simply unable to circulate them at all. It seemed like this formation comprised of something that could restrain spiritual energy, preventing one from breaking it.

Recalling Fan Zhishan's earlier attitude, most likely, she was not going to have Zhu Yao killed here, and Zhu Yao felt that she had a goal in doing so. She seemed to have other plans other than snatching Ling Tian girly's Sect Master position. Otherwise, why would she still anxiously wish to capture her after she had already obtained Spirit Heaven Palace, and even bring her back?

No matter what, Zhu Yao had to make her escape first.

Zhu Yao pulled out the brush which she had been hiding all this while. Just as she was about to play the character of Ma Liang again, tears began to fall uncontrollably.

"Don't cry already..." Zhu Yao simply felt a deep sense of helplessness. Isn't it just falling out of love? And the girl is even going out of hand with her tears because of it. Her eyes are all swollen now, you know?

"He... Little Yu wasn't like that in the past." Ling Tian weeped as she spoke. "He was so obedient in the past... and so cute. No matter what... he would always listen to me."

Obedient? Cute? Recalling the female lead fanatic Fa Yu's look earlier, the corner of Zhu Yao's lips could not help but twitch. She only had a single thought in mind... Ling Tian girly, you sure was blind in the past.

"He even said that he won't ever allow anyone to bully me. But now... Just from listening to her side of the story, and not listening to my explanation, he... Why?"

"There's no 'why' for such things!" Zhu Yao said in a sunken voice. "He just doesn't like you anymore!"

"..." Ling Tian girly turned silent, though the tears on her face were flowing even fiercer than before.

Feeling helpless, Zhu Yao had no choice but to let her cry it out. Dipping the brush gently on her own tears, she planned on activating Ma Liang mode.

Suddenly, the restriction on the cell's exit shook for a moment, as the sound of footsteps grew closer.

The hell! People were already coming for her. Zhu Yao immediately hid the brush.

A moment later, someone walked in. As if it was not unfortunate enough, it was actually Fa Yu himself. With a dark look, he walked straight towards the pillar of light in front of the cell, and stood there! He glared at her with a ruthless expression. He did not move, and simply stood there. Yet, his expression continued to grow colder by the minute, and even his eyes were beginning to glow bloody red.

Zhu Yao's heart skipped a beat as a chilling intent rose. This grandson's expression isn't right at all. Compared to that brain-dead fanatic she saw in the hall earlier, he basically looked like a different person now. He couldn't really be thinking of killing her for Fan Zhishan's sake, right?

Her heart was instantly sent into a fluster as she thought of ways to escape this place. Suddenly, he reached out his hand and opened the prison cell's door. Before she could even react, the black figure in front of her flashed, and a hand was already grasping on her neck in the next moment.

Zhu Yao wanted to retreat on reflex, but he simply dragged her all the way to the wall. Furious and crazed light could be seen flashing in his eyes, as though he truly desired to tear her into pieces.

The hell, this crazy brain-dead fanatic! He's actually truly thinking of killing her!

Her breathing was stopped at that moment. Just as she thought it

was about time for the passive resurrection skill to activate, his hand suddenly loosened a little, allowing her to catch her breath. His eyes however grew even colder and fiercer than before, and even his voice was filled with chilling intent.

“Speak! Who the hell are you?”

Eh!?

Before Zhu Yao could even gasp for air, she was stunned by his question.

“You’re not Ling Tian, who are you?” The redness in his eyes grew denser, as though he was sinking into madness. “Where’s Tiantian? What did you do to her? Why are you possessing her body!?”

The hell! How did he see through her? Could it be that he knew she wasn’t Ling Tian right from the start?

“Where’s Ling Tian?” He placed emphasis on every word, as a few strands of black wisps faintly appeared around his body. “You best speak the truth, otherwise... I will scatter your soul.”

As he said that, his grip once again tightened.

Zhu Yao slapped on his arm heavily. The hell, are you going to let me speak or not? I’m about to suffocate here!

Fa Yu’s face was quickly turned darker by the second. After taking a deep breath, as though he was trying to suppress the madness in his heart with all his might, he flung her onto the ground.

She coughed out coarsely a few times before she was able to catch her breath. As she glanced at Fa Yu who seemed to have suddenly turned into a different person, she pondered about the situation. From his looks, it seemed like he was extremely concerned about Ling Tian’s whereabouts. Then who was that brain-dead fanatic in the hall earlier?

“Saintess...” Ling Tian suddenly spoke up. “Let me speak with him, is that alright?”

“Are you certain?” Ling Tian was a frail girl. Facing this Fa Yu who seemed to have activated his tyranny mode, Zhu Yao could not help but worry.

Ling Tian girly’s voice sank a little. “There’s something I wish to ask him personally.”

In the end, Zhu Yao still agreed to her request. Relaxing her mind, she suddenly felt her entire being was sucked out. In a flash, she arrived in that snow-white space where the girly was staying before. Releasing her will, a large screen appeared in front of her eyes, and the situation outside was being shown.

Seemingly in an instant, the atmosphere surrounding Ling Tian on the ground changed. Zhu Yao had to admit that, Ling Tian girly was more elegant and refined, a true beauty that could topple countries, while Zhu Yao herself was at most a clown that could topple countries.

o( ͡ ͡ ͡ )o

“Little Yu...”

The girl lightly called out. When her voice fell, it was as if Reverend Fa Yu, who seemed to have activated his tyranny mode with his pair of scarlet red eyes and a body covered in killing intent, had a bucket of water poured over him.

Zhu Yao could faintly hear a sizzling sound in the air, as if something was extinguished.

“Tiantian...”

## Chapter 328: Female Lead's Night Assault

---

In a blink of an eye, the fury, darkness and tyrannical aura exuding from Fa Yu's body retracted completely. Even his pair of reddened eyes had begun to clear up and sparkle. He anxiously sprinted over to hold Ling Tian girly, his eyes were filled with unease.

"Tiantian, is it you? You're still here?" He carefully held up Ling Tian girly. He seemed to be overly anxious, as even his hands were trembling. "Your soul wasn't taken over!"

"Little Yu..." Ling Tian looked at him dazedly, and then grabbed onto him in return. "I didn't harm that lady with the surname Fan, she's not..."

"I know." Unexpectedly, Fa Yu actually did not refute her, and was nodding his head strongly instead. Frowning, as though he had just recalled something, his face began to contort darkly. "With that face of hers alone, she dares to say that it's on par to yours. I simply wish to puke from her ugliness! She even dares to spout that you're twins given birth by the same mother! Does she really think everyone is blind? To think an indecent woman with loose morals actually dares to covet the position of Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace!"

Eh?

What happened to the promised brain-dead fanatic of the female lead? There's something wrong with this opening sequence!

"Tiantian, don't worry. Nothing will happen to you. I will aid you in recovering the position of Sect Master." Fa Yu immediately turned back his head towards her, reverting back to that youth with clear eyes as he guaranteed with a serious look.

"Then, earlier..." Ling Tian girly was stunned as well.

"Though Fan Zhishan alone isn't to be feared, the forces she has

behind her are complicated, it would be unwise to fight them head-on. Those words of mine earlier... I simply wished to gain her trust, please... don't be angry." Fa Yu explained. Recalling everything that happened in the hall earlier, his face once again revealed a disgusted expression, as though he had eaten a housefly.

This development was happening too quickly, as if a tornado had descended. To think this Fa Yu was actually a double agent!

"Oh right, how are you? You're not injured from earlier, right?" Fa Yu anxiously held onto Ling Tian girly and began to inspect her. He pulled here, and then glanced over there. After realizing that she was clean without a scratch, he then heaved a sigh of relief. Immediately after, as though he had just recalled his improper actions, he hurriedly took a step back. "Tiantian... I'm... I'm sorry. I didn't mean to..." His ears were beginning to dye in red, acting as though he was at a loss.

Ling Tian girly laughed, the suspicions she carried in the depths of her heart were put down right after. She looked at the person in front of her with blurry and teary eyes. While sobbing, she said. "Little Yu... You're still my Little Yu alright."

Fa Yu raised his head, and looked straight into the depths of her eyes. Their eyes met, as though the interaction. "I've always been."

Zhu Yao, who was still squatting within the Dantian, was shown a face of true love... Master, where are you?

Presently, a certain master who had been keeping watch near the Heavenly Door for a very long time: Why isn't my disciple here yet?

---

Ling Tian girly explained to Fa Yu everything that happened. She heavily emphasized that Zhu Yao was not here to harm her, nor to take over her soul and body, and that she was one of their party



members. Fa Yu frowned, but he still accepted the girl's explanation in the end.

Zhu Yao actually suspected Fa Yu in the beginning. This person changed too quickly, after all. Earlier, he was still a brain-dead fanatic of Fan Zhishan, and an instant later, he became Ling Tian girly's loyal follower.

However, as they conversed, these suspicions slowly disappeared. The eyes he was looking at the girl now with, were completely different from earlier where he was looking at Fan Zhishan. Though they both carried colours of infatuation, his gaze on Ling Tian girly was much purer. It was as if the girl was the only one in his eyes, and the rest of the world was filtered off.

Let's not forget about his careful attitude. He was afraid of bumping into and touching her, and though he wanted to lean closer, he was afraid that it would make her displeased. He was so uneasy and fidgety like a young fellow who on his first love. Even those small unconscious movements were hidden with incredible worry and unease. If he was actually acting all this out, then his acting skills were simply superb. Most likely, he would have even fooled himself.

Because she saw through these, she did not stop Ling Tian girly from explaining everything.

The girl explained to Fa Yu a little more, before returning to the Dantian, returning the body to Zhu Yao.

Zhu Yao's vision flashed, and Fa Yu who was still behind the screen earlier, was now right before her eyes. He was presently carefully holding onto her hand, his handsome face carried a shy smile, and his eyes were so focused it looked as if he was looking at the most beautiful scenery in the world.

Zhu Yao instantly felt chills climbing down her spine. She wondered if it was possible to become allergic to display of true love?

“Hi, Little Yu!” Zhu Yao smiled awkwardly. “Hello, I’m Ma Liang.”

The gentleness and sweetness that filled his face instantly disappeared with a swoosh. He once again carried that cold and numb look, and almost at the same instant, he raised his hand and flung her away.

As Zhu Yao did not balance herself well, she instantly fell off the chair, and her face was covered in soot.

The hell! The difference in treatment is simply too great, don’t you think!?

“I don’t know where you came from, you wandering ghost.” Fa Yu coldly glared at her, as he pulled out a handkerchief and desperately wiped the hand he touched her with earlier. It was as if he had made contact with something dirty. “But I’m warning you. If you dare to mistreat her, or dare to think of devouring her soul, I will never forgive you!”

Zhu Yao rubbed her aching hand as she sat up. This person seriously changed his attitude very quickly. “Don’t worry, I’m not interested in your childhood friend’s body!” As she said that, she could not help but lower her head and look at the 36E chest... Alright, she was a little interested.

“It best be that way!” Fa Yu coldly snorted, his eyes were as cold as ice itself. Not a trace of the cautiousness and anxiety he had earlier when facing Ling Tian girly could be seen, and expression he now had was filled with the looks of a cool tyrant. “For these few days, be good and stay here. Once I shoo away that trash with the surname Fan, I will naturally let you out.”

“...” Trash? Wasn’t he calling her little sister Fan in an intimate manner earlier?

Fa Yu seemed to have recalled that incident as well, as he looked as though he had just ate cow dung and was rubbing his hand with

the handkerchief even more forcefully than before. With a cold tone, he continued. “That woman with the surname Fan is very strange. In just fifty years, she was able to nourish her Nascent Soul. She definitely made use of some abnormal methods. Her desire to bring Tiantian back to Spirit Heaven Palace definitely isn’t simply because of the Sect Master’s position.”

His words were sound. Earlier, Zhu Yao had thought of this point as well.

“Her body is enhanced by a unique mystical energy.” He frowned as his expression sank. “That mystical energy is actually capable of influencing the circulation of the surrounding spiritual energy. The higher one’s cultivation level is, the easier one would be affected.”

“You’re saying that all the men by her side are being controlled because of that reason?” Zhu Yao was stunned. She felt as if she had just unlocked a hidden scenario.

Fa Yu gave her a “it seems you’re not that stupid, and is a little better than trash’ look. “This mystic power is similar to the charming arts of heretic practitioners. It is capable of confusing one’s mind and heart, yet it doesn’t carry any evil aura which made it hard for others to sense it. Furthermore, it seems like she is born with this passive mystic power... as there are no traces of spiritual energy being manipulated due to that power itself.”

Zhu Yao suddenly recalled her past encounter with Yi Ling. It seemed as though all of the men she encountered with, all developed fond feelings of her. Even with Sesame took up a human form, he was unable to resist it. In the beginning, Zhu Yao had thought that it was just the cheat of a main lead. Now that she thought about it, what if the cheats of these main leads could be trained?

Did Fan Zhishan possess such powers as well? However, in the scenario Zhu Yao saw, the men in her harem did not love her at

first sight, and instead only developed fond feelings of her after several interactions over a long period of time. Only after that, did those feelings become extreme to the point of taking their own lives if doing so was the only way to save her. However, from Fa Yu's words, these people were influenced by that unique mystical power from her body. It certainly sounded plausible if their feelings were to have grown deeper only after being influenced by it over a long time.

After all, as long as one was a practitioner, he would carry pride that was somewhat larger than a mere mortal, how could he possibly be willing to share a wife with other men? Furthermore, they were actually able to coexist peacefully. This was simply too irrational. Not to mention there was a tenth rank demonic beast among them. Putting aside the stubbornness demonic beasts had in monopolizing their own partners, the reason why Yi Ling became a bug back then, was because she incurred the wrath of a demonic beast, didn't she?

Fa Yu coldly laughed. His hands clenched tightly as he said with a dark and cold voice. "With that measly status of his, Cao Qi actually dares to touch my woman. It's about time for them to suffer some of the consequences, otherwise they will truly think that I, Qiong Yu, am afraid of them!"

Why did Zhu Yao feel as though some people were about to go bankrupt.

"I will deal with disgusting woman sooner or later." Fa Yu said in a tyrannical manner, and his voice instantly turned cold. He turned to look at Zhu Yao. "Within this period of time, you best know your place and do not harbour any evil thoughts. Otherwise, I will not forgive you either."

"Uh..." What happened to Ling Tian's promise of being friends with me?

"Understand?"

“Understood, chairman! No problem, chairman!”

Fa Yu coldly snorted as he gave her a ‘at least you know you’re sensible’ look. With a swing of his sleeves, he walked out in big steps. Tyrannical, cool, overbearing, it was as if these words were written all over his body.

Zhu Yao: “...”

“Saintess...” Ling Tian’s voice once again resounded. “See, didn’t I tell you? Isn’t Little Yu really cute?”

Cute, my ass! -flips table-He’s clearly really scary, alright?

Ling Tian girly, why call me over when you already have such a tyrannical and loyal childhood friend? So that I can watch you two go at it?

---

On that night, Zhu Yao finally understood the reason she was here. It was all in order to defend against the female lead’s night assault!

While she was meditating, she suddenly felt a light breeze. The prison gate that was formed by a light pillar above a formation, suddenly disappeared. She looked the empty prison entrance in front of her for several minutes, as she silently sat on the ground, unmoving.

After an hour, as though she could not bear it any longer, a human figure appeared at the door.

“So it’s you.” Zhu Yao waved her hand.

Fan Zhishan looked at her with a cold expression, not a trace of the frailness from before could be seen. “Why didn’t you leave?”

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “Clearly, someone is trying to lure me out by opening the prison gate so suddenly. Do you think I’m stupid? Like I would send myself out even after knowing this.” This was clearly saying, ‘Hurry and come out, I have a wolf’s den

over here.’ A brain-dead scenario like this had already been played out several times in movies, alright? There definitely wasn’t going to be any good outcome from leaving.

“You’re rather smart, at the least” Fan Zhishan coldly laughed. “It’s no wonder you bear such incredible luck.”

“Luck? What do you mean?”

“Hmph...” Fan Zhishan did not have the intentions to explain. She stared straight at Zhu Yao, with eyes that looked as though someone had found an oasis after desiring it for a very long time. Her eyes were glowing fiery red, filled with immense greed, as she broke out into wild laughter. “Unfortunately, everything is about to be mine soon.” As long as I have this, no one will be my match. “Well, since you aren’t willing to come out, it doesn’t matter what I do it.”

## Chapter 329: Spewing All Over Your Face

---

As she said that, she summoned a few chains of light and came charging over. From what she was doing, she did not seem like she was trying to kill Zhu Yao, but snatch something from her?

Zhu Yao did not move and simply watch her flying towards her. However, when she was left with just an inch away from Zhu Yao, she crashed into something with a “dong”, and could not move a step further.

“What is this?” Fan Zhishan pushed the air in front of her, realizing that something transparent was blocking her. A formation? No, there wasn’t any flow of spiritual energy in the surroundings, and there were only faint traces of spiritual energy in the air here in the first place. A formation being erected here was impossible.

Zhu Yao glanced at the few wobbly words on the ground – Invincible Wall. She silently gave a thumbs up to the Magical Brush. She just loved cheat equipment the best!

“You are actually capable of summoning such a mystical barrier.” Fan Zhishan could not enter, yet not only did she not get angry, the flames in her eyes burned even brighter. “Wonderful! Incredibly wonderful!” It was as if she was on steroids, as she looked at Zhu Yao even more fervently than before. Her eyes were sparkling with incredible light.

Zhu Yao frowned. She felt that there was something strange with her expression.

Fan Zhishan however began to cast an art, summoning a large fireball in an attempt to burn away the layer of obstruction. However, it was useless. She then summoned icicles, earth spikes, vines... She used all five types of mystic arts, yet she was unable to break through at all either.

Her expression turned from shock, to greed, and finally, to unsuppressable excitement. Suddenly, she stopped all her actions, and with an incredibly deep smile, she said. “Do you think by hiding inside here, I will be all out of options?”

She raised her hand and red light instantly flashed. A red glow emitted out from all around Fan Zhishan, as if something was slowly seeping out of her body. A moment later, a ‘B’ popped out. Then, a ‘U’, and then, a ‘G’. Slowly, they gathered in the palm of her hand, forming an enormous sickle-shaped... BUG!

“...”

Why a bug!? -faints-Was the female lead’s body made up of codes? They were in complete English too!

With a complacent smile, she strongly swung down the ‘BUG’ in her hand. Ma Liang brand’s barrier instantly made a crackling sound as a large hole broken open. Zhu Yao was almost smashed in the face by the ‘B’ of the ‘BUG’ sickle.

The hell? What happened to the promised ‘invincible’?

Zhu Yao hurriedly retreated at full speed in order to dodge her attack. She faintly felt something had been chipped off by her side, as a cracking sound resounded. She did not have time to ponder as she slammed her palm onto the ground, and earth thorns began to charge straight towards the female lead.

The entire prison emitted out a large boom. Fan Zhishan simply shifted her body to the side to dodge them. After all, she was a Nascent Soul practitioner, while Zhu Yao was merely a Foundation trash. She was not her match at all! With just a wave of her hand, the earth thorns had all turned into ashes.

This was the moment she was waiting for!

Zhu Yao cast an art with her two hands, circulating the spiritual energy in her body. In an instant, a metal-type mystic art was activated. The crumbled earth that had just turned into ashes



earlier instantly formed metal-like thorns, and they flew towards Fan Zhishan in a overwhelming manner. Because she had just shattered all of the earth thorns earlier, her surroundings was filled with ashes. Now that they had suddenly turned into metal thorns, Fan Zhishan simply did not have anywhere to dodge, and even a scratch was made on her body when one of the thorns flew across her.

However, in the end, she was a Nascent Soul practitioner. With just her will, a defensive barrier was summoned, blocking the attacks that were coming from all directions without a single exception. She coldly laughed. “Hmph. With just this much, you still think of...”

Eh, where did she go?

When she reacted, Zhu Yao had already flown out of the prison. The hell, who wants to fight with her? Clearly, we are standing on different levels, so naturally we have to run off as fast as possible.

Zhu Yao flew very quickly, reaching the exit of the prison in an instant. However, Fan Zhishan was even faster. Before Zhu Yao could even leave Grandhall Sect, a figure flashed before her eyes, and Fan Zhishan was already blocking her way. She had a sarcastic smile on her face, as if she was mocking Zhu Yao for her overestimating herself.

“Little Sister Fan!?” Fa Yu’s voice of utter disbelief suddenly resounded, and Fan Zhishan instantly stiffened. On the other hand, Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief. He’s finally here.

“You... What are you?” Fa Yu looked at Zhu Yao, and then looked at Fan Zhishan. A heart-aching expression instantly surfaced. “Little Sister Fan... As expected, you still wish to save her, to the extent of breaking into the prison itself!”

Fan Zhishan’s expression changed several times, before immediately restoring that frail and stubborn look she had before. With a bitter-looking face, she looked towards Fa Yu. “She’s...

after all my elder sister!”

When Fa Yu heard this, he grew even sadder, looking as though he did not manage to live up to her expectations. Even his body began to tremble a little. “I merely wanted to help stand up for you. If you do not wish to take her life, then tell me so and I will make the promise. Why go through the trouble of stowing her away? Am I someone that’s not worth your trust?”

“Big brother Fa Yu...” Fan Zhishan stiffened for a moment. She was truly beginning to grow a little anxious. “You misunderstood, I’m not...”

“No need for further words!” Fa Yu raised his hand to stop her. He powerlessly hanged his shoulders, as if he was submerged in intense pain. If not because she had seen how Fa Yu looked when he was facing Ling Tian, Zhu Yao would have truly believed that he was depressed from being misunderstood by the person he loved. “I have known for a long time that I have never held a place in your heart... I... I just wish to help you do something, no matter how small it may be, so that I can treat you even a little bit better. Are you telling me, I can’t even do that?”

“...” Fan Zhishan was dumbfounded. This time, she was truly troubled. Her night assault was definitely something she had planned on her own. However, she never expected that after a short exchange of blows, she would actually lure Fa Yu. Furthermore, he even believed that she had snuck in to save the prisoner.

On one hand, Fan Zhishan was worried that her plan would be exposed, so she had no choice but to admit that she was here to save her elder sister because of the deep sisterly love she supposedly harboured.

On the other hand, Fa Yu was actually here to save the Ling Tian for real, and was intentionally acting as an infatuated follower whose good intentions were trampled.

Zhu Yao glanced at the two Oscar winners in front of her. Uh... Should I chime in too?

“Big brother Fa Yu, I don’t mean it that way.” In the end, the female lead could not let go of the image she had built for so many years, as she attempted to calm the flames within Fa Yu.

“Enough!” Fa Yu let out a long sigh. “This Fa Yu simply do not have the fate to be with you...” He looked at the female lead with a pained expression. “Return to Spirit Heaven Palace. I will stop being so thick-skinned to keep you here.”

“Big brother Fa Yu...”

“Go!” He roared out, looking as though he had just made a difficult decision. “Don’t come here anymore.”

Fa Zhishan stiffened, her eyes swam towards Zhu Yao at the side. Just as she was about to speak up, Fa Yu suddenly said.

“As for Ling Tian...” His expression turned cold and he said with a heavy tone. “Just treat it as the final thing that I will do for you. I will never give her the opportunity to harm you.”

As he said that, he suddenly waved his arm. A chain instantly struck onto Zhu Yao.

The hell! Before Zhu Yao could even dodge, she was wrapped. She deliberately struggled a little and even cussed out a few times, coordinating with the two Oscar winners. She had no choice. Life is an act, and everything is dependent on one’s acting skills!

“Shut up!” Fa Yu simply gave her a slap. With a resounding smack, Zhu Yao was slammed onto the ground, crashing into the prison below.

With a loud boom, a large crater was blasted open.

Zhu Yao could still hear his words that carried deep affection along with despair. “Little sister Fan, leave. Stop making it so painful for me...”

I really want to award him with the Best Actor award, what to do!?

A moment later, she could no longer hear any movements above. Only then did Zhu Yao finally crawl up from the crater.

Raising her head, she looked at Fa Yu, who was looking into the distance with a painful expression. The rays from the sunset shone onto his body with indescribable loneliness, coincidentally striking at the perfect angle for an infatuated supporting male lead. ‘Acting’ was all that could be felt from his entire body!

In the next moment, he flew down. All of his previous emotions had receded, and he was now giving Zhu Yao a pair of dead fish eyes. “Hey, are you dead yet?”

The hell! So my treatment was not an act!?

Zhu Yao shook off the dust from her body and stood up. She slapped off the shattered defensive artifact in front of her chest, and rolled her eyes back at him.

He had indeed used all of his strength in that slap earlier. Forget about a Foundation disciple, even an Azoth Core practitioner would not have been able to take that slap. However, at the moment he was about to hit her, he placed a defensive artifact on her which directly blocked against all damage. It looked as if she had died of certain, but other than having a mouth full of dirt, there wasn’t a single injury on her.

Zhu Yao seemed to have understood his intentions right away, and thus had immediately retracted all of her aura, along with her consciousness, deep into her Dantian where Ling Tian was. Thus, she successfully played dead!

“Your acting is pretty good, young man!” Zhu Yao habitually reached out to pat his shoulder.

She did not expect that he would suddenly shift his body to the side to evade her, causing her hand to pat on air, and she was this

close to stumbling onto the ground.

“Don’t touch me. Disgusting.”

“...” The hell. Your despise for me is too obvious, don’t you think!? We’re already teammates right now, you know? “Hmph. Earlier, you were still clinging onto little sister Fan and not letting go of her. I didn’t see you feel disgusted by that though?”

His face instantly distorted, looking as though he had just ate shit. Cusses came thundering down the moment he opened his mouth. “If not because Tiantian was in danger, do you think this daddy would approach a woman like her who is as dirty as a toilet stool? This daddy can smell the disgusting stench of a trash like her from three hundred kilometers away! If I were to throw someone like her into the toilet, I would be afraid of staining someone else’s shit! She’s cancer when alive, and I’m even afraid that she would spread that disease of hers to the other ghosts when she’s dead! She dirties the earth spiritual energy when she’s walking, she dirties the water spiritual energy when she’s drinking water, she dirties the metal spiritual energy when she’s practicing her sword arts, she dirties the fire spiritual energy when she’s lighting up a fire, and if she were to sleep on a wooden bed, even the wood spiritual energy would despise her, alright? Just by living in the same realm as her, this daddy feels that bad odour is all this daddy is breathing in...”

He was full of hot air with endless cusses to throw.

“...” Zhu Yao was dumbfounded the longer she listened to him. Thank you for simply despising me for being disgusting! What’s with this feeling of striking the top prize in the lottery?

Ling Tian girly, are you sure you’re not blind?

Fa Yu cussed at Fan Zhishan for two whole hours, and there was never once did he repeat the same cuss. His cusses were brilliant, enough to awe the masses of both in the past and present eras. If Fan Zhishan was present to hear all his cusses, either she would

directly die from anger, or she would feel that she was mistreating her own ears.

Only when the sun was disappearing in the horizon, did Fa Yu finally wave his arm and say. “I’m going to drink some water!” He finally stopped that slow, unceasing chain of cusses.

Zhu Yao had a darkened expression. She had no choice but to follow after him, but she was quietly maintaining a three meters distance from him, afraid that his spit would land on her.

## Chapter 330: I Can Read

---

Fa Yu gulped down three cups of water, before he was finally able to calm down and heave a long sigh. When Zhu Yao thought that he was about to continue cussing, he suddenly turned his around and looked at her with a ‘you trash’ expression. With a cold tone, he said. “That trash will succeed the Sect Master position three days later.”

“Eh?” What trash? This change in topic came too abruptly, give her some buffer time to calm down.

“I don’t know what method that trash used either. She was actually able to awaken the Spirit Guiding Beast.” Fa Yu said with a cold look.

By ‘trash’, he was referring to the female lead. The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched, and she then modestly inquired. “What’s the Spirit Guiding Beast?”

Was it a demonic beast? She had never heard of the existence of a demonic beast like that.

“The Spirit Guiding Beast is the guardian beast of Spirit Heaven Palace.” Fa Yu threw a “are you an idiot?” glance. “It’s born as a ninth rank, and after maturing, it can advance into the tenth rank. As long as it goes through the lightning tribulation after that, it can ascend to the Higher Realm. The Spirit Guiding Beast can only be awakened by every generation of the Spirit Heaven Palace Sect Masters, and they will only form contracts with the Sect Masters.”

“Ling Tian isn’t able to awaken the Spirit Guiding Beast?” Zhu Yao asked.

“How is that possible!?” Fa Yu glared at her. “Tiantian is the true Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace. However, the Spirit Guiding Beast lives in the Heaven Profound Cave, and it will only break out of its shell in a hundred years. When Tiantian was in Spirit Heaven

Palace, that beast was still in its egg! It's not even close to day of hatching yet, so naturally it shouldn't be awakened by force. Who knows just what method that trash used to make the Spirit Guiding Beast break out of its shell prematurely."

Just what was going on here? Zhu Yao naturally did not suspect Ling Tian's identity, otherwise the world wouldn't collapse after her death in the scenario she was showed. She was worried about what the female lead was after.

"My Tiantian is the true Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace, the true daughter of fate! The hell is that trash!?" Fa Yu said matter-of-factly. As though he had recalled some beautiful memories, he muttered in a fragmented manner. "Back then, when my Tiantian arrived at Spirit Heaven Palace for the first time, I knew she was the best in the world. How could any other trash be compared to her? If the other trash wants to act as a cushion for my feet, I would feel my feet would be stained, you hear me? The position of the Spirit Heaven Palace Sect Master? She deserves the best in this world, of course. Otherwise, there wouldn't be a need for me to be considerate by damaging my own cultivation to grow up with her. If not because I had to shut the mouths of those old geezers and prove that I'm worthy of her, would I have left her and come to a stupid place like this Grandhall Sect to become a Sect Master or whatever? This man here only wants to protect, safeguard, and watch her every single day..."

Zhu Yao silently turned her head away. She seemed to have just listened to something incredible.

His complaints came to an abrupt halt, and he suddenly turned to look at Zhu Yao, as though he had just recalled that she was just by his side. 'Oh. Shit.' was all over Zhu Yao's face.

"You..." He gave her a death glare, killing intent surged out of him like a hurricane as he warned. "... are not allowed to tell Tiantian, otherwise, you will get what's coming to you!"



“Yes, President! No problem, President! Even if you beat me to death, I won’t let it slip!” Zhu Yao immediately swore an oath. I won’t tell the girly about how you’re secretly in love with her and how you planned an entire loli-raising plan since you were young. “But...”

“What?” His killing intent grew heavier.

“Umm... Ling Tian girly seemed to have been listening to our conversation the entire time!”

“.....”

“...”

The cool and tyrannical President Fa instantly turned into an exploded tomato, with his face turning completely red. In the next instant, as though he was a fleeing soldier, he charged out of the door. As though there was a ghost chasing after him from behind, he even accidentally tripped over the door sill and smacked onto the ground. However, he then immediately crawled up and ran far away, till his figure could no longer be seen.

“...” What happened to the promise of letting me get what’s coming to me?

A long while later...

Ling Tian: “Little Yu is so cute...”

Zhu Yao: “...”

Hey, which part of that was cute? I only see a huge pervert, alright? For his loli-raising plan, he damaged his own cultivation to become a child so that he could play the role of a childhood friend. That’s simply too heavy a taste, alright?

It was no wonder Ling Tian was just at the Foundation stage, while Fa Yu was already at the Nascent Soul stage. Him being a childhood friend was just a roleplay.

---

Ever since Fa Yu found out that Ling Tian girly was an audience to every single one of his conversations with Zhu Yao, he grew uncomfortable. Probably due to awkwardness or whatever, he did not appear for two consecutive days. Because of her status as the former Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace, she could not casually wander about either, and had no choice but to stay in the house from before in order to prevent getting exposed.

On the third day, Fa Yu appeared with a perturbed look. However, rather than the expression he had as if he was looking at dirt when facing Zhu Yao, it was much normal than before... No, it was incredibly more so than before.

“Tiantian...” He looked at her sheepishly with a tensed expression. “Are you angry at me?”

“I’m sorry, I’m Ma Liang!” Zhu Yao raised her hand.

His expression stiffened, but he immediately grew his gentle smile back. It was as if flowers had bloomed within his eyes. “Lady Ma, I’m sorry. My attitude towards you in the past few days was bad. I apologize.”

Yo, is the Sun rising from the west now? This pervert with a poisonous tongue has such a drastic change in attitude! Also, the hell is Lady Ma?

“You are here to help Tiantian, so you’re considered as a benefactor of ours. I should be thanking you.” He said with a sincere look. Suddenly, he took out a bottle from his side, and passed it to her. “Back then, I didn’t hold back myself well, so I don’t know if I have injured milady. I hope this healing sacred medicine is enough to express my goodwill.”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. She stared at the bottle he was passing to her, but did not reach out to grab it.

“Are you certain it’s a healing sacred medicine?”

His smile was filled with pure sincerity. “Of course. This is the

best healing sacred medicine in Grandhall Sect.”

“Then why is the three words ‘Soul Extracting Soup’ labelled on it?” Are you treating me as blind!?

Fa Yu’s smile retracted. “Tch.” He had forgotten to tear it off!

In an instant, he returned to the numbed expression from before. The changes in his expressions were like flipping through a book.

“...” The hell, this bastard is definitely doing this on purpose, right? He’s trying to make me leave Ling Tian girly’s body, isn’t he?

Realizing that he had been exposed, Fa Yu was no longer interested in continuing his act. “Hey, wear this!” With a wave of his hand, he threw over an item.

Zhu Yao grabbed it on reflex, and realized it was a bracelet. The bracelet was covered with large number of formations, and the spiritual energy it was exuding was incredible. It was a seventh rank mystic artifact. When she wore it, a circle of light instantly swept across her entire body.

“This mystic artifact can conceal your looks.” Fa Yu explained impatiently. “Demigod Sovereigns might not be able to see through it either.”

Zhu Yao summoned a water mirror with a wave of her hand. As he had said, her looks had changed. Her facial features now leaned closer to average, belonging to the type which, if she was thrown into a crowd of people, she would not be easily recognized by others.

“What’s the catch behind this?” Fa Yu would not give her something like this for no reason.

“Tomorrow, that trash will summon the various clans and sects to bear witness to her officially becoming the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace.” Fa Yu rolled his eyes, his face was filled with scorn. However, compared to before, his attitude was much better.

Back then, the eyes he looked at her with had always been: You disgusting slug. Now, when looking at her, he first asked if Ling Tian was watching through his eyes, and then he changed his eyes into: You slug.

Though both slugs, she was now no longer disgusting. Mn, Zhu Yao was a person that was content with just what she had.

“Though Cao Qi came up with the excuse of twins, those old geezers of Spirit Heaven Palace aren’t stupid either. They are definitely aware that though the trash is able to awaken the Spirit Guiding Beast, it might not definitely take her as its owner. If we want to take back the position of Sect Master, we have to make use of this opportunity.”

“You’re thinking of having Ling Tian return to take in that Spirit Guiding Beast, in order to prove her identity?”

“Mn.”

This was indeed a good opportunity. Now that Fan Zhishan believed that Ling Tian was already dead, she definitely would not set up much defenses. Furthermore, she definitely would not have guessed that Ling Tian would be so daring to charge back in. However...

“If you do such a thing, it’s akin to breaking off from Fan Zhishan. You must be aware that she was born in the first-rate deity sect – Sleipoup Sect. She has still many people backing her up. Spirit Heaven Palace is just a small part of her forces. If she were to turn back and attack Grandhall Sect...”

“We can talk about future matters in the future. Tiantian must not be sullied by her for nothing!” Fa Yu frowned, and he said with a furious look. “If she were to truly become the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace, Tiantian will have nowhere to stay in the future either.”

Zhu Yao did not persuade any further. Sure, hiding was good and

all, but why not declare a fallout with her in the open? At the very least, by doing so, Fan Zhishan would not be able to make her move openly for a short period of time.

---

In the early morning of the second day, Fa Yu brought a large number of disciples to Spirit Heaven Palace. He intentionally picked out a portion of the disciples from various levels, including those with Essence and Foundation cultivation levels, and Zhu Yao was mixed among the Foundation disciples. With a total of thirty or so people, it seemed sufficient enough to sustain the face of Spirit Heaven Palace.

When they arrived at Spirit Heaven Palace, they were welcomed by Cao Qi. This was the first time Zhu Yao met nth member Cao Qi, and she had to admit that he had good looks. With mid-stage Nascent Soul cultivation level, he looked like a true gentleman. With utmost courtesy, he led Fa Yu into the inner hall.

Because Zhu Yao's status was insufficient, she could only follow the rest of the disciples and stand by outside the hall. She then sized up Spirit Heaven Palace. Similar to the other deity sects, Spirit Heaven Palace was built upon several floating mountains. The place Ling Tian lived was the main mountain the very center, but it was not the largest one. Not far in front of her, there was a floating mountain that was even larger than the main mountain. However, compared to the cave residences here that were abundant in spiritual energy, the spiritual energy there was so dense, the mountain was surrounded in condensed wisps of spiritual energy, yet not a single human presence could be felt there. Zhu Yao felt this was a little strange. Generally speaking, that place had much thicker spiritual energy, so why wasn't the main mountain built there, but build it in the present location it was in?

This doubt flashed past her mind, however, she did not dwell in it much further. She could not help but raised her head and look at

a cloudy place in the sky. She could faintly see the shadow of a pagoda. That was the cave residence of the Spirit Heaven Palace Sect Master. It possessed the densest spiritual energy, and it was also the place she first woke up in.

“Sovereign Pi Shi of Sleipoup Sect has arrived!” Following after the passing of the message, someone flew over from afar. His body was exuding incredible radiance. Dressed in blue robes and bearing a straight back, he was filled with endless magmanity.

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. This person carried his own lighting special effects during his own entrance. It seemed like this was Fan Zhishan’s first member – the female lead’s master. It would have been incredibly shocking, if not for half of the lighting going missing. As if it was blocked by something.

Eh, wait a minute!? Just what in the world was that radiance?

Zhu Yao took a closer look, and the light exuding from Sovereign Pi Shi disappeared again. Was this an illusion caused by the Sun?

When she finally regained her senses, that person had already landed on the ground. The various clans and sects, that had come to participate in this succession, moved over to welcome him, and gave Sovereign Pi Shi their respects and greetings.

# Chapter 331: Contracting the Spirit Guiding Beast

---

Pi Shi nodded. A joyous cry suddenly sounded from the sky. “Master!”

Fan Zhishan came flying down from above, and then she walked towards Pi Shi with hurried steps. With slight astonishment and shyness, she said. “Why are you here?”

“How can your master not be present for your succession ceremony?” Pi Shi however had a serious look.

“Thank you, master.” Fan Zhishan looked at him lovingly, and then turned to look at the masses from the various sects. She courteously welcomed them, and then led everyone into the hall.

Pi Shi was walking at the very front while Fan Zhishan was following closely behind. Just as she was about to step into the hall, for some reason, her eyes swept towards Zhu Yao’s direction. With widened eyes, she suddenly stopped her feet.

Zhu Yao’s heart skipped a beat. She had a bad premonition about this.

“What’s wrong?” Pi Shi was the first to realize his disciple’s weird behaviour. He followed her gaze and spotted Zhu Yao not far away. While carrying a slight unpleasant look, he released a short probing divine sense.

The hell, she couldn’t have been exposed, right!? Zhu Yao instinctively held onto the mystic artifact in her hands, suppressing the anxiety in the depths of her heart as she stood still with her usual expression.

“It’s nothing. I simply spotted a disciple that I seemed to be really fated with.” Fan Zhishan lightly replied, a gentle smile surfaced from the corners of her lips as she walked straight towards Zhu Yao. “This little sister, I like you really much the moment I saw

you. I wonder which sect are you from? Are you willing to take me as your master?"

"Ah!?"

Not just Zhu Yao, everyone present felt that things had taken a strange turn. Wasn't this a succession ceremony? Why did she suddenly want to take in a disciple? Furthermore, the other party was a disciple from another sect!

However, she simply chuckled and said with a harmonious smile. "Don't be afraid. We practitioners have always relied on fate. We can be said to be fated to encounter each other today. I really like you and want to take you under my wing as my personal succeeding disciple."

When she spoke these words, everyone present finally understood. Practitioners could only have a single personal succeeding disciple, and thus had always treated taking personal succeeding disciple really seriously, unless one were to encounter someone whom she or he felt destined with. As such, choosing personal succeeding disciples did not depend on aptitudes alone, but fate as well. With how hard it was to encounter someone of fate, it was no wonder she had to snatch the girl as quickly as possible.

Zhu Yao's heart loosened, right after being tensed just earlier. Just what is this female lead doing? Did she recognize her or not?

"Oh right, I have yet to ask of your name yet."

"Hoho, I'm Ma Liang." As she was uncertain of the truth, she had no choice but to rely on her acting skills.

"Ma Liang..." Fan Zhishan sized her up for a moment, and the more she looked, the more heated her eyes became. Cold sweat dripped down Zhu Yao's back, as for some reason, she felt her eyes were a little off. She can't possibly be into both men and women, right? Yamete, this old lady sells her body, but not her skills!



“Which sect are you from? Are you willing to become my personal succeeding disciple?”

“Uh...” If I were to reject your offer, can you not slap my face?

“She’s a disciple of my Grandhall Sect.” Before she could even speak up, Fa Yu’s voice resounded. Zhu Yao instantly heaved a sigh of relief. As expected, when it came to acting skills, it just had to be the acting emperor to go against the acting empress!

Fan Zhishan was a little startled at first, but she immediately let out a tender cry. “Big brother Fa Yu...”

Fa Yu turned to glance at her, his eyes carried a complicated glow, as if they were mixed with love, pain, and disappointment, and other emotions. The quality of his acting skills was so great, Zhu Yao expressed that she was unable to measure it at all.

Taking a deep breath, Fa Yu retracted the emotions in his eyes, restoring his former cold look. He profoundly took up the role of a man whose heart had been hurt and had no choice but to draw a clear boundary.

Zhu Yao was the only one who could see that the cold face of his now was his usual expression. Most likely, he was already beginning to form insults of her in his mind.

“Present here today are all of the elite disciples of my Grandhall Sect. I apologize, but my sect do not have any plans of exchanging disciples with Sect Master Fan.”

Fan Zhishan immediately looked at him with a pitiful look as she gently called out. “Big brother Fa Yu...”

Fa Yu however had already turned around and entered the hall, completely ignoring her expression.

Her face stiffened. She had no choice but to suppress her thoughts in the depths of her heart as she led the crowd into the hall, continuing with the procedures of her succession ceremony. However, she did not forget to turn her head back a couple of

times, throwing a few reluctant glances at Zhu Yao.

At this moment, Zhu Yao felt even her hair were standing straight and still. The female lead was unaware that Zhu Yao was brought here by Fa Yu, which meant that she did not recognize her at all. Otherwise, she wouldn't have chosen to take such a roundabout way and use the excuse of personal succeeding disciple to take her in.

However, why was the female lead able to spot her at first glance? Not to mention she developed an extremely great interest in her. With how scheming the female lead was, there was definitely a reason behind her actions. Either for fame, or for her own benefits! However, what did a mere Foundation disciple like her have that could be worth her attention? Why did she look at no one else but her? Unless... There was something on her, and it was something only the female lead was able to see?

Just what was it? Zhu Yao felt that she had managed to grasp onto something, but she just could not grab onto the key behind all this.

The succession ceremony had already begun in the hall. Three out of four of the Hall Master were already sitting next to the throne, while Cao Qi was loudly reciting the official speech as he held onto the Sect Master Token. Just as he was about to solemnly pass it over to Fan Zhishan...

“Wait!” Fa Yu suddenly stood up and interrupted.

Cao Qi turned to look towards Fa Yu with a displeased expression. “Fa Yu, what's the meaning of this?”

“Nothing, I'm just a little curious.” Fa Yu still carried that cold look. “I've heard that Reverend Fan is the twin sister of the former Sect Master. Because of a mistake the wrong child was brought back, and she had only returned to Spirit Heaven Palace today?”

“Of course. This is something everyone is aware of.” Cao Qi said

with a nod. This matter had already been announced to the entire world, and the entire cultivation world was already aware of this.

“Then, that’s strange.” Fa Yu coldly snorted. “Since they are twins, on what basis does Spirit Heaven Palace believe that the former Sect Master is fake, while the Sect Master standing before us now is the real one?”

Cao Qi instantly flared up, as though someone was intentionally trying to find fault in them. “Is there even a need to say this? Zhishan is able to awaken our sect’s guardian sacred beast, the Spirit Guiding Beast. Is there a better proof than that?”

“Oh... Is that so?” Fa Yu scanned his surroundings. “Ever since I stepped in here, why haven’t I seen that awakened guardian scared beast then?”

When he said this, the crowd from the various sects began to discuss this as well. The position of the Sect Master was suddenly handed over when the former Sect Master’s lifespan had yet to be depleted. This was already a rare occurrence within the various sects in the first place, let alone something as preposterous as picking up the wrong twin or whatever. This was something that the masses found hard to believe.

“You...” Just as Cao Qi was about to burst into rage, he was held back by Fan Zhishan who shook her head at him.

Instead, she turned around and looked at Fa Yu with a saddened look. “Big brother Fa Yu... Are you still blaming me?”

The corner of Fa Yu’s lips twitched for a moment. Just as it looked as if he was about to break character, he immediately turned his head around in a cold manner. He was this close to cussing out at that trash.

Fan Zhishan on the other hand thought that he had affirmed it with his silence. With a long sigh, she turned to look at the crowd in the hall. “Haah, I am aware that everyone has their suspicions.

Initially, this lowly one has planned on initiating the life-death contract with the Spirit Guiding Beast after I succeed the role of Sect Master. If everyone holds doubts about me, then let us first contract with the Spirit Guiding Beast.”

As she said that, she turned around and led the crowd out of the hall. Flying on her sword, she headed towards the largest mountain out of the range of mountains.

When Zhu Yao saw that the crowd had exited the hall, she knew that Fa Yu had already played his part as she immediately flew after them.

Fan Zhishan stopped a little distance away from that floating mountain and pulled out a tablet. She flung the table into the air, and that lush green mountain began to recede its greenery a layer at a time, like an egg having its shell peeled. Revealed behind it was a white mountain that looked as if it was formed by crystals.

“Spirit Stone Mountain!” Someone cried out in astonishment.

Sighs of praise resounded in the air. The entire floating mountain was actually formed out of spirit stones. It was no wonder the spiritual energy of Spirit Heaven Palace was this rich.

Fan Zhishan was very satisfied with the sighs of the crowd. Smiling, she flew towards the very center of the entire mountain. The crowd followed after her, and only after getting close did they realize that there was an enormous cave residence at the very center of the mountain. It was the area with the richest spiritual energy in the entire Spirit Stone Mountain. The surrounding spiritual energy felt as if it was about to gain substance even.

A man stood in front of the cave residence. Donned in a long azure blue robe, he had extraordinary facial features. Just that, the corners of his eyes were slightly arched. Even though he was clearly a man, he carried an inexplicable bewitching charm. Seeing the approaching crowd, he frowned at first, his eyes carried unconcealed scorn. When he turned to look at Fan Zhishan, he

smiled again.

“Bai Li?” Fan Zhishan called out, her eyes were filled with questioning intentions.

That man reached out his hand and pulled her into his embrace as he carried a wanton smile on his face. He slight nodded, seemingly to respond to her. His eyes traced towards Sovereign Pi Shi behind her.

Naturally, Pi Shi began to frown.

Zhu Yao silently watched everyone’s little actions. It seemed like this Bai Li was that tenth rank demonic beast in question. The female lead sure had heavy tastes.

However, it seemed like this beast did not actually have an especially harmonious relationship with the rest. No matter how incredible a protagonist’s cheat was, it seemed like it wasn’t able to beat the instincts of beasts.

She could faintly guess the method the female lead used to awaken the Spirit Guiding Beast. Most likely, the tenth rank demonic beast played a role in it.

“Everyone.” Fan Zhishan stepped out of Bai Li’s embrace. With her hands cupped together, she turned to the crowd and said. “Today, I request that my fellow like-minded practitioners bear witness to what I’m about to do. I shall now summon the guardian sacred beast of my sect, the Spirit Guiding Beast.”

She cast an art with a single hand, and then swung her palm out into the air. White formation lights began to shimmer in front of that enormous spiritual cave. Within it, there seemed to be a gigantic figure raising up high. When it landed, the entire Spirit Stone Mountain even trembled a little. That was actually a single footstep of that demonic beast. Before the crowd could see the true body of that demonic beast, immense pressure came assaulting them, causing their hearts to stir.

“Ling Tian girly!” Zhu Yao sent a message into her body. Zhu Yao planned to pass the authority to control the body to her the moment the demonic beast were to appear. If the Spirit Guiding Beast could only form contracts with the Sect Masters of Spirit Heaven Palace, then Zhu Yao wouldn’t be able to do it. Ling Tian had to do it herself.

“Mn, Saintess, I understand.” Ling Tian replied. The next moment, Zhu Yao began the procedures to release the control of the body, and planned to dwell in her Dantian.

At the same time, the Spirit Guiding Beast that attracted the astonished sighs of the crowd slowly walked out of the cave as well. Its figure began to look clearer.

Fan Zhishan was filled with smiles. When the demonic beast completely walked out of the cave, it revealed its sharp green teeth. It was an enormous demonic beast with six wings on its back. Facing the heavens, it let out a long roar, stirring up the crowd and causing their blood to tumble. “ ㄥ|`O’|ㄣ Roooar~~”

## Chapter 332: Five Words Floated in the Air

---

The female lead raised her two hands up into the air, and loudly said. “Spirit Guiding Beast, my most loyal companion. Are you willing to form a contract with me?”

Zhu Yao’s action to release control paused. She turned around and then squeezed Ling Tian girly, who was just about to log on, back down.

“Saintess?”

Just as that beastie was lowering its head and was about to speak out human words... “I...”

Zhu Yao’s face was filled with astonishment!

“Sesame!” She could not help but call out.

That demonic beast stopped halfway. Its entire body suddenly shook, and even its three pairs of wings trembled a little. It hurriedly turned its head around, and with its widened bell-like eyes, it looked straight towards the direction of the crowd. Its entire beast head began to distort, as if it was stretching out a smile. However, it revealed a mouth of sharp beastly teeth, making it look terrifying instead.

“Ouu~~” That beastie leapt up, suddenly pouncing towards the human crowd. With a boom, several practitioners were injured from its rush. It finally stopped when it arrived in front of Zhu Yao, staring straight at her. “Mis... Mistress...”

Zhu Yao’s face darkened. It really was Sesame!

“Mistress...” Sesame looked as if it was glowing, as it pounced onto her. It did not care if it was crushing her, as it constantly nudged (pressed) against her body with its beast head that was even larger than her entire body. Its roars were filled with grievances. “Mistress, mistress... It really is you! This beastie isn’t dreaming, right? When you weren’t around, I missed you so

much... Auoo... How can you cast beastie aside? I'm born as your beastie, and I will die as your beastie. I don't want to leave your side~" It complained as it cried, completely ignoring the crowd of people at the side whose chins had already crashed onto the ground from shock.

Crowd: ... Is this really a high rank demonic beast? I have never seen such a shameless one though?

Sesame sized up Zhu Yao with its sad, teary eyes. "Mistress, with these looks of yours, I can't recognize you at all... Eh? Mistress, you have a chest this time! So mysterious."

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. Raising her leg, she kicked at him. "Scram!"

Mysterious, your brother-in-law! Would it kill you not to bring up this old lady's sad situation? I finally managed to have a pair of boobs this time! And they are even borrowed, you know?

Imbued with spiritual energy, her kick struck Sesame and instantly sent it rolling. However, Sesame was not the slightest bit furious, and instead crawled back with a joyous face. "Ouu... Mistress, your kick is still as vigorous as ever, it sends me into ecstasy! This feels so nostalgic. Come... Don't be courteous, kick me again~" After saying that, it instantly shrank back to the size of a large dog, rolled on the ground and revealed its white belly. "I'm prepared. Mistress, come... Don't pity me for the frail flower that I am, kick me with all your might."

Zhu Yao: "..."

Fan Zhishan: "..."

Crowd: "..."

Five words floated in the air: The hell is going on?

Zhu Yao felt like the veins on her forehead were about to



explode. Taking a deep breath, she chuckled in front of the crowd. “I’m sorry, please give me five minutes.” She had to adjust her family beastie’s power mode.

She picked up Sesame by its neck, and then cast an art that erected four earth walls around them, blocking everyone’s line of sight. A moment later, ear-piercing miserable screams could be heard from within.

“Mistress... Ah! You’re actually hitting me for real! Yamete... It hurts, it hurts, it hurts!”

“Aiya, I’m going to die, I’m going to die...”

“Don’t... Don’t hit the face~~!”

“Wait, you can’t hit me there! Ouuu~~~ I was wrong, mistress!”

His screams lasted for exactly five minutes, with each scream sounding even more miserable than the one before. Those who heard the screams would be beyond saddened, and those who listened would shed tears. Yet, among the practitioners present, no matter what cultivation levels they possessed, not a single one of them released their divine senses to investigate the situation inside the walls. Instead, they turned their heads away with tacit understanding.

Five minutes later, the walls finally disappeared, revealing two human figures. One was a refreshed young woman, while the other was a young man with a swollen face.

“Spirit Guiding Beast...” Fan Zhishan finally regained her senses, and she looked at Sesame with utter disbelief.

Sesame which had taken up a human form behaved more normally than before, and simply did not bother to glance at her. All he did was hold his pig-like swollen face and let out a chilling breath.

The demonic beast Bai Li next to her however took a step forward. With a slightly perturbed expression, he looked at

Sesame. “Your honor... How can you...”

Sesame glared at him. “Shut your mouth. Can’t you see this one’s harem is in flames?” Do you think it’s easy to locate my mistress? I even had to endure this domestic violence.

“Harem?” Zhu Yao looked at him with narrowed eyes.

Sesame’s face stiffened. “No, no, no. How can mistress possibly be in my harem? You’re at the top, at the very top. I’m the one in the harem. I’m the little beastie in your harem~”

“.....”

“... ”

“Your honor...” Bai Li was still unwilling to let this go. “Didn’t you promise to form a contract with Zhishan?”

“Contract?” Zhu Yao turned to look at Sesame with an inexplicable smile. Her thoughts were clearly written on her face: Your wings sure have grown, along with your own views. You actually dare to form a contract with someone else?

Sesame’s body shivered. It immediately glared at Bai Li. This thing here is wrecking his reputation on purpose, right!?

“Who promised you that? Back then, I simply said that I will pretend to see her as my owner, to give you guys some help. Like hell I will want to form a contract with you! I only have a single owner!” After saying that, it immediately turned to look at Zhu Yao with flattering eyes. It then said with a soft vibrato. “Right? ... Mistress~”

Can you motherf\*\*king speak while standing up? Stop hugging onto my legs!

Zhu Yao reached out her hand to turn that distorted pig face away. Looking at his face anymore than that could cause nightmares.

With how the scene had played out, even an idiot could guess

that this Spirit Guiding Beast had taken this unknown young lady as its owner.

“You... Who in the world are you?” Cao Qi stood out with a furious look. This proper succession ceremony was just about to be completed, yet it was actually cut off by someone.

Zhu Yao did not bother to continue her act either, as she instantly removed the mystic artifact that was concealing her looks, revealing her former beauty. In an instant, different mixes of emotions could be seen on the faces of Fan Zhishan and the few people of Spirit Heaven Palace. The female lead especially had turned deathly pale.

Zhu Yao chuckled at Fan Zhishan. “Long time no see, my good sister. Oh! Right, I forgot to introduce myself to everyone. My name is Ling Tian, the former Sect Master of Spirit Guiding Hall!”

She intentionally emphasized the word “former”. In an instant, it was as the place was an exploded boiler, as everyone began to discuss among themselves. Fan Zhishan and her group of men however, all had darkened expressions.

“I heard that I suddenly gained a younger sister.” Zhu Yao swept her gaze around, and then looked at Fan Zhishan smilingly. Letting out a long sigh, she said. “Haah, seeing that I have cultivated for several decades, I will naturally feel joyous to have a new relative. Though you look...” She intentionally sized her up for a moment, and all she was lacking now was calling her ugly. “Though you look so very... different from me, I will still believe you. But as for your claim that Spirit Heaven Palace had taken the wrong child back then, I don’t agree to it at all. It’s not like they were blind... Uh, of course, I’m not saying that you’re ugly!”

Crowd: “...” You’re obviously saying that.

“If you want to enter Spirit Heaven Palace, then say so directly! Why the need to come to my Spirit Stone Mountain and offend my contracted spirit beast? You need to know that though Sesame is

already a tenth rank demonic beast, he has very small guts. He can't bear to lay eyes on faces, uh... with poor features. What if you scare him? Oh, isn't it, Sesame?"

Sesame immediately nodded heavily in concert. "Mistress is the most beautiful, mistress is the best, mistress is marvelous!"

The discussions from the various sects and clans grew louder. Clearly, this was a good drama piece where the fake was trying to impersonate the original, and take over her authority. The condemning eyes of the crowd shifted towards Fan Zhishan's direction.

The few Hall Masters of Spirit Heaven Palace had the biggest reaction out of everyone present. Other than Cao Qi, everyone single of them was glaring furiously at Fan Zhishan.

"Just what is going on here?"

"Sect Master Fan, you best give us an explanation. Back then, we believed you because you said you awakened the Spirit Guiding Beast."

"What Sect Master Fan? The Spirit Guiding Beast basically don't acknowledge her. She's just an imposter."

"She had almost destroyed the inheritances that had been passed down in our Spirit Heaven Palace for so many years."

As expected of the female lead. In a situation like this, she was still able to reveal a frail look with tears welling up in her eyes. She looked at the crowd with an innocent face. "I... I didn't... You have all misunderstood."

Unfortunately, the people of Spirit Heaven Palace were all fuming and ignoring her frailness. There were even some who summoned their weapons and wanted to step forward to capture her.

Suddenly, a demigod-stage pressure instantly enveloped the crowd. A few of the agitated Spirit Heaven Palace disciples

especially had been slammed directly onto the ground.

The area instantly quietened down, as everyone raised their heads and turned to look at the only Demigod practitioner present – Sovereign Pi Shi.

“Sovereign, what’s the meaning of this?” A Hall Master of Spirit Heaven Palace asked in a displeased manner.

Sovereign Pi Shi stepped forward and instantly shielded Fan Zhishan. His cold eyes swept across the crowd and finally stopped on Zhu Yao’s figure. Frowning, he unconsciously leaked out a hint of killing intent.

Sesame who was still hugging onto her leg earlier, instantly flared up and similarly released its pressure in full power, pushing his pressure back.

Pi Shi was stunned. Clenching his fists, he retracted his pressure and solemnly said. “Fellow practitioners! The matter today is merely a misunderstanding. My disciple simply got too excited in meeting her relative, which led to these chains of events. It was this one’s fault for not teaching her properly. However, Zhishan is after all still my disciple, and I will punish her myself. There’s no need for fellow practitioners to do it on my behalf.”

“You...” The crowd from Spirit Heaven Palace turned furious. He was clearly trying to protect her.

Pi Shi simply let out a cold snort. Other than that demonic beast which was a little hard to deal with, he did not actually take anyone else here seriously. It was not that he could not battle it out either, but they were after all the ones at fault today. If he were to make a move, he was afraid that the reputation of Sleipoup Sect would take a blow. “If fellow practitioners think that there’s anything inappropriate, please feel free to look for me.”

Before waiting for anyone’s response, he arrogantly left with Fan Zhishan.

The tenth rank demonic beast called Bai Li followed closely behind the two of them and left as well.

Leaving behind the various sects and clans with mixed looks.

Zhu Yao shook her head. It was truly impulsive for Pi Shi to protect her in such a manner. He was a little too arrogant. If his strength could suppress the entire cultivation world, it would have gone well. Zhu Yao's master was strong to the point where no one would dare to make a single noise, and if he had similar strength, the crowd might indeed endure it. However, he was merely a Demigod. Though there were very few Demigod practitioners, he was still not the only one in this cultivation world. Other first-rate deity sects could still push out three or four of them.

This blatant act of shielding his disciple had undoubtedly ignited the anger of the masses. Though it was true that no one had spoken up back then, this debt was still clearly taken note of.

# Chapter 333: Cheat has Disconnected

---

When it came to something as serious as Fan Zhishan impersonating as the Sect Master of a sect and had almost caused the destruction of its foundation, even if Spirit Heaven Palace wanted to kill her, it would have been completely justified. Yet, Pi Shi still protected her regardless of the consequences, so naturally it would bring out the dissatisfaction of the masses. Most of the people that were sent here as spectators by the various sects, were all people with authority. Every single one of these people were naturally shrewd and would be willing to ponder about matters even a little bit more.

Though this incident happened at Spirit Heaven Palace, the other sects had to ponder deeply about the meaning behind the incident and the consequences. They had to suspect if this was all a scheme crafted by Sleipoup Sect. A single Nascent Soul practitioner was dispatched, and with just a mere lie, she had almost sat on the Sect Master's seat. Then, would they also dispatch others to take up the seats of other Sect Masters as well? If that was truly the case, then the appetite of Sleipoup Sect was not just large, but rather, they were thinking of uniting all of the sects!

In an instant, the various clans and sects began to distance themselves from Sleipoup Sect, both in the surface and in the dark. Out in the open, the various sects still looked harmonious. In the dark however, little movements were constantly being made. There were even second-rate and third-rate deity sects that began to approach other first-rate sects, looking as if they were collaborating to resist Sleipoup Sect.

Though Sleipoup Sect was the number one deity sect with abundant resources, when faced with the collaborative suppression of the other sects, they were barely coping as well. It was not that obvious in the beginning, but given time, the effects would grow. If they were to push this matter for later, falling off

from the number one position would definitely not be far from sight.

---

## Spirit Heaven Palace – Jadeflower Pavillion

“Mistress...” Sesame stretched out its head, desperately blinking its eyes at her with a pitiful expression.

Zhu Yao slapped down, instantly slamming its head onto the table.

She looked towards the person in front of her. “You know this would happen right from the start?”

He looked at her with cold, scornful narrow eyes. “I simply calculated that Pi Shi would definitely stand up for that trash. I never expected that he would be so stupid to bring her away in the face of the various clans and sects as well.”

“It’s no wonder you feel at ease in bring Ling Tian back.” Most likely, Sleipoup Sect was definitely very busy around this time, and the female lead would no longer have the time to care about Spirit Heaven Palace either.

“However, that trash will not forgive Tiantian so easily.” Fa Yu frowned. “Back then, you concealed your identity. Though she was unable to discern you, she was still able to see you at first glance. Furthermore, she had several probes in her words. Most likely, Tiantian has something which is she definitely in need of.”

Zhu Yao recalled about this as well. The scene where Fan Zhishan insisted on taking her as a disciple in the hall, was indeed really strange.

“In any case, it’s best that you don’t make any rash movements in these few days.” Fa Yu solemnly said. “As for the people in Spirit Heaven Palace... I will naturally think of a way as well.”

After saying that, he did not care about Zhu Yao’s reply either,



and left out of the door.

“Mistress...” Sesame weakly called out again, refreshing his sense of existence with a pitiful face.

Zhu Yao lowered her head and looked at it, retracting the hand she was using to suppress him. “Speak. How were you injured?”

Sesame was stunned. “Mistress... found out?”

She immediately replied with circling eyes. “With that showy attitude of yours, when have you ever learnt how to walk seriously? You have always made your entrance by leaping out. This time, you actually obediently walked out of the cave a step at a time. That’s not normal coming from you, alright?” Not to mention it did various stunts like rolling and acting flighty after seeing her. Even after turning into human form, it had to hug onto her leg. That wouldn’t have happened just from her beating it into a pulp. Most likely, its injuries were too severe, and its was simply unable to stand properly!

“Mistress...” Sesame’s eyes reddened. Looking touched, it crawled over with the support the table and wanted to enter her embrace. “Wuu, beastie is so pitiful. My rank dropped again.”

Zhu Yao once again pressed against its face, pushing it back to where it was before. “Then, why are you still wasting the spiritual energy to maintain your human form?” Was it thinking that its lifespan was too long?

Sesame’s figure flashed, instantly returning to the size of a pup and laid on the table.

“Speak, what happened?”

“I was initially cultivating rather desperately in the Spirit Realm, so that I can meet you in the High Realm. But Yue...”

“Enough!” Zhu Yao interrupted its words, and immediately stood up. “Let’s get to the main point. Why were you with Fan Zhishan?”

“My inner core was damaged when I attempted to cross realms, and my rank dropped consequentially. I managed to make my way to that spiritual cave from earlier, wanting to use the rich spiritual energy within to recover from my injuries. In the end, I encountered that tenth rank demonic beast, which is that Bai Li from earlier.” Sesame said in a complaining tone. “I’ve always known that it isn’t a good beast, but she said she was willing to listen to my biddings, and had come to look for me several times. After that, she said she wanted me to help her partner a little. Back then, my injuries had yet to be completely healed yet, and I did not want them to see through my condition either, so I ended up agreeing to it. I never expected that mistress is actually here!”

“If you simply do not want them to see through your condition, why didn’t you change locations?” It just wanted to tend to its injuries, so anywhere else could have been fine too.

Sesame chuckled, and then scratched its head a little embarrassingly. “I naturally have a reason not to leave.”

As it said that, it suddenly forced itself to stand up. With an ‘aaah’ sound, it opened its mouth. A beam of light flashed out, and a human-sized egg suddenly appeared on the table.

Sesame stroked the egg shell as if it was touching a piece of treasure, and Sesame’s face was sparkling. “Mistress, isn’t it really beautiful?”

Zhu Yao was shocked. After blanking for a short while, she said. “You’re actually able to lay eggs!” Wasn’t it male?

“...” Sesame immediately leapt up. “It’s not my egg! No, it is my egg, but it’s not laid by me. It’s an egg that I found.”

“You stole someone else’s egg?” (¬\_¬) You beast trafficker.

“I didn’t steal it! I picked it up! Picked it up!” Sesame immediately raised its claws to express its innocence. “I saw it all alone in that cave. I sensed the presence of my race within the egg,

and so I picked it up.”

“Your race?” Could it be that unborn Spirit Guiding Beast which Fa Yu spoke of? She did not know about the details of Sesame’s race either. Initially, she had thought that it had such features because it came from the Higher Realm, but it seemed Sesame was a Spirit Guiding Beast as well. Not to mention, it was coincidentally in the cave, and thus Fan Zhishan had thought that she had awakened it herself, believing that Sesame was the guardian beast of Spirit Heaven Palace.

Sesame carefully stroked the egg shell. “There should be a beastie with the same looks as mine inside it, and...” Its eyes dazzlingly shone, a strange red flush suddenly appeared on its faint-black body. “I can sense that it’s a female beastie~”

“...” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. That was the reason why it wanted to protect the cave so desperately. Is Sesame on heat right now?

“Mistress, can I...” You know.

“Why are you blinking at me? Your father-in-law just left!”

“Ah!?”

If you want to marry Ling Tian’s spiritual beast, then bring up the engagement to Fa Yu.

---

Zhu Yao inspected Sesame’s body for a moment, and realized that it wasn’t as simple as having its rank dropped. Even its inner core had pretty much shattered. Though on the surface it did not look any different, the spiritual energy within its body was extremely chaotic. Furthermore, it was still continuing to leak out. If it could not be mended in time, its rank would continue to fall. Most likely, it would fall back to ninth rank before long.

On that day, she bashed Sesame as a cover to seal several of its disarrayed meridians. However, she had merely temporarily

slowed down the leakage of its spiritual energy. After all, she merely possessed the cultivation level of Foundation, how could she possibly heal a tenth rank demonic beast whose strength was comparable to a late-stage Demigod? Those suppressions would immediately be broken through.

Zhu Yao was a little anxious, and was truly a little dispirited about her present state. Her body was Ling Tian's. No matter how much she were to cultivate, it would be of no use. If only she had her own body. At the very least, she could form her Azoth Core and summon her sword intent to help mend its meridians. Right now, she basically had no other options.

“Mistress, you can keep me in your divine sense. We are under a contract, so my injuries will immediately mend themselves inside.”

Zhu Yao shook her head. “This body belongs to Ling Tian. When we exchange the authority to use her body, I could merely hide in her Dantian, how can I possibly send you into my divine sense?” She didn't even possess a body, let alone divine sense.

Sesame sunk into silence for a moment, and then it laughed without a mind. “Don't worry. It's just a drop in rank. Sesame can still cultivate it back.”

“Stop acting!” It clearly minded it a lot. “Don't worry, I'm your owner. I will definitely think of something.” It was extremely difficult for demonic beasts to raise their ranks. It was not an understatement to say that they only had one out of ten chances of surviving from it. Saying that it would cultivate it back was just easy to say.

She did not understand why Realmspirit would actually resurrect her into Ling Tian's body, and not provide her with a new avatar. Even if she was given the avatar of a tree or dandelion like before, it was still much better than the present condition.

Wait a minute!

Didn't she have the magical brush? With how mystical the brush was, she could make herself one!

Zhu Yao excitedly reached out for her pouch, only to pick up two short sticks. She was dumbfounded!

"The hell!" She could not help but cuss about. When did it break? How was she unaware of it?

"What is that?" Sesame latched its two paws onto her hand and glanced at it.

Why did the brush break just like that? Its quality was a little questionable, wasn't it?

Zhu Yao recalled for a moment. She did do any intense exercises though? Unless it was yesterday...

She was stunned for a moment, as she suddenly recalled the moment when Fan Zhishan wielded that bugged weapon and slashed down on her. She seemed to have heard the sound of something breaking. Could that have been the brush? However, she had clearly dodged that attack, while then brush was still being held onto. Then what did that sword break?

Could it be...

Zhu Yao felt something tingling in her heart, as an absurd thought popped out in her mind.

She suddenly stood up, picked up the curious Sesame and charged out. She instantly kicked open Fa Yu's door to his room.

Fa Yu was startled. He raised his head up and looked at her scornfully. "Why are you here?"

Zhu Yao immediately reached out and held onto his collar. "Fa Yu!"

"What are you trying to do?" He moved backwards on reflex, his hands held onto his chest.

"The hell, I'm not your little sister Tiantian, what will I do to

you?” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “Get up, I have something urgent to talk to you about!”

Only then did Fa Yu get up. He glared at her and said. “What kind of matters do you have deep in the middle of the night? Even if you don’t sleep, my Tiantian has to rest too, you know?”

Zhu Yao could not be bothered with his poisonous tongue. “Let me ask you this. You mentioned that Fa Zhishan has an unique mystic power inside her, right?”

“Mn.” Though he did not understand why she brought this up, Fa Yu still nodded.

“Then how did you come to realize that mystic power of hers?”

Fa Yu glanced at her, baffled. “Why are you bringing this up?”

“Don’t ask for the reason for now.” Zhu Yao said with a stern look. “I just want to confirm my guess.”

He frowned, and then said with an impatient look. “When I first met that trash, she was arguing with that idiot Cao Qi. During that heated argument, that trash even emitted out her killing intent.” As though he had recalled something, his brows furrowed. “Back then, I clearly saw her pierce something into that idiot Cao. However, after that, not only was I unable to discern what kind of mystic artifact she used, even Cao Qi remain unharmed. It was as if nothing had happened, and they immediately reconciled.”

He turned to look at Zhu Yao and said. “That was why I guessed that she possessed a mystic power within her that could bewitch others.”

Zhu Yao’s face paled. She instantly felt uncomfortable all over.

“Hey, what’s wrong?” Fa Yu asked.

She chuckled with a helpless look. “The attack she used on Cao Qi... She had used it on me as well.”

“Ah!?” Fa Yu was shocked. “You... You can’t have grown to like

as well, right?” He seemed to have suddenly recalled something, and then, swooping over like the wind, he held tightly onto her hand. “Then what about Tiantian? Has Tiantian been bewitched? Her heart is mine!”

“The hell!” If not because your cultivation is higher than mine, I would have kicked you, you get that? “This old lady here is a woman!”

“Who knows whether that trash go both ways? My Tiantian is so wonderful after all.” He still had a suspicious look.

“That attack of hers didn’t land on me.” Zhu Yao pushed his hand away. “But... She had indeed sliced onto something.”

He frowned. “What do you mean?”

“Fa Yu.” Zhu Yao said slowly. “Before she sliced me back then, she mentioned that I was someone who bore great luck.”

“Luck...”

“If my guess is correct, Fan Zhishan is able to see everyone’s luck.” Zhu Yao said seriously. “The unique mystic power you sensed, was her spell which could snatch away another person’s luck!”

“...”

---

Luck was formless and ethereal. It was something similar to fortune or a form of fate. Everyone possessed different amount of luck. Just like how there were people who were born into rich families, there were some who would be on the verge of collapse. Practitioners had to possess a degree of luck, otherwise, even with incredible talent and extraordinary aptitude, he or she would be nothing if there was no one to guide them onto the path of cultivation.

Furthermore, the cultivation world was incredibly dangerous.

Though spiritual treasures filled the lands, other than the ability to obtain them, one had to possess the luck to actually discover them.

That was why people with incredible luck would always be able to obtain results with minimal effort, and most ascended deities were people who carried great luck. Naturally, the more luck one had, the better.

Zhu Yao had not thought about luck right from the start. When she thought about Fan Zhishan's luck, she had always believed that it was due to her being the protagonist. However, a protagonist's cheat could be a form of luck after all. If luck could be materialized, then it was evident that the luck meters of protagonists would be much higher than average. There were definitely some that had even gone off the charts.

Though it was really hard to believe that Fan Zhishan could see luck. When thinking about it carefully, Zhu Yao herself had even encountered something as ethereal as the Heavenly Dao. Furthermore, Realmspirit had even mentioned that Heavenly Dao could be altered as well, so why couldn't something like luck be snatched away?

When she saw the female lead in the prison back then, she had the face that looked as if she was there to snatch something away in the first place. After that, she had even summoned that weapon which was made out of bugs. With just a slight swing, her magic brush broke. Now that she had recalled about it, a part of her luck must have been sliced away, and thus her cheat had disconnected.



# Chapter 334: Let Me Conduct Some Research

---

Something such as luck, like spirit veins, should be a part of one's body, and they should be able to mutually sense each other. This was also probably why there were so many men surrounding the female lead. Most likely because the lucks from their bodies had been taken away, and thus they grew to feel something for her, right?

"The scene you saw back then was most likely Fan Zhishan's process of taking his luck away."

"That shameless trash." Fa Yu looked as if he could charge out and give her a few bites at any moment. "From what you're saying, the reason why she's doing this to Tiantian, is because she wants to snatch away the luck from her body?"

Zhu Yao nodded. "Also, the luck on Ling Tian girly's body is something she yearns greatly for. Otherwise, she wouldn't have come for me even after I have switched looks. Most likely, she didn't see through my identity, but was drawn in by the luck within my body." As this world's patch, it was a given that Ling Tian girly's body possessed immense luck.

"..." Fa Yu sank into silence. He had initially thought that Fan Zhishan wasn't someone to be feared, and believed that the ones they should be on guard against were the men beside her. However, the situation now had changed. The one who was the most difficult to deal with was actually Fan Zhishan herself. If this were to go on, even if all the men next to her were dealt with, she could still create another batch of them at any given moment.

"Is there possibly no way to deal with that unique ability of hers? Do we have no choice but to let her steal luck away?" Fa Yu clenched his fists.

“I don’t know. There might be one?”

“That evil ability of hers is unstoppable. Who knows what kind of tricks that trash can pull? Not to mention we aren’t able to see luck ourselves.”

Zhu Yao sighed. “That’s right, we can’t see... Wait a minute!” She suddenly recalled the moment when Sovereign Pi Shi first appeared outside the hall. She saw that strange light, which looked as if it was missing a half of itself. Could that light be...

She suddenly stood up. “I think I have a way to see luck!”

“What?” Fa Yu was stunned. “How?”

Zhu Yao did not immediately explain. She turned to glance at him and said. “I have not ascertain the method yet. Before that, I need your help with something.”

Fa Yu frowned. “What help?”

Zhu Yao picked up the beast that had been lying on the table like a piece of decoration. “No matter what method you use, no matter what price I have to pay, please help me cure it!”

“It’s injured?” Fa Yu looked at Sesame with narrowed eyes, his expression was cold. He had always thought that Sesame was the guardian sacred beast of Spirit Heaven Palace, and was a little displeased with how it recognized Zhu Yao as its owner, even though she and Ling Tian was using the same avatar. “Isn’t it a tenth rank demonic beast? I’m just a Nascent Soul practitioner, how can I possibly heal its injuries? The moment I try to send spiritual energy over, I will receive a backlash.”

“Aren’t you a sword practitioner? Haven’t you comprehended sword intent yet?” Zhu Yao threw a set of scornful eyes at him.

“How’s that possible!?” Fa Yu coldly snorted. “This great one has already comprehended sword intent the moment I formed my Azoth Core, alright?”

“Then why don’t you directly use sword intent to heal its injuries?”

“Sword intent can be used to heal injuries!?” Why hadn’t he heard of it before? Wasn’t it used for offense?

“You don’t know?” Zhu Yao sized him up for a moment. “Don’t worry, I can teach you!”

Fa Yu: “...” Why was he feeling irritated?

Zhu Yao roughly explained the concept of the method, and after confirming that he had understood everything, she then pushed the beastie onto him. She then left him with some words, that whether she could see luck would depend on Sesame’s recovery. After that, she turned and left to research on the method to seeing luck.

Fa Yu lowered his head, and looked at the beast which was said to be the key figure to this operation. Their eyes met.

Large eyes against small eyes.

After a while, similar noises were heard from both ends.

“Tch!”

“Tch!”

The two of them turned away in disdain.

Fa Yu: Why do I have to save this stinking beastie regardless of the costs? PS: Someone else’s even!

Sesame: Why do I have to be healed by dead-fish-eyes no matter what? PS: Someone weak even!

---

Zhu Yao returned to the entrance of the hall, to the position where Pi Shi first appeared. However, even after she stood still for a long while, she did not feel any anomaly in her body. Thinking that it might be because of angles, she grabbed a few passerby

disciples, and had them stand at the same position as experiment. She then retreated to the place she was standing at before as well. However, no matter where she looked from, that strange light did not appear once more.

Theoretically speaking, that shouldn't be the case. Could it be that the light wasn't luck, and was just her imagination?

She repeatedly called a few disciples over to experiment, and had even called over a Nascent Soul Elder. After that absurd succession ceremony that day, she was now the officially recognized Spirit Heaven Palace Sect Master who was not doubted by anyone. Fa Yu seemed to have used some sort of method to expel the main culprit Cao Qi from Spirit Heaven Palace as well. The other Hall Masters understood that they had wrongly mistreated Ling Tian as well, and were now treating her especially better. Though it was unclear how sincere they were, naturally, no one would openly reject her order.

That Elder was unsure of the situation either, but still cooperated with her and stood at her designated spot. However, it was still of no use. She was no longer able to see the light from that day.

Zhu Yao was a little frustrated now. If that light was truly luck, usually, experts who could nourish their Nascent Souls, though not an incredible amount, would still definitely possess considerable luck compared to regular disciples. If she could not see it from a Nascent Soul Elder, it only proved that there was something off with her method.

She recalled the situation from back then. It was noon, and the sun was right on top of them. Could this be related to time or weather? She had no choice but to wait till the exact time, where the sun was similarly shining from right above, before pulling another disciple towards that spot.

As expected, there were no results.

Were there still anything that she could have missed? She

pondered deeply. That day was the succession ceremony, and the various clans and sects were all present. Though a large number of them had already entered the grand hall, there were still a considerable number of people before the entrance. Could this be related to the number of people and angles?

She hurriedly grabbed a few more strong men, and arranged the crowd of disciples to stand in roughly similar positions from on her blurry memories. Then, she had an Azoth Core disciple, whose cultivation level was the highest among the crowd then, to stand at Pi Shi's position. She then retreated to her original position.

Still nothing?

She persistently directed the disciples and altered their positions several times. This went on for more than half a month, yet to no avail. The light she saw back then no longer appeared. Even the disciples that were caught by her began to grow displeased, and now, the disciples of the sects avoided her when spotted.

Even the Elder from back then could not stand it any longer. "Sect Master..." He greeted as he flew over on his sword from afar, as if he was trying to stop what seemed to the disciples' punishment in disguise that lasted over half a month.

"Don't move!" Zhu Yao suddenly roared out.

Shocked, the Elder creaked to a halt in mid-air.

Zhu Yao's eyes widened as she stared intently at that Elder in mid-air. Two words continuously swept across her heart. The hell. So this was what the light at the end of the tunnel meant? So this was what 'when the tides go down, the rocks emerge' meant? So this was what 'adding insult to injury' meant? Ah pui!

Light! She saw that unique light once more. At the position where the Elder was a few centimeters off the ground, she saw that unique halo. Compared to what she saw from Pi Shi's body back then, the aura was much softer. However, the Elder's was much

more complete, as if a figure of light was being reinforced on his entire body, as an oval-shaped aura surrounded his body.

She finally found it. Zhu Yao instantly felt like crying, as she held onto the Elder's hand in excitement. "Elder, what's your esteemed name?"

'Ah!?' The Elder was stunned. "I'm Qi Wu, Elder of the Disciplinary Pavillion. Sect Master, you..."

"Thank you! Thank you! As the representative of the entire world, I give you their thanks, fellow comrade!" Zhu Yao firmly shook his hand a few times. "The citizens will never forget your great contributions. You will forever be the greatest person in our hearts. I will remember you for all eternity."

"..." The Elder was confused. Why did he feel as if his lifespan was about to be depleted and was about to return to the heavens?

"Alright, everyone, you can all leave now. It has been hard on you all today!" Zhu Yao carefully remembered every disciple's position and then waved them goodbye. After they had all left, she once again looked at the Elder and sincerely said. "Really, thank you, Elder Wu Qi. Don't worry, I won't call them over again."

"..." I'm called Qi Wu.

"I still have matters at hand, so I will be leaving now, Elder Wu Qi!"

"..." I already said I'm Qi Wu.

"Goodbye, Elder Wu Qi!"

"..." Qi Wu...

Zhu Yao finally understood the key when the Elder came charging in. Back then, Pi Shi was flying over from away as well, and that light disappeared after an instant. The actual position where the light could be seen was in the air, and not where he stood on the ground later on.

Thank you, fellow Elder. He's simply the hero that saves this world! Eh, what is his name again?

Haah, whatever. The main point was that she had discovered the reason she could see luck, and now she had to find a way to make this method of seeing the light of luck, which only happened at that place, practical. Also, there was a need to make a portable version out of it. Actually, in this half a month of research, the reason why she could see the light was closely related to the angles, environment and etcetera. This could go into questions related to math and physics.

She had calculated all of the angles, distances, time and other factors. However, as long as she switched to another location, the light would not appear, as though it could only be seen right at the entrance of the hall.

Zhu Yao could not believe this. There was definitely something she had yet to consider. Thus, she once again returned to the hall entrance and looked at the surroundings carefully. She circled around a few times, and looked for the differences between the new location and this place.

If there is something different, then it can only be... the floor?

She squatted down and touched the stone plates. They were smooth and shiny, and a little blinding to the eyes.

Wait a minute! Blinding?

Zhu Yao raised her look and looked at the sun in the sky. Then, she stared back at the stone plates on the ground. This is... reflection?

Could it be due to the light rays? Zhu Yao immediately stood up and inspected the surroundings. She realized the entire plaza outside the grand hall was made up of these white, reflective stone plates.

She then pondered deeply about the positions of the crowd, and

realized they had coincidentally formed a circle. Adding the angles of the sun rays and the distance from where she stood...

Zhu Yao immediately circulated her spiritual energy and drew a formation in the air. She then calculated everyone's positions in, and then added in the sun rays. A formation which she had never seen before appeared in front of her eyes.

Could this possibly be a formation that allowed one to see luck?

She felt excited from the bottom of her heart. Immediately, she circulated her spiritual energy and condensed the exact same formation on the palm of her hand. She then looked at the passerbys through the formation. Nothing! She was still unable to see it. Right, it definitely wasn't a formation that was made naturally. The angles of the floor were all factors as well. It was just like how one could see the rainbow through a prism. Most likely, the many reflected sun rays could form an unique formation. Zhu Yao was enlightened. She roughly understood how she should go about making that mystic artifact.



## Chapter 335: Open (the Path) Sesame

---

As a tenth rank artificer, Zhu Yao was very confident in refining a mystic artifact that could see luck. Almost in the instant she was clear of the principle, she had already pictured the prototype mystic artifact in her mind. What's left now was the materials needed to refine it.

“None!” Fa Yu rolled his eyes, and then went back to take up a meditative stance to recover his spiritual energy.

“Eh?” Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment, and then she continued. “Just one palm-sized Rising Symbol Rock is enough. Why are you so stingy?”

Fa Yu still replied in the same way. “None!”

“The hell!” Zhu Yao grew anxious. “This is a very good opportunity to get a clear view of Fan Zhishan's actual capabilities. How about you cooperate for the sake of your Tiantian?”

He raised his head and glared at her. “Do you think the Rising Symbol Rock is a rock that can be found in your home's squats? Something you can get as many as you want?”

“Uh...” Her house only had a toilet seat, and no squats. “Are Rising Symbol Rocks rare?” From her memories, the storage ring her master gave her contained a mountain of it though? While she was learning to refine artifacts, she had often burn them up for amusement.

“Rising Symbol Rocks are found in the Regretless Crossing Edge at the depths of Horizon Forest. According to rumours, only a single piece is birthed every several ten of thousands of years.” He sized her up for a moment. “How rare do you think that is?”

“Then let's head over to Regretless Crossing Edge to find one.”

Fa Yu then glanced at her as if she was an idiot. “Do you know what kind of place Regretless Crossing Edge is?”

“Nope!”

The corner of his lips twitched. After taking a deep breath, he said with a sunken voice. “High rank demonic beasts roam Horizon Forest, and from rumours, there are often many strange phenomena occurring there. It’s a place which even Demigod Sovereigns do not dare to enter carelessly, let alone Regretless Crossing Edge which is found in its very depths. No one knows what could be waiting over there. There hasn’t been anyone who has escaped from that place alive. When one crosses into that place, then there’s no space for regrets! That’s why it’s given the name “Regretless Crossing”!”

It sounded like a very incredible place.

“Without complete preparations, heading into Horizon Forest is undoubtedly nothing but death-seeking!”

“Wait a minute!” Zhu Yao turned around and left. Patapata. After a while, she came running back, with her hands grabbing onto a six-winged demonic beast which was still hugging onto an egg. “There, preparations are complete.”

Fa Yu’s face darkened. “You... You’re really planning to go?”

“Young man, you must have an adventurous spirit!” Zhu Yao patted on his shoulders. “Didn’t you say that the Rising Symbol Rocks are found at Regretless Crossing Edge? Then we just have to head there and leave after grabbing the materials. Sesame is an eleventh rank demonic beast initially. Though it has currently dropped a rank, with its might as a tenth rank demonic beast, I believe demonic beasts won’t easily approach us even in Horizon Forest.”

“...” She made a lot of sense for some reason.

“Let’s go, young man!” Zhu Yao said with a stern look. “For the peace of the world!”

“I’m doing this for Tiantian.” Fa Yu rolled his eyes. The hell

world peace had to do with him!

“Uh... Alright then. For Tiantian!”

Thus, a certain someone unwillingly followed them on their journey. They made a beeline towards the skies of Horizon Forest.

Eh, wait a minute!

If she could already be safe and secure with a tenth rank demonic beast around, why the hell did she have to call him over too?

“...” Why did she feel as if she had been played?

---

Fa Yu was right. Horizon Forest was simply the playground for demonic beasts. It had only been a short while since they entered, yet they had already spotted three eighth rank demonic beasts, five seventh rank demonic beasts, and over dozens of fifth and sixth rank demonic beasts. Just how good were the nourishments in this forest, to the point where so many demonic beasts liked it here?

Fortunately, they had brought Sesame over. Though Sesame was unreliable at times, bringing it over to act tough and shake up the other lower rank beasties was still something it was good for. If only it wasn't hugging onto that egg which was even larger than it was with a stupid look on its face, that is.

“Mistress!” Sesame suddenly leapt right in front of her eyes, its face was filled with excitement. “The egg moved... It moved a little just now. Did you see it? It was moving.”

“...” Why did she feel as if a husband was witnessing the movement in a mother's womb for the first time? It's not like the egg was birthed by her, so the hell did she have to look at it!?

“Sesame...” Zhu Yao took in a deep breath. “If you don't keep that egg now, do you believe I will find some green onions and fry it right this instant!?”

Sesame immediately leapt back a few steps with the egg, bearing

a complaining look on its face. “Mistress... You’re so ruthless. This beastie has always been infatuated with you, so much so that even if I have to be on the same rocky boat as you for several lifetimes, I will have no regrets. I will accompany you even if you venture into heaven or hell. You actually... actually... would do such things to us lonely beasts. Wuuuuu...”

“Three...”

“What happened to the promise of living and dying together, and never abandoning each other?”

“Two...”

“I will keep it now, immediately! I will keep it right this instant.” Sesame’s paws nudged, and in an instant, that huge white demonic egg disappeared. “I shall go investigate the path ahead.” It then leapt up and hastily went forward to bully the beasties that were of lower rank than it’s. Haah, the days where I don’t get to openly see my future wife are so lonely.

Only then did Zhu Yao release her hands that were preparing an art. She turned her head around, only to be met with Fa Yu’s strange eyes. “What?” Those eyes of his looked rather horrifying.

He frowned. After a moment, he said. “Your true form can’t possibly be a demonic beast as well, right?”

“Ah?” How did you come up with that conclusion?

“No wonder you’re so similar.”

“Similar to what...” Speak clearly, hey. How am I similar to that second-handed good Sesame?

Fa Yu did not seem to have the intentions to continue explaining. With a cold snort, he passed her and walked at the front, with an expression that looked as if other than his Tiantian, everyone in this world was nothing but trash.

She suddenly had the urge to take revenge on society!

The forest was Sesame's main stage. With it paving open the path, they basically did not encounter any danger along the way. Occasionally, one or two demonic beasts with strange eyes would leap out, but they would all be sent flying away with a smack of its paw.

Adding that it had already recovered from its injuries, those cracks on its Dantian had disappeared as well. However, in order to restore its former eleventh rank, it had to rely on its own to slowly cultivate it back. Though Fa Yu had a poisonous tongue, he was still rather reliable in his work. Regarding the matter of familiarizing with the use of sword intent to heal injuries, she had merely explained the concept once and he was already able to use it fluently. Though he would use a longer time than her to do so, having to spend about a month, the results were still incredible.

After entering Horizon Forest, they had flown on their swords in the beginning. When they dove deeper in, they changed to moving on foot. With the Sunken Ground Art active, they walked like this for eight hours when Sesame suddenly stopped.

As though it had discovered something, it no longer looked like a playful husky. Its body stiffened as it stared intently at the dense forest ahead.

"What's wrong?" Zhu Yao and Fa Yu stopped as well.

"Ahead of us..." Sesame raised one of its paw and pointed at the front. "I can sense the might of a tenth rank demonic beast, and... not just one."

"Two?"

Sesame shook its head, and even the wings on its back had straightened. "Many... Incredibly many."

Zhu Yao was stunned. Tenth rank demonic beasts, and even a group of them. This forest sure was abundant with properties! Demonic beasts were conscious of their territories. In the demonic

beast forests which she ventured in back then, at the very most, there would only be a single tenth rank demonic beast in a forest. The occasional two she saw were definitely couples. Sesame actually sensed a lot of them. This was not logical.

What to do? Zhu Yao turned to look at Fa Yu.

He frowned. Turning coldly towards her, he gave her a “I knew you pieces of trash were unreliable” expression. With a swing of his hand, he threw her a talisman. He then took one piece for himself and patted it on his chest. He instantly disappeared before their eyes.

Concealment talismans! Zhu Yao lowered her head to take a look. It was actually a high rank conceal talisman! She immediately patted it on herself as well, and the disappeared Fa Yu once again appeared before her eyes.

“Tenth rank concealment talismans which only Grandhall Sect possesses. If we don’t get too close, Demigod Sovereigns won’t be able to sense us either.” He coldly explained.

Tenth rank! Zhu Yao was a little excited. It looked rather incredible!

Fa Yu thought for a moment and then added. “When we get back, I have to remember to calculate the spirit stones that you have to pay.”

“...” The hell, so it wasn’t free. Can’t you just put it on Ling Tian girly’s tab?

“Tiantian is Tiantian, you’re you!” As if he had thought of what she wanted to say, Fa Yu immediately refuted.

Zhu Yao really wanted to meet with his parents!

After sticking the talismans properly, two humans and one beast then entered the forest ahead. They had merely traversed a short distance, when Zhu Yao and her little companions reached out to push away the branches in front of them and were instantly

stunned.

A small town actually appeared in front of them, a town that was a little similar to practitioners'. However, demonic beasts were the ones moving to and fro. Some had taken up human forms while others kept to their beast forms. Though, without a single exception, all of them were tenth rank demonic beasts.

The town was incredibly simple. They were all sheds simply formed by stacks of branches and tree barks. There was either a person or a beast squatting inside the shed. Furthermore, the trading of goods here was simple and straightforward, to the point where... they were only trading in fruits and spiritual herbs. Furthermore, there wasn't any common currency being used between them. They were basically trading goods with goods, like fruits for spiritual herbs, and spiritual herbs for fruits. However, without any exceptions, those spiritual fruits and spiritual herbs were all things that practitioners dreamed of obtaining.

This was basically the demonic beast forest's native product exhibition, where things were of high quality but sold for dirt cheap. Not to mention these demonic beasts were not like practitioners, things like bargaining simply did not exist! They were usually magnanimous exchanges, where the traders would leave once after the exchange was completed. The slightest sight of being a cheapskate and wanting to get a bit more from their money could not be seen at all! It was no wonder they did not hear any hustle bustle before they got this close.

Zhu Yao suddenly remembered Chen Ning, the tenth rank demonic beast that was incredibly successful with his merchant business. It seemed like beasties indeed had talent for business.

"What do we do?" Zhu Yao transmitted her thoughts to Fa Yu next to her. There were too many tenth rank demonic beasts here. Even if they possessed conceal talismans, there was no guarantee that they wouldn't be discovered. "Shall we make a detour?"

Just as Fa Yu was about to reply, he was suddenly startled for a moment. He then looked behind with a stern expression.

“What’s wrong?” Just as she was about to turn around, Fa Yu suddenly pressed her down. She was instantly pushed onto the ground and ended up eating dirt.

“Why are they here?” He muttered solemnly. “Could they have followed us?”

Zhu Yao whose face was being buried in dirt: “...”

Your mom! Can you talk after releasing me? The hell. This old lady isn’t a potato that needs to be planted in the soil, okay? She kicked Fa Yua couple of times before he released her head without the slightest of guilt.

Zhu Yao wiped away the dirt on her face. I shall endure!

She turned to follow his line of sight. When she saw the three men and one woman afar, Zhu Yao only wanted to say...

The hell!

The ghost still lingers around me, is that it!?



# Chapter 336: All Roads Lead to the Female Lead

---

She actually spotted Fan Zhishan. Though she was the female lead, there's too many scenes with her appearances, weren't there? She was appearing everywhere they went. Couldn't she give this side character some leeway? Among the three men next to her, one of them was very familiar. He was exactly the tenth rank demonic beast Bai Li that they met at Spirit Heaven Palace back then.

The other two were Cao Qi and a unknown man.

“That's Cheng Yufeng.” Fa Yu coldly explained. “He possesses the cultivation of the Azoth Core Paragon and the mutated wind spirit vein. He's been referred to as the number one genius of the cultivation world.”

Zhu Yao curiously glanced at him. Even though they were praises, why did they sound so... irritating when it came from his mouth!?

“What are you looking at?” Fa Yu glared at her. “Those trash sects had always liked to praise and sell themselves. What number one genius? It's been two hundred years and he hasn't been able to nourish his Nascent Soul yet. Even the trash next to him had nourished her Nascent Soul. He's even worse than trash.”

“Ou... Then what about you?” She casually asked. “When did you nourish your Nascent Soul?”

Fa Yu choked, and his eyes flashed a little. Then, he turned away and said. “Let us discuss how we are going to go about finding the Rising Symbol Rock!”

“...” This change of topic is too obvious, don't you think!?

“There are too many demonic beasts here. Earlier, I discovered that there's only a single entrance and exit to the town.” Fa Yu pointed to the right. “As long as we make a detour to the left

without flying on our sword and circulating our spiritual energy, we shouldn't be discovered."

Zhu Yao nodded. They waited for the female lead and gang to walk a little further away, before proceeding to detour around the back and heading into the denser area of the forest. She could not help but turn to look at the four people. Though she did not know why the female lead was here, she obviously knew that she was up to no good. It was best that they did not bump into each other head-on.

They made a huge detour around, and finally managed to avoid that town with large number of high rank demonic beasts. They spent over two hours and arrived at their destination. However, when Zhu Yao saw the situation of the actual place, she was completely dumbfounded.

"What's that?" Zhu Yao pointed to that enormous spatial passage. In the azure blue sky above, it was as if someone had dug a hole, and it was completely pitch-black within. There were some what seemed to be torn spatial voids, yet but they were not maintained by any spiritual energy in the surroundings. Instead, the place was shrouded in the aura of death.

"That's Regretless Crossing." Fa Yu said. "The moment one steps into it, he or she will not make it out alive."

Zhu Yao looked at it a couple of times. Strangely, she felt a little uncomfortable.

"Saintess..." Ling Tian who had not spoken for a long time, suddenly said. "That place... is really strange."

"I can see that." Zhu Yao replied. "It's fine as long as we stay away from it."

Right below the black hole was a stone mountain. Fa Yu said that the Rising Symbol Rocks could only be found nearby. Just when Zhu Yao had folded up her sleeves and was about to flip the entire

mountain to search for them...

“Found it!” Fa Yu suddenly bent his body and picked up something. Then, he threw it over.

Zhu Yao caught it with her hand. A snow-white rock laid atop her palm, and it was the Rising Symbol Rock alright. The hell, how did he find it so quickly? What happened to the promise that it’s only born every several tens of thousands of years?

“What are you looking at? We found the thing, so let’s go.” Fa Yu said impatiently. “I’m a metal spirit vein holder. Do you think I’m like the other trashes that need to run around the mountain to look for something they need? I just had to directly spread out my spiritual energy and the mountain would already been thoroughly explored.” He suddenly thought of something, and then turned his head around to size Zhu Yao up. “You can’t possibly have thought to look for it in the mountain, right?”

“...” Trash Zhu Yao was struck head-on!

Zhu Yao carefully kept the Rising Symbol Rock. Just as she was silently turning her body around and was planning to leave, she suddenly heard incoming footsteps from in front of them.

“There’s someone!” Fa Yu reached out his hand in an attempt to pull her.

Zhu Yao immediately leapt a step back, hiding behind a piece of rock with a swoop. If I let you slam my face into dirt again, then I’m your granddaughter!

They placed down a few concealment formations, and a short while after they had hidden themselves well, four people appeared in their view.

Zhu Yao wanted to cuss out. Enemies always cross each other’s paths! Just how much disastrous fate did she have with the female lead? They were actually bumping with each other everywhere.

Big brother Bai Li, what do we do?” Fan Zhishan and the gang

stopped not far away, her face was filled with panic. As though they had found out that Regretless Crossing was just in front of them as well, they stopped progressing.

The tenth rank demonic beast Bai Li frowned. He looked at his surroundings, and then consoled her. “Don’t be afraid, I’m here after all. At the very most, we can just return the item.”

“We can’t!” Fan Zhishan immediately refuted. Seeing the gazes of her three companions, her expression changed as she immediately explained. “I mean... Big brother Bai Li used so much effort to help me obtain this item. If we were to return it back like this, wouldn’t that be letting down your goodwill? Furthermore...” She turned to look at the two others, and tears began to well in her eyes. “Big brother Yufeng was injured because of this... How can I... I’m to blame! I harmed all of you.”

“Zhishan!” That Azoth practitioner said with a gentle look. “My injuries weren’t your fault, I can only blame my lack of skills. How can you put the blame on yourself?”

“That’s right!” Cao Qi persuaded. “You’re just too kind. This wasn’t your problem in the first place, and furthermore, we were the ones who were willing to accompany you on this dangerous adventure. How can this be your fault?”

Bai Li nodded as well. He reached out to grab her waist and gently consoled her. “Zhishan, you don’t have to worry. This place is a dead land. Even a tenth rank demonic beast would not dare to approach it so easily. We just have to hide here for a day, and after searching for us to no avail, they will naturally give up.”

“Really?” The female lead naively asked.

Bai Li nodded heavily.

“Now you can be ease, right?” Cao Qi tapped on her nose. “I already told you there isn’t a need to worry.”

Fan Zhishan’s face instantly flushed, embarrassed. “Big brother

Bai Li, big brother Cao, Big brother Yufeng...”

“Silly little sister...”

Zhu Yao’s face darkened from hearing their conversation as she pieced together the situation. This four people took something from someone, and fled here after being chased. Also, this item seemed to be extremely special and the female lead did not want to return it at all. To actually act so righteous for stealing something, Zhu Yao really had to hand it to her.

Zhu Yao could not help but feel like wanting to pick up their three worldviews for them. She then turned her head, only to see Fa Yu’s constipated look next to her.

“What’s wrong?” Zhu Yao transmitted her voice over, but he did not reply. Zhu Yao had no choice but to follow his line of sight.

And then, she was stunned!

The hell, these four people... how the hell did they end up broadcasting an age-restricted video after a conversation like that? It had only been a few minutes, and their clothes were already half-stripped, hey.

“Immoral!” Fa Yu coldly snorted, as he turned around and meditated to calm himself.

She’s a an R18 female lead after all, so R18 scenes were naturally in the main route. Such things could be understood. “Mn... Though her taste is a little heavy.”

This was after all a foursome. Even among Japanese films, there were only a few that cater to tastes as heavy as this, and this is live-action even. Mn... Just from thinking about this, she was beginning to grow a little excited?

“Aren’t you afraid of turning blind?” Fa Yu glared at her.

“Once foreign, twice familiar after all.” I have even watched the original movie with your wife, you know? “In any case, these

aren't my eyes." It's Ling Tian girly's~

"..." His face was filled with crap.

"It's the live-action version, are you certain you're not going to look?" Don't all men have such tastes?

"..." His face instantly darkened.

"Why don't I... swap with Ling Tian girly?" So that you two can watch it together.

Fa Yu suddenly glared at her. If you dare to raise my Tiantian improperly, I'm going to exterminate you.

"Uh..." She seemed to have already made her watch something improper once.

Whatever, I will watch it myself.

"Yo, they're stark naked now."

"..." Fa Yu instantly closed his eyes.

"Wow, to begin with two people on top. Such heavy tastes."

"..." Fa Yu cupped his ears.

"Yaaaa, it's a foursome now."

"..." He puked.

"Ehhhh, why did he turn back to his beast form?"

"..."

"Ehh, there's even bestiality. What the hell!"

Sesame puked as well.

At first, Zhu Yao was watching it with the attitude of a scenario reviewer, until the broadcast continued on for three hours and the sky was even beginning to set. The four people... no, while three people and one beast were still cultivating with great efforts, even Zhu Yao began to feel that it was becoming aesthetically difficult to watch.

Yet the squealing noises of the female lead continued to sound out. If her voice were to be brought to the modern era, she would definitely be popular. If that time were to come, even Cang-sensei would have to give in, alright? Every male shut-in would have one copy of her film, and they would carefully treasure it...

Eh, wait a minute!

Zhu Yao glanced at the Rising Symbol Rock in her hand, and suddenly had an evil thought.

“Hey, hey, hey. Tiantian’s childhood friend.” Zhu Yao nudged Fa Yu, and said with a mysterious look. “Let me borrow something from you.”

---

The action film on that side broadcasted for an entire night, and Zhu Yao felt it was in a serious state of aesthetical depreciation. During the latter half, she had already lost all interest in viewing it. Bored, she took the opportunity when the few of them were still concentrated in their broadcast to place down a few spiritual energy concealment formations. Circulating the fire spiritual energy in her body, she began to refine the artifact.

Rising Symbol Rock was a rare material, but its rank was not entirely great. Its only benefit was its flexibility. Mystic artifacts from the third rank to the eighth rank could be made from this material, but the grade of the artifact made by it was based on the artificer’s skills alone. The mystic artifact that Zhu Yao planned to make was not dependent on its rank. In the first place, it was not going to be used for battle. The reason why Rising Symbol Rock was needed, was simply because it had the best light reflective property out of all the materials she knew.

Zhu Yao crafted the exact same composition, based on the positions of the stone plates in the plaza, into the melted Rising Symbol Rock. In the end, she made a cylindrical... telescope!

...

Even Zhu Yao herself did not think that the mystic artifact would turn out like this after refinement. Furthermore, it was the monocular collapsible type.

Fine, classical wins. The only difference was that the average telescope only had two lens, while hers had dozens of them, where they were pieces of the Rising Symbol Rock placed in different angles.

However, during the formation engraving, she hesitated. If she directly engraved the formation onto it, then anyone could use it to see luck. That, in essence, wouldn't be any different from the female lead.

After pondering for a moment, she decided not to directly engrave the formation she had calculated beforehand. Instead, she directly inserted a strand of spiritual energy into it. Through the Rising Symbol Rock pieces, she slowly corrected the circulation flow of the spiritual energy to outline the formation.

Then, she looked at the four people that were entangled together through the telescope.



# Chapter 337: The Young Man Still Has Two Other Faces

---

What she saw was a myriad of colours. Each of the four people had his or her own unique aura, though the colours were a little strange. The demonic beast Bai Li's was faint green, Cao Qi's was a shallow yellow, while Cheng Yufeng's was light blue.

The most dazzling one belonged to the female lead, whose aura comprised of several colours. It was as if she was wearing a flower-patterned jacket filled with patches here and there. Compared to the complete oval-shaped aura she saw on the Elder's body, hers were filled with lights of irregular shapes and sizes. Zhu Yao meticulously counted, but realized that the lights were overly complicated and she could not count them all at all.

Even with the three others combined, theirs were not even larger than her light. Furthermore, the lights of the other three people seemed to be a little fragmented. They looked as if they were being blocked by something, missing bits and pieces. Cheng Yufeng's aura especially only had a single tip remaining, as if it could extinguish at any moment.

Zhu Yao frowned. If she had suspected her own guess earlier, then the present situation of the female lead had completely proved her conjecture.

"What's that?" Fa Yu woke up from his meditation and stared at the telescope in her hand. "This can't be the mystic artifact that you have refined, right?"

"It is!" Zhu Yao waved the telescope in her hand.

Fa Yu's face instantly darkened. "You pulled me this far off to look for materials, all in order to refine a broken toy that could not be considered a first rank mystic artifact?"

Seeing that he was about to explode, Zhu Yao sighed. "Young

man, don't be so anxious. 'Artifacts' cannot be determined by their looks. Who cares if they're seventh, eighth or ninth rank if they're useful?"

"This isn't even a first rank." Fa Yu had a scornful look.

Zhu Yao immediately pushed the mystic artifact to his eyes. He glanced into it suspiciously, and was shocked the next moment. "This... is luck?"

She nodded.

Fa Yu's expression sank even further. "So she can truly steal people's luck."

So this boy did not believe her all along till now? What happened to the promise of being people standing on the same boat? Zhu Yao was a little disappointed. Fa Yu however did not speak any further, though his expression had turned even colder than before, as if he was coming up with countermeasures.

Zhu Yao continued to inspect Fan Zhishan through the telescope. Now that they could see luck, she believed that there would definitely be a way to stop luck from being stolen.

Eh, what's that?

Three thin strands of different colours circled around the female lead, and they wouldn't have been easily discovered unless one looked carefully. The source of the three strands were actually the three male leads, as if several transmission tubes were linking the four of them.

Was the female lead stealing luck right now? She looked carefully, and though it wasn't obvious, the auras of the three people had indeed turned smaller, while those thin strands were becoming larger as well. They could hardly be seen from how thin they were earlier, yet they were now as thick as a finger. Correspondingly, the auras of the three men were flowing away at immense speed, and in just less than a moment, a fifth of their

auras had disappeared. Cheng Yufeng's light blue aura had even extinguished in a blink of an eye.

The female lead suddenly let out a unique moan. Her voice carried a slight sharp tone, and it was especially obvious amidst their gasps for air. However, the others who were immersed in lust did not notice it at all. Instead, they moaned a few times in concert before ending this day-and-night long heavy taste exercise.

Almost at the same time, those three transmission tube-like strands disappeared into the air, and the faint green, blue and yellow lights on the female lead's body strengthened a little. The faint blue aura of hers especially seemed to have taken up half of the rest of the other auras combined.

Zhu Yao simply felt as if a lightbulb had lit up in her mind. She suddenly understood why this was an R18 scenario. The female lead was actually seizing the luck of others through the exchange of yin and yang. It was no wonder she had so many male leads around her.

Wait a minute!

That shouldn't be all to it. Didn't she also pull out that bugged weapon to attack her? Could there be different methods to seize luck for different sexes? Or could it be that the female lead still had other considerations?

Zhu Yao could not figure it out, while the passionate men and woman over there had already begun to wear their clothes and leave the place. Zhu Yao could not help but look towards Cheng Yufeng. She did not know if it was because he had lost all of his luck, but she actually saw a strand of the aura of death between his brows.

Just as she was about to look even more carefully, Fa Yu suddenly reached out his hand and pressed her into the dirt once more.

The hell! What happened to the promised love between

teammates?

“They’re leaving.” Fa Yu transmitted his solemn voice. Only after the sound of their footsteps grew further away, did he release his hand.

Zhu Yao whose face was once again covered in dirt: “...”

This asshole definitely did it on purpose!

Fa Yu dispelled the surrounding formations and walked out. Zhu Yao stood up and caught up to him. The high grade concealment talisman instantly lost its effects at this moment, turning into ashes. The time was just right!

“Let’s return.” Zhu Yao bit down two mouthfuls of dirt during this trip, and her heart ached.

“Wait a minute.” Fa Yu coldly narrowed his eyes at her. “Are you sure you’re not going to bring back a few more Rising Symbol Rocks, just in case?”

“Didn’t you say that only a single piece is born every several tens of thousands of years?” Zhu Yao glanced at him. Could there actually be a second piece?

“A single piece is born every several tens of thousands of years, but I didn’t say there’s only one right now! This place has already existed for hundreds of thousands of years.” Fa Yu looked at her as if she was an idiot.

“...” She wanted to exterminate this teammate of hers, what to do?

He pointed at the highlands behind her. “There’s one right above you?”

Zhu Yao raised her head to look. As expected, not far away from her, there was a Rising Symbol Rock that was four to five times bigger than the previous one. There was no harm in being prepared, and furthermore, she could not guarantee that Fa Yu

would be this nice to accompany her again.

Thus, she did not hesitate and turned to walk towards the stone mountain. Just as she took two steps, her feet suddenly turned heavy as a powerful pulling force came from below. Because she did not have a stable footing, she was slammed onto the ground and was unable to move. The radiance of a formation around her shone brightly. Her heart clenched as she suddenly thought of Fan Zhishan who just left. Could they have been discovered? She turned back her head hoping to warn the others.

“There’s a formation, hurry...” Before she could even say run, she saw Fa Yu’s cold expression. The ‘everything in this world was trash’ look was missing from his face, and instead, his entire being had turned even colder than before. Zhu Yao was stunned. “You were the one who placed down this formation?”

Fa Yu did not reply, and simply walked over towards her with a solemn expression.

“Roar...” Sesame sensed the danger as well as it roared out loud. Just as it was about to turn back to its original size, Fa Yu simply snorted and cast an art. Something flashed from Sesame’s core and it instantly slammed onto the ground. No matter how it struggled, it could not take a single step. A large fire instantly lit up around it, covering its entire body.

“Sesame!” Zhu Yao was frightened, as she turned to look at Fa Yu who had suddenly changed in personality. “What did you do to it?”

“It’s too difficult to handle, so I simply added a few small formations in its Inner Core.” He replied without a mind, yet his voice was chilling to the bones.

Inner Core? Could it be when he was healing it? Zhu Yao’s heart sank. “Just what are you planning?”

Fa Yu however did not reply. He walked straight towards her and then cast an art with both his hands. Seals flew out of them and

circled around her surroundings.

These mystic seals are...

Soul Expelling Art!

“You’re planning to expel me out of Ling Tian’s body!?” Zhu Yao widened her eyes.

“It’s been so many days, you have stayed for long enough.” Fa Yu said solemnly. “How can I allow you to stay in her body any longer?”

“Fa Yu, I’m not...”

“Shut your mouth!” Fa Yu glared at her with cold eyes, as if he could not wait to devour her alive. “You understand the concept of luck and is even able to create a heaven-defying mystic artifact that can view luck itself. You must have been an incredible expert in your past life. With the capabilities you possess, is your reason for possessing her body truly to simply save her? In this world, are there any vile ghosts that don’t think of taking over the living bodies? Those words of yours can only fool Tiantian. When the time comes, will you really give up on the opportunity to take over her soul?”

His expression grew colder the longer he spoke, his eyes were filled with hatred, as if he had turned into another person.

No, this was his true self. The person he had been in these recent days was just an act.

“You never believed me right from the start?” As expected of the emperor of acting, she actually did not spot anything off, and had been wholeheartedly helping Ling Tian girly deal with the female lead. She never expected that he would pretend to cooperate with her while planning to expel her.

Ling Tian girly’s explanatory work was clearly not enough, hey!

“In this world, I only believe in myself!” Fa Yu flipped his hand,

and the surrounding mystic seals began to circulate even faster. She could feel a force desperately pulling her out of the body.

“Fa Yu.” She suddenly felt a little panicked in her heart. Just who in the world did she offend, hey? “Have you ever thought about what would happen to Ling Tian after I leave?”

His expression turned colder. “Naturally, I will protect her!”

“Are you sure you can protect her?” Zhu Yao coldly laughed. If he truly could stop the female lead, then there wouldn’t be a need for her to be in this world. When she first arrived, Ling Tian girly was trapped to death within Spirit Heaven Palace.

“...” A hint of hesitation flashed across Fa Yu’s face.

Just as Zhu Yao was about to explain further, bestial roars suddenly came from afar one after another. Following after, the earth began to tremble as large explosive noises moved towards their direction. Even Fa Yu could not get a stable footing.

Fan Zhishan, Cao Qi and the demonic beast Bai Li came flying back from the forest. Seeing Zhu Yao and Fa Yu in front of them, they were clearly stunned.

“It’s you people!” Her expression changed, and a hint of killing intent flashed across her eyes.

In the next moment, one figure after another appeared in a flash. A huge concentrated crowd of demonic beasts suddenly came into the scene, surrounding Fan Zhishan, Zhu Yao and the rest. Within the beast crowd, there were human-shaped ones dressed in various clothes, and there were even beasts of various sizes. They were all ninth or tenth rank demonic beasts, without a single exception.

Furthermore, all of them looked furious, their pair of bloodshot eyes glared intensely at the few people in front of them. Their immensely fuming growls were deafening to the ears.

A black-robed man walked out of the beast crowd, and he flung out his hand.

With a ‘pa’ sound, a bloody object fell right in front of them. After having a clearer look, Zhu Yao took in a deep breath.

That was actually a person. A person who had been bitten into shreds. He was one of the male leads who was still playing restricted-level games with the female lead – Cheng Yufeng.

He’s dead!

Zhu Yao instantly felt her stomach churning.

Fan Zhishan’s face instantly turned as pale as snow, as she took a step back in panic. She hurriedly turned her eyes away, as though she wasn’t willing to see the corpse on the ground. Even Cao Qi’s and Bai Li’s expression carried a hint of panic.

That black-robed man first glared at Bai Li with vicious eyes, and then turned to spit onto the ground. “Pui, traitor! Hurry and hand over the Sacred Dragon Scale.”



# Chapter 338: Avatar Download Complete

---

When the voice of that black-robed man fell, the demonic beasts roared out loud like an orchestra of a hundred beasts. As a Foundation trash, Zhu Yao could feel her Dantian trembling, and the sound of it shattering could be faintly heard. Yet, Fa Yu still wasn't stopping the formation. He paused for a mere moment, before continuing to cast the art.

Bai Li clenched his fists, feeling at a loss. The demonic beasts in the surroundings began to close in. Some had even lost restraints of themselves and came pouncing at them, looking so ruthless as if they wanted to tear the people into shreds.

Fan Zhishan's face had already turned pale. Bai Li hugged onto her and dodged the attacks from the few demonic beasts. Suddenly, her expression changed. Gritting her teeth, she threw something towards Zhu Yao's direction. "If you want the Sacred Dragon Scale... Then find her!"

In an instant, all of the attacking demonic beasts stopped in their tracks. They turned around and changed targets, running straight towards Zhu Yao's and Fa Yu's direction. Fan Zhishan however escaped in the opposite direction on her flying sword. The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. This female lead wanted to kill her with a borrowed knife.

"Fa Yu!" Zhu Yao wanted him to stop this restraining formation. This was not the time to fight each other.

He however pulled out a talisman, a positioning talisman of the highest grade!

Zhu Yao widened her eyes. So he had long made the preparations. Placing down the positioning talisman, he planned on directly send them back to Spirit Heaven Palace.

He activated the talisman. With a flash of white light, the

positioning talisman immediately activated. Just when they were about to be teleported away...

However, he suddenly accelerated his hand seals, and then slammed his hand onto Zhu Yao's chest. Zhu Yao simply felt her consciousness instantly being pulled out of the body. Her body was as light as mist, and her five senses instantly disappeared. The formation beneath her feet disappeared at the same moment as well, along with Fa Yu and Ling Tian's body.

Zhu Yao in her soul state was what remained, along with Sesame which had just released itself from his control, and a large crowd of furious high rank demonic beasts that were pouncing towards them.

For the very first time in her life, Zhu Yao understood what 'removing the bridge after crossing the river' meant. She came running to this world from far away, did he think it was easy for her? Putting aside losing her avatar, the key thing was that she had wholeheartedly worked to save a person. In the end, someone still suspected her for harbouring ulterior motives, and had even dug an extremely large hole waiting for her to jump into it. Her entire mind was in flames, as she was fuming to the point of wanting to bash a certain someone. She suddenly have the impulse of not caring about anything anymore,

She raised her head and looked at the vicious demonic beast crowd that were roaring out wildly. Zhu Yao simply felt like there wasn't anywhere she could vent off her immense anger right now, as waves after waves of burning anger made her want to bite someone. At that moment, she no longer cared about bugs, demonic beasts, and everything else. Turning her head around, she roared out at the demonic beasts as if she was venting. "Shut up!"

A wave of energy seemed to have spread throughout the air. Almost at the same time, it was as if the furious demonic beast crowd had pressed on the pause button, stiffening in their place. There were even some which could not step on the breaks in time

in the sky, as they crashed into the ground like a dumpling.

It was as if the crowd of demonic beasts which still had bloodshot eyes just earlier was splashed with cold water. They stood rooted in their spots, looking blankly at Zhu Yao who was floating in the air.

A moment later, various beasties uncontrollably let out the same sound.

“Meow~”

“Meow your sister, meow! Can’t you see this old lady is angry right now?” Zhu Yao gasped for air several times, but the more she thought about it, the angrier she got. “Let this old lady have some peace and quiet for a moment.”

In an instant, the entire beast crowd felt terrible.

Beast one: Who is that? She looks pretty likable.

Beast two: I suddenly feel like rubbing against her, what to do?

Beast three: But she seems to dislike us a lot.

Beast four: Wuuu, so sad. I feel like crying.

Beast five: The hell is a Sacred Dragon Scale?

For a moment, all the beasties did not dare to make a single noise. The entire place was awkwardly silent, as dozens of pitiful eyes glanced at Zhu Yao who was floating about in rage. All of them had infatuated looks on their faces. Mn. She might like us again after her anger quells.

In the end, it was Sesame, which had abundant experience in hugging her thigh, that reacted first. Amidst the hateful and envious eyes of the crowd of beasties, it sprinted over. “Mistress... It’s been a long time since I witness your tyrannical aura leaking out!”

Tyrannical your ass. In a certain sense, I’m currently stuck in the avatar selection screen, alright? Zhu Yao looked at it with

narrowed eyes, and then floated back and forth a few dozen more times before she was able to calm down. When she turned her head, she was shocked by the beasts that were obediently squatting on the ground. This is...

Her power of friendship with the beasties had returned?

She pondered for a moment. Presently, she was merely a soul that had yet to latch onto anyone. Could it be that the World Favourable Impression ability only took effect when she was completely herself?

This sure is good news... my ass!

She was only able to float about here because the sky had yet to turn bright. Once the sun were to rise, she had to return to the Netherworld. How was she going to fix the bug after that?

Her thoughts flowed, and she once again thought of Fa Yu, making her lose all motivation in an instant. Why should I care about him!? Return to the netherworld, I shall! This old lady is not going to accommodate any further.

She turned to glance at the demonic beasts that were looking at her cautiously. In the end, she could not help but ask. "Just what happened? Why were you all chasing after Fan Zhishan? I'm talking about that female practitioner earlier."

When her words fell, several paws and hands were instantly raised, as each one of them competed to answer her question.

Zhu Yao's face darkened, as she pointed at the black-robed man at the very front. "You, speak."

"Lord, it's like this." The black-robed man cleared his throat, ignored Sesame's warning gaze, and took a step forward. "We do not know where they came from, but those human practitioners from earlier stole our beast race's treasure, the 'Sacred Dragon Scale'. Then, they were discovered by us, and in order to retrieve it, we chased after them without end. Furthermore, they had a

traitor of the beast race among them, and he is familiar with the terrain. That was why we had to spend two days to find them.”

“Sacred Dragon Scale?” Zhu Yao turned to look for the item that Fan Zhishan threw to her earlier. A dragon scale sparkling with golden light was stuck between a stone crevice on the ground, and it even possessed a rather unique aura. It was actually godly energy. The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “This... can’t possibly be a dragon scale of the Dragon Race, right?”

“It is.”

“...” Just for a single scale of the Dragon Race, you beasties will actually spare no efforts in retrieving it? Demonic beasts were truly die-hard fans of the God Races.

The man looked at with a pair of sparkling eyes as he said with an excited look. “The Sacred Dragon Scale is made of a scale from a Dragon’s body. According to legends, it’s even the most important scale that protected its heart, and thus contains immeasurable godly energy. It’s the most important sacred relic in the hearts of the entire beast race!”

If it’s important, they hurry and pick it up, the hell are you staring at me all this time for? The scale has been left sitting there for such a long time, yet I haven’t seen any of you beasties coming to pick it up. It’s colour is even beginning to fade.

Zhu Yao sighed. She turned around and floated towards the dragon scale that were stuck in the stone crevice. Out of habit, she said as she reached out to pick it up. “Since it’s so important, then you guys best keep it safely next time. Do not...”

Before she could even finish, the moment she touched that dragon scale, a blinding radiance shone before her eyes as an immense pulling force assaulted her. Her entire being was sucked into it. In an instant, her vision turned dark, and below her line of sight, a familiar loading bar hanged right there.

However, that loading bar did not start from the beginning, but instead, it was already at the very end.

The '99%' on the loading bar flashed, and it turned '100%' the next moment.

Ting!

A familiar notification bell resounded next to her ears, and a row of words suddenly appeared as well.

Downloading of missing soul has been completed, the avatar has been completely activated. Brave young lady, hurry and create a miracle!

Then...

She turned into a scale.

---

Zhu Yao blanked for a whole thirty seconds before regaining her senses.

This is an avatar?

Why the hell is it a scale, hey!?

And what's with that 99% to 100% loading bar? That's clearly the loading bar that appeared just before I reincarnated into Ling Tian girly's body, right? Why wasn't the loading from back then completed? Why did the loading bar stall, hey? Then, does that mean she has been using the wrong avatar all this time?

So, she should have reincarnated here at the very start. This scale was the one that was truly prepared for her?

Zhu Yao who found out the truth simply wanted to raise her middle finger.

Has Realmspirit's intelligence disconnected? Even if she had her own avatar, how was she going to fix a bug by being a scale? Blind the female lead to death with light? Right now, she couldn't even

move because she was stuck in a crevice, alright?

Just as she was thinking about this, a powerful energy suddenly surged inside her body, and the energy was endlessly gathering at the very center of the scale. It was as if energy that had been concealed for a very long time, had suddenly been activated. This is... godly energy!

Zhu Yao calmed her heart down and directly circulated the godly energy. Two small hand-like lightstreams were formed on the scale's two sides, and they held onto the two sides of the stone crevice. Then, with a strong push...

Pop, she pulled herself out from the stone crevice.

Fortunately, there weren't any cracks on her!

The crowd of beasties that watched the entire process: (◉◉◉)

They seemed to have witnessed something incredible.

"Mistress..." Sesame was dumbfounded as well. It did not understand what just happened at all. In a blink of an eye, Zhu Yao turned into a scale, and she had even pulled herself out of the stone crevice.

Zhu Yao however did not have the time to reply it, because the godly energy within her body was continuing to grow. It was as if incredible energy was sealed in every inch of the scale, and the moment Zhu Yao entered the scale, the energy began to pour out endlessly. In the beginning, she was still able to gather the godly energy in the center through her guidance. However, slowly, she realized she was unable to catch up with the godly energy's speed of emergence.

She decided to directly take up a human form, after all, she had so much godly energy to spare. The light from the scale grew brighter, and in an instant, the area within a radius of several dozen meters was covered with golden light. At the very center of this golden light, a human form was slowly being formed. First, it

was the body, and the four limbs came after.

Fifteen minutes later, a youthful lady with delicate features appeared beneath the stone mountain, and the surrounding golden light slowly dimmed as well. Human form materialization complete!

Zhu Yao unconsciously lowered her head to take a look... Flat as the plain flatlands.

(¬\_¬) As expected, this was her avatar!

“Mistress.” Sesame pounced over with an excited look, its two paws hugged tightly onto her thigh. “Your new image is simply too beautiful. Sesame wants to bear monkeys for you.”

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “What about your egg?”

“Uh...” It stiffened for a moment, and then helplessly said. “Mistress, if you like eggs, then I can bear them for you too!”

“...” Who the hell wants your eggs!? The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. She could no longer be bothered with this beastie which had lost all sense of its morals, as she raised her head to take a look at the rest of the demonic beasts. “Everyone... Uh, fellow beasties, I wish to find a place to rest. I wonder if any of you is able to lend me a cave residence to stay in?” Though she had already taken up a human form, the godly energy in her body was still in a chaotic state. There were even traces of the energy running rampant. She had to immediately head into meditation to regulate the energy.

“Lord, lord. Mine... You can take mine!” A beastie immediately replied.

“Tch, how can a small place like yours accommodate her? Lord, lord, head over to my place. It’s spacious enough.” Another one refuted.

“How can that cold and torn-down place be compared to mine? Lord, lord, my house is the most comfortable. Come over to mine.”



“Your cave is filled with grass, it’s beyond dirty! Lord, lord. I have the most beautiful house, come over to mine.”

“Stop fighting. None of your houses is better than mine. Lord, lord. Come and take a look at mine.”

“...”

Uh... She just wanted to find a place to meditate, was there a need to fight over it? Furthermore, when did she become the lord of these beasties?

The beasties that banded together to fight a common enemy earlier, were beginning to argue for the sake of one person’s accommodation. There was even a possibility that they might start fighting for real if the discussion were to break down. With a darkened expression, Zhu Yao had no choice but to pick a cave residence of a tenth rank demonic beast. The reason was simply. His was the closest.

After bading the other beasties goodbye, Zhu Yao and Sesame followed after that tenth rank demonic beast back to its cave residence, and officially took residence in the place.

The tenth rank demonic beast that was most fortunate to be picked, was beyond exhilarated. It looked as if it was floating as it walked, passing through the crowd of demonic beasts with its head held boastfully high. That behaviour of his looked as if it had struck the lottery, and it garnered several jealous eyes along the way.

At the entrance of the cave, it suddenly pointed at its own bashful face and said. “Lord, actually... I can lay eggs too.”

Zhu Yao: “...”

Sesame: “...”

---

Zhu Yao was only able to control the godly energy within her

body after meditating for half a month. Compared to true Dragons, the amount of godly energy within her body was considerably small. However, she was just a piece of scale after all. It was still fine when the energy was sealed, but now that it had been ignited, she was basically unable to contain them. Yet, she could not cultivate using the methods of the God Races. After pondering for a moment, she directly used godly energy as a replacement for spiritual energy and tried cultivating with the methods of a human practitioner, where she guided godly energy into her Dantian. However, she never expected that her cultivation would begin to rise at extreme speeds. Furthermore, there wasn't any obstruction by the changes of her physical body like a completely human avatar would. She simply crossed each cultivation level step and rose in strength without any setbacks.

When she had her godly energy completely in control, she realized that her cultivation had directly made a breakthrough above the Demigod stage, reaching the range of a Gold Deity.

Her first reaction was to look at the sky, yet she realized nothing happened.

This was illogical. What happened to the promise that all beings above the Demigod stage had to ascend? She had already reached the level of a Gold Deity, and she did not especially concealed her own cultivation either. Let alone the Light of Guidance, not even a single trace of lightning clouds could be seen in the sky.

For some reason, she had an inexplicably strange sensation, faintly feeling that this was not a good sign.

She unconsciously let out her divine sense, and instantly, the entirety of Horizon Forest was within her sight. Even that huge hole at Regretless Crossing could be seen clearly. However, when she tried to dive deeper into that hole, she could not sense anything at all. She strangely began to become a little mindful of that hole.

“Mistress, what’s wrong?” Seeing that she had raised her head, Sesame looked up at the sky as well.

Zhu Yao frowned. Throwing aside those strange feelings, she turned to look at Sesame. “Sit, I shall help you mend your Inner Core.” Fa Yu dared to place formations inside its Dantian, so he might have made other tamperings as well. She could only feel at ease after taking a closer look herself.

“Ou.” Sesame immediately returned to its human form and sat in front of her. Suddenly, as if it had recalled something, it said. “Mistress, actually, back then when I left the Spirit Realm, it was Yue...”

“If you don’t want to end up injured, then focus!”

“... Ou.”

# Chapter 339: A Godly Development Suddenly Unfolds

---

Only after Zhu Yao summon her sword intent did she find out that Sesame's Inner Core was not mended at all. Fa Yu had simply placed down a few concealment formations on Sesame's Inner Core, and other than that, there were barely any other effects. Adding that the concealment formations could shield themselves from Sesame's five senses, it created the signs of recovery. When her divine sense dove in, those concealment formations shattered on their own.

When she saw its shattered Inner Core, Zhu Yao instantly felt angered to the point of wanting to kill someone. This move of Fa Yu's was simply too huge, yet she did not realize it in the slightest. If not because her current avatar had logged on, and that her cultivation had broken through the Demigod stage once more, there was most likely no one in this world who could heal Sesame well.

Zhu Yao spent an entire three months to patch up Sesame's Inner Core to full recovery, barely stabilizing its cultivation at the tenth rank. She then walked out of the rented cave residence. Fortunately, it did not drop another rank.

She initially wanted to thank the landlord beastie, only to see it running over with a flustered look.

"Lord, lord..." Because it ran so quickly, it had even forgotten to turn back to its beast form. With its hands and feet on the ground, it sprinted over. "Lord, something bad has happened."

"What is it?" Zhu Yao asked.

Landlord beastie pointed towards the far distance. "The hole in the east has suddenly grown really huge. It has already swallowed up the entire town."

“In the east?” She was stunned for a moment. “Regretless Crossing?”

The beastie nodded.

Zhu Yao suddenly had a bad premonition. Flying on her sword, she headed in that direction. After only flying for a short while, she felt a powerful pulling force assaulting her, pulling her entire being directly forward. When she raised her head up to look, she saw an enormous black hole appearing in the sky. Compared to the Regretless Crossing she had seen before, it was at least ten times larger.

The hole was situated between the sky and earth, and it was even enlarging constantly. The surrounding trees and plants were being pulled off the ground one after another, entering the darkness within. Even the earth on the ground was beginning to disappear inch by inch.

“This is?” Sesame was stunned as well as it looked at the endless darkness. “Isn’t this...”

“The Severed Lands.” Zhu Yao continued in its stead. Back then, the secret realm “Tasyoluk” which Sesame was in, had such a place as well. It was located at the very edge of the secret realm. Only pitch-black nothingness was within, and even she knew that she had no choice but to reincarnate after entering it.

However, Horizon Forest was not the edge of this world. Logically, the Severed Lands should not appear in such a place. It could be best compared to a complete piece of paper. It could have its own edges, but these edges should not appear at the center of the paper. Presently, the Severed Lands had appeared right here, and it was even beginning to spread all around, devouring and growing larger. This could only mean that cracks had appeared in this world, and it was beginning to collapse.

Zhu Yao’s first reaction was that something had happened to Ling Tian. She instructed the beasties a few things, prevented

them from approaching that place, and then turned to head towards Spirit Heaven Palace.

Back then, she had to spend an entire day to get there. Now, she had merely taken fifteen minutes to reach Spirit Heaven Palace. She initially pondered how she should bash that two-faced Fa Yu up, so that she could relieve the foulness in her heart.

However, when she saw the same large black hole in the skies above Spirit Heaven Palace, she was dumbfounded. Why was it here as well?

Most of Spirit Heaven Palace had already been devoured by the black hole. Only a small half of the floating mountains were still floating in the air, and they were still constantly being drawn into the black hole. Not a single disciple remained in Spirit Heaven Palace.

She concealed her cultivation and made her way to a nearby practitioner's town to get some information, and found out that the black hole appeared four months ago. No one knew what it was. It suddenly appeared in the sky, and it was initially just the size of a wellhead. However, it continued to grow, and seven days later it became even larger than a floating mountain.

Spirit Heaven Palace lost quite a number of disciples, and because there was simply no options left, the sect was moved to Grandhall Sect.

"I'm certain that Spirit Heaven Palace must have angered the Higher Realm, which led to the sudden appearance of such a strange phenomenon. It might be an act conducted by the Deities of the Higher Realm." That practitioner said mysteriously. "That black hole produces not a single ripple of spiritual energy, but merely the aura of death. How can a practitioner of this world possibly summon such a thing? Furthermore, there are numerous other places it could appear in, yet it appeared right above Spirit Heaven Palace. It must be related to the Spirit Heaven Palace."

Zhu Yao frowned. Wasn't four months ago the time when Fa Yu ousted her out of Ling Tian's body? It seemed like she had to make a visit to Grandhall Sect.

She rushed over to Grandhall Sect, only to realize that she was not the only who was making a visit. Disciples from various sects and clans were actually gathered around Grandhall Sect with furious faces. They were armed with weapons, and looked as though they were here for a fight.

Grandhall Sect's Great Mountain Barrier Formation was activated in full force, keeping the various sects outside the mountain.

Zhu Yao took a closer look. Leading the pack was the number one deity sect – Sleipoup Sect. The female lead Fan Zhishan and Sovereign Pi Shi were standing at the very front, and there were eight extraordinary-looking men standing around them as well. Was this the female lead's harem exhibition? It seemed like the death of that Cheng Yufeng did not affect the female lead in the slightest!

“Sect Master Fa, please hand over that menace.” A Nascent Soul practitioner loudly shouted at the Great Mountain Barrier Formation. “As long as you hand over that menace, we will let go of your Grandhall Sect. Otherwise... We have no choice but to go to war for the sake of this world.”

What was going on? The various clans and sects were actually here to launch a crusade against Grandhall Sect? Furthermore, Sleipoup Sect was actually taking the lead! The various sects would not even wait to avoid them before, how did the situation change in just a few months?

“As long as you hand over that Devil Ling Tian and quell the anger of the Deities of the Higher Realm, I can guarantee that the various sects will not look into what happened today.” That Nascent Soul practitioner continued to transmit his voice out loud.

“It’s exactly because she has impersonated as the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace that brought about this misfortune that is this crisis. As humans who cultivate on the path of deities, we must do justice in place of the heavens!”

When did Ling Tian become a Devil? Zhu Yao grew even more confused the longer she listened. Don’t come up with such a godly development after I’m offline for just a day!

It seemed like she could only understand the situation after meeting Ling Tian and Fa Yu. After pondering for a moment, she intentionally circled around to the back of Grandhall Sect. Though she had concealed her figure and that let alone a Demigod, even an Earth Deity could not sense her, she could not fend against the female lead’s ability to see luck after all. It was best to take a safer route.

Though the Great Mountain Barrier Formation of Grandhall Sect could not stop her, she did not break it apart directly either. Instead, she found the formation core, did some slight alterations, and calmly crossed through it.

Sweeping her divine sense throughout the place, the entirety of Grandhall Sect instantly appeared in her mind. Ling Tian was in a room at the back of the Main Mountain.

In a flash, she appeared within the room. However, Ling Tian was lying on the bed with her eyes closed. Zhu Yao did not intentionally hide herself, and Fa Yu, who was sitting by the bed, was stunned for a moment. He immediately summoned his sword and looked at her vigilantly. “Who are you?”

Zhu Yao swept a glance at him. He had long lost the wilful temperament and the scornful look he had for the entire world that he had when they first met. As though it had been a long time since he took care of himself, his hair was dishevelled and he had a fatigued look. Even this spiritual energy in his body had traces of scattering apart. He was in an incredibly weak state, to the point



where his cultivation had even fallen to the Azoth Core stage.

Knowing that he hadn't been well, Zhu Yao felt better.

She felt that the anger she had held onto for several months had eased a little, as she turned to look at Ling Tian on the bed. "What happened to her?"

Fa Yu was stunned. With widened eyes, he recognized her the next moment. "It's you!"

She simply rolled her eyes. "Who else can I be?"

"You... How can you possibly?" He had a look of utter disbelief. "Then the body that you have right now is?"

"It's mine, of course!"

"Then why..." He had a confused look, but suddenly, as though he had recalled something, he raised his sword and furiously said. "Just what did you do to Ling Tian? Why isn't she awake even till now?"

"What did I do?" Zhu Yao coldly laughed. "What can I possibly do? Weren't you the one who forced my soul out that day? Now that a problem has occurred, you're blaming me for it?"

Anxiety flashed across his face. "I simply do not wish for her to be controlled by you. She can only be Ling Tian when you're out of her body. How can she possibly be in a coma because of it? It's you! You must have done something."

Zhu Yao did not wish to spare someone who was crippled in the mind at all, as she released her pressure directly at him. Fa Yu was instantly pressed against the ground, puking out a large mouthful of blood.

"You best wake up!" Zhu Yao took a step forward and picked him up by the collar. "I told you right from the start that I'm here to help her. Ling Tian herself had even told you that I'm here to help her as well. It was your own self-assertion to expel me out. Now

that she has turned out this way, it's all your fault."

"No... No." He desperately shook his head. "I just wanted to save her. I just wanted her to be out of harm's way. I didn't..."

Zhu Yao coldly laughed. "Save? At best, you're just a murderer disguised as a good person."

She swung him away and walked towards the bed where Ling Tian was. After taking a closer look, she could not help but take in a deep breath. Though Ling Tian girly was still breathing inaudibly, a thick aura of death was floating about her entire body, as though she could stop breathing at any moment.

Zhu Yao clenched her fists, and then picked up Fa Yu again. "What happened?" Logically, this shouldn't have happened. Though she possessed Ling Tian's body, her body was still extremely healthy. It was simply impossible for something like the signs of death to appear out of nowhere.

Fa Yu's entire body shook a little, as though he had lost himself in something terrible. His entire face was miserably pale, with no traces of the slightest tint of blood. Hearing her question, he simply shook his head. "I don't know... Ever since we returned from Horizon Forest, she hasn't woken up at all... No matter what method I used, she never woke up." His entire body trembled as deep despair filled his face.

Zhu Yao frowned. She reached out her hand to check Ling Tian girly's pulse, and had even intentionally sent a strand of divine sense into her. The conclusion she received was however rather unexpected. Ling Tian girly's body... was actually completely healthy! No matter if it was her Dantian or her meridians which were not damaged in the least, even her circulation of spiritual energy was normal. It was as if the aura of death on her body had appeared out of thin air.

"You can save her, can't you?" Fa Yu suddenly raised his head, as if he had finally managed to grab hold onto a floating wooden

plank in the middle of a large ocean. He stared at her intensely and said. “Your cultivation is this incredible now, so you can save her now, right? Save her, please? In the past... It’s all my fault. Ling Tian is not involved in this. I don’t care how you treat me, I’m even willing to have my soul dispersed as long as you save her... Please... Save her... please?”

“...” Zhu Yao frowned. If you had known of this, would you have done what you had done before?

“You don’t believe me?” Fa Yu was startled, the anxiety on his face worsened. “Then place a life-death curse on me, or even a truth curse is fine! That way, I won’t be able to escape. As long as you save her, I will do everything you ask of me. I can cast the art now.” After saying that, he flipped his palm and the seal of the life-death curse appeared above his hand. Without even looking at it, he pushed it towards his own forehead.

Not able to stand watching it any longer, Zhu Yao waved her head and interrupted his art, pushing him onto the ground at the same time. “No need.” She turned to look at him and said with a sunken voice. “Because I’ve never thought of forgiving you.”

“...” His entire being turned ash-grey.

“Fa Yu, you’re only aware that Ling Tian is important to you. But when you used me and schemed against me, have you ever thought that other people have their own important people in their lives as well?” Zhu Yao said solemnly. “I can understand you expelling me out of Ling Tian’s body, after all, that doesn’t belong to me in the first place. I would have left sooner or later. Even if I was expelled earlier than scheduled, I can only blame myself for being stupid enough to not be able to see through you.”

She laughed in self-mockery. Then, her tone changed, as she coldly said. “However... I’m unable to forgive you for the acts you did on Sesame. If you didn’t want to fix its Inner Core, then you should’ve told me straight. Yet, you just had to worsen his

situation, and had even place down several formations on its Dantian to fool us in believing that it had already recovered. If not because I was cautious and investigated its injuries, its Dantian might have lost all hope of recovery because of those formations, and even its life might have been at stake. You're aware that Ling Tian is important to you, but have you ever thought that Sesame is important to me as well?"

His face was filled with despair.

Zhu Yao took a deep breath. She suppressed the anger in the depths of her heart and continued. "As for Ling Tian... I will do my best." He suddenly raised his head when Zhu Yao continued. "However, it's not because of your pleas. Ling Tian is Ling Tian. You are you. I'm saving her because she is different from you. She did not betray me, and I won't place your mistakes on her head. Similarly, I won't forgive you because of her."

After saying that, not caring about the expression he had, she raised Ling Tian girly on the bed, and then sat in a meditative stance behind her. After instructing Sesame to keep watch at the side, she took a deep breath and released all of her divine sense into Ling Tian's body.

Ling Tian was in a coma the entire time, and the aura of death was spread across her body. Since her body itself was fine, then the problem could only be her soul. Actually, after Zhu Yao helped her retrieve her position as a Sect Master, Ling Tian girly seldom spoke to her anymore. She did not think of it as a concern before, but after pondering about this, the problem must have already started then. That was why after being ousted from her body, Ling Tian girly did not have any reaction at all.

When Zhu Yao's divine sense entered her body, she did not encounter any resistance, not even the slightest bit of her body's instincts acted as an obstruction. Zhu Yao felt that the situation was much worse than she thought, and thus directly made her way into her Dantian.

The moment she entered it, the scene in front of her felt like it had changed, as a blessed celestial mountain appeared before her. It was a floating mountain that floated high in the skies with a mighty pavillion sitting on it. It was actually the Spirit Heaven Palace!

Suddenly, two small figures came flying over from her left and right. They were a boy and a girl, whose age seemed to be between twelve and thirteen. The girl had a happy face as she flew at the front, her bell-like laughter resounded along the way. The boy worriedly followed behind, chasing after her while worriedly shouting his concerns.

“Tiantian, you have just learnt how to fly on your sword, don’t fly so quickly.”

Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. Was this a scene of Ling Tian’s and Fa Yu’s childhood?

“You’re here?” Suddenly, a light call sounded behind her. When she turned to look, she saw Ling Tian girly with a gentle smile on her face.

Zhu Yao could not help but look at the playful and noisy little girl on the other end, and the Ling Tian before her.

Was this... a dreamscape?

# Chapter 340: It's Time to Disconnect

---

“That’s me...” Ling Tian pointed at the girl in front and smiled from the nostalgia.

“You and Fa Yu?” Zhu Yao asked in response.

She nodded. Looking at the scene in front of her, a hint of yearning surfaced in her eyes. “We grew up together since young, and those days were the happiest in my life.” She pondered for a moment, and then shook her head immediately after. “No... I should say they were the happiest days in all of my lifetimes.”

“All of your lifetimes!?” Zhu Yao was stunned, her eyes widened. The memories from all of her lifetimes? However, before entering the wheel of reincarnation, one had to cross the River of Forgetfulness. How could she possibly still remember them?

She smiled, yet her eyes were filled with indifference. “I can’t even recall clearly just how many reincarnations I have gone through, it’s just that, the moment I’m aware of my surroundings, I understood that I exists for the sake of the stability of this world. This is my mission and fate, and it’s forever impossible for me to leave this world and ascend. That was why I had always intentionally distanced myself from others. But... In the end, I’m still human. How can I possibly be completely unfeeling?”

Her expression sank. She looked as if she wanted to raise the corners of her lips, yet there was not a single smiling intent appearing on her face. She turned to look back at Zhu Yao and softly said. “Fa Yu is that accident. When I came to know him, he was still a child...”

When her words fell, the chasing scene before them flashed, turning into view enveloped by loud thunderstorms. A frail child was presently holding onto a dagger, facing off against a group of wolves. His entire body was covered in blood, and bone-deep injuries could be seen all around him. His stance was crumbling

and unstable, yet he still held tightly onto the dagger, glaring at the bunch of wolves furiously. However, how could a child possibly go against a bunch of hungry wolves? Very quickly, the number of injuries on the child grew, and the falling rainwater dyed the ground with his incessantly flowing blood. Finally, he was pounced on by a wolf and knocked onto the ground, his small arms no longer had the energy to raise the dagger in his hands. Just when he was about to be eaten by the wolf...

A spiritual sword suddenly descended from the skies, directly ending the life of the hungry wolf that pounced on him. The immense sword aura exuded from the spiritual sword chased off the rest of the whimpering wolves. Almost at the same time, the storm ended, and the dark clouds quickly dispersed. A white-robed woman appeared in the skies above. Her facial features were extraordinary, yet she held a cold look on her face, as though anything that tried to approach her would feel hurt. Though she looked really foreign, Zhu Yao felt that she was Ling Tian.

As expected, Ling Tian next to her said. “Though I understood that there would be no meaning behind this action, in the end, I couldn’t become that heartless...”

What happened next was easy to guess. Ling Tian girly brought the child back to Spirit Heaven Palace and took him in as her disciple, giving him the name Fa Yu and taught him personally. Probably because of the events he encountered when he was young, the child had the tendency to be alone, and he only depended completely on his master who saved him. However, this dependency ignited a subtle change the older he became, developing into feelings between a man and woman.

However, the lifespan of that Ling Tian’s lifetime was close to its end, while Fa Yu’s aptitude was extraordinary and would definitely achieve great heights in the future. Realizing this, Ling Tian naturally was unwilling to delay his progress, rejecting his confessions in all ways possible. She had even intentionally

suppressed him, yet, all her efforts could not extinguish the small flame in Fa Yu's heart. Furthermore, in order to help Ling Tian make a breakthrough into a Demigod, he did not hesitate to venture into dangerous depths several times to seek opportunities for her, completely ignoring the harms to his own life.

“But, how could he have known that my lifespan is not something that can be extended with cultivation alone?” A bitter smile surfaced on Ling Tian's face. “My existence is linked to this world, and no matter how many opportunities I receive, it's of no use to me. Cultivation... I can never become a deity in the first place, yet he...”

She took a deep breath, as if trying to suppress the flood of emotions in her heart. After awhile, she said. “I was afraid that something would happen if he went on like that, so I had no choice but to inform him of my reincarnation situation. I thought that after my looks have changed, and as long as I deny it, he will naturally understand I'm no longer me. I thought that as time passes, his feelings will naturally fade.”

Zhu Yao frowned. “Did he not believe you?”

“That child is too smart.” Ling Tian laughed bitterly, not knowing if it was out of joy or self-mockery. “He saw through me at first glance. Ever since I reincarnated, I had never brought up a single thing from the past, yet he was certain of who I was. Not to mention, in order to accompany me, he used some sort of method to damage his Nascent Soul cultivation and re-cultivate with me. Furthermore, because of something I said on the fly, he raised Grandhall Sect with his own hands. How could I possibly stay unmoved from such dedication and affection?”

Zhu Yao was silent for a moment. “In that case, why are you unwilling to wake up?” Zhu Yao was no longer in her body, so if the two of them liked each other, shouldn't it be a happy end?

She suddenly showed an especially brilliant smile, yet Zhu Yao



felt a sharp tingling in her heart. “Saintess... Because my time is up.”

“What?” What did she mean?

“I have been born for this world, and I will also disappear for this world.”

“...” Zhu Yao was dumbfounded. “But... I came to save you, I...”

“You’ve already saved me.” Ling Tian girly still smiled. “Of course, if not because you possessed my body, it would have been impossible for my final strand of life to last till now.”

“.....”

“...”

“Saintess... When you came, I was already dead.”

Zhu Yao was stunned. Then why had she been going around for so many days?

“Before you came, for the sake of this world, I froze my final strand of life. However... I kept having regrets – my desire to see him.” Ling Tian took a step forward, hugged her, and then immediately released her. “Thank you. If not for you, I wouldn’t have been able to see him one last time. I hope that you won’t blame me for taking action with my own hands, and forcing you to possess my body. But... In the end, what’s stolen is stolen. It’s fine... this way...”

“You’re saying, the reason why you’re in this state right now is because I left your body?” Zhu Yao was a little flustered. After taking a closer look at the girly’s figure, she was sure that it was much fainter than she first saw her before. “Then... if I come back, you will be fine, right?”

“It’s no use.” She shook her head. Looking at the sky of this dreamscape, she solemnly said. “This world is already beginning to collapse. My time is already up...”

Zhu Yao suddenly recalled of Regretless Crossing, and that black hole above Spirit Heaven Palace. “I don’t understand. Shouldn’t the world stay uncollapsed as long as you’re here?”

“Saintess... I’m supposed to mend this entire world in the first place.” The girly said solemnly. “In your words, I’m just a patch, and it’s time for the installation.”

“.....”

“...”

---

When Zhu Yao retracted her divine sense and regained her senses, Ling Tian girly was already awake. Fa Yu was hugging her, crying like a little child. His two arms wrapped around her tightly as he called out her name over and over again, as though he was afraid she could disappear in the very next second.

“Tiantian... You’re awake. You’re finally awake. Tiantian... Tiantian...”

Ling Tian still carried the same gentle smile, consoling him with her soft voice and conversing mushily as though there wasn’t anyone next to him.

“Little Yu, don’t worry. Aren’t I fine?”

“Mn. You’re fine, I will never let anything happen to you again!”

Zhu Yao quietly turned around and left the house. Only then did she let out the waves of sour feelings in the depths of her heart. It was stuffy and a little unbearable, as tears faintly began to well in her eyes. It hadn’t been long since she knew Ling Tian girly, at most, it had only been a month. The number of times they conversed were not even in the three digits.

However, when she saw her wake up and the three letters ‘bug’ that appeared on her face, she could not help but feel a little unbearable. Only now did she understand why Realmspirit said

that the world was already at the verge of collapse.

When she first woke up in Ling Tian's body, she was already dead. The world had long begun to collapse. When Ling Tian said that she had frozen her final strand of life, she was merely waiting for the right time to wake up, in order to awaken this life of hers to fulfill her destiny.

Realmspirit's initial plan was to have her reincarnate into the Sacred Dragon Scale. With her powers as a Gold Deity, protecting Ling Tian's body till the right time would be an easy feat. Unfortunately, she could not let go of Fa Yu, and thus when Zhu Yao came into this world, she had Zhu Yao reincarnate in her body.

Who would've known that in the end, Zhu Yao would be expelled out of her body by Fa Yu, and return into the Sacred Dragon Scale?

She wondered what would happen if Fa Yu knew of the truth? However, the past could no longer be changed.

Zhu Yao sighed. Suddenly, she heard a loud bang. The entire Grandhall Sect shook and rumbled, as a gigantic magnetic field suddenly appeared in the sky. Everything began to float in the air and fly towards the sky. Mountain rocks, tiles, and various miscellaneous objects flew up one after another.

It was as if the once clear sky had been punctured with a hole, as a circular cave entrance appeared. The objects that flew into the air earlier were all sucked into the darkness. From the immensity of the pulling force, even entire mountains were beginning to approach the hole.

"It's the same phenomenon as Spirit Heaven Palace!" Someone suddenly exclaimed in the air, and the various clans and sects had already gathered around. Because of the black hole, the Great Mountain Barrier Formation of Grandhall Sect had already disappeared. Fa Yu had sensed it as well as he flew his sword over. He looked at the crowd from the various sects with a solemn and

dark look.

The sudden appearance of the black hole stirred the various sects a little, yet they became even more determined to capture Ling Tian.

“As expected, Ling Tian is a Devil. We must capture her.”

“That’s right. No matter where she goes, that strange phenomenon will appear. It must be her doing.”

“Kill her! Appease the fury of the Deities of the Higher Realm.”

“Kill her... Kill her!”

“Shut up!” Fa Yu glared at the crowd, his eyes bloodshot. “None of you shall think of touching her.”

The crowd simply did not put Fa Yu in their eyes, as they summoned their weapons one after another.

“Sect Master Fa!” Leading the pack, Fan Zhishan took a step forward and said with a look of justice. “It’s not that the various sects wish to trouble your Grandhall Sect, rather, you have seen it for yourself the mysterious appearances of these black holes. Spirit Heaven Palace was the first occurrence, while Grandhall Sect is next. This is sufficient proof that someone has angered the heavens. The inheritance of Spirit Heaven Palace has started since the ancient times, and the Sect Masters have always been people who bear the fate of the world. The term ‘Spirit Heaven’ is closely linked to the heavens, and thus upholds the will of the heavens. This is why the selection of the Sect Master must not be changed. I have already said this before, we have initially wanted to restore the order after the wrong person had take up the position, but Sect Master Fa stopped us. Now that the heavens have been angered, if we do not fix this now, I’m afraid the consequences aren’t something which Sect Master Fa can bear alone.”

“Nonsense.” Fa Yu coldly glared at the crowd, and then finally glared intensely at Fan Zhishan. “What anger of the heavens? Who

can prove that? Clearly you're just fishing in troubled waters, yet you people dare to use such a ridiculous excuse. If Ling Tian isn't the Sect Master, could it be that a shameless and loose prostitute like you is worthy? Stop joking. For a schemer like you who absorbs others' luck to cultivate, you dare call yourself someone who bears the fate of the heavens? Pui! Stop staining my eyes!"

Fan Zhishan's expression changed. She was clearly stunned when she heard him talking about how she was absorbing the luck of others. Her face instantly paled and covered in fluster. The thought of refuting never crossed her mind.

Sovereign Pi Shi behind her however, frowned. He took a step forward and summoned his own weapon. "Enough bullcrap. We must eliminate the plague today, and all who blocks our path shall die!"

Fa Yu did not plan on continuing this nonsense either, as he charged out at the crowd with the disciples of Grandhall Sect. Flashes of mystic arts instantly filled the sky.

Zhu Yao however did not have the mood to care about these battles, instead, she looked at the ever-enlarging black hole. The rate of its expansion was clearly much faster than the one she saw at Spirit Heaven Palace. She intentionally released her divine sense, and realized that other than this place, there was another similar black hole a few hundred kilometers away. It was as if another black hole would appear every short while.

The world was truly beginning to collapse.

"Ling Tian..." Zhu Yao could not help but look towards Ling Tian who just walked out of the house. For a moment, she did not know what to say.

Ling Tian however had an eased smile on her face as she looked at the black hole in the sky. After awhile, she turned around and said. "I no longer have any regrets."

Zhu Yao clenched her fists. "There might be... another way?"

She shook her head. "It's already enough. What happens next... I'm leaving it to you."

Zhu Yao felt as though something was blocking her heart, yet, she nodded her head under Ling Tian's expecting gaze.

She slowly walked towards the courtyard of the main hall. As her entire being began to emit out a brilliant golden light with ever-increasing intensity, she closed her eyes. Suddenly, an enormous illusory figure appeared between the sky and earth, and it was none other than Ling Tian herself. The light surrounding her body grew brighter as she began to float in the air. A calm spiritual pressure instantly enveloped the entire world. The objects that were still constantly being absorbed into the black hole suddenly stopped. As if the scene had been paused for a moment, the objects floated still in the air.

Even the crowd that were locked in furious battles stopped as well, as they turned to look at this strange phenomenon.

Fa Yu's face was the only one that paled, as though he had guessed something. He frantically flew towards the center of the golden light. "Tiantian, what are doing? Hurry and stop."

However, Ling Tian did not respond, and continued to rise towards the black hole.

"Tiantian!" Fa Yu frantically tried to stop her, throwing various mystic arts to no end, yet they were all completely ineffective. No matter what he did, his powers were all deflected by the golden light. From using his sword, to mystic arts, to finally using his bare hands to knock against the light. Fresh blood began to flow from his hands, yet no matter what he did he could not break through the light. His face was first dyed with anxiety, then with anger, and finally with utter despair. "Tiantian... Tiantian, hurry and stop. Didn't you just promise me that we won't ever be apart again? Didn't you promise me?"

Ling Tian however did not respond still.

“How can you be so ruthless!? Didn’t you say that you definitely won’t throw me aside in this lifetime? You said it yourself... So why... why!? Master!!” His eyes turned bloodshot, filled with despair and craze.

Ling Tian however did not pause for one moment, as she slowly sank into the darkness. Fa Yu unhesitantly flew towards it as well.

Zhu Yao gritted her teeth as she materialized a chain of lightning and pulled him back the moment he was about to enter the black hole.

“What are you doing? Release me!” Fa Yu began to struggle desperately, wanting to follow after her. “Tiantian! Master!”

In an instant, a golden light suddenly flashed from within the black hole. Even the rest of the black holes began to release out the same eye-piercing light. The moment the light appeared from within each hole, they began to shrink, little by little, and finally disappearing into thin air. It was as if they had never appeared.

# Chapter 341: Become One with the Darkness, Single Puppy

---

Everything happened too quickly, and not even seven minutes had passed. When they regained their senses, only the drizzling sprinkles of golden light remained in the sky.

“They disappeared...” People from the various sects that were present watched the entirety with dumbfounded faces. The scene earlier was simply too astonishing, and even now, they still could not figure out what just happened.

“It’s Ling Tian. As expected, Ling Tian is a Devil. She disappeared along with the black holes.”

“That’s right. That must be it. Her disappearance appeased the anger of the Deities of the Higher Realm.”

“The light earlier must have been the mystic arts of an incredible expert.”

“See, I told you that Reverend Fan is the true Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace. She is the one who bears the fate of the heavens. That Devil Ling Tian truly deserves her death.”

The crowd threw their opinions among each other, and the more they conversed, the more they ascertained their guess. They actually made it such that the phenomenon earlier was Ling Tian’s deserved retribution. There were even some who were persuading Fan Zhishan to inherit the position of Sect Master as soon as possible.

“The heavens are watching over us! The Devil Ling Tian’s death isn’t even worth sympathizing over!”

“Shut up!” Zhu Yao grew even more furious as she listened, and she exploded out with a voice transmission enveloped with godly energy. In an instant, the crowd of practitioners in the sky could not resist against the pressure. Those with high cultivation levels



puked out mouthfuls of blood, while those with low cultivation levels instantly fell off the sky.

Zhu Yao made her way out of the courtyard and towards the plaza at the center of the main hall. Her Gold Deity's divine energy circled around her, as she looked the pale-faced crowd who looked all honorable just earlier. She could not help but smile coldly. Ling Tian sacrificed her own life to save such a bunch of people. "I have seen stupidity before, but I have never seen people who are hopelessly stupid like you lot."

"You... Who are you?" The practitioners that were still in the sky all had frightened faces. A pressure that was as terrifying as hers was something none of them had seen before. Even a Demigod could not resist it. When did such an incredible practitioner appear in the cultivation world?

"Who am I?" Zhu Yao coldly laughed, the anger in her heart could not be suppressed no matter what she did. She turned to sweep her eyes across the crowd of self-righteous people in the sky. "Didn't you lot say that the phenomenon earlier was because of the wrath of the Deities of the Higher Realm? Then, I shall let you people witness, what a Deity's wrath really looks like."

The moment her voice fell, she let out her will. In an instant, tribulation lightning bolts descended from across the huge skies. Bolts after bolts of lightning struck down like spiderwebs, enveloping the entire earth. Lightning sparks filled the place, and every lightning bolt seemed to carry power that could destroy the heavens. The mountains and earth shook, and the light of the sun and moon could not be seen.

The lightning display was too astonishing, and even the tribulation lightning faced by a Demigod could not be compared to a tenth of the might exuded by a single one of these lightning bolts. Even though none of those lightning bolts struck them, this display had already shaken them to the core. Even the Demigod Pi Shi's arms could not help but lightly tremble. One bolt. Just any

one of these lightning bolts here definitely could definitely turn anyone here into ashes. This was something that no one would suspect. Power like that was basically not something mortal practitioners could achieve.

In an instant, everyone had the same answer in their minds. That person was a Deity. No one dared to speak, let alone dare to refute. They simply stood there stiffened, and they did not even dare to breathe too forcefully. They were afraid that the lightning bolts would curve due to a moment of the Deity's anger.

Zhu Yao struck down the lightning bolts for over fifteen minutes, before she was able to suppress the impulse to exterminate them, into the depths of her heart. She slowly retracted the encirclement of tribulation lightning bolts, but the surroundings of Grandhall Sect had long been destroyed beyond recognition.

The entire site was instantly enveloped in a strange silence.

Unexpected, the one who made the first move, was Bai Li who had been standing next to Fan Zhishan the entire time. He seemed to be in a slight daze, as he looked blankly at Zhu Yao who was on the ground, muttering. "Lo... Lord..." In an instant, he felt as if the blood in his entire body was crying out, the slightly uncontrollable desire to approach her was pouring out.

Fan Zhishan wanted to pull onto him on reflex. "Bai Li!"

However, he completely ignored her and immediately flew down, his face was a little red from embarrassment and fluster. Though, most of it seemed to be due to a strange irresistible conviction, as he unconsciously knelt in front of Zhu Yao. "Lord."

Zhu Yao simply gave him a cold glance. She did not have a good impression of this beastie. The reason why he was kneeling in front of her now, was merely because of her real body – the Sacred Dragon Scale, and the influence of the World Favourable Impression ability. The resulting suppression in bloodlines led him to think that she was of the Dragon Race.

“Bai Li, someone else will naturally come and settle some scores with you regarding your betrayal towards your race.”

Bai Li did not retaliate. He simply prostrated with even more respect, yet his figure was trembling slightly after hearing her words.

“Bai Li...” Fan Zhishan called out worriedly, however, the other party did not respond to her at all. Her face instantly paled. Looking at the cold Zhu Yao, she suddenly had a bad feeling.

Among the shocked crowd, there were finally some who began to regain their senses. One of them spoke in a docile manner. “Hono... Honourable deity, you have misunderstood! We are not here to seek trouble with Grandhall Sect.” This person saw that she appeared from within Grandhall Sect, and naturally thought that she was giving Grandhall Sect support. How could the cultivation world possibly offend a Deity? He had no choice but to bite the bullet and explain. “Regarding today’s incident, it’s simply because someone impersonated as the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace, and we’re here to capture the culprit.”

“Impersonate?” Zhu Yao coldly laughed. She looked towards Fan Zhishan and said. “Are you saying she’s the true Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace?”

“Yes, that is correct.” That person hurriedly nodded.

“Open your stupid eyes and watch carefully!” Zhu Yao immediately threw a piece of spirit stone into the air. After a closer look, that was a normal Visual Recording Stone, the size of a regular palm. She chanted an incantation and instantly, that Visual Recording Stone emitted out a brilliant glow, shooting out an enormous holographic screen in the sky.

The scenes being broadcasted were something that people found unsightly, with their faces reddening and their hearts racing. In the scenes, three men and one woman was currently in intense interlock. Though there wasn’t any sound, the obscene images still

made everyone unconsciously turn their heads away. Not to mention, among the main actors inside the video, other than one who had already lost his life, the other three were all present on-site. This fact had made them feel all the more ashamed.

Pair-practitioner arts naturally existed in the cultivation world, so desires for the physical body were not something to be restrained. However, the masses had always respected relationships between one man and one woman, while this form of “mob” cultivation, was rarely seen in the world. Furthermore, every single person inside the video was a well-known practitioner, and this fact was enough to shock the masses. The crowd could not help but turn to look at the female lead Fan Zhishan and the troupe of male practitioners behind her. Their eyes gradually carried slight intents of disdain. Suddenly, they began to understand why Fa Yu had shouted those words.

“Honourable deity, you... this... what’s the meaning of this?” Cao Qi finally could not help but speak up. He had a furious look on his face, however, he did not dare to go over the top either, to prevent offending her out in the open.

The crowd was doubtful as well. It would be understandable if she could not get used to Fan Zhishan’s private affairs and simply wanted to expose her a little. However, they were clearly talking about the topic of Spirit Heaven Palace’s Sect Master earlier. Though there were very few people in the cultivation world who had chaotic private lives, and especially so for female practitioners, it was not like there were none. After all, cultivation was a lonely path, and there would always be people who wished to find some fun. If it’s just because of this point, it’s not enough to prove that she was not the Sect Master of Spirit Heaven Palace.

“Shut up.” Zhu Yao glared at him, and her pressure was once again released, rooting the crowd still. “Watch on!”

Probably because the tone she used was too cold, the crowd could not help but once again fixate their lines of sight on the

holographic screen. In the beginning, everyone was still trying to dodge looking straight on. After all, they were not exactly beautiful sceneries. However, as they watched on, they realized something was amiss.

“Eh, what are those lights behind them?”

“Why are there such strange lights? All of them have them!”

“The other three only possess lights of a single colour, why does Reverend Fan’s look so strange?”

“What’s that strand linking them in the middle?”

“That strand comes from Reverend Fan’s body. She’s absorbing the lights of the others!”

“... Just what in the world is that mystic art?”

Zhu Yao swept her gaze at the stunned practitioners, and coldly laughed. “For the sake of a heretic practitioner that absorbs the luck of others for her own cultivation, you people furiously came here to exact justice. On the other hand, the saviour that sacrificed her own life to save this world from the verge of collapse became the Devil that you claimed her to be. With such inability to determine right from wrong, you think you people are actually worthy of becoming Deities!?”

Everyone widened their eyes. Absorbing luck! The light that they saw earlier was actually luck! There was actually a heretic practitioner in this world that could absorb people’s luck! In an instant, the faces of everyone paled, as they all thought of the meaning behind this turn of events. Even the female lead’s harem members had faces of utter disbelief as well.

Fan Zhishan’s face had turned especially dark. The biggest secret in her heart was exposed in front of everyone here, and the evidence was even right there in the sky. In an instant, she felt her entire body turning ice-cold, as she truly felt that she had already lost this time. Even if she were able to somehow flee, she would

not be able to escape the pursuit from all the clans and sects.

Gritting her teeth, she instantly regained her senses. Before the crowd could even react, she suddenly escaped Zhu Yao's pressure and flew straight towards her. With a flip of her hand, an enormous scythe-like weapon appeared and she swung it towards Zhu Yao. The three letters 'bug' that covered the entire weapon were especially evident. She no longer had any path of escape, so why not pull off a final desperate struggle? The moment this Deity appeared, she saw it. That special luck that Zhu Yao possessed was an unique-shaped luck that she had never seen before. Just by looking at it, Fan Zhishan could not help but tremble. For some reason, she suddenly had a feeling that as long as she could obtain that luck, she could do anything.

Zhu Yao basically did not dodge at all, instead, she flipped her hand and a weapon with the exact same looks appeared in her hand, just that the word 'bug' was not on it. With a swing of her arms, Zhu Yao instantly shattered the three letters in Fan Zhishan's hands.

Fan Zhishan was instantly deflected several meters away, and she puked out one mouthful of blood after another. Her eyes were widened, as she looked at Zhu Yao with a face of utter disbelief. "This... This is impossible!"

"It's strange that I can do it too, right?" Zhu Yao walked over. Ever since she saw that special bugged weapon that Fan Zhishan possessed, Zhu Yao knew that it was formed by a certain part of her body. Luck existed in everyone's body like how a soul did, yet, it was the most ethereal of them all. If one wanted to steal it, then only something similar or exactly the same could possibly slice off luck. She had always been trying to figure out what it was. Only when she was ousted out of Ling Tian's body by Fa Yu, did she figure out that it was divine sense! During her unlimited reincarnations, only the things in her divine sense had always accompanied her in her reincarnations. This was sufficient proof

that divine sense was something at the same plane of existence as luck.

“Remember my words.” Zhu Yao raised the weapon her hands. “When you come out to make a mess, there will always come a day when you have to pay for it all.”

With a swing of her hand, she instantly swung down while relying on the positions of the spiritual energy in her memories. That weapon did not touch her body in the slightest, yet Fan Zhishan let out a heart-wrenching miserable cry.

“No!” Her face paled. She turned around in a fluster, as though she wanted to pick up something from the ground. She grabbed them several times, yet, as though the objects she picked up could flow away, she constantly tried to hold onto them firmly, her eyes were dyed in complete madness. No, no, no... My luck. They are all mine! Mine!”

Zhu Yao let go of the divine sense she materialized, and had it return into her body. With one hand, she cast an art and then slammed her palm towards the female lead’s body. Her Dantian was instantly shattered, and all of her cultivation crippled. She had even casually left a seal in her body, preventing her from stealing anyone else’s luck ever again.

All of the spiritual energy in Fan Zhishan’s body instantly scattered, yet she looked as if she did not feel any of her injuries at all. She had already fallen into madness, as she crawled on the ground, desperately attempting to pick up the luck on the ground.

Zhu Yao’s eyes sank, the anger in her the depths of her heart finally began to disperse. She raised her head and glanced at the sky, not a single one person dared to speak up for Fan Zhishan, and that included the men inside her harem. Their eyes were either dodgy or showed slight confusion, as if they did not understand why they were so infatuated with her before.

The moment the female lead’s luck was destroyed, the feeling of

bonds that was stolen from them naturally disappeared as well.

“I’m not going to kill you.” Zhu Yao lowered her head and looked at Fan Zhishan on the ground. The hands of the crazed female lead paused for a moment, before she continued her earlier picking actions. Zhu Yao coldly laughed. “I’m not killing you because I’m different from you, but because everything that you have just suffered still isn’t enough to make up for your past wrongdoings.” She waved her hand, and just as she was about send Fan Zhishan sweeping across the sky...

A black figure suddenly appeared in a flash from behind her, grabbing onto the flying female lead. Then, he picked her up by the hair.

“Fa Yu!” Where did he appear from? She actually did not sense him at all.

“Of course she shouldn’t be killed!” He suddenly smiled rather ominously, as he slowly raised the female lead up into the air. With her eyes facing directly his, Fa Yu’s voice was ominously cold and piercing to the bones. “If you die, who else should I settle the debt with?”

His laughter grew louder, yet bits of red were beginning to dye his pupils. Black marks were actually beginning to crawl up from her face.

Devil’s Marks!

“Fa Yu!” Zhu Yao’s heart sank. He was about to sink into the path of a Devil. “Don’t do anything rash. The reason why Ling Tian didn’t want you to follow after her, was because she wanted you to live on well.”

“Of course I will live on well.” The black marks on his face grew further, and even the sides of his body were beginning to emit out a devilllic aura. His voice seemed to be carried by the most ominous wind of all. “I will live on for the sake of avenging her, taking



revenge on those people who harmed her, and the heavens that took her life!”

Zhu Yao had no choice but to cast an art with her two hands, attempting to stop him from turning into a Devil. However, she was still a step too late, as the devillic aura from his body instantly exploded forth, scattering to the surroundings. The sky and earth suddenly shook, followed by the withering of the surroundings trees and plants. Even the spiritual energy surrounding Grandhall Sect had all been scattered. A former blessed mountain was instantly filled with a hurricane of raging devillic energy.

She frowned. With a flip of her hand, she changed into forming a sealing incantation. As she circulated the godly energy in her body, an enormous gold formation appeared in the skies. Just as she was about to descend and seal Fa Yu who had already matured into a Devil...

With a flash of black light, all of the devillic energy suddenly disappeared. Even Fan Zhishan's and Fa Yu's figure had disappeared without a trace.

What remained was just the crowd's frightened faces, and also the debris that filled Grandhall Sect.

# Chapter 442: Awakening Notice

---

Zhu Yao was confused for a moment. She had finally dealt with a bug, yet was another one about to be born? Could she actually catch a break? Before she could even figure out how she should deal with this chain of events, a column of heavenly light suddenly descended, piercing through the layers of clouds and instantly shining upon this dark world.

Light of Guidance! Now!?

Her body lightened as her entire being flew towards the sky. She was only able to call out to Sesame in time and have it return to her divine sense. In the next instant, she ascended to the boundaries of the worlds, but just as she was about to cross, a familiar darkness descended. She had returned to that space once more.

The hell! I can never go through the standard process of becoming a Deity, is that it!?

A QQ chat window popped out as usual, and the entire screen was filled with exploding flowery fireworks.

Realmspirit: Welcome back, young maiden! Congratulations on splendidly fixing yet another bug! Even I am about to become your die-hard fan.

Zhu Yao looked at him with narrowed eyes. “Scram!”

Realmspirit: Ouu... Young maiden, you’re so cold, so heartless, so nonsensical.

“Enough with the crap, just what happened this time? The beginning act was ridiculous, and the ending act was even more ridiculous? What happened to Fa Yu and Ling Tian?” Putting aside Ling Tian, Fa Yu actually turned into a Devil. Was a mortal able to become a Devil?

Realmspirit: Young maiden, I’m innocent! That world was about

to approach all-round collapse in the first place, so there were many instabilities. So, it's understandable that you did not descend in the correct avatar. It's out of my control, after all!

(¬\_¬) Doubtful gaze.

Realmspirit: It's true, it's true. Young maiden, that was the reason why I rushed you.

"Then Ling Tian..." Zhu Yao took a deep breath, as she still felt a stifling feeling in her heart. "Did she really..." have to die?

Realmspirit: Ling Tian is the patch for that world in the first place, and sooner or later, she would be needed to completely mend that world. That's also the reason why her aptitude and abilities worsened as she reincarnated over and over again. Theoretically speaking, someone like her who accidentally gained awareness shouldn't develop feelings of love in the first place. However, it's exactly because she accidentally developed such feelings in this lifetime, which gave birth to desires within her. Thus, it caused the disaster she had in this lifetime, where she was on the brink of death before the right time, yet no longer possess the ability to enter the wheel of reincarnation.

"You mean, she's not a human in the first place?" Zhu Yao frowned.

Realmspirit: Initially, yes. But... Ever since her previous reincarnation, she became one.

If that was the case, it would have been better if feelings hadn't budded in the beginning. At the very least, it wouldn't have ended that way in the end...

Realmspirit: Yaoyao... Does her death break your heart?

"It's not to the degree of heartbreak, but more of sadness and sympathy." Zhu Yao took a deep breath. "I can't deny that Ling Tian is a full-fledged saviour of the world. She saved the entire world, and had even sacrificed her most cherished feelings. I

sympathize with her, and also feel sad about her death. This is human nature, but not to the degree of a heartbreak.”

Realmspirit: Then...

“But... she might be a great heroine and a good role model, or even barely be considered as a good girlfriend. However, I have never treated her as a good friend.” She shook her head. “Since the beginning, she was never frank with me. She might have various reasons in doing so, but the fact that she had lied to me cannot be changed.”

Realmspirit: ...

“Feelings are mutual! Maybe, if we got to know each other a little longer, she might tell me the truth, and I will most likely become as furious as Fa Yu.” She sighed. Probably because Ling Tian had forced her to stay within her body, Zhu Yao felt as if something was tying her heart down. However, now that she was dead, there was no longer a need to be frustrated about it. That was why, though she sympathized with her plight, she was not as sad as the time when she witnessed Ying Luo’s death.

“Oh right, what happened to Fa Yu?” Zhu Yao suddenly recalled. “He had clearly become a Devil. Can mortals become Devils too?”

Realmspirit: Haah... Young maiden. All living beings carry the nature of Devils in their hearts. The only difference is whether they are willing to let that nature loose.

“The hell!? Wouldn’t that mean there would be a never-ending amount of bugs?” Zhu Yao wanted to cuss out. Among the bugs that she had fixed, most of them were related to the Devils, you know? “Wait a minute... Fa Yu had clearly turned into a Devil, yet you pulled me back here. Could it be that he isn’t a bug?”

Realmspirit: Congratulations, young maiden! Your IQ has logged on!

“Speak human.”

Realmspirit: Uh... Actually, the reason why those ancient Devils that you faced in the past were bugs, was due to the fact they were initially out of the boundaries of the Three Realms. However, Fa Yu is different. He is a resident of the Three Realms in the first place, and even if he turns into a Devil, it's within the boundaries of the Three Realms.

“...” There were actually differences between ancient Devils and earth-born Devils. So was this racial discrimination? However, after pondering for a moment, though Fa Yu did indeed possess devillic energy, he seemed to be weaker than the ones she had seen in the past. Was that why he did not face her in a direct confrontation?

Whatever. Since Realmspirit said that he wasn't a bug, then why should she be frustrated over it?

“What about Fan Zhishan?” Zhu Yao continued to ask, as she felt that the female lead wasn't that simple. “She can't possibly be a regular person who has awakened to a hidden talent, right?”

Realmspirit: Young maiden, you're so smart! Actually, she's an accident too.

“What do you mean?”

Realmspirit: She was initially born with a soul that was fragmented due to the erosion of resentment, and she had to go through several lifetimes in order to restore her soul to completion. However, her resentment which was exterminated before had unexpectedly returned to the world of the living, and possessed her body. This caused a shift in time by a certain degree and made her possess memories which she shouldn't have, and thus developed a mutation of a certain degree.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. “Can you speak human?” The hell, she couldn't understand at all, hey.

Realmspirit: Ou, to put it simply, she thought that she had

reincarnated.

The hell! Another reincarnation! It was no wonder her cultivation rose so swiftly. That mutation must have been her ability to see luck.

Zhu Yao raised her head and looked at Realmspirit's chat window. For some reason, a strange sensation rose in the depths of her heart. Luck, soul, and resentment. These were all ethereal things to practitioners and even Deities. However, Realmspirit could speak about them this casually.

Furthermore, no matter if it's Ling Tian or the River of Forgetfulness, to put it simply, they were all extraordinary existences themselves, yet they all trusted him to a irregular degree.

No, that's not right!

Rather than trust, they were all... abiding by his orders.

Zhu Yao was stunned as she took in a deep breath. She suddenly had an incredible thought in her mind.

"Realmspirit... Who in the world are you?"

The screen flashed a few times, and after a long while, a row of words appeared.

Realmspirit: Geez, I'm your friend, of course! Oh right, regarding the overtime work this time, your reward is a one-time vacation. Young maiden, do you want to use it now?

"Vacation?" Zhu Yao's eyes shone. "Is that true? Is there no need to fix bugs anymore?"

Realmspirit: Uuuu... Young maiden, how can you suspect my sincerity... my sincerity... sincerity... sincerity!

"You're blaming me?" She rolled her eyes. "Tell me, when have you ever been reliable?"

Realmspirit: It's true this time! Let's use it immediately!

A familiar loading screen suddenly appeared in front of her, and it was loading really quickly. Zhu Yao's figure flashed, and she instantly disappeared from this dark space.

A long while later...

Rows of red words popped out.

Notice! User's awakening has been detected!

Do you wish to activate it automatically?

Selected Choice: Hide information on awakening.

Awakening has halted.

The chat window flashed, and another row of words appeared.

Realmspirit: It's not time yet.

# Chapter 343: Curse of the FFF Inquisition

---

When Zhu Yao opened her eyes, she saw a familiar ceiling. It was really similar to the mass-produced straw cottage her master would make with his mystic arts. It was so simple and succinct that the ceiling was almost all the room had. Underneath her was a hard and solid bed, just that there was a little too many blankets covering her. From her estimate, there were over ten of them.

She seriously suspected if she had actually woken up because of the heat. After not being able to nudge them after a few pushes, she had no choice but to flip over and crawl out.

The door was blasted open with a bang as a white light flashed. A white figure stood tall and straight in front of the bed.

Zhu Yao's heart that was filled with bitterness instantly leaked out. Her nose began to itch as she reach out her two arms. "Master..." I request for hugs, I request comfort.

Yu Yan frowned. After sizing her up for a moment and realizing she did not have any problems, he let out a long sigh and stepped forward to embrace his stupid disciple. "Do you feel uncomfortable in any part of your body?"

Zhu Yao turned her head and buried it into his chest. It would've still been fine if he didn't ask, but the moment he did, she could barely control her emotions and felt like being childish for a moment. "I'm uncomfortable everywhere."

The moment he heard this, Yu Yan was stunned for a moment. He habitually reached out for her wrist and inspected her meridians seriously. After thoroughly checking her body back and forth, he was then able to feel relieved.

If her master was here, it meant that this was the Divine Realm. Realmspirit was finally reliable for once.

"You were unconscious for half a year."



“Ah!? Half a year!?” Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. Half a year, wasn’t that the time she took to complete the previous quest? Did her dandelion avatar from before succeed in her ascension? Just that what ascended was a bare machine without any software installed? With these thoughts, she tried to circulate spiritual energy to look at her facial features, only to realize her Dantian was empty. “Why?”

Yu Yan seemed to know what she wanted to know. With a wave of his hand, a water mirror was materialized.

She looked at the reflection, and her face instantly darkened. “Isn’t this my initial looks? Could it be...” Even her hairstyle was modern. This couldn’t actually be her real body, right? The one with zero battle power? Then how the hell was she going to play around in the Divine Realm!?

Yu Yan nodded, as he combed his disciple’s short hair without a mind, the corners of his lips slowly raised. “You look... pretty good this way.”

Pretty good? She quietly lowered her head. What was pretty?

Uh, no. What her master meant was she was pretty good to recognize, right? You’re face-blind.

“Master, what is going on? Why did I return to my original body?” Logically speaking, when she returned from the modern era, her body should have been stored with Realmspirit.

“Your master isn’t sure.” Yu Yan frowned. “On that day, I waited for you at the Heavenly Door for a month, yet I didn’t see you ascend to the Higher Realm. Thereafter, I suddenly sensed your presence, only to realize that your body has returned to Lightning Divine Palace. You have only woken up today since then.”

So it was truly a bare machine that logged in first! It was no wonder her master did not look for her in the Lower Realm this time. Most likely, he was afraid that she would head back up right

after he were to head down, and thus waited for her to wake up. Thinking about it, she sure had a sad story. She had after all kept her body's purity for so many years, and when she finally managed to find love, she was tossed to foreign lands. Her heart-aching tears could even fill the Three Realms now!

“Just what happened to you?” Yu Yan hugged her even tighter.

Zhu Yao had no choice but to inform her master the matters concerning Ling Tian in detail, including how Fa Yu became a Devil. “Realmspirit mentioned that he was a citizen of the Three Realms in the first place, and even if he does succeed in becoming a Devil in the Three Realms, he won't become a bug. I don't exactly know what kind of plans he has in store, but I kind of feel something is off?”

Yu Yan's expression sank. This was his nth time regretting not smashing his disciple's heavenly book (Laptop). The reason why her disciple would court deaths in such a manner, was all because of that person.

“Oh right, master. I have something important to discuss with you.” Zhu Yao said with a stern look. “Do you think Realmspirit...”

Her words paused right in the middle, a hint of dazedness flashed across her face.

“Mn?” Yu Yan asked in doubt. “What about him?”

“He...” Zhu Yao's mind suddenly emptied, as she wondered why she had suddenly forgotten the matters she thought about. “Eh? What did I want to inform you of again?”

Yu Yan stroked her head. “If you can't recall it, then nevermind.”

“Ou.” Was it her imagination? Why did she feel something was off?

---

Realmspirit said that it was her vacation now, so naturally, there

weren't any irritating bugs that she had to fix. She had nothing to do all of a sudden. Adding that her real body avatar had logged on, no matter what, she had to do something meaningful.

For example...

"Master, do you remember the betrothal gift that you were preparing all those years ago?" Marry me, marry me, marry me!

A certain master who was presently preparing food suddenly stopped his hands. A thought quickly flashed across his face as he quietly responded. "Mn."

"Are they prepared?" Marry me now!

Yu Yan calmly took out the dishes and placed them in front of his stupid disciple. Then, he passed her a pair of chopsticks. "Mn, I have them prepared. Two of them."

"What, two!?" Zhu Yao leapt up in an instant, as she pounced onto her master. The hell, this old lady here hasn't even gotten mine from you, yet you're already thinking of scoring another one, and marrying two at one go? "Speak, who's the mistress?" I will kill her!

Yu Yan moved away the dishes on the table and then leaned his body backwards, letting his disciple feel more comfortable throwing herself across the table. Then, he held onto her waist and carried her down from the stone table, frowning. "Eat properly." She can't even stay still when eating, and not to mention she's a mortal right now.

"Eat my ass!" Her man was about to run off, how would she still have the mood to eat? "Explain. What's with the two sets of betrothal gifts?"

He glanced at her weirdly. "One dowry, and one trousseau. Naturally, two sets."

So it was like that, alright, I forgive you. I knew it. See, for someone who has late-stage face-blindness like master, picking me

up is already a miracle. How can he possibly have sights for another woman? I must be the only one. Mn. Just thinking about it makes me a little excited.

The moment she's excited, she would have the thoughts of doing something a little bad.

"Master, I heard that around twenty-eight years old, it's the golden period for women. Such a coincidence! My real body is twenty-eight years old."

"Mn."

"Master, I heard that the stress being accumulated in modern society is rising, and the restrictions are rising too."

"Mn."

"Master, I heard that the Family Planning Commission just announced a new policy, and it's even stricter than before. It's about to be implemented too."

"Mn?"

"Master, I heard that the birth rate in the Divine Realm is near zero, and it's reaching new world-breaking lows every year in the Three Realms. I think that everyone has a responsibility to uphold the honour of the Divine Realm. We should change it a little."

"Mn..."

"Master, I heard that after becoming a Deity, abilities in... ahem... certain aspects will be restricted. Such a coincidence! I'm a mortal right now, and there's no such restrictions."

"... Eat your meal!"

"Master, eating my meal here would be a waste of this beautiful scenery, why don't we instead do some meaningful exercise?" Come, Little Red Riding Hood. Let this old grandma have a bite."

"....."

“...”

“Master, I heard you like monkeys...”

Zhu Yao felt that, since they were already about to get married, then they should prepare for their life after marriage as soon as possible. For example, taking the opportunity of vacations to bear a monkey or two? Thus, she decided to use all her charms to subdue him into agreement. Even if he were to disagree, she would come up with terms to force him into agreement.

However, she never expected that a certain master did not have the slightest intentions to reject his disciple's suggestion at all, just that he had to remind her about something in an extremely serious manner.

“Yu... Yao. You're in your real body right now.”

“Ah!” Zhu Yao was startled for a moment. “I know.”

“Since it's your real body, then you're human. Only monkey demons can bear monkeys.”

“...” She actually had nothing to refute with.

Yu Yan looked at his disciple's earnest eyes.” If you really like one, why don't your master catch you one?”

“The hell.” Who wants you to catch one? This old lady here wants to bear kids for you! As expected, when conversing with her master, she should not even make a single detour. She directly pounced onto him and pressed against those irreproachable lips of his. With a twist of her arm, she directly pulled apart the waistband from the side of his body. Since she couldn't converse in words, then she should express her intentions with actions.

Strangely, he was unexpectedly cooperative, just that he was stunned for a few seconds when she came pouncing at him in the beginning. After that, he actually did not resist her in the slightest, and had even hardworkingly explored the side of her body for her waistband. He pulled hers off almost at the same time as her, while

his other hand began to hug onto her even tighter. Probably because men were born with natural talents in this area, even though a certain master did not have sufficient experience, he was able to take the dominant role in an instant. As expected of a genius.

With a slight shift of his body, he easily had Zhu Yao pressed beneath him.

She simply felt her eyes blurring as a ray of white light flashed past...

---

Late in the night.

Zhu Yao sat at the bedside. She wanted to cry, but tears weren't falling.

Yu Yan pulled the blanket over for the person lying on the bed, as he looked at his disciple on the bedside silently.

The person lying on the bed was her! To be exact, it was her body, while the person on the bedside was her soul.

Recalling what happened earlier, Zhu Yao still could not collect all of her calm.

Just earlier, the atmosphere was perfect, with flowers in full view and moonlight shining down. The scenery was beautiful, enough to feast one's eyes on. When she thought that the two of them could already be considered an old married couple, she could no longer hold back and bit him with an "ahm~". The scene went from first base to second base, and then from second base to third base, and finally... a miss.

When she was just a foot away from the door, she felt her body turning light as her soul flew out... flew out... out... out!

When she regained her senses, she was already floating the air.

Was this a curse from the FFF Inquisition?

The hell, I'm to be blamed for others being single?

"Master..." I really want to cry.

Yu Yan sighed. Looking at the translucent disciple, a hint of red flashed across his face when he recalled the scene from earlier. He lightly coughed and said. "Your master doesn't know why your soul would suddenly fly out." His eyes swam around for a short moment before he continued. "Don't move about, I will bring over the Floor Master."

After saying that, his figure flashed and left. No matter how she looked at it, he seemed to have fled.

In less than fifteen minutes, he brought back a man wearing a silk robe.

"Yo, little little grand disciple, long time no see. Congratulations on recently..." Yu Jin waved at the person lying on the bed. Before he could even finish, he then saw the other Zhu Yao on the bedside and flinched. His pair of amorous eyes squinted. "Her soul flew out!"

"Floor Master..." The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. Is that supposed to be how people congratulate others?

"What happened?" And here he thought that he was invited to drink celebratory wine for their marriage.

"Her soul suddenly left her body. I used a soul escorting technique, yet I was still unable to send her back in." Yu Yan explained.

Yu Jin frowned. He stepped forward to check the pulse of the body lying on the bed, and then reached out to tap on the soul-state Zhu Yao's forehead with his two fingers. Yu Jin retracted his cynical smile, replaced by a slightly imposing look. He turned to look at Zhu Yao. "Your life isn't severed, nor is your living soul scattered. There are no problems on both ends, so this shouldn't happen... What did you do earlier?"

“Uh...” The master and disciple duo stiffened. Their eyes met, and then they silently turned their heads away. Could she say that she was moralised after being unsuccessful with a slightly immoral act? “Umm...”

“Dinner!” Yu Yan instantly interrupted his disciple’s words, and replied with a what seemed to be stern and serious look, if not for his blood red ears.

The single puppy Yu Jin naturally did not notice the two’s little erratic behaviours. The upright citizen Floor Master, with his great morals intact, asked about the dishes in detail and had even tested them personally. The entire investigation lasted till dawn, yet they were still unable to figure out the reason behind Zhu Yao’s soul flying out of her body.

“This matter is mysterious.” Yu Jin frowned. “It’s most likely just because her soul had left her body for far too long before this, and her soul has not gotten used to the body yet. We can only wait and see.”

To summarize: I don’t know either, you guys deal with it yourselves. Maybe she might even return on her own after waiting for awhile longer.

What happened to the promised upright citizen Floor Master? - Faints!-

“Oh right!” He suddenly recalled something. “I remember there’s a Soul Attracting Pearl in the palace’s treasure pavillion. For souls, it’s...”

Before he could even finish, a white figure flashed. Yu Yan had already disappeared.

The corner of Yu Jin’s lips twitched. He hadn’t said anything about lending it out yet! Where’s the most basic respect for the Floor Master?

He turned to look at Zhu Yao, and earnestly said. “I say,



Jadeflower! You best not learn from your master.”

“Your sister’s Jadeflower!”

“Haah...” Great, it’s too late. She’s already been brought up bad! He wore a pained expression on his face. Suddenly, as though he had recalled something, his eyes sparkled. “Oh right, Jade... Uh, little little grand disciple, are you two really planning on getting married?”

“That’s right.” Do you have an objection?

“Hoho.” He suddenly revealed a chrysanthemum smile. “Since you two are already husband and wife, they you’re naturally no longer his disciple. Once this personal succeeding mark disappears... Are you interested in becoming Floor Master?”

He hasn’t given up yet!

“Not interested.”

“Come on, don’t decide so quickly!” He continued to persuade her. “Look, you now only possess the body of a mortal. If you wish to cultivate into a High Deity, you will need to spend a long time to do so. This cultivation path is extremely dry and bland, are you certain you don’t want to take up the role of Floor Master for some fun?”

“No need.” Zhu Yao strongly shook her head and seriously said. “I have master!” Why would I be bored?

“...” The single puppy received ten thousand damage.

The corner of Yu Jin’s lips twitched. His resentment meter shot up at high speeds, instantly breaking out of the charts. “Little little grand disciple!”

“Mn?”

“Flaunting love will only lead to fast break ups!”

“Heh, at the very least, I am able to flaunt. It’s better than only having a right hand to flaunt.”

“...” You’re heartless, alright!

“Let us discuss the problem about your soul leaving your body instead.” Yu Jin gritted his teeth and took a deep breath. He took a step forward, attempting to check on her soul’s condition once more. Just as he reached out his hand...

Suddenly, Zhu Yao’s soul suddenly shook like rippling water. Her translucent figure flashed, and in a blink of an eye, she disappeared without a trace, as though she never existed in the first place. Even the slightest bit of her presence could no longer be sensed.

Yu Jin: “...”

Suddenly, he had a bad feeling, as though he was about to be bashed up by a certain person. He wondered if it was too late for him to run?

# Chapter 344: Stupider Than an Idiot

---

This was a room. There were very dim rays of light seeping through, and occasionally, ashes would fall from the ceiling. There were several large chains all around, intersecting and straightened, filling up the entire room. Though countless broken divine weapons filled the ground, there were still faint traces of them emitting out minuscule amount of divine energy. This seemed to be a weapon storage, and looking from its degree of tear-and-wear, it had already been a long time since someone came.

Zhu Yao blanked out for exactly ten seconds. Where was she? She tried touching her strangely heavy body. Did she change avatars again? The hell, what happened to the promised vacation?

Before she could even figure out the situation, a loud bang was heard. The stone door in front slowly rose and the entire room began to shake. Following after a few crackling sounds, lines of cracks began to appear and dusts began to fly around in the room. Eye-piercing rays of sunlight shot in, blinding her in an instant.

A man came running in. He had a fatigued look, and his entire body was covered in dirt and soot. His right arm seemed to be injured as well, as it was currently dripping fresh blood. He anxiously looked around, as if he was looking for something. Suddenly, his line of eye fixated on her.

“Yo! Good morning!” Zhu Yao greeted.

The man was stunned for a moment. A strange luster instantly shone from his eyes right after as he exclaimed. “Swuack!”

“...” The hell, is he cussing at me?

The man suddenly charged over.

“What are you trying to do?” Zhu Yao’s heart shook. That man however ignored her, and with a turn, he actually stood behind her. Just as she was about to express her anger, he actually balled

up and squatted down.

What's this for?

"Where is he?" A few furious voices could be heard from outside, and there were even some cusses mixed within.

"We clearly saw him heading this way, how did he disappear?"

"He must be nearby. Search carefully."

So he's actually hiding.

However...

"Why are you hiding behind me?" Was it really fine to deceive himself like this? "It's not like they are blind, they will notice right away, you know? Also, who are you?"

As expected, in the next instant, three Deity practitioners, two men and one woman, appeared at the doorstep. They looked as if they were possessed by the gods of fury, and all three of them were Gold Deities.

Great! She immediately surrendered. "Hi~ If I say I'm just a passerby, will you guys believe me?" I'm not related here, I don't know anything.

The three of them furiously walked in, their eyes fixated on her, and then... moved away.

"Why isn't there anyone? This tattered stone building is the only thing around this place."

"We can look through this place with a single glance. He's not here. Let's head back and look again."

Thus, the three of them turned around... and left... left... left!

The hell, there are actually people who are that blind!

When the three people left, the man behind heaved a long sigh of relief. He sprawled on the ground like mud, and then turned to look at her. On his face that was filled with dirt, a smile surfaced.

“Thank you.”

“...” No, you should be thanking those three people for being blind.

The man sized her up for a moment, the luster in his eyes grew even brighter. “I knew that you would be a good swuark.”

“The hell, who are you cussing at?” Zhu Yao was instantly enraged. “You’re a swuark, your entire family are swuarks!”

The man laughed out loud and then suddenly reached out for her.

“What are you doing?” Zhu Yao’s heart sank. She wanted to dodge on reflex, only to realize she could not move her body at all. She was stuck?

She actually did not have the slightest bit of energy to resist, and could only watch as he raised her up. Then, she was held up by his two hands, as he swept his eyes across her. He flicked his finger at her, emitting out a clear and crisp ring. “It’s actually a second rank. I knew you would definitely be a peerless divine sword.”

Eh?

What did you say?

Zhu Yao was stunned as she looked into his eyes. What reflected within those sparkling pupils was a pitch-black second rank divine sword covered in rust. The “stup” from the word “stupid” was even engraved on the hilt of the sword.

The hell!

---

Hello everyone, I’m Zhu Yao. Just a few hours ago, I was still enjoying my perfect vacation. I sipped on divine wine, ate a lovely meal dedicated to me, and even picked up a handsome guy. Just as I was about to do something embarrassing to develop our feelings further than just friends, and had even stripped down our

respective pants, I died.

Then, I turned into a low-grade second rank divine sword with a stupid front. Furthermore, I was even picked up by a male Earth Deity even stupider than her.

The idiot had most likely never seen the vastness of the world, as he held onto her like treasure and quickly flew out of that dark room. Fortunately, he had his own flying sword, otherwise, even if she was beaten to death, she wouldn't want him stepping on her.

He flew very quickly, exiting that forest and passing through two small cities in short while. Only when the sun was about to set did the idiot stop by a small riverside. He began to size up Zhu Yao thoroughly, and the more he looked, the more excited he became. He looked at the blade over and over again, and even his breathing was becoming a little ragged. Growing a little impatient, he cast the Dirt Removal Art.

Zhu Yao simply felt her body turning light as the rust that were stuck on her blade began to peel off inch by inch, revealing a bright and pure-white blade, along with the numerous ancient yet simple marks: Stupstupstupstupstup...

Zhu Yao seriously wanted to retort: Heck, heck, heck, heck, heck, heck...

"This sword definitely possess an ability to conceal presences." The eyes of the man shone. "Great, I finally have my own weapon from now on."

"Hey, who says I'm going to become your weapon?"

The man gazed at the blade a little agitatedly, his eyes were filled with the luster of excitement. Great! It seems he can't hear me at all.

His excitement grew as he looked at the sword, and he unconsciously pulled up the corner of his robes and rubbed it a few times. Because of that... her entire face was now plastered with

mud.

The hell, if you know how to use the Dirt Removal Art, don't you know how to use it on yourself? As I thought, this person must be an idiot, right!?

The man was stunned for a moment, as though he had realized he had instead dirtied the sword. He immediately cast a Dirt Removal Art, but still decided to use it on the blade first. Seeing that the dirt that stained it had all disappeared, he then moved to tapping on himself.

“With this, on this day, I will definitely...”

“Definitely what?” A dark and solemn voice suddenly rang behind him.

The man's body shook, and even the mystic symbols on his finger had all scattered. He stood rooted to the ground while the colours on his face drained, tightening the grip on the sword hilt.

“I never expected that you would actually return alive!” That voice continued. “Not bad.”

Though they were affirmative words, there was not the least bit intent of praise within them.

The man tightened his grip on the sword further as he began to slightly tremble and grit his teeth. A moment later, he took a deep breath and bent down, respectfully greeting the incoming person. “Master.”

“Mn.” That person coldly responded.

Only then was Zhu Yao able to see his face clearly. He was an elderly dressed in a long, navy-blue robe. He looked extremely skinny and deep wrinkles filled his face, exuding a gloomy and unkind demeanour.

“What's that in your hands?” The elderly narrowed his scornful eyes at the man.

The man frowned for a moment, his hands continued to tremble. Finally, he took a step forward, dragging his hands up, he passed it to the person in front of him. “I hope master can forgive me, this disciple failed to find the Divine Spiritual Herb during my trip to the Forest of Separation this time. I merely found this divine sword by accident.”

With a flip of his hand, the sword that was once in the man’s hand was now held by the elderly. “Second rank divine sword?” He frowned, a hint of scorn flashed across his eyes. He suddenly struck out a palm at the man, instantly blowing him a few meters away, and he landed merely an inch away from the river. “Useless thing! I told you to look for divine herbs, yet you brought back something tattered like this. A mere second rank divine sword has actually made you giddy with excitement? To the point where you would ignore the mission your master has given you?”

The man crawled up from the ground, and evidently, he had received grave injuries. Yet, he still knelt down with head close to the ground. “Master, please forgive me. This disciple knows his wrongs.”

“Hmph!” The elderly snorted. “Continue with your search.” After saying that, he no longer cared about the man on the ground, as he summoned out his divine sword and flew off. Yet Zhu Yao, the divine sword which he claimed to be tattered, was held onto by him, with no intentions of returning to the man.

It seemed like these two did not have a good master-disciple relationship! Wasn’t the Forest of Separation the place that connected the Demonic Immortal Continent and Deity Continent? The level of danger there was far from norm. Zhu Yao could not figure out the identities of the two people.

That elderly brought her to a celestial realm, a place filled with divine mountains that were as tall as the sky, enveloped by auspicious clouds. He flew straight towards the peak, and the place was actually filled with solemn looking pavilions and mansions.



He flew straight down and then made a right turn towards the side mansion. Zhu Yao faintly saw the word Thisthewer written on the mountain gates.

As the elderly made his way to the side mansion, the nearby several disciples dressed in the long same navy-blue robes would bow down and greet him.

“Greetings to Pavillion Lord Fan.”

“Mn.” The elderly seemed to have instantly retracted his cold gaze and was actually responding with smiles. He walked straight towards a cave residence and stopped at the front door. Glancing at the divine sword in his hand, he then turned towards the courtyard at the back, pulled open a door, and threw Zhu Yao in.

Zhu Yao felt her body turning light and her vision blurring. With a few clanging sounds and a few rolls, she then crashed into something and stopped. After having a closer look, she realized this was a weapon storage. The place was filled with various divine artifacts, from the first to fifth rank.

Zhu Yao suddenly felt like crying. Was she going to be stored here? Wouldn't it be better to be with that idiot from earlier then? At the very least, she would be able to go to different places. She couldn't move at all right now!

Master... Where are you? Your disciple has fallen off!

“Hey, you're pressing on me.” Suddenly, a grumble was heard.

Zhu Yao was shocked. She looked around, but she couldn't see anyone at all. Was she hearing things?

“Hey, I'm talking to you, newcomer!” That voice once again sounded.

“Who?”

“Here, here! Below you.”

Zhu Yao lowered her head to take a look. Pressing beneath her

blade was a fourth rank hammer-shaped divine artifact.

“You can talk?” Zhu Yao was utterly stunned. It turned into a spirit?

That hammer flashed with a divine glow for an instant. “If you can talk, why can’t I? Hurry and roll off this great one’s body.”

“Uh...” The hammer sure had a haughty attitude.

“Enough, Skybreaker! Stop bullying the newcomer already, can’t you see it’s just a second rank divine artifact? It’s already tough enough for her to talk.” A female voice sounded from the side. Zhu Yao turned to the source of the voice, and it was actually a wooden comb.

“Hmph!” The hammer snorted. The divine glow from its body grew brighter, and then, it flew while lifting Zhu Yao off it. It then flew onto a weapon rack and no longer spoke.

“Don’t be afraid, newcomer.” The wooden comb kindly said. “We are all neighbours now.”

“That’s right, that’s right. Newcomer, are you a sword?” The dagger at the side said.

“We have very few swords here, you’re the only one here right now.” A fan divine artifact said.

“That’s right, you’re the first sword I’ve seen since I came out of the furnace.” A silk veil divine artifact said.

“Sword, what’s your name?”

“Sword, I’m Saber. What’s yours?”

“You dummy. She’s a sword, so of course she’s called Sword.”

“...” You guys are swuarks, your entire families are swuarks!

“Hi Sword, I’m Spear.” The long red spear at the entrance said.

“Hi Sword, I’m Flute.” The flute on the rack said.

“Hi Sword, I’m Fan.” The fan on the rack said.

“Hi Sword, I’m...” The black rock at the corner said. “Material!”

Zhu Yao: “...”

Can anyone let me know what’s going on with this room? Why are there so many weapons and even materials here that can talk? Did I unlock some sort of unique ability again?

“Sword, ignore Skybreaker. He has a bad temper like that.” Seeing that she wasn’t talking, the wooden comb softly consoled.

The other divine artifacts began to follow up as well.

“That’s right, that’s right. He’s just jealous.”

“Our names have such nice rings to them, he’s the only one which is slightly irregular.”

“That’s right. He’s actually called Skybreaker. It’s extremely terrible to hear, you know.”

“It’s not as pure as my name ‘Club’.”

“Uh...” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “It’s pure alright!”

“Isn’t it, isn’t it? I think so too. Your name ‘Sword’ sounds really good too, though it can’t be compared to mine, it’s already pretty decent.”

“...” Why, thank you!

“Enough!” Skybreaker which was on the rack suddenly flared up. It leapt down and then roared its lungs out. “Skybreaker is the name that old man came up with, my real name is Hammer! Hammer! I’m a hammer!”

Zhu Yao: “...”

The divine artifacts seemed to have already gotten used to the hammer’s roars, as they continued to chat up the newcomer Zhu Yao with zeal.

The dagger flashed and spoke. “Sword, do you like to emit light? I like to emit light the most. Let us be friends.”

“No...”

The dagger was stunned, and in an instant, it dimmed quite a bit.  
“Why?”

“Have you never heard of this?” Zhu Yao nobly said. “Do not mess with swords.”

“.....”

“...”

---

Zhu Yao blanked out in the divine artifact storage for an entire day. Other than the various divine artifacts which wielded otherworldly common sense, she did not spot a single human figure at all. She suddenly grew a little anxious, as she wondered how her master was doing. She tried to take in divine energy like how she did when she was a divine jade back then, only to realize that she couldn't cultivate at all. Forget about taking in divine energy into her body, she couldn't even sense any divine energy at all. She then tried to bathe in moonlight, yet she realized it was still ineffective.

In a few moments, she lost all motivation. How was she going to play now?

Could it be that she had to stay here, till someone takes her away or till her master finds her?

From the looks of the Deity practitioner with the surname Fan, he seemed to scorn a second rank divine artifact like her. Furthermore, he he was a stingy person that would not let go of a single cent, seeing how he would even snatch away his disciple's weapon. The possibility of him gifting a weapon to someone else was basically zero.

What to do?

Suddenly, an extremely soft creak sounded from the door. A

black figure entered in a flash. He looked around anxiously, and then, his line of sight landed on her. In an instant, his eyes shone.

Idiot! Why is he here?

# Chapter 345: Barrierless Two-Way Switch

---

Idiot did not idle for too long. After he found his target, he walked over, picked Zhu Yao up, and left. Along the way out, he cautiously avoided various disciples. He wondered if it was because of his incredible luck, as he was actually able to leave Thisthower Mountain successfully. When he reached the mountain gates, he then daringly took out his flying sword and fled at high speeds. After flying for over an hour, he arrived at a piece of wilderness plains.

The man then panted heavily and stopped.

Looking at the sword in his hand, a joyous smile surfaced on his face, making him look even sillier than before.

Zhu Yao could not figure out this person's thoughts at all. He might be simply unwilling to let go of his divine artifact and thus stole it back during the night. However, there were so many divine artifacts in the weapon storage room earlier, and he could easily scoop up a huge bunch that were all ranked higher than her. Yet, she was the only one that he took. This was simply too abnormal.

The man looked at the divine sword in his hand, and then turned to look in the direction he came from. His brows furrowed as he lightly muttered to himself. "With this, I can definitely..." His words stopped halfway once more. He took in a deep breath, as if he had just made some sort of resolution.

Before Zhu Yao could even figure out the situation, he had already impatiently began to chant an incantation and cast an art. He had even used divine energy to scratch his finger, mustering out a drop of blood and had it drip onto Zhu Yao.

This was the mystic imprint for a divine artifact to recognize its owner, and he was even freaking using his own blood to guide the flow of the incantation. When that drop of blood landed on her blade, she suddenly felt as if someone was stuffing her mouth with

a bunch of things, and they even carried the taste of blood. It was especially disgusting, and she spat it out without a moment's hesitation.

The mystic imprint on the man's hand shattered resoundingly as well.

“Eh?” The man was stunned. Looking at the drop of blood that was deflected, his face was filled with doubts. “Before, it could conceal my presence, so it should be an ownerless artifact. Why would my mystic imprint be rejected then?”

He investigated front and back, but did not notice anything strange. His brows furrowed even further, and something seemed to have flashed across his eyes. He had no choice but to give up for now. He pulled out a storage pouch from his side and opened it.

The hell, this idiot can't possibly be thinking of putting me in the storage pouch, right?

As expected, in an instant, the man stuffed her into that pitch-black pouch.

Yamete, return me my fresh air!

She simply felt her vision darkening, and in an instant, the senses of her entire body disappeared. Her consciousness began to swim in the next instant, and she suddenly felt an incredible headache. She instinctively raised her hand to knock at her head, and only then did the pain disappear.

This was really strange. She was a sword, so why would her head ache?

Wait a minute!

She just raised her hand!

Zhu Yao forcefully opened her eyes, and what entered her vision was not darkness but a familiar cottage. She was currently lying on the bed, and the blanket was neatly covered over her. Next to the

pillow was a spherical bead that was presently emitting out a gentle silver glow, making her feel extremely comfortable.

Did she... return?

Zhu Yao hurriedly sat up and looked around. As expected, it was her master's cottage. Where was her master?

Suddenly, thunders rang through the clouds, frightening her. Where did the thunders come from? Logically speaking, though there were lightning formations all around Lightning Divine Palace, there was an isolation formation within, so sound shouldn't be able to seep through.

She deftly crawled down the bed. When she opened the door, all she saw was a sky filled with tribulation lightning bolts. White and red bolts mixed and flashed. Other than the several dozen meters of area surrounding the straw cottage, the place was filled with lightning flashes and roaring thunder. The flowers and trees were burnt and destroyed, and charred smell filled the air.

In the sky, two figures, white and red, were moving at speeds that could not be seen with the naked eye, and they were rather focused in their fight.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. Why were the two of them fighting again? Putting aside how they would occasionally fight outside the palace and harass the indigenous people in the past, why were they now fighting in their own home?

"Master..." She could not help but call out.

The tribulation lightning bolts in the sky suddenly stopped, and all of the lightning sparks instantly extinguished. In the next instant, Yu Yan, dressed in red robes, appeared first before her.

"Yo, little little grand disciple, you're finally awake." If you had stayed unconscious any longer, I would have died an innocent death. "Come, let your great great grandmaster have a look."

Just as he was about to step forward, a white figure descended



from the skies and kicked him away. He hugged onto Zhu Yao extremely quickly and she fell back a few steps.

Yu Yan held onto Zhu Yao with one hand, and a sword emitting out lightning sparks in the other. It felt as if his body was enveloped by a block of ice that had lasted for over a thousand years, infecting the surrounding air with an icy chill.

“Little Yanyan, you were basically bullying your ancestor. At the very least, I am still your master’s master’s master, you know.” Yu Jin barely avoided his kick, as he kept his slovenly attitude. “Though our cultivation level is the same, you actually used your life artifact to attack me. Now that, is something that you shouldn’t have done.”

Yu Yan simply ignored his complaints, as he checked the disciple in his embrace over and over again. “Do you feel any discomfort?”

“No... nothing.” Zhu Yao shook her head. She glanced at the two people back and forth. Just what happened to these two?

“Haah, I already told you I was innocent. The disappearance of little little grand disciple’s soul was really unrelated to me, yet you still didn’t believe me.” Yu Jin shook his head as he looked at the surroundings with a pained look. In an instant, he restored his role as the Floor Master and denounced Yu Yan’s behaviour. “See for yourself... Just how much of the millions of years of foundation of Lightning Divine Palace have you destroyed?”

He sounded as though he played no part in its destruction.

“Floor Master...” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “Before saying that, can you retract that expression that looked as though you’re enjoying this moment?” Can you not bully my master for not being talkative!?

Yu Jin’s face stiffened. Should someone even strip an elder’s dignity like that? “Little little grand disciple, let’s have a chat!”

“Sure, but before that... Can you please wear something to cover

your lower half?” She wanted to mention it for a long while. What was with wearing a robe that had its lower half burnt away? Did he want to see his leg hair sway with the wind?

Only then did Yu Yan realize that the bottom half of the other party’s robe had been burnt off, revealing a pair of snow-white hairy legs. He quietly turned his disciple’s head away. Mn, his disciple was his. He definitely wouldn’t lend her away to another master to look at his leg hair.

“...” Yu Jin’s heart stopped. A buff named “Dignity of the Floor Master” instantly dispersed as he received a 1000 reflective damage.

Yu Yan had already kept his weapon and pulled up his disciple’s hand to check her meridians a few times. As he probed, he asked. “What happened? Were did you go?”

Zhu Yao had no choice but to thoroughly explain how she turned into a sword earlier. The longer she explained, the deeper his frown became. Even the Floor Master Yu Jin who had a slovenly attitude just earlier, had a heavy look on his face.

“This situation...” Yu Jin pondered for a moment, and then solemnly said. “Doesn’t seem to be due to the instability of the soul.”

Yu Yan’s expression turned heavy. Carrying his disciple, he headed into the straw cottage. “Return to the cottage first!”

He carefully checked Zhu Yao, from outside her body to inside it, yet he still could not find any anomaly. Yu Yan’s frown grew deeper.

“Most likely, it’s because she doesn’t possess any cultivation.” Yu Jin guessed. “Without the slightest bit of cultivation, if her soul is unstable, then there’s no divine energy suppression present, which thus makes her soul easy to drift away. But...” He glanced at Zhu Yao and solmenly said. “There are many cases where the souls of

humans will possess another human body. Cases where one would possess a sword, as mentioned by little little grand disciple, is however rarely heard of.”

“Then what should I do?” She wouldn’t be swapping back and forth often, right?

“Stabilize your soul.” Yu Yan picked up the Soul Attracting Pearl and placed it on her hand. “Remember that this object must not leave your body.”

Zhu Yao nodded. She did not want to become that idiot’s sword again.

“By my estimates, the Soul Attracting Pearl isn’t enough by itself!” Yu Jin waved his hand at her with a kind look. Little little grand disciple, come over here.”

“What?”

“What’s with that expression? Do you think this Floor Master will harm you?”

“That’s right!”

“...” His heart felt stuffy.

Yu Jin flipped his hand and then pulled out a pile of items from his storage ring. “When it comes to divine treasures that can maintain souls, I have a lot of them. Come come, hurry and pick one.”

“What’s the condition?”

“Aiyaaa, how can you see me as such a person? As long as you...”

“I won’t take over the role of Floor Master!” Zhu Yao immediately interrupted him.

“...”

“My master won’t take it either.”

“...” Yu Jin took suffered two gunshots in consecutive succession.

As expected, this pair of master and disciple was too hateful. “Fine, fine. I will just give it to you for free this time, with no strings attached, alright!? Come and pick one.” He kind of felt that he was making a loss here.

Only then did Zhu Yao put down the Soul Attracting Pearl in her hand and doubtfully walk over.

“Little little grand disciple, you see how good I am to you?” Yu Jin did not forget his insistence to brainwash her. “How can you find such a good Deity like me anywhere else? How would I possibly harm...”

Before he could even finish, just as Zhu Yao wanted to reach out for the divine artifact on the table, her vision darkened. A familiar headache assaulted her as she immediately fell down.

Yu Jin who was caught in the act: “...”

He quietly raised his head and looked towards a certain someone who was already beginning to overflow with lightning sparks. “If I were to tell you I’m not related to what just happened, would you believe me?”

In an instant, thunders from tribulation lightning bolts once again rang out in the broad skies.

Ouch, the other side of my bottom half...

---

In just a blink of an eye, a white light flashed and the scenery in front of her instantly changed. She once again could not move her body.

The hell! Why did she turn into a sword again!?

Zhu Yao looked at the idiot male near her, and she suddenly felt like cussing out now. Presently, he was currently holding onto her, with the blade flat in front of chest, forming a preparatory posture for offense.

The hell happened?

Zhu Yao turned to look at the other side of the idiot. That's right, as a sword that looked the same from the top and bottom, the only benefit she had was her three hundred and sixty degrees vision with no blind spots. After looking from the top, she could look from the bottom, and vice versa.

Standing in front of him was two men and one woman, and after a closer look, they were even familiar faces. They were the three people that were chasing after the idiot.

“And here I wondered what it was?” The woman among the three coldly laughed, a hint of disdain flashed across her eyes. “So it's just a second rank divine artifact. Only someone like you who barely passes as an Earth Deity would treat it as treasure.”

Idiot didn't reply, and simply gripped on the sword in his hand even tighter.

“Junior-martial sister, stop talking crap with him already.” The man on the female Deity's left took a step forward, and he said with a furious tone. “Miao Bo, if you understand your position, then hurry and hand over the Meal Devouring Herb that you stole from us back then. We will then consider if we should spare you.”

Idiot Miao Bo glanced at the three people and his eyes sank. “I have long used the Meal Devouring Herb, where am I going to find another one!?”

“You!” The female Deity was instantly enraged, her teeth noisily gritting. “You're courting death!”

Following after, she summoned a rain of countless swords and attacked Miao Bo. The other two male Deities threw out fire-type and ice-type divine arts as well.

Miao Bo dodged and deployed barriers to defend himself with all his might in the beginning, but how could he possibly match three of them? In an instant, he was injured by them, and wounds

appeared all around his body. The female Deity took this opportunity to summon her divine sword and slash down at him. Miao Bo simply did not have time to react at all.

Zhu Yao simply saw a pillar of blood spewing out in front of her. One of Miao Bo's arms fell off and half of his body was stained in blood. This was basically an instant kill.

Miao Bo dragged his dilapidated body and immediately flew several meters back, his face was already miserably pale.

"Hmph, you overestimated yourself!" The female Deity's face turned cold as she walked towards him. "Today, I shall let you know the type of people you shouldn't offend."

Miao Bo had a pained look, and just as he was about to flee, two thorny vines suddenly broke out of the earth, restraining his two legs. Blood flowed incessantly from his legs, and he could no longer move an inch. Miao Bo was close to kneeling down onto the ground, yet he still forced himself to stand straight.

He held onto the sword in his hand tightly. Gritting his teeth, he circulated the divine energy from his entire body and poured them all into the divine sword in his hand. He was planning to unleash a final attack containing all his might.

Zhu Yao simply felt a large amount of divine energy pouring into her body. It carried a berserk and frantic aura, and she instinctively wanted to expel the excessive divine energy, releasing out ten bolts and nine circulations of tribulation lightning on reflex.

In an instant, lightning sparks appeared from the entire blade, accompanied by several roars of thunder. Ten bolts and nine circulations of tribulation lightning struck towards the Gold Deity at the front, and before she could even react, her chest was torn through with a large hole. She instantly fell onto the ground, blood flowing incessantly.

“Junior-martial sister!” The other two male Deities were shocked. They immediately went forward to hold the female Deity up and hurriedly sealed the several meridians and protect the Nascent Spirit in her body. They then looked towards Miao Bo. Compared to their earlier haughtiness, the looks on their faces were now replaced with fright.

“Lightning-type divine arts!” The two men exchanged glances, their eyes were filled with fear. “We never expect that you would actually be related to the Lightning Divine Palace. You best be thankful that luck is on your side today.” As one of them said that, the two hurriedly flew off with the unconscious female Deity, not daring to stay for a moment longer. How could they possibly offend the Lightning Divine Palace?

When the three of them left, Miao Bo could not hold on any longer, immediately blacking out and falling onto the ground.

“Hey, idiot, are you alright?” Even if you want to faint, don’t press me against a pool of blood! It’s really disgusting, alright? People will misunderstand that I have just experienced the most brutal auntie in history, ok? Zhu Yao called out twice, yet he didn’t react at all. Only then did she recall that no other human could hear her words. She sure had a bad life!

Zhu Yao however was not worried about the idiot’s injuries. After all, they were not familiar, and not to mention he was still an Earth Deity. With the quality of a divine body, he wouldn’t just die because of a loss of an arm. The reason why he had fallen was because of exhaustion from pouring out all of his divine energy into her body. In just a few hours, it was guaranteed that he would be alive and jumping.

Recalling the situation from before, Zhu Yao was a little confused now. Logically speaking, she was just a divine artifact, and strictly, she would simply be a tool. Even if the idiot were to pour all of his divine energy into her body, in usual situations, he should have been the one guiding the divine energy to unleash an attack. In the

end, weapons had to be wielded by people to be usable. However, the nine circulations of tribulation lightning earlier were clearly unleashed by her. The idiot was not involved in the entire process. This was akin to the weapon charging out to slash at someone before the user even moved.

This was not logical at all.



# Chapter 346: I Dare You to Try Being Impudent

---

The idiot Miao Bo was unconscious for a full hour, and Zhu Yao bathed in blood for a full hour as well. Just as the fresh blood was about to coagulate, he slowly regained consciousness. He struggled to crawl up, gritted his teeth and sealed several meridians on his body. Then, he sat in a lotus position and began meditating.

The hell, at the very least, pick me up! What's with plastering my face with blood?

Miao Bo meditated for half a day before finally opening his eyes. After recovering a little divine energy, he looked around, stood up, and left.

It can't be? You're throwing me away because I'm dirty now?

Miao Bo walked about two steps and stopped, as if he had recalled something. Then he turned around and picked Zhu Yao up.

Phew, at least this brat has a conscience.

Though his legs were still a little wobbly, he walked quickly and stopped right where his severed arm was. He placed Zhu Yao at the side and then sat down again. This time, he did not meditate for too long. After recovering a slight amount of divine energy, he cast an art that connected his severed arm back to his body.

This was the first time Zhu Yao saw an art that reattached limbs. Though she knew the art herself, she had never used it before. After all, she did not have a hobby of severing her own limbs.

The part where his arm was sliced shone, and then, he pressed his arm into the joint. The sliced area began to heal on its own, and in just a few moments, the joints were connected. Not even a single scar could be seen. Zhu Yao could not help but applaud the medical techniques of the Divine Realm. They were more technologically advanced than any modern medical techniques, and they were

available to all citizens as well.

Miao Bo tried moving his reconnected arm, and it moved no different from before. He turned to look at Zhu Yao on the ground, cast an art to clear off the bloodstains on her body, and then sized up the blade for a moment. With a smile on his face, he said. “Fortunately, I had you.”

Mn, I feel the same way too!

“I must hurry now.” His expression sank. Taking a deep breath, he ignored the injuries on his body, forced himself up and summoned his flying sword.

Is he about to head on a long journey? Zhu Yao glanced at the storage pouch by his side. She recalled that before she returned to Lightning Divine Hall, she was placed in the storage pouch. Most likely, if she was placed back in, she could return once more. She instantly felt a little excited. Hurry and put me in, hurry and put me in.

However... He did not do it.

She wondered just what was Miao Bo thinking this time around, as he simply carried Zhu Yao along as he flew. He did not have any intentions of storing her at all.

The hell!

Though his wounds were healed, his divine energy were still not completely restored, so he was flying very slowly this time around. However, he did not have any intention to stop at all, as though he was rushing to a very important location. Feeling bored, Zhu Yao looked around, only to realize a familiar forest was right below her.

Wasn't this the Severed Forest from before? Why did he return here?

Miao Bo flew into the depths of the Severed Forest. Four hours later, he then stopped above a cave. He placed a concealment

talisman on himself before descending into it.

Only then did Zhu Yao have a clearer look. It was a humongous cave entrance reaching dozens of meters high. Though it was extremely broad, it was pitch-black inside, and there were faint traces of a revolving formation. Sharp stalagmites were hanging in the ceiling of the cave entrance.

Rather than a cave, it was more like a gigantic mouth.

“Who is it?” Suddenly, a loud roar resounded, and the cave entrance slowly closed. Two eyes with the size of wells appeared right above where the cave entrance initially was.

The hell, it really was a mouth!

The two eyes above the cave emitted out two red light rays, scanning the front of the cave like X-rays.

Zhu Yao simply felt Miao Bo tightening his grip on her hilt for a moment. He was even dripping with cold sweat as he stood there unmoving.

The red light swept through their bodies and then retracted, as though no anomaly was discovered. Immediately after, the pair of eyes closed and its mouth began to widen once more, restoring its former cave look. This x-ray vision technology can't make it at all. It's clearly not as good as infrared sensors.

Miao Bo felt his entire body turn loose, and only then did he carefully moved into the cave with his hand tightly holding onto Zhu Yao. He walked extremely lightly, without making use of a single divine art, as he moved into the cave.

The insides of the cave were not as dark as Zhu Yao thought it would be. Instead, red and white glows of formations were everywhere. Various types of formations filled the cave. Zhu Yao took a closer look, and discovered that there were several offensive formations among them, encompassing various types. Tripping one of them would ignite all the others.

Miao Bo cautiously scanned his surroundings and did not activate a single formation. He seemed to be looking around for something in particular. Suddenly, joy filled his face as he walked towards a small inconspicuous formation at the right corner.

It seemed to be a teleportation formation, though it seemed to be mixed with some sort of spatial arts. Miao Bo walked directly into that formation, yet did not activate it straight away. Instead, he observed his surroundings for a moment first. Then, he heaved a deep sigh of relief, before circulating all of the remaining divine energy in his body, activating the formation in an instant.

A bright red light flashed. Everything within the cave suddenly underwent a change. What seemed to be stiff and hard rocks earlier, suddenly turned into fibres of muscles. The cave shone bright, as the surrounding stone walls turned into walls of meat. Traces of dripping liquid could be seen as well, as the ground turned into a large and soft meat which began to move a little.

This was actually really the mouth of a beast!

This idiot came here to serve himself as food?

“Who!?” A furious roar resounded all around.

Miao Bo directly inserted his last strand of divine energy, and the formation activated at the same time as well. The scenery in front of them changed, and they arrived at a room lighted up by candles. Miao Bo’s legs gave way, as he fell and sat on the ground. His head was drenched in cold sweat and his face was miserably pale. His expression was filled with fear.

He panted for a long while before finally regaining his senses. He looked around, and then, he suddenly laughed. His laughter grew louder, and his expression was slowly replaced with excitement and joy.

“Finally... I’ve finally entered!” He spread out his four limbs as he laid on the golden floor tiles. After a long while, he managed to

suppress the madness in him, stand up, and walk towards the front.

Only then did Zhu Yao finally regain her senses. She finally understood why this person wanted to hold onto her all this while. He must have known that there was something he wanted here right from the start, but the entrance just had to be that rock-like monster's mouth. Coincidentally, she seemed to have a concealment ability, and he was then able to infiltrate in while using her to conceal his presence.

So the idiot isn't stupid at all. This plan of his sure is well thought out.

Miao Bo rested for a while, before he began to search the place. He seemed to be aware that this place did not pose much danger to him. He did not conceal himself at all as he moved forward. The place was huge, and though the place was really extravagant, it was very empty. He turned to the right in an instant and walked deep in, where he opened an ancient and exquisite door.

The furniture set-up inside was extremely simple, with just a single square-shaped table. A bottle with a green jade bottle within was placed on top of it.

Miao Bo's eyes shone, his face was filled with ecstasy. He hurriedly walked forward and grabbed onto that bottle.

"Divine Will Condensing Dew!" He exclaimed out, his hand held tightly onto the bottle.

The hell is a Divine Will Condensing Dew? I've never heard of it!

Miao Bo had already lost all patience as he pulled out the bottle cap and gulped down the content. He then immediately sat on the ground in a lotus position, meditating and adjusting himself. The divine energy around his body began to condense, while at the same time, a few impurities were expelled out.

It was actually a medicine for purifying the body and condense

one's divine will. Zhu Yao finally understood. In the beginning, she was wondering just why was Miao Bo's divine energy so scattered despite being a Earth Deity. He did not seem to have experienced the refinement of the lightning tribulations, and was incredibly weak.

There was only one possibility under such circumstances, and that was... he snuck up here! He did not experience the refinement of the lightning tribulations. This could explain why he had such a low standing here. Furthermore, to regular Deities, they would have no use for this "Divine Will Condensing Dew", yet he desired it so much. Most likely, he simply wanted to use it to expel out the impurities within his body, and become a true Deity!

Wait a minute!

Expel impurities...

She recalled the Dirt Removal Art she learnt in the beginning. It had the same effects as well. And usually, the way to cleanse a body was... take a crap! Miao Bo isn't going to take a crap too, right!? There isn't a toilet here, hey! Is he going to deal with it right here and now?

No! Her entire blade felt uncomfortable all over.

She did not have any interest in spectating others 'picking flowers'! She was just an innocent and naive sword, please let her go.

Gururu...

A soul-consuming background noise rang out.

Here it comes...

Miao Bo's expression changed, as though he had just thought about this serious physiological problem. He held onto his stomach and looked around, his face was filled with anxiety. Realizing that his surroundings were clean and spotless without a single tissue to be found, the background noise from his stomach rang out even

clearer. At that moment, he could no longer care about anything else and charged right out of the room.

Fortunately, he did not pick her up. Zhu Yao heaved out a sigh of relief, when suddenly, the door was slammed open again.

The hell. Warrior, why are you back here?

Miao Bo's face was already green from holding back. As he walked in, with every step he took, a sound, that could only be made when a pungent odor were to leak out of a human body, would ring out. Pupupu. They rang out as clear as ever.

At that moment, Zhu Yao even had the thought of dying. The hell is this idiot trying to do? He can't possibly want to take her along even when he's picking flowers, right? Is there a need for such heavy tastes!?

Miao Bo had a complicated look as he looked around, a mist of shamelessness floated within his eyes. The intervals between each unique background noise grew shorter. He finally gritted his teeth, turned towards a corner of the room, and then... swaaah! He pulled down his pants!

He actually stripped his pants! He actually stripped his pants without a hint of internal struggle to speak of!

Eh! His buttocks are rather white... Ah pui! The main point was, he actually chose to deal with it in this room for real!

Uncle Policeman! There's a ruffian here!

An intensely venomous chemical gas instantly filled the room. Zhu Yao held her breath with all her might. She was wrong, she shouldn't have left that weapon storage room right from the start. She shouldn't have helped him defeat those three Gold Deities. Otherwise, she wouldn't need to encounter such a dangerous biochemical weapon.

Zhu Yao risked her life to hold her breath, and her heart began to turn a little stuffy. Finally, her vision darkened. She pushed herself

too hard...

---

When she once again opened her eyes, Zhu Yao saw Yu Jin's irritating face. She instinctively blurted out, "Buttocks!"

Yu Jin who was still carrying a smile on his face earlier, instantly darkened.

"What did you say?" He instantly flared up. "You actually said this face with world-class beauty looks like a pair of buttocks? Which part of it looks like a butt to you?"

Uh... She didn't say his face look like one though?

Zhu Yao pushed his face away and sat up. She looked around, realizing that she had once again returned to the straw cottage at Lightning Divine Hall. "Where's my master?"

Yu Jin summoned a water mirror and seriously checked his face. Mn, it's still beautiful! Only then did he feel relieved and reply her. "Little Yanyan went to look for you."

"Look for me?" Zhu Yao was stunned.

"Mn. Didn't you say you turned into a sword previously? He went to look for the object that you possessed." Yu Jin nodded. He sized her up for a moment, and then a hint of doubt surfaced. "I say, little little grand disciple! Is there something special with your soul? Why are all of the soul suppressing objects and techniques ineffective on you?"

"Special?" Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. "It's especially weak, does that count?" She gets disconnected like how often backend servers do.

"....."

"..."

"When is master going to come back?"



“When he finds the sword that you’re possessing, he will naturally return.” Yu Jin reached out his hand, wanting to stroke her head. However, his hand was slapped away by Zhu Yao in disgust, and he sighed. “Oh right, how did you return this time?”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. She didn’t want to talk about it!

“Let’s not bring up the past.”

“Uh...” What did she mean? “Oh right, before Little Yanyan left, he left behind a voice transmission talisman. If you have urgent matters, you can try sending him a message with the talisman.” He passed her a golden talisman paper.

Zhu Yao joyfully received it. Just as she was about to insert spiritual energy, she suddenly recalled this body of hers had zero levels, and she immediately returned it. “Activate it.”

“...” Why do I feel as though I have turned into this master’s and disciple’s follower!? I’m clearly the senior here!

“Hurry, hurry, hurry!” Zhu Yao nudged him in disgust.

Only then did Yu Jin reached out and tap it. The voice transmission talisman released out a white glow.

“Master.” She immediately called out.

Yu Yan’s voice instantly rang out. “Yu... Yao. You’ve returned?”

“Mn.” She nodded. She suddenly recalled that this was a phone call and he could not see her at all, so she continued. “I just woke up. Master, where are you?”

“Thistower Mountain.”

---

Thistower Mountain Sect Master Feng Jin deeply felt that this was the definitely the most exciting day he had since he started cultivation a few tens of thousands of years ago. A hundred years ago, he felt that his cultivation had crossed the bottleneck and had

signs of making a breakthrough. He finally chose this very day to make a breakthrough into a Heavy Deity, and had resisted all eighty-one tribulation lightning bolts. The moment he officially rose into a Heavy Deity, he felt his divine energy had all turned golden and sparkly.

He decided right at that moment that he would host a celebratory event of some sort, and invite those old farts from all four great continents, so that he could gloat in front of them for once. However, the moment he crawled out from the lightning tribulations, before he could even express that joy of his, a white-robed man, who was releasing a chilling aura that enveloped the entire three hundred and sixty degrees of his surroundings, appeared next to him.

“Thisthower Mountain Sect Master?”

When that person spoke, it was as if his voice could form ice. It was so cold, Feng Jin could not help but shiver for a moment.

Who is this? How dare he talk to me in such a manner? He instantly grew a little furious. As a Sect Master who was a rather renowned expert in the Southern Continent, how could he possibly endure being belittled like this?

“How dare you! Who are you?”

However, that white-robed man did not even look at him, and simply selfishly said. “I want to investigate all of the divine artifact storage rooms of Thisthower Mountain.”

Divine artifact storage rooms? Is this person here to seize the divine artifacts of Thisthower Mountain? And his first request is even all of the divine artifact storage rooms.

Feng Jin immediately refuted. “Impudent!”

Then... That person really showed him what impudence really was.

# Chapter 347: Heaven or Hell, Look for My Disciple I Shall

---

Lightning bolts that were even more terrifying than the Heavy Deity tribulation lightning bolts that Feng Jin just faced came striking down. The sky was filled with oppressive might that could almost stop one's breath. Feng Jin could not even have a good look before he was struck back down to the surface, sinking deep into the earth's crust, along with that once proud heart of his.

The terrifying lightning bolts did not all land on his body. Most of them flew towards Thisthower Mountain. The Thisthower Mountain that was claimed to be the backbone of the Divine Realm, instantly shattered with a bang.

Shattered... Shattered...

Thisthower Mountain, the number one divine mountain in Divine Realm, actually shattered just like that.

No, no, no. This can't be real. There must be something wrong with the way I opened my eyes.

Feng Jin turned into a Spartan. Wasn't he just here to ask for directions? Was there a need to be this ferocious? Trembling, he reached a hand out of the crater, and pointed in a direction. In a flash, that white figure disappeared without a trace. Only then did three words flash across the depths of Feng Jin's mind. Lightning Divine Palace.

Why would a High Deity of Lightning Divine Palace make an appearance here? What happened to the promise that the members of Lightning Divine Palace did not show themselves outside easily?

Feng Jin spent tons of effort before he was able to pull himself out of the crater.

He suddenly felt that it was great to be alive...

Turning his head, he looked in the direction of Thisthower Mountain. He suddenly recalled the sheer number of divine artifact storage rooms in Thisthower Mountain. Not to mention every single one of them was assigned a guard. There would definitely be some who would be blind and attempt to stop him...

His Thisthower Mountain's millions of years of foundation!

“High Deity, wait! Do you need a guide...”

Promise me, leave me half of the mountain, please?

---

This time, as expected, Zhu Yao did not stay for too long. In a blink of an eye, she once again returned to that stupid-looking sword. As a worthy cause for celebration, she was no longer in the room filled with “venomous gas” from before. Miao Bo was currently strolling all over the place with her in hand. The divine energy in his body was much richer than before. It seemed that his cultivation of an Earth Deity was already stable. He successfully removed that ‘stowaway’ brand of his, and officially became a legal citizen of the Divine Realm.

Miao Bo was evidently really happy, as he leisurely strolled this strange place. Smiles were plastered all over his face the entire time. Zhu Yao wondered if it was because his cultivation had risen, or because he was feeling refreshed after all of the poison were expelled. In any case, compared to seeking the “Divine Will Condensing Dew” being his one and only goal earlier, he was simply having a blind stroll right now.

He turned into a long hallway, the two sides were filled with one room after another, and every single one of the doors had a different colour from the rest. Deep and profound formations were even placed above the doors, and behind them, rich divine energy could be felt leaking out. Furthermore, the deeper he went, the richer the divine energy.

Miao Bo stopped at the first doorstep, and looked at the formation above the door carefully. Looking at his frown, he did not seem to be familiar with its activation method at all. He looked around, and he suddenly spotted a concave bottle-shaped slot on the side of the door, above where the candle holder was.

Why did Zhu Yao feel like it was a mechanism?

Naturally, Miao Bo thought that way as well. After pondering deeply for a moment, his eyes brightened. He pulled out the jade bottle, the one where the “Divine Will Condensing Dew” was stored in earlier, and placed that bottle into the slot. It was a perfect fit.

The moment he released his hand, the formation on the door instantly disappeared, and the door opened with a creak. The place inside was once again an extremely simplistic room, with the exact same square-shaped stone table placed at the very center. A jade bottle was placed on top of the table. Though there was an additional bed on the right side of the room, and it made the room look like a cave residence for closed-door training.

Miao Bo entered. Just as he picked up the bottle, the door closed with a bang. Miao Bo grew worried, yet no matter what he did, he could not open the door. He had even used arts of various types, yet the door did not budge in the least.

He frowned. He could not help but look at the bottle in his right hand. When he pulled out the cap, a rich divine aura came assaulting him. Miao Bo instantly grew excited. When he poured the bottle down, a Melissin... Ah pui! A divine pellet laid on his palm.

Miao Bo became a little hesitant. The divine pellet did not look simple at first glance, but because he had never seen it before, he did not dare to try it out so easily. After hesitating for quite a while, he finally gritted his teeth, sat down on the stone bed, and ate the pellet.

Zhu Yao seemed to have witnessed the divine energy in his body expanding rapidly in an instant, as though there was an incredible force leaking out endlessly from within his body. The force drilled into his meridians, causing his expression to be filled with pain and sweat dripping down. His face grew even more distorted with pain, and when his meridians started spitting, blood began to flow out. In a few moments, the clothes on his body were dyed with fresh red blood. His loss of blood looked like it was caused by his aunt. It seemed like that pellet was a divine pellet that accelerated one's cultivation. It carried a rich amount of divine energy, but unfortunately, it seemed to have a rather high dissolving rate, and Miao Bo clearly could not suppress it. He was about to explode.

As a sword with no movement capabilities, Zhu Yao suddenly had a bad feeling.

As expected, Miao Bo could not even maintain the art he was using while meditating, and puked out a large mouthful of blood. His hand unconsciously fell onto the ground next to him as support, and he directly pressed onto Zhu Yao's blade. In the next instant, boundless divine energy came charging into her.

The hell! Your grandfather!

Zhu Yao felt uncomfortable all over.

The sudden excess of divine energy was like a dam opening up to release flood water, gushing into her body. She could faintly hear her blade cracking, yet the divine energy continued to pour endlessly.

She really wanted to shoot out lightning bolts to release the divine energy, but because this room was enclosed, she might destroy the infrastructure and bury themselves alive if she did. No, I can't release them.

She suddenly recalled her method of refining artifacts, where spiritual energy was needed to be inserted. When she thought about it, divine energy was rather similar as well.

Right now, she could only try it out. She immediately guided the divine energy, arranging and making them flow steadily into the blade, using the artifact refining method.

Strangely, the moment she made the attempt to guide, the chaotic divine energy earlier suddenly quietened down, as they orderly entered the blade.

“Eh?” Miao Bo was stunned, as though he had just realized that it could absorb his excess divine energy. With a glowing face, he finally sat down properly and placed the sword on his lap. Taking up a good posture, he then continued to raise his cultivation.

After a long while, when Miao Bo finally no longer had any excess divine energy in his body, he and his sword finally stopped the absorption of divine energy. Miao Bo’s cultivation instantly rose that of a Profound Deity, while Zhu Yao who was once a second rank sword... was still a second rank sword. Just that the XX marks on the blade had suddenly turned into YYYY.

Uh... What did this mean?

Creaak. The door that Miao Bo could not push open earlier even with all his strength, actually opened on its own.

Yo. This secret room actually has a time limit? A renewal fee needs to be paid to open the door again, is that it?

Miao Bo did not continue staying either. He cast a Dirt Removal Art on himself and then got out of the room with Zhu Yao. Just when he returned to the hallway, the door of the neighbouring room opened automatically with a creak.

The room inside was exactly the same as the previous one. A bottle was placed on the stone table, and there was nothing else except for a stone bed.

Zhu Yao suddenly thought of a phrase – “Training Rooms”. These rows of rooms here can’t possibly have a rule like that, right? A bottle of pellets on the table, and then, you will rank up based on

your level. After ranking up, you can then enter the next training room.

Miao Bo evidently thought of this point as well, and this time, he walked in without a shred of hesitation. He picked up the bottle on the table, poured the pellet onto his palm and ate it. Then he turned around and sat on the stone bed, beginning to meditate. His divine energy once again expanded rapidly...

Zhu Yao was once again treated as a buffer.

Your grandfather!

-flips table-Why do I have to witness the entire history of someone raising his level?

Unsurprisingly, every single one of the rooms here was the same, just that the divine pellet placed on each table held even richer divine energy with each subsequent room. The amount of divine energy Miao Bo absorbed grew, and it was as if his cultivation was riding on a rocket. His cultivation surged from a mere early-stage Profound Deity to a late-stage Profound Deity, to a Gold Deity, to a middle-stage Gold Deity, late-stage, Paragon... While the marks on Zhu Yao's blade changed with each room as well. From XXYY, to SSOO, and then to CCDD. It was as if all the letters in the alphabet were about to be used up, when finally they stopped at BBBB.

Zhu Yao: "..."

Miao Bo finally reached the final room, and the divine energy in that divine pellet was even denser than the one right before. Zhu Yao clearly could sense him breaking through something with all his might, as the colour of his face swapped between green and purple. The marks on Zhu Yao's blade as well, would occasionally turn into SSS and then back to BBB.

When the rich divine energy finally began to shrink and condense, Miao Bo's aura changed. His breakthrough into a Heavy Deity was successful!



He's a winner of life! He reached the summit so quickly.

Zhu Yao sighed in awe, with the letters SB carved on her blade.

Miao Bo was really excited as well, laughing out loud. In an instant, the entire space resounded with an audacious laughter. "Heavy Deity... I actually cultivated into a Heavy Deity!" He took a deep breath, as though he was suppressing the excitement in his heart. Suddenly, his eyes sank, as if he had just recalled something. He coldly said. "Fan Jian, it's time you pay the debts that you owe me."

Fan Jian? Who? He actually has such a refreshing name. (Bitchy)

His expression turned cold, and in an instant, even his entire being had turned gloomy. "Master, once this disciple returns, I will definitely treat you well."

So this Fan Jian is actually his master! Then isn't it that Pavillion Lord Fan from earlier?

It seemed like his resentment had piled up really heavily!

Miao Bo stood up, picked Zhu Yao up and left, heading in the direction they came from.

He immediately returned to that strange cave where the teleportation formation was. This time, the cave was closed, and what appeared beneath his feet was not hard rocks, but a gigantic tongue. Most likely, after he entered, this cave was closed right away, in order to capture him.

However, Miao Bo was no longer the same as before. He was already a Heavy Deity, and this cave could not stop him at all. With a twist of his hand, he materialized millions of spiritual swords, striking them downwards. With a loud bang, a hole was blasted open, and he immediately flew out.

He turned to look at the large mouth where blood was flowing out endlessly from. With a cold laugh, he swung the sword in his hand.

Zhu Yao simply felt a wave of divine energy entering her, forming a fire type formation. Just as the formation was about to be fire...

He wants to kill that cave guardian beast!

Zhu Yao's heart skipped a beat. The formation that was about to be released earlier was now suppressed by her.

Miao Bo who had now risen to a Heavy Deity, was completely different from the idiotic-looking man from before. It was as if he had suddenly expelled out all of his weakness and self-loathing, turning openly impudent. However, his expression was filled with hostility, his entire being was covered in gloom.

She did not like this Miao Bo a little, and she unconsciously birthed to a hint of rejection towards him.

"Eh?" Miao Bo was stunned for a moment, as though he was really displeased that the sword did not release out the attack according to his wishes. A hint of scorn even surfaced in his eyes. He was no longer the person that treated a second rank divine artifact as treasure.

He glanced at the sword in his hand, and then looked at the severely injured cave guardian beast once more. With a disappointed look, he got onto his flying sword and left.

Zhu Yao looked at the direction they were heading in, and they were moving straight towards Thisthrower Mountain where they departed from. It seemed like he had returned to get his revenge on Fan Jian.

In less than fifteen minutes, he flew out of the forest and arrived above a beach. Miao Bo once again looked at Zhu Yao in his hand. Frowning, he muttered. "As expected, is the rank too low?"

After saying that, he actually flung out his hand without the slightest strand of sentimentality. Zhu Yao drew an arc in the air, before landing in the sea.

Your sister!

---

Miao Bo believed that all his misfortunes were caused by Fan Jian. Back then, he was still a Nascent Soul practitioner in the Lower Realm, a considerably respected individual. Yet, Fan Jian took a fancy to him, and when he ascended, he forcefully absorbed Miao Bo into the Demigod Bead, and brought him along into the Higher Realm.

He unexpectedly achieved a divine body, but because he did not experience the refinement of the lightning tribulations, he could only be barely considered as an Earth Deity, taking in the countless taunts of others. Though Fan Jian had taken him as his disciple, he had never cared about Miao Bo's life and death. He merely wanted someone who would willingly work for him. Furthermore, because of the scattering of divine energy, Miao Bo's cultivation could not rise no matter what. After thousands of years had passed, Fan Jian had already achieved the cultivation of a Gold Deity, yet Miao Bo was still a lowly Earth Deity. Not to mention he had many times dove deep into dangerous grounds to locate various treasures.

He could not accept this! Just why could Fan Jian rise to even higher heights, while he was stuck here as a speck of dust? By chance, he received a secret scroll, and it was detailedly recorded within it that there was a mustard seed dimensional space containing "Divine Will Condensing Dew" inside the mouth of the strange beast. At that moment, he understood that his chance had arrived. Thus, he had countlessly entered the Forest of Separation to search for that place, and unexpectedly, he obtained a divine sword that could conceal presences.

Thus, unnerved, he entered that mustard seed dimensional space. There, he successfully tempered his divine body and became a true Earth Deity. However, the surprise did not end there. He actually discovered divine pellets inside that could raise one's cultivation. They were actually able to raise his cultivation to a

Heavy Deity in an instant.

What's a Heavy Deity? Even Thisthower Mountain Sect Master, located in one of the four great continents, merely had a single Gold Deity Paragon practitioner. The number of Heavy Deities in the Divine Realm could be counted with fingers alone. No one in Thisthower Mountain could possibly block him.

Thus, he wanted revenge! He wanted blood! He wanted to tear him apart!

The more he thought about how he should settle these evil deeds, the more he felt that Fan Jian would deserve his death, and subsequently, he began to grow excited, becoming overly complacent by the minute. It was as if he could see that terrified face that Fan Jian would have the moment he realized that Miao Bo was already a Heavy Deity. He definitely had to settle these debts.

The corners of Miao Bo's smile curved upwards into a complacent smile, while his heart was filled with hatred towards Fan Jian. However, he was not aware that with his aptitude in the Lower Realm, there was no guarantee that he could ascend.

Ha accelerated his flying sword. The route that he initially took a day and a night to travel, could now be cleared with just a few flashes. He had returned to Thisthower Mountain. With a heart enveloped with vengeance, he simply did not notice Thisthower Mountain's anomaly. With the might of a Heavy Deity in full force, he flew straight towards Fan Jian.

As he had wished, he was able to see that person's shocked expression. Walking a step at a time, it was as if he was a life-taking Death God, someone that could take away the life of an ant on a whim.

Just when he was just a few meters away, a white light suddenly flashed in front of him. He suddenly felt his side turn chilly, as an ice-cold voice resounded.

“Where’s my disciple?”

# Chapter 348: The Hell is a Female Sword?

---

Disciple? What disciple?

Miao Bo frowned. He was extremely furious at this reckless chap who suddenly appeared. His mind was filled with revenge, and when his enemy was just right in sight, he was stopped by someone unrelated to this entire situation. It was natural for him to be enraged.

“What does your disciple have to do with me!? Scram!” He charged out. “Those who stop me, shall die!” Without even thinking, he flung out a mystic art. He was a Heavy Deity, and yet there was actually someone who was blind enough to dare stop him. He needed to let this chap know his place.

In the next instant, he truly understood his place.

Before Miao Bo could even react, he was bombarded silly by the tribulation lightning bolts that rained down from the sky. Like fried fish, he was zapped at the front and the back, three hundred sixty degrees with no dead angle to escape to. His entire body was completely numbed. When he regained his senses, he, a Heavy Deity, was zapped back to his original form – an Earth Deity. Like a pile of carbon lying on the ground, he no longer had the strength move.

However, he wasn't the saddest person here.

“High Deity...” Thisthrower Mountain Sect Master Feng Jin hugged onto Yu Yan's leg with tears and snot coming out from his nose. “What happened to the half of the mountain that you promised not to touch?”

Only then did Yu Yan stop the tribulation lightning bolts that filled the sky. With the same icy tone, he asked. “Where's my disciple?”

---

The moment she was flung out, Zhu Yao finally understood what the idiom “tearing the bridge apart after crossing it” meant. When Miao Bo was still an idiot back then, he would still bring her to look at the stars and moon, and even call her little sweetie. Now that he had become successful and rich, he actually threw her away without a shred of hesitation. Thinking about this, Zhu Yao’s sword heart received ten thousands damage.

Zhu Yao had already made the preparations to enter the waters. Just as she was falling straight down and nearing the surface of the sea, she heard a dull thud. That’s right, it was not the splash from entering waters, but a thud.

“Aiyo!” Immediately after, a pained cry sounded. “Which bastard threw at me?”

“Eh? It’s a divine sword.” In the next instant, she was grabbed and raised in the air. The person who appeared before her was a blue-robed man wearing a jade crown on his head. His face was presently filled with anger. He looked up into the air and searched around. Then, he immediately cursed out. “Your granddaddy! Which bastard schemed against me and dared to assassinate me with a sword? If you have the guts, come and fight this granddaddy here in a fair match. What kind of a man are you by hiding yourself? Come right out here! Scram out in front of this granddaddy! Don’t you hide and keep your mouth shut. I know you’re there! Come out, come out, come out here!”

“The hell. Are you [Aunt Xue](#)?” His lines were exactly the same.

The man was stunned for a moment, and then he stared at the sword in his hand. “You can talk? There’s actually a divine sword that can talk? It can’t actually be the true form of some sort of spirit, right? Oh right, how did you know I’m Xue Yi?”

“The hell, you’re really called Aunt Xue, hey!?” Zhu Yao and her avatar were utterly stunned. “Wait a minute, you can hear me?”

“This daddy isn’t deaf, so why wouldn’t I be able to hear you?”

Xue Yi glared at her, and then shook her about by the hilt. “Hurry and speak, who’s your owner? Why did he throw you at me? Hurry and call him out. If he has the guts, then come and fight me in a fair match.”

“Uh...” This guy is actually a violent maniac. “It’s not that someone threw at you, rather, I was thrown away by someone. When I fell, I bumped into you.”

“Lies!” Xue Yi instantly flared up. “This daddy has been in closed-door training for several hundred years, and I have never been discovered before. How could there be such a coincidence where you could land on me in a single throw?” He snorted, looking all cool and tyrannical. “Hmph. A second rank divine sword like you actually thinks of tricking me? Furthermore, a barrier has been placed on this sea floor. Your owner must have used some sort of method to throw you down here.”

As he spoke, he walked towards the transparent barrier that separated the seawater and pointed at it. With a proud look, he said. “I personally set this barrier up. Even if a late-stage Heavy Deity might not even break through it, let alone a terrible divine sword like you.” He then swung her towards the barrier, as though he was trying to prove the quality of his formation.

Zhu Yao’s blade slashed towards the front. Then, a crackling sound could be heard. It was the sound of something being slashed apart.

In the next instant, large amount of seawater gushed in as the barrier shattered resoundingly. It quickly flooded the entire isolated area.

A few moments later...

Above the boundless sea, the intense winds swirled into dark clouds, and between the dark clouds and the surface of the sea, Haiyan... ah pui! A human head popped out, with one hand clutching onto a floating log and a second rank divine sword with



the other, his face was filled with shock!

He raised the sword up. A human and a sword silently stared at each other for ten seconds.

Something called 'resentment' began floating in the air.

"Uh..." Zhu Yao gave him a few seconds of silence. "I already told you, I was thrown down here." If you don't listen to the words of a divine sword, you will regret it, young man!

Xue Yi's expression darkened. He gritted his teeth, and then stubbornly replied. "This granddaddy believe you!"

He cast the Light Body Art, and then leapt up from the wooden log. He moved quickly across the water surface, heading towards the northern side.

Wuaah, he's using qinggong to float atop the water! At that moment, she felt that this unfortunate youth was pretty cool.

Xue Li leapt across the sea like a waterfly for half a day before arriving on dry land. The place he stopped at was an island.

"Why don't you fly on a sword?" Zhu Yao asked.

"He turned to glare at her ruthlessly. "Do you think this daddy doesn't want to? This daddy's belongings are all in the water, alright?" It's not like he did not want to fly on a sword, he had no swords to fly on!

"..." That's what you get.

Xue Li rested for a short while, and then looked at Zhu Yao. "Hey, just what in the world are you? Clearly you're a second rank divine sword, yet you're actually able to break my barrier."

"Uh... This is a tricky question." Let her think of something to muddle her way through. "Actually... I'm not a sword."

"Mn?" Xue Yi sized her up for a moment. "You can't possibly be trying to tell me you're a sabre, right?"

You're the sabre, your entire family is made of sabres.

"I mean, I'm not a weapon at first."

"Then what are you?"

Zhu Yao sighed, as she used all of the acting skills that she had learnt throughout her life. "Actually... I'm a princess..." Then she altered the 'princess and the frog' fairytale into a 'prince and the divine sword (PS: a second rank one)' story, and narrated it to him affectionately and enthusiastically. "So... As long as I can find the kiss of true love, I will be able to return."

Xue Li's face was like this: (¬\_¬)

"It's true, young man. You must believe divine arts!" Zhu Yao continued to brainwash him.

The corner of Xue Li's lips twitched, and then asked seriously. "Is there the word 'idiot' written on my face?"

"Uh..." She hated intelligent people the most. When she was in the modern era, not a single one of the little brats on the street wouldn't believe her.

"I think you must have been struck with a soul assimilation art right?" Xue Li analyzed. "And then, you were sealed in this sword?"

"Eh." He sure made a precise guess.

"You want to return to your main body?"

"That's right, that's right, that's right."

"You want me to send you back?"

"That's right, that's right, that's right."

"Not going!"

"Hell." Then why the hell did you lead me on just now!

"Why do I have to send you back? There's no merit for me at all." He stretched his waist and said with a slovenly expression.

“Furthermore, you were the one who destroyed my barrier. I don’t even have a place to stay in now.”

“...” You were clearly the one who slashed at it with your itchy hand.

“There were a good amount of treasures inside, you know? They were all there to prepare myself for the future. Even if you return to your divine body, you wouldn’t be able to pay... Wait a minute!” His words halted there, as though he had just thought of something. He turned to look at Zhu Yao on the ground, and then pointed at her with his trembling hand. “You... Y-Y-You’re a female sword?”

The hell is a female sword? Zhu Yao rolled her eyes and asked back. “You’re a male human?”

Xue Li did not reply, his entire figure was rooted to the ground. His entire body was stiffened tight, and that bronze-coloured face was beginning to be dyed with a strange red, which spread all the way to his ears.

“What happened to your face?” Zhu Yao asked.

However, it was as if he was startled, leaping up all of a sudden. He took a few steps back, and his eyes began to swim around. He glanced to the left and looked to the right, but he did not dare to look at the sword on the ground. “N... N... N-N-N... Nothing.”

“Why are you stammering now?”

He grew even more flustered and decided to turn around with his back facing her. His two hands crossed, and his two thumbs twiddled between each other. Female type. She’s actually the female type that mother spoke of. What should I do? I’m so anxious. This is the first time I’m interacting with their kind this close. Will she love me at first sight? She must definitely like my muscles, right? She definitely will.

“Hey!” When you’re muttering to yourself, don’t let me hear you,

hey! What's a female type? And who the hell likes your muscles?

"I... I... I..." He finally turned around, yet he was still stammering his words. "I will... s-s... send you b... ba... back."

"No thank you!" She had a bad feeling.

"N... N... N-No need to be courteous."

"..." Who wants to be courteous with you?

Heheh. She might like me after we develop our feelings on this journey.

"Who will like you? I have a man already, alright? Also, those inner thoughts of yours, can you please keep them to yourself?"

"W... Where do you want to g... go?"

"Don't act like you didn't hear me, hey! I don't want to go anywhere!"

He however had already walked over to her. He wanted to reach out to hold her, yet he figured that it wouldn't be prudent enough. He tore out half of his long robe, placed her on the fabric, and then carefully tied her up.

"Is... Is... Is it... to the east?" He held up Zhu Yao with a shy face. Then, he once again circulated the Light Body Art, and headed in the eastern direction.

Zhu Yao: "..."

She seemed to have been kidnapped by a single puppy.

---

"Divine sword maiden, there's a divine city over there. Shall we snatch a house and stay there for a while?" Xue Yi said to the sword in his hand fawningly.

"Snatch?" Are you a bandit?

"Don't worry, I came here before." Xue Yi explained with a serious look. "The houses here are really easy to snatch."

“...” What did you do in the past?

As Xue Yi spoke, his figure flashed and arrived at the gate to the divine city. In order to prove his words, he enthusiastically greeted the Deity practitioner protecting the gate. “Yo, long time no see!”

That Deity practitioner’s face instantly paled and he immediately ran into the city, as though he had just seen a ghost. As he ran, he shouted loudly. “Hurry and run! That bastard surnamed Xue is back!”

The city that was still bustling with activities earlier instantly quietened down. In the next moment, every single person did the same thing. They took out their flying swords, rose into the air, and fled wildly in all directions. Not a single one of them turned around to have a glance.

In just a few minutes, not even a single human figure could be seen in the small city.

This escape speed they displayed was even faster than a regular evacuation drill.

Zhu Yao glanced at the person next to her. “Please hold onto your chest and tell me, just what did you do to these people?”

“Nothing much.” Xue Li said innocently. “I’ve only came here thrice. During the first time, I wanted to stay in the city lord’s residence, but he didn’t let me, so I beat him up. The second time, I wanted to try some wine, but that person said to pay him divine stones for it, so I beat him up too. The third time, they didn’t allow me to enter the city, so... I beat up everyone in the city. Just like that. I didn’t really do much either.”

“...” Don’t treat beating people up like eating a meal, hey! If that isn’t much, just what in the world would he do if he put in a little more effort?

“Divine sword maiden, which house do you want to live in? Pick whichever you want!” Xue Li spread out his arms. At that moment,

it felt as though he was possessed by a tyrannical CEO and the entire divine city was his territory.

Is this guy in the mafia? Can I resign please? “Aunt Xue, I’m a divine sword, I don’t need to rest.”

“Ou!” He lowered his head in disappointment. So unfortunate, mother told me that if I give a female type something, she will like me, love me, and desire me!

“... Call your mother out, I want to talk to her about life.” I already told you many times not to speak out your inner thoughts! Don’t think that I can’t hear you without those quotation marks!

“Then, divine sword maiden. Let’s replenish some of our necessities, and then continue on our way.”

“...” Did you activate the ‘Automatically Shield Off Anything That I Don’t Want to Hear’ ability?

Xue Yi walked into a divine artifact store and glanced around. He took away a fifth rank flying sword from the most sealed cabinet that was furthest away from the store entrance. Then, he leisurely returned to the lobby and casually took away all of the fourth rank, third rank, second rank... and first rank divine artifacts.

Before he left, he even took away the storage rings inside the counter’s drawers.

Zhu Yao silently lit a candle for the store owner.

Zhu Yao had thought that he would fly on his sword and leave the city, but he instead made his way into a pharmacy on the left, the talisman store on the right, and the formation store in the opposite street. Finally, he even entered a material store. Like sweeping away the autumn leaves, he swept everything into the storage rings in his hands. Only when he was no longer able to store them in, did he stop with a regretful look.

He stroked the rings in his hand. “Haah, it’s lacking a little.”

“...” Zhu Yao really wanted to cuss out in place of the residents of this divine city: Your sister!

“Divine sword maiden, we can leave now.” Xue Lin found a white divine yarn handle, and hung her on his body. It was not on his back, but right in front of his chest. It looked especially stupid. “Oh right, where do you want to go?”

“East!” Zhu Yao had already given up all form of resistance, after all, he would automatically shield away anything that he didn’t like to hear. She thought that she might as well go along with him until she return to Lightning Divine Palace.

“Alright!” Xue Li summoned the fifth rank flying sword he stole. Just as he was about to leave, a Heavy Deity pressure suddenly assaulted in their direction. Xue Li wasn’t able to stabilize himself, and he ended up kneeling onto the ground.

“Shameless heretic Deity, you actually dare to act so wantonly here.” A mighty voice resounded from above their heads.

Aunt Xue(雪姨): She is a character in Romance of the Rain, a Chinese drama filmed in 2000. The character’s full name is Wang Xueqin, a devious and power hungry woman. The pun here is that the Chinese for aunt(姨), Yi, sounds the same as 夷 in Xue Yi’s name 血夷.

# Chapter 349: Let Me Quietly Get Zapped

---

The person was a middle-aged man wearing a long robe that alternated between white and black colours. With a slender and tall figure, between his sharp brows and starry eyes, an expression filled with rage could be seen. He ruthlessly glared at Xue Yi and the pressure on his body turned heavier. “Today, this throne shall exterminate you, tyrant.”

The moment his words fell, a rain of swords fell on Xue Yi. Just as he was about to be pierced into a bloody hedgehog, Xue Yi gritted his teeth and dodged, retreating a few meters back. He then summoned a weapon and charged at the enemy.

That person was a late-stage Heavy Deity, while Xue Yi was just a Paragon Gold Deity. With the suppression from the level difference, he was already a talented individual seeing how he was able to escape the pressure control so quickly. However, a Heavy Deity’s cultivation level wouldn’t be so simple. Before Xue Yi could even approach him, he was already stopped by the enemy’s formation. Immediately after, a sky full of icicles came flying down. Xue Yi did not dodge, instead, he swung his sword and slashed them down. In an instant, six human-sized icicles were slashed apart, and thereafter, he smashed another one into pieces with his fist. Using the momentum of his body, he charged towards that person.

Wuaah... (◉◉◉)

It was rare to see such a direct charging method. Zhu Yao was a little stunned. Usually, because most people use spiritual energy to cultivate, human practitioners would all be very good long-range fighters. They were of a class with low HP and high MP, and it was very seldom to see them fighting in close-combat. Though everyone’s HP increased after becoming a Deities, their MP bar grew even thicker as well. In the end, they could not get rid of their habits of throwing long-range attacks.



However, Xue Yi directly charged forward, and it was evident that he was more used to throwing fists than slashing swords. He could already be considered as a irregularity among the Deities.

That Heavy Deity instantly materialized two ice dragons and threw them at Xue Yi. Wherever the ice dragons went, layers upon layers of ice would fill the area. Xue Yi's nimble figure immediately leapt over the back of one of the dragon and once again swung his fist at its body. However, he did not expect that not only did he fail to shatter the ice dragon, his hand was instead encapsulated by layers of ice. Furthermore, the ice was spreading towards his body.

His expression changed. Just as he was about to retract his hand, it was already too late. The spreading ice had already linked him to the dragon body, and he was unable to break free. The other ice dragon had already turned around, its mouth wide open and ready to bite him.

Even Zhu Yao was able to sense the bone-piercing chill from that dragon, enough to make a frail second rank divine sword like her feel as though she was about to shatter apart.

Xue Yi did not hesitate to swing the sword in his right hand, instantly chopping away the other arm. He then retreated a few meters back and hurriedly sealed the surrounding acupoints, stopping the flow of blood in his arm.

(◉◉) Why do people like to chop down their own limbs in this day and age?

That Heavy Deity snorted. "Xue Yi, don't you even think about leaving this place alive today. Die!"

The atmosphere around him changed at that moment. A thousand kilometer freeze was released. In an instant, the air was as cold as ice, and large amount of snowflakes floated about. Ice began to grow all around the city, inch by inch. Layers of glaciers encapsulated the entire city. Xue Yi turned around and retreated, yet he was unable to move faster than the freezing ice. Very

quickly, he no longer had any ground to stand on. He had no choice but to fly on his word and charge out of the divine city. However, the encroaching glacier did not stop, and instead grew faster. The snowflakes in the air would turn into ice the moment they land on the ground.

Xue Yi barely maintained his defensive barrier, yet the moment those snowflakes landed, layers of ice began to appear above the barrier. If this were to go on, even if he wasn't sealed in ice, he would be dragged down by the snowflakes.

"Xue Yi, take me out and insert your divine energy into the blade." Zhu Yao could not help but speak out. If this were to go on, not just him, she would be frozen as well.

"No!" Xue Yi strongly shook his head. He had his own principles. "How can I possibly let a female type do the job!? Don't worry, I will protect you. "Heheh, there might be a chance that after she sees my courageous figure, she would immediately revere me, love me, and desire me."

"..." What courageous? What hour do you think it is right now? Can you please stop muttering out your inner thoughts?

The ice on Xue Yi's barrier grew thicker, and then, it could no longer maintain itself and felt apart. Zhu Yao simply felt that his aura had instantly disappeared, and even his body temperature was beginning to disappear. His heartbeats and breaths were gone as well.

The hell, it can't be, right? He died just like that? Zhu Yao's heart sak.

Only then did the snowflakes in the sky stop falling, and that Heavy Deity had already flown over on his sword. Taking a few steps forward, he glanced at Xue Yi who was sealed in ice, and snorted heavily. "You overestimated yourself!" He waved his sleeves, and just as he was about to turn around...

Xue Yi who had lost all signs of life earlier suddenly moved. His broke through the layers of ice with his fist and struck directly onto the Heavy Deity's chest. In an instant, fresh blood sprayed in all directions, his skin was torn and his flesh ruptured. If he hadn't retreated quickly, his chest might have been penetrated through.

"You... swindler!" The Heavy Deity retreated, as he hurriedly sealed the meridians on his body. He carried a furious expression that looked as if he could not wait to pounce on Xue Yi and give him a few bites.

"I simply changed my battle tactics, who knew you're that stupid?" Xue Yi flew out from the glacier and smiled irritatingly.

"Shameless little brat!" He cursed out.

"Whatever you say." Xue Yi shrugged. "It seems like you won't be capturing me today. It's a pity about that city that was sealed in your ice... Haah, I rather liked a few of them, you know?"

That Heavy Deity grew even more furious, his face was already reddened from anger and the veins on his hand were protruding out. The gnashing of his teeth was loud and resounding. He took a deep breath, as though he was suppressing the anger that was on the verge of breaking out, and coldly said. "Hmph, do you think you can escape so easily?"

He turned around and looked at Xue Yi's remaining arm. "Do you think you will be fine after shattering my ice?"

Xue Yi was startled for a moment. When he turned to look, there were still a few remaining pieces of ice on his right arm.

"Ice Seal, activate!" The Heavy Deity once again cast an art.

In an instant, large number of ice began to crawl his arm, spreading throughout his entire body. The ice was just about to occupy his chest area. This time, Xue Yi was truly anxious. He couldn't possibly give up another arm again, and it was already too late right now in the first place.

Just as he was about to sink within the deep glacier, Xue Yi frowned, gritted his teeth, and immediately fell onto the ground to meditate. In an instant, the ice on the ground crawled up his legs.

“Courting death?” The Heavy Deity snorted.

Zhu Yao thought the same as well. If this kept up, with how there were even more ice on the ground, the spread would be even quicker.

In the next instant, Xue Yi released his divine sense. At that moment, the divine energy in the air began to rapidly concentrated at where he was. Winds blew and clouds gathered.

“Forbidden art!” That Heavy Deity was stunned, his eyes widened as he looked at Xue Yi with utter disbelief. “You’re thinking of forcefully raising your cultivation, and charging into the realm of a Heavy Deity!?”

As expected, as though they had been attracted by something, the divine energy in the surroundings rapidly poured into Xue Yi’s body. His initially torn-down body was instantly slashed with cuts after cuts of blood. As the intense winds blew, the ice sheets that were dyed in blood cracked and shattered apart as well.

Even that Heavy Deity had to take a good few steps back. “Lunatic, you lunatic!” In the path of cultivation, one would always speak of it being a step-by-step process. It was not as simple as taking in divine energy. The divine energy in the Divine Realm was rich and dense, but guiding them into the body and into the Dantian was extremely difficult. It was really easy for the divine energy to deal a rebound, where meridians would be shattered and one’s Nascent Spirit would be damaged. The Nascent Spirit was akin to the existence of a soul. If the Nascent Spirit was damaged, even if it’s a Deity, it wouldn’t be possible to heal it. Those with good luck simply would not be able to advance in their cultivation, while those with bad luck would be exterminated. Yet Xue Yi was actually using the forbidden arts to guide in a large amount of

divine energy to forcefully raise his cultivation! How was this any different than suicide?

Xue Yi did not have any intentions to stop at all. Instead, his rate of absorption grew even faster, as he forcefully took in divine energy into his meridians. Within a few meters around him, divine energy turned into a enormous vortex, blocking off everything outside. The sky darkened and dark clouds rolled about, blotting out the sun. His skin was already torn and his flesh was exposed, almost becoming a bloodied body.

Zhu Yao grew a little anxious as well, yet she was not in the position to stop him. He was presently at a critical juncture. If he was interrupted at this moment, he would most likely end up losing his life.

This outburst of divine energy lasted for exactly an entire day, and even those people who left the city returned to watch this spectacle. Zhu Yao silently looked outside the vortex of divine energy, at the “citizens gathering around to watch how that bad person is going to die” lively scene. She silently lit a candle for Xue Yi. Look, this is what you get for not being a good person! At this moment of crisis, there will always be people wishing to see you die.

All of the Deities thought that Xue Yi was undoubtedly going to die. All of the Deities thought that no one would be able to suppress such a huge outburst of divine energy. All of the Deities thought that the bad person would definitely die! However, everyone was shocked that Xue Yi was actually able to walk out of that outburst of divine energy completely unharmed. Not only did his severed arm grow back, even his cultivation level had leapt to that of a Heavy Deity.

He succeeded!

The Heavy Deity and the gathered crowd were all stunned.

Xue Yi chuckled as he released his pressure as a Heavy Deity.

Other than the late-stage Heavy Deity, the gathered crowd slammed onto the ground.

He did not release it for too long, instead, he pulled up the corner of his bloodstained clothes and swung it. In an instant, several hundred blood-coloured wind blades flew towards the crowd. The place was in utter chaos. Some erected barriers, some retreated, and some dodged.

It was completely a drama where the main protagonist settled his debts after autumn with a domineering counterattack!

Looking at the chickens fly and dogs jump, Xue Yi laughed irksomely. He held onto Zhu Yao tightly, summoned his flying sword, and shouted out loud. “Run!” He leapt up and then flew in the opposite direction. Zhu Yao simply watch as streaks of light flashed across her eyes, and she no longer saw the crowd of Deities.

“...” What happened to the promised domineering counterattack?

---

Xue Yi flew out several kilometers till he felt tired. Then, he sat flat on the ground, panting heavily. “Fortunately, I ran really quick!”

“.....”

“...”

He suddenly thought of something, as he raised Zhu Yao up and stared at her silvery white blade. With sparkling eyes, he said. “Divine sword maiden, did you see the battle earlier? I suddenly broke through into a Heavy Deity. Wasn’t I really incredible, domineering and cool!?” And really worth to be entrusted for life?

“... I only saw how incredible, domineering and cool you were when you were fleeing! Also... “ Entrust your sister! “I have a partner already.”

Xue Yi's face reddened, and he immediately activated his automatic word shield. "Aiyaa, if you praise me like that, I will feel embarrassed!"

Who praised you, hey!? You clearly ran because you have just risen to a Heavy Deity and can't beat your opponent, right?

"It's rare to find someone like me who doesn't like to fight nowadays!"

"..." Can you be even more shameless than this?

Xue Yi stood up with a satisfied look on his face. He investigated his surroundings for a moment, and then he established a barrier at a rather concealed spot. After that, he placed Zhu Yao inside.

"Divine sword maiden, wait here for me."

"What are you doing?" Zhu Yao asked.

Xue Yi raised his head and looked at the sky, frowning. "I forcefully pushed my cultivation into the realm of a Heavy Deity, so the tribulation I'm about to face will definitely be a little stronger. You're just a second rank divine sword right now, and you won't be able to endure by my side. I will first put you here, and I will pick you up after I finish facing my tribulation."

"Ou."

Only then did he walk away and found a place to settle down. Then, he did not forget to turn his head around and worriedly instructed her. "You must be obedient, alright? Don't run around, alright?"

"..." Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. She had to have the ability to run first!

Eh? Wait a minute!

Tribulation? Lightning tribulation!?

She raised her head. Dark clouds were already gathering densely, thunders roaring...

The hell, young man! Chotto matte!

Boom!

A bright tribulation lightning bolt shot out from the clouds and struck straight down... and then... it twisted!

Your sister! This old lady is already a sword, and yet you still don't let me go!

"Divine sword maiden..." Xue Yi was stunned as well. Why did the lightning bolt strike her? He hurriedly sprinted over. With a self-blaming look, he said. "I'm sorry, I'm sorry. It's all my fault. I shouldn't have placed you here. Let me help you change location."

Thus, he moved her several meters back.

Boom! Another lightning bolt...

Once again struck Zhu Yao.

"Sorry, sorry! Let me change your location again."

The third strike...

"Don't be anxious, I will switch it again."

Fourth strike.

"There's a cave here, it's definitely safe here."

Fifth strike.

"... I will switch again!"

"Young man!" The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. "No need to switch anymore. Please let this sword quietly get zapped, alright?"

"....."

"..."

Once, Zhu Yao had seriously pondered about her problem of being zapped by lightning every so often, though she could never find an answer. However, on this day, she finally understood. It was because... she had already gotten used to it.



All eighty-one tribulation lightning bolts, without a single exception, landed on her blade. Fortunately, Xue Yi placed her on the ground, so most of the electricity had all seeped into the earth instead. She was a qualified lightning rod, as there wasn't a single crack on her blade after that. The only change was that the letters on her blade actively swapped around again. From a single row of BBBBs to a single row of SSSSs, and finally back to a mix of SBSBs. The blade had gone through every single combination of letters, and finally when there were no more unique letter combinations to be made... symbols came out...

Zhu Yao looked at the scrambled mess on her blade: \*—.....%#  
¥ #

Zhu Yao felt uncomfortable all over. Did her programme crash from being zapped too much?

“Divine sword maiden...” After the lightning tribulation, Xue Yi immediately popped out and looked at her worriedly. “How are you? Does it hurt? Why don't you...” He hesitated for a moment. “Drink a little more water!”

“...” Drink your sister's water? Can drinking water cure a hundred illnesses? Also, how can a sword like me drink water!?

“Don't you worry, I am now a Heavy Deity. I will definitely protect you.” He patted on his chest and guaranteed with an arrogant look. “If anyone dares to bully you, I will bite him!”

Are you a dog?

“Thank you very much...” The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched as she was filled with hundred and twenty percent doubt. “Bring me to the east, thank you!” She simply wanted to return to her master's side immediately. The world outside was so terrifying.

“Alright!” He nodded. Just as he picked her up and was about to fly off on his flying sword...

A furious voice suddenly sounded.

“Xue Yi! I finally found you! Forfeit your life!”

The hell, again!?

# Chapter 350: I Have Just Hit Menopause, I Want Some Peace and Quiet

---

Zhu Yao deeply felt that she must have destroyed the Milky Way in her past life, which resulted in her meeting such an unreliable person. Ever since she was picked up by him, there were neverending number of incidents occurring. Occasionally, people would appear to settle debts with him. Some of these people once had their divine treasures robbed, some had their cultivation cave residences taken away, while many of them were once heavily injured by him. Every single one of them hated him to the very core, as though they wanted to swallow him alive.

In any case, not a single one practitioner that they passed by on the way wasn't acquainted with him one way or another. This was the first time Zhu Yao had seen someone who had such a wide aggro range. Almost every short distance they covered, there would be people charging out to fight him. Some came alone, while some came in groups of three to five. She was rather shocked in the beginning, but she had already become completely calm at the end.

In any case, every so often, there would be people leaping out and shouting:

“Evil Deity, return me my treasures!”

“Evil Deity, return me my cave residence!”

“Evil Deity, return me my...”

And other things along those lines, until a delicate Profound Deity that looked like a frail scholar pop out. “Evil Deity, return me my wife!”

Zhu Yao silently glanced at Xue Yi. “Yo, I never expected your private life to be this fulfilling.”

Xue Yi was stunned for a moment, as though he never expected that he would utter such a thing either. At that moment, he grew

anxious. “Nonsense! Who stole your wife?”

“What does this have to do with me?” Why are you giving me an explanation?

“To tell you the truth, I’m...” His face reddened and he shyly turned his head away. He tapped his fingers together and said. “I’m... I’m... I’m still a virgin!”

“.....”

“...”

A moment later.

“Ou...”

How is this my business!? -flips table-

“You still dare to lie.” That Profound Deity was immediately enraged. He pointed at Xue Li with a pained expression and accused. “If you hadn’t forcefully broken into my wife’s closed-door training location in Cloudspill Sea, would she have died from self-implosion!?”

“Cloudspill Sea?” Xue Yi was dazed for a moment.

“That’s right.” The man gritted his teeth and said. “It’s that cave residence at the bottom of the sea.

Bottom of the sea? Wasn’t that the place where she was picked up by Xue Yi?

“My wife and I spent a thousand years to build that cave residence. I never expected...” That man denounced him with a pained look. “You greedy beast! You took the opportunity while I wasn’t around, to my wife... You made her die from self-implosion! Today, I shall take your life and help her take revenge!”

What did he do to your wife? Speak clearly, hey. How can you leave out the most important details?

“I didn’t.” Xue Yi forcefully shook his head and said in a serious

tone. “I robbed that place off a male Deity. I am a Deity with principles. How can I possibly attack a frail female type? You can wrong me, but you can’t insult my tastes.”

Zhu Yao; “...” The hell does this have to do with your tastes!?

The man snorted. With a wave of his sleeves, an illusory figure appeared in the air. That person had a burly figure, with tiger-like back and a bear’s waist. Even the black hair could not conceal those firm and thick muscles, which looked as though they could explode at any moment. That person looked like a professional bodybuilder. “Evil Deity, do you recognize this person?”

“Eh!?” Xue Yi looked carefully, and blurted out. “Isn’t that the person who wouldn’t move out of his home in the seafloor even in death?”

The man’s anger peaked, shouting out. “This is my wife!”

Zhu Yao: “...” There’s actually such a delightful woman in this world.

Xue Yi: “...” So a female type actually looks like that. It’s no wonder I can never find a partner.

“My wife and I... our feelings are as deep as the ocean, and we had always relied on each other since the times we were in the Lower Realm. We never let each other go.” He said with a pained expression. “Now, i’m the only one left living in this world.” His eyes reddened. As though he had dove into some memories, his face was filled with despair and yearning. “It’s all because of you! From now on... there will never be anyone else who will keep the candle on for me late in the night, there will never be anyone else who will sleep on the same bed as me, there will never be anyone else who will hug me tight. No one will ever again smack my body with a whip, and no one will ever again use the candles to... Uh, in any case, I want you to pay with your blood!”

The two people in front of him: “...”

They seemed to have just found out something incredible.

This person is a masochist right!? He must be, right!?

“Give me your life!” That male Deity raised his sword and hacked it towards Xue Yi.

Unexpectedly, Xue Yi did not directly attack him with simple brute strength like before. Instead, his figure flashed, dodging his attack.

“You really killed her?” Zhu Yao could not help but ask.

Xue Yi’s feet stopped, and then nodded a while later. “Mn, back then, I was in dire need of that cave residence.” He pondered for a moment, and then added. “I really didn’t know the person living there was a female type.”

“...” Zhu Yao did not reply. She had a vague feeling in her heart, where she faintly felt that the key problem here wasn’t about differentiating between man and woman.

That man after all was still just a Profound Deity, and he was basically unable to injure Xue Yi even the slightest bit. With a light wave of his sleeves, Xue Yi easily deflected his attack. Frowning, he shouted out loud. “Hey, seeing that you have lost your partner, I can give you ten moves. After these ten strikes, don’t blame me for being rough.”

“Don’t act arrogant!” That man trembled from anger. Gritting his teeth, he unleashed all of the divine energy in his body and attacked Xue Yi without a regard for his life. He even threw out all of his talismans, treasures and divine artifacts. “In the past, because you altered the formation in the sea depth, I couldn’t do anything to you. Since you came out here today, don’t even think I will give you the opportunity to hide again.”

Loud booms resounded. The place was filled with the sounds of divine talismans and divine treasures activating, their might shaking the sky.

As he had declared, Xue Yi did not resist and simply dodged all of his attacks. While doing so, he carefully counted his opponent's moves. "One, two, three, four..."

With the absolute advantage from the difference in levels, the man was basically unable to harm Xue Yi at all. Just a short while later, he was already panting out heavily, while Xue Yi was not even scarred at all. The man's expression turned severe. With a swing of his hand, he sliced his own arm and used his fresh blood to condense a formation.

"Blood Condensing Formation." Xue Yi was stunned. He took a few steps back and immediately erected a defensive barrier. At the same time, a bloody divine sword that enveloped the sky and earth came attacking him. Even the barrier that he had erected was beginning to show lines of cracks. Finally, the barrier shattered resoundingly. Earlier, the man failed to even touch him, but now, the bloody divine sword drew lines across Xue Yi's body, and there were even times when Xue Yi's vital points were almost struck. However, the Blood Condensing Formation was after all a unique formation that made use of one's essence to activate. In other words, if it was used to harm a thousand, then eight hundred would be sacrificed.

In just a few moments, the man could no longer hold it up. His figure shook and then he fell with one knee on the ground. His face instantly became as pale as paper. He had a frail scholar appearance in the first place, and yet now he looked as if he could be scattered apart with just a small breeze.

Xue Yi then shouted out the final number at this moment. "Ten."

With a wave of his hand, he summoned a divine sword and walked towards that person a step at a time. He had a cold look on his face, instead of the silly expression he had just before. In that pair of sharp eyes, lingered true killing intent. Zhu Yao felt her heart tremble, and she unconsciously shouted out. "Xue Yi!"

His feet stopped, as though he was asking her what's wrong.

She knew she had no basis for this, but she still could not help but call out. "Can you... not kill him?"

Xue Yi frowned, and determinedly shook his head. "Impossible!" He said as he approached the man. "If I don't kill him today, my death might come another day. I can't leave behind any snake in the grass."

"....."

"..."

He stopped three steps away from the man, and with the sword in his hand raised, he was just about to strike, when that man suddenly raised his head. He had a smile on his face. Xue Yi's heart shook, and a bright white light suddenly glowed in the surroundings at this moment. When he dodged to the side, he saw a ray of white light shot towards the sky, instantly breaking through the clouds.

"Do you think that I will come here alone without being completely prepared?" That man suddenly laughed out loud. "I know that I'm not your match, but so what if your cultivation level is high? There will naturally be someone capable of defeating you."

Xue Yi looked towards that pillar of light. He had a bad premonition, and he unconsciously tightened his grip on Zhu Yao's hilt. "What mystic artifact is this?"

"You actually don't recognize the Disciplinary Order!?" That man coldly laughed, his eyes looked as though he had been freed. With a long sigh, he said. "Well, whatever! Evil Deity, you have done many vile acts, and it's now time for you to pay the price."

That white light grew brighter as the surrounding talismans shone. A figure slowly appeared from the center, and the person grew clearer. Boundless pressure assaulted Xue Yi and he was unable to maintain his stance, kneeling right down and puking out



a mouthful of blood.

The white light scattered. In the middle of the formation, a sloven-looking man appeared. He was dressed in a red robe and wore a jade crown. With a pair of sword-sharp eyes, he held onto a jade-mounted red fan in his hand. That person was first stunned for a moment, as he looked at Zhu Yao in front of Xue Yi's chest.

Zhu Yao was stunned, and she could not help but leak out. "Great great..." The person in front of her hurriedly raised his fan to cover his lips, hinting her to keep quiet. She had no choice but to alter her words. "... tonic water."

"What?" Xue Yi lowered his head in confusion.

"Hohoho... I have just hit my menopause, and I need some peace and quiet."

"....."

"..."

---

Zhu Yao was a little confused.

When did the Floor Master become someone else's summoned beast? Why did he appear here? What happened to the promise of helping her master to protect her body? Was it really alright for him to appear here?

The sorrow in Yu Jin's heart could already form a river. He didn't want to be here either, but why was there still people who would look for a Disciplinary Order? And why did the Disciplinary Order have to be linked with the Floor Master's divine imprint?

A second earlier, he was still protecting his little little grand disciple's body, and in a blink of an eye, he was here in this ghastly place. He even patted on his chest and guaranteed that he would look after his little little grand disciple well, before he was finally able to escape Little Yanyan's demonic claws. Now that he had left

his post, he was going to be zapped to death, right? It will definitely happen, right!?

The problem here was that his little little grand disciple was being held captive there too. My heart aches, I feel so hurt, I really want to bully people!

Yu Jin swept his cold eyes around, an indescribable tyrannical might could be felt. His usual leisurely and casual demeanour could no longer be found. “Who activated the Disciplinary Order?” Come out here and let me smack you for a bit.

“High Deity of Lightning Divine Palace!” The Profound Deity stumbled about as he bowed towards Yu Jin. “This person is a Evil Deity who has been wrecking havoc in the Divine Realm...” Thus, he began to list down all of Xue Yi’s crimes. When he brought up his wife, his words were filled with even more indignation. Finally, he added. “This lowly one unhesitantly risked everything to find this Disciplinary Order. I hope High Deity can judge this vile Xue Yi for his crimes, for this lowly one and for the people of the Divine Realm!” As he said that, he knelt down.

Yu Jin frowned. He turned towards Xue Li on the other side. Though Lightning Divine Palace was a place that governed the order of the Divine Realm, it had been a long time since he maintained justice or whatever! Putting aside how unfamiliar with the work he was, this Disciplinary Order was something he made for fun because he was bored to death a few tens of thousands of years ago. In addition, he put out the word that as long as the Disciplinary Order was found, the user would be able to have the Floor Master of Lightning Divine Palace to exact justice and punish evil.

To put it simply, it was just something he did on a whim. He had been a Floor Master for so many years and had long thought of quitting. Yet, he was unable to find a successor to succeed him. That was why he intentionally linked the Floor Master’s divine imprint with this item. His goal was to secretly toy with the next

Floor Master. In the end, he failed to make fun of others, and ended up toying with himself.

To summarise: If you don't court death, you won't die!

Haah! He clearly hid this Disciplinary Order at such a deep place. How did this person find it? Could he have some peace as a Floor Master for once?

He had long cussed out in several hundred different ways in his heart, yet he had no choice but to keep up that proud and cold demeanour. With a stern look, he asked. "Is what he said all true?" Even if he had to cry, he had to bury this own hole that he created to the very end.

"Yes, I did them." Xue Yi admitted it really straightforwardly. "I don't see myself as a good person, but this world is as such in the first place. I believe that whatever I've done, has been done by every single person in the Divine Realm. In order to expand a territory, stealing one needs to be done, and when in conflict with others, it's natural to fight. When it comes to people that can't be beaten, it's either run, or face death. This is the laws of this world in the first place."

Expand territory? Conflict? Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. Why was this tone familiar...

"In that case, I will accept this Disciplinary Order today." Yu Jin reached out his hand. The divine imprints that was still shining earlier on the ground began to rise and converge, before disappearing within his palm. The might of a High Deity was fully released, and the sky above was instantly filled with dark clouds and rumbling thunder.

White a flash of white light, a bolt of heavenly lightning struck down.

The hell, Floor Master, you're doing it for real!

Xue Yi gritted his teeth as he desperately used all of the divine

energy in his body to push back the High Deity's pressure. In a flash, he left his former spot. However, that lightning bolt creaked and split itself into halves, where one of it came chasing after him. He had no choice but to block it with his divine sword. A fifth rank divine sword turned into ashes under this incredible lightning might.

He had no choice but to pull out a new one, as he fought and retreat. He fled for about dozens of kilometers, yet he was still unable to escape the lightning flashes that enveloped the sky and earth. Fortunately for him, he scavenged quite a bit of divine artifacts from that divine city earlier, allowing him to expend so many of them as consumables. However, his stock of divine artifacts was after all limited. In the beginning, he could still pull out fifth rank ones. Immediately after, he took out fourth rank ones, and finally, he had no choice but to pull out the third rank artifacts.

A fifth rank divine artifact could not even block it, let alone a low grade artifact. He watched as another lightning bolt came striking at him, immediately destroying the third rank divine artifact in his hand, however, it had only resolved a fifth of the lightning bolt's original lightning power. Just as the lightning bolt was about to strike his chest, it suddenly twisted and struck heavily onto his body.

A hint of doubt flashed across Xue Yi's face. However, in the next instant, he felt his blood tumbling, the meridians in his body breaking apart, and his Dantian felt as if it was about to shatter.

"Divine sword maiden..." He suddenly pulled her out.

"What is it?"

"I don't know why, but I realized... that person seems to be avoiding you intentionally. He must be afraid of you for some reason."

"Uh... You're thinking of using me to face the enemy?"

“No!” He shook his head. “I want to...”

Before he could finish, Yu Jin’s figure appeared in front of him in a flash. He looked at the sword in Xue Yi’s hand and said. “Xue Yi, give me that weapon and admit defeat. This Sovereign can consider letting you live.”

# Chapter 351: Floor Master's Dignity

## Recovery Plan

---

Yu Jin sounded calm, but his heart felt as it had been scratched by a cat. He didn't know how his little little grand disciple ended up in this person's hands. He somehow managed to force him into a place like this where no one else was around. Hurry and return my little little grand disciple, so that I can at least negotiate terms with Little Yanyan!

“What!?” Xue Yi was instantly enraged after hearing this. “You're telling me to give divine sword maiden to you? In your dreams! I finally managed to find a female type, and she's the partner that I've decided on! We love each other and will never be apart! You want us to separate? You will have to kill us!”

“Partner!?” Yu Jin was stunned. He silently turned to look at the sword. Little little grand disciple, do you still remember Little Yanyan of Lake of Great Splendour?

“The hell, who's your partner!? Speak clearly.” Zhu Yao grew anxious. “Can you please cure your delusions?”

“Divine sword maiden, don't worry.” His automatic word shielding ability once again activated, and with affection and no regrets, he said. “At this moment, I finally recognized my true feelings. I won't allow him to harm you even the slightest bit. We will be together forever.”

“Together my ass. Who wants to be with you?” Zhu Yao wanted to zap him herself now. “Don't mind me, please zap him to death. Immediately. Right now.”

“Divine sword maiden...” Xue Yi was however moved, and he was this close to crying tears from joy. “You actually want to elope with me!”

Zhu Yao: “...” Heartaches always occur so suddenly.

Yu Jin: “...” (◉▽◉) Little little grand disciple actually has a change of heart.

Xue Yi sniffled, and then his expression turned cold. In an instant, he resolutely stared at Yu Jin and said. “Come with all your might! We will never separate!”

“Don’t say things that will cause others to misunderstand, hey!” I want to die so much. Oh my master who’s in the faraway Mars, please come and save this disciple’s morals.

“As you wish.” The lightning clouds in the sky gathered once more.

“Hey, wait a minute!” Are they really going to fight? “Please let me finish what I have to say!”

Unfortunately, no one listened to her, as the two began to fight once more in the sky, as though they were addicted to fighting. It was evident that Xue Yi was on the disadvantageous side, while Yu Jin seemed to be toying with him. His only goal was to snatch Zhu Yao back from Xue Yi’s hands.

Xue Yi saw that he was unable to beat him and suddenly cast an art. He sliced his palm and drew a blood formation. Zhu Yao’s entire blade suddenly began to shine with a white light. Large amount of divine energy entered her body as she slowly rose into the air.

Zhu Yao’s heart clenched. “What are you trying to do?” She suddenly had a bad premonition.

“Divine sword maiden, I will take you in as my Life Artifact. We will have the power to fight him that way.”

“What? Life Artifact!” A portable summoned beast?

After binding her to my life, maiden will then be able to appear in my divine sense. Our feelings will bloom after a long period of time, and we will then get married and give birth to monkeys. Just thinking about it makes me a little excited!

“Excited, my ass!” Please don’t speak out your inner thoughts at a moment like this. “Wait, no! I don’t want to become your Life Artifact, stop!”

Her rejection was instantly ignored by a certain someone.

“Little little grand disciple!” Yu Jin was stunned as well. He saw through Xue Yi’s plans as well and his expression instantly changed. If he allowed Xue Yi to succeed, then it would spell trouble. If Little Yanyan’s wife gets binded to someone else? I will definitely be burnt to ashes, right!? At that moment, he regretted wasting so much time earlier.

He immediately summoned tribulation lightning bolts in an attempt to stop him. However, it was already too late. The formation was about to be completed, Zhu Yao was about to turn into a ray of white light and enter Xue Yi’s forehead.

A white bolt of light suddenly tore through the sky and blew across Xue Yi’s forehead, instantly interrupting the cast of the art. Xue Yi simply felt an immense might directly assaulting the center of his forehead and his divine sense was in intense pain. It was as though someone had sliced him apart alive. No longer able to maintain his stance, he knelt with one knee on the ground.

He unconsciously searched for Zhu Yao and when he raised his head, he saw another person in the sky. With an upright posture in the air, he wore a white robe and had an ice-cold look on his face. In his hand was that second rank divine sword.

“Masteerr...” Zhu Yao was about to cry. Oh my loved one, you’re finally here!

Yu Yan glanced at the sword in his hand and ascertained that it was his stupid disciple. He then looked at the person who was half-kneeling on the ground and recalled that scene earlier. In an instant, a chilling aura filled the place. The air seemed to have fallen to extremely cold temperatures, as every word he spoke felt like it create ice out of thin air. “You actually want to take her into



your divine sense!?”

Yu Yan had never felt as furious like right now, as he felt like he could decimate the earth and destroy the sky at any moment. He had searched for so long, had ended up empty-handed so many times, and even right before this, he was just about to flip the entire ocean over. When he finally managed to find his stupid disciple, he discovered that she was just about to be taken into someone else's divine sense and become his Life Artifact.

A Life Artifact was linked to the divine sense, and the moment the bind was formed, it could never be removed. They would be linked forever. He hadn't done it himself, yet this brat that came out of nowhere actually dared to touch his disciple! At that moment, the pressure in the air alone seemingly felt like it could suffocate people to death.

Xue Yi was receiving a rebound from the failure of his art in the first place, and now, he was this close to lying flat on the ground. Though it was said that a difference in level could suppress one to death, he had never seen something this terrifying. Unable to sustain any longer, his vision darkened. He had gorgeously fainted.

“Uh... Little Yanyan.” Yu Jin could not help but call out. If this were to go on any longer, that person would be pressed onto the ground to death. “Umm... Calm down.”

Yu Yan turned to look at him, the ice shards in his eyes changing their target.

“Uh...” Yu Jin silently took a step back, and then another step back. Little Yanyan looks so scary, even my little heart is shivering. “As you were. I didn't say anything.” He immediately retracted his statement.

He suddenly felt that the Little Yuyan that he competed with above the Lightning Divine Palace back then, when compared to right now, was as gentle as a light drizzle.

“Master...” Zhu Yao called out in time. Though Xue Yi wanted to take her in as his Life Artifact, his initial goal was to save her. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have chosen a second rank divine sword as his Life Artifact. “Let us return.”

Only then did Yu Yan turn to look at the sword in his hand. He retracted the chilling aura, and then, gave Yu Jin a ‘I will settle scores with you later’ look, before making his way back to Lightning Divine Palace with his disciple. After such a long search, he finally found her. He had to hurry and return his disciple’s soul back to her body, otherwise, there would always be bastards wanting to snatch his disciple away!

Yu Jin was thus left behind. Lowering his head, he looked at the living corpse on the ground and helplessly sighed. He grabbed him up and then followed after them. Looking at the faraway figure, Yu Jin felt a little sour in his heart. Why did he feel that his status as a mighty Lightning Divine Palace Floor Master, was falling lower and lower with each passing day?

He pondered for a moment. When did this situation begin? Mn. Back then when Little Yanyan just ascended, though he was still as cold, at the very least, he was a good child who respected his elders. However, ever since his disciple appeared, he grew even more terrifying. Every single day, he would pull out his sword at a moment’s notice! Especially after that, when he requested instructions from that disobedient grand disciple and decided to marry little little grand disciple, Yu Jin’s dignity as a Floor Master had completely turned into mush.

So, the conclusion was because of some unspoken rules with his disciple?

Mn... Maybe, I should consider taking in a female disciple or something? Then, I can logically escape being single, and maybe I can raise my social status a little too!

The longer he thought about it, the more he felt that it all made

sense. He felt that he had just found the key to the recovery of his dignity. Now... the only problem he had was to find out where he could find an obedient female disciple that he could take in.

The quote: “Do you still remember .... of Lake of Great Splendour?” comes from the drama My Fair Princess, where the emperor was asked by Zi Wei if he remembered ‘Xia Yuhe of Lake of Great Splendour from eighteen years ago’. In the drama, Xia Yuhe back then was promised that she would enter the palace, but the promise wasn’t fulfilled. Zi Wei was the child of Xia Yuhe.

# Chapter 352: The Promised Blissful Life

---

She was finally legally retrieved by her master. Zhu Yao thought that her sad exile in the Divine Realm was about to end, the next step was to bind herself to her former body, and from then on, with her master, live a shameless and immoral... Ah pui! She meant living a blissful and lovely life with her master. However, when they returned to Lightning Divine Palace, she realized her thoughts were truly naive.

Her soul returned, but... her avatar had disappeared!

“Where’s my body?” Did she had to go through something so saddening?

“There’s no traces of living people around.” Yu Yan released his divine sense and searched through the entire Lightning Divine Palace. However, he did not find his disciple’s body at all.

They both turned their heads back and with eyes that were as sharp as blades, looked at a certain someone who left his guard duty.

“Uh...” Yu Jin was dumbfounded as well, and then he weakly took a step back. “She was here just earlier.” It was not even an hour since he left, how did his little little grand disciple’s body disappear? “The formation outside has no traces of being activated. Logically speaking, others are unable to enter this place either. It’s impossible for it to disappear.”

“So you’re saying I disappeared into thin air?” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. I’m an ethanol! I must have vaporized!

“Little little grand disciple, don’t be anxious.” Yu Jin smiled and said. “I placed a tracking formation on your body. As long as I activate it, we will naturally know where your body is.”

He threw Xue Yi down and then cast an art that materialized a water mirror that had the height of an adult. He brushed his palm

against the surface of the mirror, and after a flash of light, what appeared slowly within the mirror was... a mass of white fog.

Zhu Yao: "..."

Yu Yan: "..."

What happened to the promised security footage? Your wireless technology clearly can't make it, hey!

"Uh..." Yu Yan's face stiffened, and then chuckled in front of them. "Hoho... This is a miss... Umm, I suddenly recalled that I was still barbecuing the corn in the backyard! Let's meet up again later." After he said that, he ran off, leaving a trail of dust clouds.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. Where's the promised trust between people in the same sect?

"Master..." What to do?

Yu Yan frowned. He carefully placed his disciple on the table and glanced at the water mirror that was still as foggy, to the point that nothing could be clearly seen. With a sunken voice, he said. "The water mirror is unable to display the location, which means that the formation is in a place with extremely great security. This person who has the ability to infiltrate Lightning Divine Palace, bring your body away and leave unharmed, is not simple either. There's a need to look at this from a long-term perspective."

"Then do I still have to stay as a sword?" Zhu Yao felt like crying.

"That's not the case." Yu Yan lightly sliced his finger, squeezed out a drop of blood and had it drip onto the blade.

"Master?" In an instant, the smell of blood once again filled her senses.

"Don't resist."

Just as Zhu Yao was about to puke it out, she stopped. She had no choice but to fight back the discomfort and swallow it. In an instant, the discomfort disappeared. Instead, familiar divine

energy began to pour into her, and she felt that her blade had lightened quite a bit.

Yu Yan cast an art, causing a formation to flash past. The row of symbols on her blade suddenly began to gather, slowing converging at the bottom of the hilt. When the light of the formation finally scattered away, a familiar lightning cloud mark appeared. It was the mark of Lightning Divine Palace.

“What is this?” Just as Zhu Yao was about to ask, the blade suddenly emit out a white light. She felt that her entire being was floating up, and when she regained her senses, she was already standing next to the table, while the sword was still on the table. She subconsciously wanted to touch the sword on the table, but unexpectedly, the moment she touched the blade, her fingers passed through it. “What’s going on?” Did she return to the soul state?

“Yu... Yao. This sword is not your main body.” Yu Yan spoke up solemnly.

“Not my main body!” Zhu Yao was stunned. “Then, I was possessing this sword?” When did a second rank divine sword become so incredible? It actually had the capabilities to lure in souls.

Yu Yan shook his head. “No, you’re a part of this sword.”

“What?”

“You’re just a sword spirit of this sword right now.” He glanced at the sword on the table. “The reason why you weren’t able to leave the sword earlier, was because you had insufficient divine energy, thus you weren’t able to maintain your appearance. Earlier, I inserted divine energy into your body, which aided you in manifesting your corporeal form.”

Zhu Yao pondered deeply for a moment. This was actually quite plausible. Back then when she was picked up by Miao Bo, he

couldn't hear her talk at all. After that, she was thrown into the sea and suddenly others could hear her, and right before that, she had indeed taken in a lot of divine energy that leaked out of Miao Bo's body in that mysterious Secret Realm. In the end, the reason why people couldn't hear her was because she had insufficient battery.

Eh? Wait a minute...

Zhu Yao pointed at the mark belonging to Lightning Divine Palace on the blade. "Master, since I can make an appearance when divine energy is inserted, then what's with this mark?" Was there a need for the sword to recognize a master first before inserting divine energy?

Yu Yan stiffened for a moment. After blanking for two seconds, he suddenly stood up. "Your divine energy right now is still unstable, and you can't manifest your corporeal form for a long period of time. Your master shall first bring you to the Lightning Abyss Pool to stabilize your divine energy."

"Ou..." Why did she feel something was off?

Yu Yan immediately held his disciple and flew towards the mountain peak. Stamping his disciple in order to prevent her from being taken away, was a very common thing to do, wasn't it?

---

This was already the second time Zhu Yao had entered the Lightning Abyss Pool. Compared to the first time she came here as a rock, it was clearly much better this time. Putting aside how she wasn't feeling any pain, she had a family member keeping her company for the entire process.

She bathed in it for exactly ten days before the divine energy in her slowly started to stabilize. She could finally maintain her corporeal form for twenty-four hours a day without a single interruption. However, she still couldn't hold onto the sword, as a

sword spirit was a part of the divine sword in the first place. Strictly speaking, the sword was the main body, while she was just an accessory. Thus, she naturally could not control the sword. Furthermore, she could only appear in half a kilometer radius with the sword at the center. Any further than that and she would return to the sword.

There were still no news on her body. Her master had reinforced the formations surrounding Lightning Divine Palace. Those dense layers of formations were enough to make Zhu Yao a little dizzy. Even a fly would most likely fail flying in here, let alone a human being.

As for the culprit great great grandmaster, fellow comrade Floor Master Yu Jin, on the very first day she entered the Lightning Abyss Pool, he reported that he would personally search for her body. After leaving behind his greetings, he hurriedly left Lightning Divine Palace. No matter how she saw it, it seemed like he was desperately trying to flee.

However, with that somewhat unreliable personality of his, Zhu Yao did not harbour any hopes at all.

Though she was used to having her avatars changed, the one that was misplaced was the original version! She had to find it and get it back no matter what.

“Master, are there many places where great great grandmaster’s formation isn’t able to track?” Zhu Yao crawled out of the Lightning Abyss Pool as she asked.

Yu Yan pondered for a moment. “Not more than three.” The Floor Master had the cultivation of a High Deity Paragon. The number of things that could escape his tracking art was extremely few.

“Let us head to those places to take a look then?” Zhu Yao suggested.



Yu Yan did not reject her idea. With a wave of his hand, he cast an art on his disciple and on that divine sword, removing the excess lightning energy in her body. He then held onto his disciple on one hand, and then grab the sword with the other, before flying into the air. Her master was a High Deity, so he didn't need support from any mystic artifacts to aid him in flying in the air. In just a flash, the two had already left Lightning Divine Palace.

When she turned back to look, lightning clouds shrouded over the place, as the dense layers of formations began to close.

Eh? Why did she feel as though she had forgotten about something?

She couldn't recall anymore...

Haah, whatever. Most likely, it's not that important either.

\*\*\*

## Foot of the Mountain of Lightning Divine Palace

A certain someone that was unconscious for ten days slowly awakened. He looked at the surroundings blankly, only to find out that the place was covered in dark, scorched earth.

“Where is... this place?”

---

Zhu Yao thought that she could find her avatar very quickly. However, she never expected she had hit another miss. The three places that her master brought up did not have any traces of her avatar at all. Yu Yan had his divine sense filled more than half of the Deity cultivation continent, and he meticulously searched for about five days, yet he still did not find any leads.

This was illogical! Could Realmspirit have retrieved her avatar? He couldn't have not greeted her before doing so, right?

Wait a minute! She suddenly recalled that before this, she could switch between the two avatars. However, in these few months,

the phenomenon where she would switch her avatar in real-time had completely stopped. Could there be a unique set of rules for this switch to occur?

She carefully recalled the experiences with the two avatar switching incident. During the first time, she seemed to have returned after being placed in the storage pouch. On the second time... she seemed to have suffocated quite badly. If there was any similarity between these two incidents, then... the switch occurred when she was completely devoid of divine energy!

Zhu Yao simply felt a bell ringing and a candle lighting up in her mind. She hurriedly tugged her master. “Master, I know how I can return to my original body. Hurry and place me inside the storage pouch.” She meticulously explained to him whatever she had thought of.

Yu Yan however frowned and was clearly rejecting her proposal. “Though the method you proposed makes sense... even if this method works, we don’t know where your body is right now? If you were to wake up, and if there was any sort of danger, you will be held in a disadvantage.”

“Don’t worry, master. I will be careful.” Zhu Yao patted on her chest and guaranteed. “It won’t take long. Just place me inside your storage pouch for a while should be fine. At the very most, you can pull me out fifteen minutes later. After that, my soul will naturally return. Isn’t the problem solved now?”

He hesitated for a moment. He was still completely rejecting such a risky endeavor. Zhu Yao uttered out all of her excuses and persuaded him for a long while, before she was finally given a bare pass.

“Remember, do not move recklessly.” He instructed her repeatedly. “Only act after discussing with your master when your return. Just in case, I will just put you inside for three breaths of time.

“Ah! That’s a little too short a timeframe, right?” Three breaths. In other words, it was only three seconds. How could she possibly see anything through with such a limited timeframe?

“Mn?”

“Alright then!” You’re the boss.

In a flash, Zhu Yao’s figure returned to the sword. Yu Yan held onto the sword tightly as he still harboured a hesitant look. A short while later, he finally opened the storage ring on her palm, and Zhu Yao instantly turned into a ray of white light and entered the ring.

One second...

Two seconds...

Time’s up. She could be retrieved now. With a wave of his hand, Yu Yan had the second rank divine sword once again appear on his hand. On the pure-white blade, the lightning cloud mark was especially eye-catching. He hurriedly called out in a solemn voice.

“Yu... Yao.”

“...” There was no reply.

“Yu Yao!”

“...” There was still no reply.

“Reply your master.”

“...”

“Yu Wang!”

“...” Complete silence.

On Yu Yan’s former light and bland face, dark clouds began to surface. The dark clouds turned cold, and finally brought down a hailstorm...

## Chapter 353: The Worries of Beasties

---

After entering the storage mystic artifact, Zhu Yao's vision darkened. In the next moment, the howling of the winds brushed past her ears. When she raised her head to look, she saw the great blue sky and white clouds were moving behind her at incredible speeds.

She was flying, and next to her were three pairs of large bat-like wings. Their dullness looked rather familiar. Reaching out beneath her, she felt a leather-like hardness.

She had initially held her breath on purpose, so that she would not expose herself. Yet, her cautious heart instantly sank right down.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. Then she ruthlessly stomped her feet and sat right up.

“Sesame!”

“Eh...” Sesame who was still in the midst of flying was stunned for a moment. Excited, an enormous beast head twisted back and it looked at her with hot and teary eyes. “Mistress, you're finally awake... Aiyo!”

As it did not watch where it was flying, it instantly crashed into a cliff with a loud thud and fell down. Fortunately, it instantly remembered about its mistress who was right on its back and curled its body, in order to use its belly to shield Zhu Yao.

Seeing that she had landed on the ground safely, it then flashed with a bright white light and took up its human form. It hurriedly hugged onto Zhu Yao's legs and cried out loud. “Mistress... You frightened this beastie. The moment I woke up, I saw you lying over there motionless. I searched the entire Lightning Divine Palace yet I was unable to spot the Sovereign at all, so I thought... Uuuuu, this beastie's heart received a great shock.”

“You were the one who brought me out of Lightning Divine Palace?” Zhu Yao tried to shake it off her legs, but to no avail.

“That’s right. Beastie’s little heart was this close to jumping out, you know?” It had a pitiful look as it rubbed against her thighs. “Do you know how frightening it was just now? Your heart wasn’t beating and you didn’t carry any aura. Beastie wanted to look for the Sovereign, but I did not find him. I then looked for the Floor Master, but I didn’t see his figure either. I had no choice so I brought you here to look...” It stopped right there, and then cried out even more forcefully than before. “Fortunately, you’re awake now, mistress. Otherwise this beastie would have become a child without a master. Uuuu...”

Child... Am I your mother?

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. It was no wonder Floor Master and her master was unable to find out where her body was. Sesame was her spirit beast, so when it flew out of Lightning Divine Palace with her body, the formation outside naturally did not stop it.

“Let go of my thighs first.” Why are you, a big man, hugging onto someone’s thighs? Don’t you feel any shame? “Let’s have a proper chat.”

“No way...” Sesame shook its head wildly, completely unaware of what shame was. “Mistress, don’t you know what kind of shock my frail and young heart has received? You completely frightened this little beastie. Promise me that you wouldn’t let me become a child without a master.”

“Scram!” This old lady don’t have such a huge child.

Zhu Yao turned and looked at the surroundings. The place was covered in huge mountains and dense forests. Huge boulders were erected all around, and the scenery was incredibly mystical. She had never seen such a scenery even after being in the Divine Realm for so many years. Recalling Sesame’s words, she could not help

but ask. “Where is this?”

“This is the continent of Demonic Immortals.” Sesame replied.

“What!?” Demonic Immortal Continent. “Why did you bring me here?” It was no wonder that they couldn’t receive any signals from her body on the other side of the Divine Realm then. She had actually stepped out of the map. Without data roaming activated, how were they going to track her?

Sesame paused for a moment, and then shamelessly continued to tightly hug her thighs, as he rubbed his snot and tears on them. “I couldn’t locate Sovereign and the Floor Master, so I wanted to return to the Demonic Immortal Continent to find out if there was anyone who could save mistress.”

“Wait a minute.” Zhu Yao became a little confused. “You mentioned that you woke up in Lightning Divine Palace?”

“That’s right, that’s right.” He nodded. “I was in your divine sense the entire time, and had only woken up just earlier. In the end, when I came right out, I saw mistress lying on the bed. I thought that something might have happened to you which caused your resurrection to fail.”

“Uh...” Should she mention about her completely forgetting about Sesame being in her divine sense? She didn’t bring it along for several missions in the past, so she had long forgotten that it was bundled up with her this time. “Ahem... There isn’t anything wrong with my body. The reason why I wasn’t awake was because my soul flew out.”

She explained to it about the situation of her turning into a second rank divine sword.

As Sesame listened to her, its expression instantly crumpled. It looked so pitiful, as though it had been abandoned. “Mistress actually forgot to let me out...” Its beastie heart shattered. It was angry! It wanted to vent!

“Uh...” Why did she feel as though she was a trashy woman? She couldn’t help but stroke its head. “About that... It’s not that I didn’t let you out. Look, after my resurrection this time, I’m just a mortal. I don’t have divine energy nor do I have any cultivation, how can I let you out of divine sense then? You’re so obedient, the one and only good beastie in this entire world. You definitely understand your mistress, right?” Mistress still loves you~

Sesame pondered for a moment, its face seemed to have brightened a little. Mn. I’m such a good beastie alright.

“Was your lack of cultivation truly the reason?”

“Really really! You must believe me, my good beastie?”

Alright, its glass heart had been repaired. “Then... Then what about now?”

“I don’t have any cultivat... The hell!” Zhu Yao circulated her divine energy out of habit, and a purple lightning spark actually appeared from her palm. Even she herself was shocked. “How?” She carefully sensed her body, and realized that the cultivation level of this body had actually risen directly to that of a Profound Deity. This was a little too illogical, wasn’t it? Was sleeping her body’s secret art for cultivation?

“Mistress?” Sesame which was waiting for comfort saw her being dumbfounded all of a sudden, and could not help but nudge her. Continue praising me~

“I suddenly possess cultivation.” Zhu Yao frowned. When it came to situations like this where a pie had fallen from the sky, she felt that a trap was definitely laid out at the back. “This matter is too strange. Let’s first return to Lightning Divine Palace and ask my master.” Zhu Yao wanted to fly on a sword out of habit, only to realize that she did not have any transportation tools on hand. Thus, she pulled Sesame up from her thighs. “I don’t have any mystic artifacts so I can’t fly. Turn back into your original form and bring me back.”

“Ou.” Sesame turned into that six-winged demonic beast in a habitual manner, and with Zhu Yao on its back, it flew up.

Eh, wait a minute!

Where’s the promised comfort?

---

Sesame bringing her out was like kicking an own goal, and she had no idea why her body suddenly possessed cultivation. It was a coincidence that Sesame woke up the moment the unreliable Floor Master was taken away by the Disciplinary Order. Seeing that Zhu Yao stayed unconscious the entire time and there was no one in the Lightning Divine Palace, it grew anxious and called 120... Ah pui! It brought her to the Demonic Immortal Continent. This matter was really easy to settle. Since she was brought out, then she just had to be brought back.

However, when they arrived at the borders of the continent, the two of them were dumbfounded.

“What’s that?” Zhu Yao said as she pointed at the large amount and densely compacted wind blades, that were even more concentrated than infrared sensors. Her face darkened.

“Realm Tide.” Sesame felt like crying as well. “The Realm Tide will appear once every hundred years between the Demonic Immortal Continent and Deity Continent. Anyone who enters it will be injured by the wind blades and be sliced to the point where their corpses and bones wouldn’t even be left intact.”

“Then what about defensive barriers?” Zhu Yao continued to ask. Since they were wind blades, they could be blocked, right?

Sesame shook its head. “These wind blades are different from the rest. They are materialized from the aura emitted by the Presenceless River. Barriers are basically ineffective.”

“What do you mean? Speak human.” The hell’s the Presenceless River?



“Presenceless River is the heavenly river that separates the two continents.” Sesame said with a bitter look. “Above the Presenceless River, all divine arts or divine techniques will disappear, that’s why the wind blades can render divine arts ineffective too. No divine arts can be used against them.”

That incredible? They’re basically the DEL button.

“Then when will this wind stop?”

Sesame raised one finger.

“An hour?”

Sesame shook its head.

“One day? It can’t be a month, right?”

It still shook its head and weakly said. “One year.”

“The hell.” Zhu Yao became irritable. “As expected, it’s more reassuring to keep you in my divine sense.”

“... Mistress.” Its glass heart shattered once more. “How can you say that to me...”

Its nose began to itch and its eyes were reddening. The acting skills of a moviestar were unleashed in an instant. Just as it was about to cry and complain, it was startled all of a sudden. Looking towards a certain direction, its expression instantly changed, becoming miserably pale. In a flash, it suddenly returned to her divine sense.

“What’s wrong?” It really returned just like that? When did it become so obedient?

“Mistress, hurry and retract your aura as a Deity! Hurry!” Sesame’s hurried voice resounded, carrying an anxiety that she hadn’t seen before.

Zhu Yao frowned. Though she did not know what was going on, she still retracted it as told. Immediately after, two astonishing pressures came assaulting in an overwhelming manner. Even she

could not help but hold her breath, and had almost sat on her butt.

Two figures instantly appeared before her. After having a closer look on their faces, the corner of her lips could not help but twitch. One red and one yellow. The red one was bright red, and even his hair was red. The yellow one was light yellow, and even his fingernails were yellow.

These two were Demonic Immortals at the Heavy Deity level.

“Why a Deity?” The red Demonic Immortal was stunned for a moment. He looked straight at Zhu Yao, his gaze grew even more focused as time went by. The longer he looked, the brighter his eyes grew, and the more he wanted to lean closer to her.

“Hi~” Zhu Yao could not help but raise her hand and greet them.

That red Demonic Immortal exhaled a little, and even his face reddened. He awkwardly tugged onto the corners of his robe and then pulled his sleeves a little. His voice instantly turned a little lower, and he even began to stammer. “It’s... It’s even... a little... a little sister.”

He turned to look at the yellow Demonic Immortal at the side and nudged him a little. “Hey, what do you think we should do?”

“Ah!?” When that yellow Demonic Immortal was nudged, his legs wobbled and he almost fell. Only then did he regain his senses. He suddenly stepped forward and said with a stern look. “Little sister, hello. I’m Yellow Qi. My original form is the Despised Beast from the feathered races, a Realm Protector of the Demonic Immortal Continent. I’m of the fourteenth rank with the cultivation level of a Heavy Deity. I have three cave residences with beautiful sceneries and boundless divine energy. I can be considered as someone with achievements to my name. I even have the special authority to freely enter the Demonic Immortal Palace. Why don’t we... first become friends?”

“...” What’s with this feeling of being in a blind date?

“I’m Red Qi!” After hearing Yellow Qi’s words, he immediately added. He had a look filled with regrets. Why did he forget to do a self-introduction earlier? What a pity. He actually lost the initiative! He quietly shot daggers at his little companion with his eyes.

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. It seemed like the absolutely evil World Favourable Impression ability was effective on Demonic Immortals too!

“The hell, you two bitches! Let go of my mistress. She only belongs to this beastie.” Sesame began to wildly scratch on the screen inside her divine sense. “I want to! Immediately! Right now! Beat these two blind beasts up!”

Come right out then, what’s the point in shouting in my divine sense? Zhu Yao had a dark expression.

“Oh right, Deity little sister!” Red Qi was still looking at her with a pair of shining eyes. “Why are you here? Are you lost? Where do you want to go? Do you want this big brother to send you there?”

“Uh...” Zhu Yao quietly took a step back. Please retract that perverse look of yours first, alright? What happened to the promised conflict between Deities and Demonic Immortals? “Hoho, fellow great Demonic Immortals. I’m just here to look at the scenery. I’m done now, bye.”

She raised her leg and was just about to run, when the two Demonic Immortals finally regained their senses. They first exchanged glances, and then in a flash, blocked her paths as expected. “Little sister, you can’t leave.”

“Fellow big brothers, is there anything else?” Zhu Yao tried her best to maintain a friendly expression.

“Little sister, I’m sorry for forgetting to mention this. Deities can’t traverse freely on this side. Big brother Red isn’t trying to make things difficult for you.” Red Qi looked at her a little

embarrassingly. “It’s just that this is an order from the king. Of course, we are certain that you’re not a bad person. However, we have no choice but to first bring you back.”

“Little sister, don’t be afraid.” Yellow Qi immediately added. “I shall bring you somewhere else to live for a few days, and simply ask you a few questions. Once the questions are done, if you want to see the sceneries, big brother can bring you around.”

As expected, they were here to capture her! It seemed like though the effects of the World Favourable Impression ability were incredible, they were still not as effective as the times in the Lower Realm. Though these two people were courteous to her, they were not treating her well for no reason.

Left without a choice, Zhu Yao could only follow them. She did not dare to do anything in another person’s territory either. Furthermore, she was just a Profound Deity while those two had the cultivation comparable to Heavy Deities. They could turn her into dust whenever they wanted.

“Oh right. Little sister, have you seen a six-winged Demonic Immortal with a pitch-black body?” Yellow Qi suddenly asked.

Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. Sesame?

“He looks like this when transformed into a human.” Seeing her dazed look, Yellow Qi materialized the man’s image in the air.

As expected, it was Sesame. Her heart trembled a little, and then she calmly shook her head. “I’ve just arrived here, I’ve never seen it.” Seeing the two of their frowns, she casually asked. “Who is this beast? Why are you two looking for it?”

A disgusted look instantly flashed past Yellow’s and Red’s face, and Red Qi even let out a cold snort as he ruthlessly said. “This beast is simply the shame of our Demonic Immortal Continent. He’s the model of betrayals! Our princess loves him so dearly so, yet he actually discarded her and fled the wedding in front of

everyone. That's why our great king issued an order to the entire Demonic Immortal Continent to capture him and judge him for his sins!"

"Ou..." Zhu Yao nodded, and then she intentionally made her voice heavier. "Discard huh... That's truly a scummy beastie." She never expected that Sesame had such a honourable status.

"Of course not!" Sesame grew anxious, as it began to bounce up and down in her divine sense. "This daddy here basically doesn't like her, alright? I don't want to marry a two-legged beastie."

Yellow and Red began to exchange condemnations on him as well.

"Right? Our princess is the number one beauty of Demonic Immortal Continent, you know? Yet he still could make the heartless decision to abandon her. Just by this point alone, we can't endure it at all!"

"That's right, that's right!" Yellow Qi responded as well. "It doesn't even want the number one beauty. How can single puppies like us live then?"

"Does he think it's easy for beasties like us to find wives!? This daddy here has cultivated for hundred thousand years since my time in the Lower Realm, and I have yet to touch a female beastie's paw. On what basis did he reject her!?"

"You've only cultivated for a hundred thousand years. I've already cultivated for more than a few hundred thousand years. Let alone a beast paw, there's barely been any opportunities for me to strike conversations with one."

"Haah, I really wish to find a female beastie to chat about life and talk about my ideals with."

"Haah, I really wish to find a female beastie and bring her home for the holidays and the New Year's!"

Zhu Yao: "... So the beast world was actually facing a serious

single population problem.

## Chapter 354: Sesame is Trash

---

It was the second day since Zhu Yao arrived at Demonic Immortal Continent, and only then did she realize that she actually hadn't turned back into that divine sword yet. Logically speaking, since her master had explicitly said that he would only place her inside the storage mystic artifact for three seconds, one and two seconds were fine, but he definitely wouldn't go past three seconds. However, right now, let alone three seconds, three hundred, three thousand, and even more than thirty thousand seconds had passed. Yet, she was still staying in her body live and well.

This could only prove that either her guess was incorrect and had played herself, or... she was too far and the signal had been cut off. In any case, she wouldn't be returning to that sword anytime soon. She did not know if this was good news or bad news, but being locked here definitely wasn't good news in any way. After the two Demonic Immortals brought her to the Demonic Immortal Palace, they simply threw her into jail. What happened to the promise of becoming friends!?

"Little sister, after the investigation is over, we can see each other again~" Leaving those words, the yellow and red Demonic Immortals waved their sleeves and left, leaving their beloved behind.

cao !

The hell!

Zhu Yao stayed in the jail that was filled with formations for two days, yet no one came to investigate her. It wouldn't do if things kept on like this. She had to get out. Though she wouldn't be able to leave the Demonic Immortal Continent, she should still send her master a message and report about her wellbeing.

"Sesame, have you studied this formation before?" She looked at

the surrounding formations for a long while, yet she was still unable to determine their properties. Left with no choice, she sought Sesame, who was familiar with the terrain, for help. That's right. She wanted to break out of prison.

"Mistress, Sesame doesn't know either. However, the formations of Demonic Immortal Palace are very unique. Even the strongest of Demonic Immortals won't be able to break out of them." Sesame replied, its voice faintly carried a small amount of pride.

"Are you certain?"

"Of course. I heard that the formations here were all constructed by the former Demonic Immortal Palace's Demon King, and they're run with bloodlines. No one... Ehhh!?" Before he could even finish, Zhu Yao stood up, patted off the dust on her robes, and walked straight out. Easily, and without any pressure at all. Sesame looked like he had just seen something illogical. "Mistress, how did you get out?"

"Didn't you say that all Demonic Immortals aren't able to get out?" Zhu Yao clicked her tongue. "I'm not a Demonic Immortal." What does formations that are placed down with bloodline restrictions have to do with me!?

"..." The Demon King is going to cry in the toilet.

Though Zhu Yao had gotten out, she did not dare to leave the prison gates so casually. The formations inside were all duds, but the entrance was being tightly guarded by large number of troops. Before she even release her divine sense, she sensed the might of Gold Deities standing on the left and right of the entrance. Charging out with brute force was not an option. Furthermore, the Realm Tide would only end a year later, so even if she got out of here, she wouldn't be able to return to Lightning Divine Palace. For a moment, she did not know what to do.

"Mistress, go south then." Sesame suddenly suggested.



“Why?”

Sesame paused for a moment, before he gently said. “Because... I have a friend over there. He’s incredible. He might know of other methods to enter the Deity Continent.”

“Really?” Zhu Yao felt suspicious.

“Of course it’s true.”

She sized up Sesame who was in her divine sense. “A beastie like you has a friend too?”

“... Mis... tress!” Though this one doesn’t have any morals, I still have the rights to make friends, alright!? “How can you be so unconfident of your beastie, I’m after all still...”

“Stop talking nonsense!” Zhu Yao immediately interrupted it. “Let’s first figure out how to leave.”

Zhu Yao felt a little troubled. When comparing martial strength, she definitely wouldn’t be able to defeat them, and her reinforcements were even a few thousand kilometers away. Not to mention, this place was the Demonic Immortal Palace, which had the most concentrated numbers of Demonic Immortals. Unless she activated hacks, she shouldn’t even think of leaving.

Ting!

A conversation window suddenly popped out.

The hell, he’s actually truly thinking of giving me hacks, hey!?

The words on the conversation window this time were rather simple and written nicely: Friendship Hack Concealment System (Trial Pack). Activate, or Cancel?

“Concealment!” Zhu Yao grew excited and she immediately tapped on the ‘Activate’ button on the screen.

In the next moment, her body began to fade inch by inch. From her legs, to her waist, and then slowly, her entire body disappeared. After that... poof. Sesame was thrown out.

Zhu Yao: “...”

“Mistress... what’s going on?” Said the flustered Sesame, unaware of situation.

Uh... She didn’t know either! She tried and realized that she wasn’t able to put Sesame back into her divine sense at all. Could this be the limitation of the trial version? The features were too limited, weren’t they?

Before she could figure everything out, Sesame’s cry lured in the guards at the entrance.

“Who is it?” The two Demonic Immortals charged in. They saw Sesame on the ground, and looked as if they had just seen a ghost. “Your highness!”

The hell’s with this ‘your highness’?

While she was in doubt, Sesame had already been neatly tied up like a dumpling.

“Release me, hurry and let me go! I’m a beastie with a master!” Sesame struggled for a long while, yet to no avail. With the two Demonic Immortals holding onto each end of its body, Sesame was carried out.

Since it was after all her family’s beastie, Zhu Yao had no choice but to follow after them.

Because of her concealment hack, she was not discovered along the way. The two Demonic Immortals happily carried Sesame into the highest temple of Demonic Immortal Palace. As they walked, they even shout out their lungs to announce to the entire world. “Hurry and inform the princess! Your highness Sesame has returned!” It lured in a crowd of spectators.

Sesame’s entire face turned green and its struggle grew stronger. “Release me! What are you two greedy beasts going to do to me? I will never go along with it!”

“...” Can you please not drop your morals at a time like this?

However, no matter how it shouted, its cries had no effect. The two Demonic Immortals joyously carried it into a large hall, threw it on the ground, and then knelt to pay their respects. “My king, we discovered your highness Sesame in the heavenly prison earlier, and so we brought him here.”

“Mn.” A mighty voice sounded from above. “Well done. You two may leave.”

Only then did the two Demonic Immortals stand and make their way back, leaving behind Sesame who was tied into a dumpling. Zhu Yao raised her head and saw an elderly with white hair and white beard sitting at the throne above the tall stage. He wore a dark robe, and blood-coloured patterns could be seen embroidered on it. His cultivation level was hard to discern, it was most likely above that of a Heavy Deity. He should be the Demon King that the people spoke of.

He lightly swept his eyes towards the “dumpling” on the ground. Even though she was under concealment, Zhu Yao could still feel the pressure emitted from his body. She could not help but feel worried that he was going to do something to Sesame.

“Stinky brat, you’re finally back...” He lightly spoke up and then walked down the stage. An unseeming smile raised from the corners of his lips. “It’s the second time now.”

“The hell, if you have the guts, then release this daddy!” Sesame struggled like a fish that had been washed ashore. “Old man, give up. I will never marry that precious daughter of yours.”

The Demon King’s expression darkened, frowning. He raised Sesame up and furiously said. “You’ve already gone down to the Lower Realm twice, yet why can’t you just learn how to be obedient? As long as you agree to marrying Gong Lan, this position of the Demon King would be yours.”

“You sound as though I really want it.” Sesame rolled its eyes. “This daddy doesn’t like her, and so I don’t want to marry her. I like to be unrestrained and free.”

The Demon King’s expression sank, but he patiently continued to persuade Sesame. “What’s bad about Gong Lan? You two grew up together since young, and you two even ascended together. Just how is she unworthy of you?”

“Everything about her is unworthy of me?” Sesame continued to be stubborn. “I don’t want to marry a two-legged beastie.”

“You...” The Demon King became furious. “Gong Lan is of the feathered race! Have you ever seen a feathered race with four legs?”

“I don’t care!” Sesame said with a shameless look. “I don’t like two-legged people. I only want to marry a little sister of the same race...”

“You... You’re basically being heartless, unreasonable, and nonsensical!”

“You’re the heartless, unreasonable, and nonsensical one!”

“No matter how heartless I am...”

Uhh... why are things developing in such a strange direction, hey?

Wow! Looking at these two’s informal manner of talking, their relationship isn’t that bad as I thought? It seemed like she was worried for nothing.

“Your race is hard to come by in the first place. Since you really want to find someone from the same race that much...” The corner of the Demon King’s lips twitched, and it looked as though he wished he come bash him up at this moment. He panted heavily and said. “Then find me one!”

“I found one.” Sesame’s eyes instantly shone.

“What?”

Sesame signaled him to release its bindings. The Demon King hesitated for a moment. Seeing that it wouldn't play any tricks in front of him, he released his bindings with a wave of his hand. With a flip of its hand, Sesame instantly brought out an enormous egg next to him.

Zhu Yao was stunned. It was that Spirit Guiding Beast's egg from the Lower Realm. The chap Sesame really brought it to the Higher Realm.

Hugging onto it like it was treasure, Sesame said with shining eyes. “Look, old man! This egg has the same aura as mine. I found it in the Lower Realm. It definitely is of the same race as me.”

“An egg like this!?” The Demon King frowned. Just as he wanted to comment further, a Demonic Immortal entered and reported. “My king, Princess Lan wishes to see you.”

Zhu Yao clearly saw Sesame trembling for a moment. Its two hands that were initially tightly holding onto the egg even loosened a little, as though it subconsciously wanted to hide. Is the female lead about to make her appearance? Zhu Yao became excited. After realizing that the Demon King did not have ill intentions for Sesame, she unconsciously fell into drama-watching mode.

“Allow her in.” The Demon King hesitated for a moment, before he said with a wave of his hand.

In just a few moments, footsteps could be heard from the entrance. A handsome and heroic-looking woman entered. She was dressed in a battle armor, as though she had yet to have the time to remove them. There wasn't any other expressions on her face. With a calm look and an upright stance, her entire body was radiating with unspeakable might.

So... So cool!

Even Zhu Yao could not help but give her praise. She had never seen a woman who could be this handsome before. Seeing how Sesame was rejecting this princess so intensely earlier, she even thought that the princess had very terrible looks. In reality, not only wasn't the girl ugly, she was actually this handsome.

Sesame, are you blind?

Gong Lan slowly walked in, her eyes narrowed at Sesame on the side. However, it had only been for an instant, and she turned her eyes away right after. Claspng her hands, she greeted the Demon King. "Your daughter pays respects to father."

"Raise your head, raise your head." Compared to Sesame, the Demon King was clearly being gentle, like the drizzling rain in spring, towards this princess. He personally went up to hold her up. "How's your mission to Cold Imperial Forest this time? Are you injured anywhere?"

"Thank you, father, for your concern." She replied with a serious look. "Fortunately, I have already restrained the Sharpice Beast, and it's now being sent to the heavenly prison."

"Good, good, good." The Demon King grinned as he patted on Gong Lan's shoulder. "It's great that you're back. Coincidentally, Sesame is here as well. Let's use this opportunity to set up your marriage ceremony then."

Gong Lan was stunned. Sesame however immediately exploded. "Are you serious!? Old man, you have gone crazy! I already told you so many times that this daddy here doesn't like her one bit! I don't want to marry her."

"Shut your mouth!" The Demon King glared at him. "This matter will not be discussed. Even if you don't want to, you have to."

"This daddy here isn't going to marry. If you have the guts, then kill me."

"Do you think I don't dare to!?"

“Come then!”

Watching the two about to turn their verbal argument into a physical conflict, with a frown, Gong Lan arched her body and said to the Demon King. “May I request my king to cancel his marriage with me.”

“What?” The Demon King was shocked. He looked at Gong Lan with eyes of disbelief. “You... Ever since you were young, didn’t you wish... Lan’er, you must think over this carefully, don’t make such decisions in haste. Don’t worry, if this brat dares to bully you in the future, this old man will be the first one to beat him up.”

Gong Lan turned to look at Sesame with a complicated expression. Heavy-hearted, she looked as though she was concealing many things that could not be put into words. Looking at Sesame’s slight shiver, she awkwardly turned her head back.

She shook her head with a light smile. “No need. It’s all playful banter from our younger days, it can’t be treated as real. Now... Let’s treat it as though this engagement has never happened.”

“Lan’er...”

“Father!” Gong Lan still continued with a humble tone. “He’ve gone down to the Lower Realm twice. He has already paid a suitable price. Even if we continue to push him regarding this matter, what’s the point?”

The Demon King sank into silence.

“This... You said it yourself.” Sesame weakly leapt up. “You musn’t regret it! I will be leaving now. You’re not allowed to chase after me.”

Gong Lan turned to glance at him, the complicated feelings in her eyes had already disappeared, becoming clearer than before. “Your highness, be well.”

Sesame choked, as though it had just heard something that he it could hardly believe. It’s face was filled with complications.

“Stinky brat! You want to run now? Do you think it will be that easy?” The Demon King was furious, looking as though he wanted to settle some debts. However, Gong Lan stopped him.

Sesame sprinted out of the large hall and left the Demon King’s palace without turning back. Because it was too sudden, Sesame had even forgotten that it could fly. Zhu Yao had almost lost track of it, and when she caught up, Sesame was already lying tired on the ground, panting like a dog. However, a gleeful smile was all over its face, looking as though it had struck a jackpot. “Hahahaha... I finally no longer have to marry that ugly thing! Awesome! Mistress... Mistress...” It danced about for a long while, and then began to look around for Zhu Yao. Though it couldn’t see her, as a contracted beast, it could still sense that she was by its side. Mistress, hurry and come out. Accompany this beastie in its joy.

Just as Zhu Yao was about to cancel the concealment buff on the top right corner of her peripheral vision, a red figure suddenly flashed in front of her. Gong Lan who was still in the large hall earlier suddenly appeared. Sesame was shocked, and then it looked at her cautiously. “You... What do you want now!? I’m telling you... you were the one who said that you wanted to cancel the engagement. Don’t... Don’t even think of regretting your decision! I don’t like you one bit...”

Gong Lan did not speak. She simply passed Sesame a pearl-like bead.

“What is this?” Sesame was confused.

“Tasyoluk.”

Zhu Yao blanked. Tasyoluk? Isn’t that the Secret Realm where I first met Sesame?

Gong Lan gently said. “This is something your mother gave me back then. When you were punished and thrown down to the Lower Realm back then, I had it follow you to the Lower Realm.



When you returned the first time, I had it return. Now... Since it's something that belonged to you in the first place, I'm returning it to you."

"..." Sesame was dumbfounded for a moment. It hesitantly looked at the bead in her hand, as though it did not know if it should take it back.

Gong Lan however simply stuffed it in its hands. "Father is already at the level of a late-stage High Deity. In just a few more years, he will have to head to the Lightning Divine Palace and enter the tower. He doesn't have much time left here... You should come back to see him more often. After all, you are the one who truly harbours his blood." Immediately after, she turned around and materialized a pair of enormous red wings. With a flap of her wings, she did not hesitate, disappearing without a trace.

Sesame held onto the bead and stayed motionless for a short while.

A moment later, it then spoke with a blank expression. "Mistress, I... why do I feel so uncomfortable?"

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at it.

"Hoho... Trash!"

# Chapter 355: Realm Escaping Godly Artifact

---

Sesame was really depressed. It clearly did not like Gong Lan, yet when it saw her return the dimensional space that its mother had given her and then leave without a single shred of hesitation, its heart felt numbed, sour, and it even ached a little.

It completely did not understand this situation at all, not to mention it had no experience on this either. It thus decided to seek Zhu Yao, its mistress who had abundant experience, for guidance. However, its mistress, who had always been considerably kind and reasonable, was looking at it with scornful eyes. For a short while, her glare made the hair all around its beastly body to stand. She then chuckled with an ambiguous smile, and patted strongly on its head. With a solemn voice, she said. “Sesame, male chauvinism is a disease which must be cured!”

What is male chauvinism? Why are mistress’s words always so deep and profound? I can’t understand at all, hey!

Zhu Yao sighed. Looking at how Sesame wouldn’t understand even if it scratched its head off, she said. “Let’s put it this way then. Why don’t you want to marry her?”

“Naturally, it’s because our races are different. How can we...”

“Speak the truth!” Zhu Yao interrupted it. Don’t even think about using the matter of having two legs and four legs to fool me. Even the Demon King doesn’t believe such words, alright?

Sesame lowered its head, and after a while, it said with a low voice. “I’m... I’m a little... afraid of her.”

“Afraid?” Now this is fresh and new.

“You don’t know how scary she can be.” Sesame complained. “When my mother picked her up, she scratched and tore my face. Because she was a rank higher than me, she bullied me since we were young. When I was young, I was always beaten and injured

by her. After that, when I finally managed to ascend, the moment I make a mistake, she would still beat me up. Just because her cultivation is higher than mine, she thinks she's incredible! Hmph! I don't want to marry a female beastie like that!"

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. You can't even beat a woman, and you're trying to reason with it?

"Then she doesn't have anything good points?" Zhu Yao felt doubtful. "Has she never helped you?"

"Never!" He said angrily. "She would only complain about me in front of my old man, and then they would beat me up together. Yet, both father and mother like her, and pays more attention to her. She's simply sinister, sly, and shameless..."

"Are you certain?"

"I'm certain!" Sesame gritted its teeth. Suddenly, as though it had thought of something, it muttered. "Unless... her preventing others from beating me counts as a good point."

"Others? What do you mean?" Oh, juicy details. Let's take out a chair.

"In any case... In any case, not only does she beat me up, she beat up other beasts too. She doesn't allow other beasts to cause trouble for me either." He frowned and said. "She made everyone afraid of her, and I end up not having a single friend, no matter if it was in the Higher Realm or the Lower Realm. It's all her fault."

Zhu Yao sized Sesame up for a moment, as though this was her first time seeing such a wonderful piece of work.

"Sesame..."

"Ah?"

"Do you have a brain?" That was clearly a protective behaviour, alright? Didn't he know how cruel the world of demonic beasts in the Lower Realm was? Because of the lack of sentience, beasties

would always fight each other for territories and power. With just the slightest bit of discord, it would be a fight to the death, alright? Yet it still wanted to make friends with other beasts. You're an idiot, aren't you?

You have a good girl that protects you wherever you are, and you still have the face to despise her?

"Sesame, I think we should just cancel our pact! I'm afraid that a beastie like you will influence my intelligence."

"Mistress..." Sesame made a distressed look. "This one is truly pitiful."

"Scram." Trash, don't infect my master. "Aren't we going to the south to find your friend?" She diverted the topic.

"Mn." He helplessly responded.

"You can't figure out this matter within a short time, and when it comes to feelings and relationships, outsiders can't interfere. Why don't we instead make a move while you think things through?" Zhu Yao looked at it and said. "But you must figure it out yourself. Do you really hate that Gong Lan that much? To the point where you don't want to see her at all? You need to understand this... There are some things that can't be found again after missing it once."

She did not know about Sesame's thoughts, but that handsome woman earlier did not look like a beast that would treat feelings that casually. She must actually liked Sesame very much, which was why she wanted to marry Sesame. However, with its continual rejections of their marriage, Zhu Yao was afraid that it had already harmed her deeply. One's heart was not invulnerable after all, it could not endure damages over and over again. If Sesame were to miss this opportunity, even if it were to turn back in the future, it would most likely be too late.

Sesame was silent for a while, and then, as though to evade the

topic, it turned away its eyes. “Mistress’s matters are more important. Let us head south.” As it said that, it turned into its original form and lowered one of its wings, hinting her to climb onto its back.

Zhu Yao sighed and climbed up. Right after, Sesame rose into the air. However, it was clearly a little absent-minded this time. Though it did not slow down, it had clearly activated auto-pilot mode.

“Sesame, there’s a stone wall in front. If you continue in this direction, we will crash.”

“Sesame, there are lightning clouds up front. Do you want to be fried?”

“Sesame, there’s a Demonic Immortal ahead. Do you want to be involved in a car crash?”

“Sesame...”

Even with her constant reminders, it could not stop its death-courting heart. Fortunately, she still had the concealment hack which prevented her from being discovered by the Demonic Immortals. Otherwise, she would have long been caught several times over. Sesame was absent-minded the entire journey, stumbling towards their destination.

She wondered just how incredible its friend was, but in the end, they stopped next to a straw cottage. There was a courtyard in front, and it was entirely empty. Not even a single strand of weed could be seen either. The door of the straw cottage creaked as the wind blew, and the word “poor” could only be used to describe the place.

Though the surroundings were surrounded by mountains and rivers, divine energy was in abundance as well. The environment was pretty decent.

Sesame landed on the ground and took up its human form. It

then directly pushed the door open and entered. Zhu Yao followed behind it, but the house was empty without a single figure in sight.

“He’s not here.” Sesame looked around, a little disappointed. However, when it turned its head, it saw a black club on the table. “Eh? This is... Mistress, mistress. Come and take a look.” It suddenly said with an excited look. “With this, you will be able to cross the Realm Tide and return to the Deity Continent.”

“What is this?” Zhu Yao glanced at the object in its hand. It was metallic and had a cylindrical shape, however, it did not have any divine energy circulating around it. It did not look like a divine artifact, and was rather normal without anything unique about it.

“This is an ancient mechanism formation.” Sesame glanced at the club as it focused its senses on it. It then made a few creaking sounds, as though something had been activated. With a swoosh, the cylindrical object that was still just an arm length earlier, suddenly began to pull open. In just a few moments, it wrapped Sesame up.

“Sesame!” Zhu Yao was shocked.

“I’m fine.” It responded. The creaking noises sounded once more, and then, that black sheet once again returned to its cylindrical shape. “Mistress, with this, the wind blades of the Realm Tide can be shielded against, and we can return to the Deity Continent.”

“How do you know that this object is useful?” Sesame sized up the club for a moment. It sure looked like a mechanism technique and not constructed by divine arts. It was no wonder it did not have any divine energy.

“I saw my friend use it once.” Sesame explained. “This thing is really sturdy, the wind blades basically aren’t able to damage it at all. Also, it’s not a divine artifact, so it wouldn’t be dispelled by the Presenceless wind blades.”

It sounded really incredible. “Then what are we waiting for?”

Let's go!"

Zhu Yao pulled Sesame out of the door.

Eh! Wait a minute.

"It's not good to just take it away like this, right?" Why did she feel a little guilty as though she had stolen something?

"It's fine!" Sesame patted on its chest and guaranteed. "In any case, he has a lot of things, so he won't mind."

"..." To actually make friends with someone like Sesame, it sure is that person's three lives' worth of misfortune!

# Chapter 356: Go and Seek Abuse, Young Man!

---

The two returned to the borders of the realm, the wind blades there were still slicing the air resoundingly. Before this, she did not feel anything unique about the wind. This time, she unconsciously released her divine sense, only to realize that her divine sense would scatter automatically the moment it were to make contact with the wind blades. As expected of the all-purpose DEL key.

“Let’s go.” Zhu Yao stepped towards Sesame, signalling it to activate that strange machine in its hand.

After waiting a short while, she realized there wasn’t any response. When Zhu Yao turned back to look, it was actually in a daze. This restless idiot could actually be in a daze too!

She had no choice but to knock her fist onto its head. “What are you doing? Open it!” After all, she recalled that there were two guards, one red and one yellow, nearby. What if they were discovered if they dragged this out?

Sesame choked from her knock, as though it had only regained senses just now. “Ah!? Ou!” It responded and then twisted the black tube in its hand. With a few swooshes, a black metallic ball instantly appeared around them, enveloping them inside.

Zhu Yao thought that it would be really dark inside, but unexpectedly, it was actually transparent when looking out from inside. Everything in the surroundings could be clearly seen. She could not help but poke the fabric, and its sturdiness was comparable to scales. In Sesame’s hand, what remained was a black square block, similar to a small toy block.

“This is the formation core. Pressing on it will revert everything back to its original form.” Sesame explained.

“Ou.” Zhu Yao nodded. She did not say much, and simply



continued to walk forward. Sesame immediately caught up to her. As they moved, the entire defensive cover moved forward as well. It was rather intuitive. Zhu Yao became a little excited. After all, this was advanced technology! It was a little similar to the technology used in the modern era. It seemed like ancient mechanisms were not limited to just sudoku and gomoku!

They walked directly into the Realm Tide and realized that this defensive cover was really functional. When the wind blades struck it, they would immediately scatter without even making a single echo. Occasionally there would be strong winds, but all they result to were soft and dull thuds.

Zhu Yao's cautiousness instantly dissipated. She did not know how long the Realm Tide was, and she wanted to get back as fast as possible, but she realized that a certain beastie holding onto the switch was walking slower by the minute. Occasionally, it would turn its head to the back, and then back to the front right after, looking as though it was hesitating about something. Their hurrying pace turned into a light walk, and then finally, comparable to a turtle's crawl.

Zhu Yao decided to simply stop and let out a deep sigh. "Sesame!"  
"Ah?"

"Come over here." Zhu Yao picked up the person next to her, turned around and walked back towards the direction they came from. When they walked out of the Realm Tide and arrived at their starting point, she grabbed the switch from its hand and had it return to its cylindrical shape. She then pointed in the direction of the Demonic Immortal Palace and said. "Go back. I will head to Lightning Divine Palace on my own."

"Mistress..." Sesame was stunned for a moment, and then immediately showed a pitiful look. "Are you going to abandon beastie again?"

"Scram!" Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. "If you're unwilling to let her

go, then go back to her on your own and admit your mistake. It's fine even if you have to shed off your thick skin, after all, you specialize in it. If you like her, then go f\*\*king woo her back! With how you're being so wishy-washy and hesitant over here, can you still call yourself a man?"

"Of course not!" Sesame said with a serious look. "I'm not a man, I'm a male beastie."

"..." The hell! "Is this the time to mind such details? This old lady here wants you to make a decision, don't divert the topic here. You're making my head hurt. Just tell me if you like Gong Lan or not?"

Sesame's entire face crumpled, looking sad and confused. "I... I don't know either. I... really hate her."

"Just because she's stronger than you, and she bullied you when you were young?" Zhu Yao rolled her eyes.

"Mn." Sesame's head lowered even further, and a moment later, it replied with a solemn voice. "Even after we're older, the bullying didn't end..."

Zhu Yao let out a deep sigh. This idiot with low EQ. "Sesame, have you ever wondered why you're so mindful about her treatment towards you?"

It was stunned for a moment, and then it raised its head.

Zhu Yao said with a sunken voice. "You're a demonic beast. In order to become a Demonic Immortal, you will definitely have to experience a large number of fights and slaughter. She's not the only one who has been beating you up, right? Why do you solely hate her then?"

"That's different." Sesame argued.

"What's different?"

"I'm not familiar with other beasties, so I don't even care about

hating them. Furthermore, in the end, I'm the one who ended up beating them up later on."

"Then what about me?" Zhu Yao looked at it. "I'm stronger than you too, and I beat you up a lot as well. Do you hate me?"

"That doesn't count, you're my mistress! We have a contract."

"Fine!" Zhu Yao nodded. "Then how about my master? He utterly abuses you whenever he sees you, do you hate him?"

"I do hate him!"

Zhu Yao sent a slap towards it. "This old lady here is being serious."

Sesame pitifully rubbed its head. It was being serious though?

"Then let me put it another way." Zhu Yao said with a low voice. "Gong Lan girly is indeed stronger than you, but it's not like you can't catch up to her cultivation level. If there comes a day where your cultivation surpasses hers, what are you going to do?"

"Of course it's to beat her." Sesame's eyes shone.

"And then?"

"And then..." Sesame frowned. After pondering for a moment, it said. "And then... And then, I will do everything she had once done to me."

"Like?"

"Like snatching away her enemies and chasing away all of her opponents, so that she won't ever get the opportunity to make a move again. Then, I will chase away all the male beasties that approach her! How dare they often show off their might in front of me. Everyday, they would stare at her, and whenever she encounter some trouble, they would immediately charge out, not giving her any opportunity to enjoy the limelight. Then I will..." He then stopped halfway through, as though he sensed something was amiss with his words. His face blanked.

Zhu Yao smiled, as she directly lay its thoughts bare. “You want to protect her.”

“...” Its eyes suddenly widened, its face was filled with utter disbelief. How’s that possible? I’m not...

“Have you ever seriously thought about why you’re specifically treating Gong Lan so differently?” Zhu Yao continued. “You said that you hated how she would always charge right out in front of you, hated how she stole your limelight, and hated how her cultivation level is higher than yours. These reasons were all due to your cultivation being weaker than hers. If your cultivation level is higher, then you would do the same for her. You’re just dissatisfied that the person charging right at the front isn’t you. You don’t dislike her, you just dislike the feeling of hiding behind her. Sesame, you actually don’t hate her. You just hate the powerless you, right?”

“...” It turned silent, looking absent-minded as though it had sunk into a daze.

When it came to such a dense person, Zhu Yao had no choice but to throw another piece of wood into the fire. “But, you don’t have to worry about it now. She has already decided to draw a clear line between the both of you. In the future, no one else will charge out in front of you, no one else will steal your timeline, and no one will beat you up again... Oh, of course.” She smiled and continued. “She might do it again in the future, but... the beastie behind her will no longer be you.”

“No!” Sesame looked anxious.

“Why not? The number of female beasties among the Demonic Immortals is very few. Without you, she still has a lot more choices. Most likely, she can find one that’s stronger than you, and in the future, there will be someone else protecting her.”

“I can too!” Sesame anxiously argued. “My cultivation had long caught up to hers. But because I had been going down to the Lower

Realm... As long as I recover..."

"So what if you recover? She doesn't care anymore."

"..." Its face instantly paled.

"Sesame..." Zhu Yao patted on its shoulders. After all, it was still her family's beastie, so she could not endure seeing it stay single for life. "Admit it! What you hate isn't her, but the distance between the two of you! You're afraid that she's too far out of your reach, where you can't catch up to her. What you hate is merely you who hide behind her back, you're afraid of not being worthy of her. However, have you ever thought that she might've just been waiting for you all this while, and that she's standing at a spot where you can reach as long as you turn around? Don't let your self-esteem become the weapon that harms your relationship with her. Once the cut is deep, even she will feel hurt."

"Mistress..." Sesame raised its head, looking even more confused with those teary eyes. "The things you said... I don't understand any of them at all!"

"The hell!" Zhu Yao wanted to pinch it to death. The chicken soup that she had boiled for so long had all gone down the drain.

"Mistress, what should I do?" Sesame looked like it was about to cry. "What if she really find someone else to bully? The moment I imagine such a thing happening... my heart will feel weird... She's so violent, other beasties might not be able to take her blows. Only I can... I don't want her to bully other beasties."

Great, it still could be salvaged!

"Then go and snatch her back." Zhu Yao said. "Go back and hug her thighs. Just do all those shameless things that you had done before to Gong Lan."

"Will that stop her from bullying other beasties?"

Zhu Yao nodded. After pondering for a moment, she however shook her head. This stupid beast that could not make any turns

still needed another push. “That’s still not enough. You must have an well-known identity in order to remove all future troubles forever.”

“What identity?”

“Marry her!”

“.....”

“...”

Sesame was silent for a moment, but its eyes had grown clearer. As though it had understood something, it immediately reverted back to its original form. “Mistress, I can’t accompany you back to Lightning Divine Palace anymore.”

“Mn.” Zhu Yao nodded as she waved her hand. Go and seek abuse, young man!

Sesame flew a circle in the sky. Suddenly, it thought of something and turned back. A gigantic egg instantly appeared in front of Zhu Yao. “Mistress, I will give you this egg then.”

As it said that, it flapped its wings and hurriedly returned. In an instant, its figure disappeared into the distance.

Zhu Yao: “...” Do I look like a warehouse?

---

Zhu Yao turned and looked at the egg next to her. As though she had just figured out something, her expression darkened and she deeply frowned. She looked at the mechanism in her hand, and immediately switched it on. She did not look at the egg behind her and immediately walked into the Realm Tide.

Only when Zhu Yao’s figure was about to disappear into the wind blades did the white egg suddenly move. It hurriedly rolled after her, and then, after reaching about three steps away from her, it steadily followed her pace.

Zhu Yao naturally heard the noises behind her, but did not care

about it, nor did she even turn around to look at it. She increased her pace into the Realm Tide, but the frown her face had grown even deeper.

As I thought...

The Realm Tide was very wide. Adding that she could not cast any arts nor fly on her sword, Zhu Yao walked for exactly six hours before she was able to see green spots in front of her. She was finally reaching the other end, and she heaved a sigh of relief. Increasing her pace, she walked out and arrived a familiar yet foreign forest.

She walked a short distance away from the Realm Tide before releasing the defensive cover and have it return to its cylindrical shape. That white egg came rolling out of the Realm Tide as well, stopping about three steps away from here still.

Zhu Yao simply felt a little irritated in the depths of her heart. As she could not fly on a sword, she cast an art and sped into the forest. However, no matter how fast or slow she went, the egg still continued to follow her while keeping the same distance between them, without letting up a single bit.

Finally, Zhu Yao could not endure it any longer and stop at the exit of the forest. Letting out a long sigh, she said. “Just how long are you going to follow me...” She turned around and looked at the egg. “Yue Ying.”

The egg stiffened for a moment, stopping in its track.

A moment later, a black light flashed in Zhu Yao’s hand, as that cylindrical mechanism turned into a ray of black light and entered the egg. The initially white egg slowly turned black and the egg that merely had a soft aura earlier suddenly began to contain the essence of life. Lines of cracks grew along the shell while making creaking sounds, and a pitch-black Phoenix appeared from it right after.

In the next moment, that black Phoenix turned into a familiar young boy. Dressed in black clothes, he was extremely skinny, as though he was that Yue Ying who had just gotten out of the iceberg for the first time, while at the same time, he looked similar to the Shao Bai who walked out of the place that was filled with devillic energy. He opened his mouth, as though he wanted to say something.

However, Zhu Yao did not want to hear it. She did not feel bothered to care, simply turning around and going on her way.

Yue Ying lowered his eyes with slight disappointment. He did not voice out his sadness, yet he did not dare to fall behind, following after her from afar. If she hurried, he would too, and if she slowed down, he would slow down by the same pace, as though he did not existed.

Zhu Yao intentionally chose the hardest paths to walk. From flipping over large rocks to stepping across swamps. In the end, she was the only one who tired herself, while a certain someone was still keeping pace with her. Yet, she could not vent out the fury in her heart, and merely chose to ignore him.

She walked for a day and a night, before finally spotting a small town in front of her. She instantly heaved a sigh of relief. She decided to find a transportation tool, and even if she couldn't fly on her own, she should still make a call... Ah pui, she meant using a voice transmission talisman to inform her master to pick her up.

The town was pitifully small, with only about four stalls set up on the street. There wasn't one that sold voice transmission talismans, though there was one that was selling divine artifacts. She chose the weakest first rank divine sword, and when she touched her pocket, she realized she was a poor beggar.

"Dear senior." The stall owner was an Earth Deity, and he was rather courteous. "It's fine if you don't have any divine stones, you can exchange it with something of similar value."



“Exchange?” They actually offered exchange services.

“Heheh, this is a small business after all.” The stall owner had a wonderful thought in his mind. As his customer was a Profound Deity, someone who was a rank higher than he was, she definitely must have a couple of good items. He might even be able to make a profit. “I’ve just opened the stall today. As long as senior has something to trade, anything can be exchanged.”

A true poor beggar – Zhu Yao! She touched all around her body, yet she couldn’t even take out a single piece of hair. Did she really have to walk back to Lightning Divine Palace on foot? Her legs would break, right? She turned around and glanced at the “tail” behind her. Frowning, she once again confirmed with him. “Can I really exchange anything?”

“Of course!” The stall owner patted on his chest and guaranteed.

“Alright then!” Zhu Yao turned around and walked towards the tail behind her. While the stall owner had an excited glow in his eyes, she hugged the tail up and placed it on the stall table. “I shall exchange it with this child then. In any case, we’re not blood-related.”

# Chapter 357: Let's Chat About Life

---

Countless 'what the hell' ran across the stall owner's mind. You're playing me for a fool?

"Se... Senior..."

"You can't?"

"This... This is..."

"He's a Phoenix! A God race, you know?" Zhu Yao said with a stern look, though it was a black one.

"Hoho... Senior, you're joking." Don't think because you have a high cultivation level, I don't dare to beat you up, hey!

"If you don't want to make the exchange, then fine!" Zhu Yao pouted, and then her tone changed. "Then I will give him to you." After saying that, she turned around and left.

"..." The stall owner was utterly confused. Someone, come over here! There's an unfeeling beast throwing away her child!

When Zhu Yao was about to walk out of the town, the child that was still obediently sitting on the stall table earlier leapt up and followed after her.

After this ruckus, the fury in Zhu Yao's heart quelled by about half. As expected, bullying people is the best way to reduce stress!

---

With her anger vented, Zhu Yao felt that she could make a calm and peaceful conversation now. After rushing a certain distance out of the town, she then went to the side and meditated a little to regulate her energy. Just like that, four hours went past, and her cultivation seemed to have faint traces of making a breakthrough. It looked like in short while, she would be able to become a Gold Deity.

She then turned around to look at the child that was a

considerable distance away from her and sighed. “Speak, what happened?” Use this opportunity while I’m still calm.

Yue Ying raised his head, looking as though he could not believe that she would actually start a conversation. His eyes reddened and the reflection of the tears shone. Carrying a heavy nasal sound, he called out. “Big sis... Yao.”

The irritation in Zhu Yao’s heart once again slaughtered its way back in. Taking a deep breath, she continued. “You were in that egg the entire time?”

A hint of anxiety flashed across his face, but he still nodded. “Mn.”

“When did you get together with Sesame?” Zhu Yao’s eyes turned cold, frowning. “You two worked together to fool me?”

“No, not that...” He became even more anxious and shook his head strongly, looking as though he was about to cry.

Zhu Yao took a deep breath as waves of anger emitted out from the depths of her heart. If Sesame did not intentionally leave the egg with her, she wouldn’t have linked the egg with Yue Ying, which was why she purposefully left the egg on its own then. When it began rolling to her on its own, she finally ascertained her guess.

Back then, when Sesame woke up and saw her body, its first reaction wasn’t actually to wait in Lightning Divine Palace for her master, but instead bring her all the way to the Demonic Immortal Continent for help. She felt it was strange. In this Higher Realm, who had cultivation higher than her master or the Floor Master, to the point where Sesame would unhesitantly bring her over?

Furthermore, Sesame clearly said that because of its relationship with Gong Lan, it did not have a single beastie friend. Yet, it mentioned that it had a friend in the south and that it knew of a way to go across the Realm Tide. Wasn’t this a contradiction? Most

likely, the so-called friend it wanted to look for in the Demonic Immortal Continent was Yue Ying himself.

And I actually went my way to help it woo its beloved. To think that it would join forces with someone else to trick me. That ungrateful beast!

However, what she could not figure out was how Yue Ying ended up being inside the egg the entire time. After all, the egg had always been with Sesame.

“What’s with that mechanism?” She suddenly thought of the black cylindrical object that protected her through the Realm Tide.

“Big sis Yao...” Yue Ying raised his head and replied a little anxiously. “I... wanted to find big sis, but I wasn’t able to... So I thought of a way to cross realms and head to the Divine Realm. I know for a fact that no matter what happens... big sis will definitely find the Sovereign.” His expression darkened, looking a little powerless. “Just that, something happened during the realm crossing.”

Zhu Yao’s heart sank, an answer faintly appeared in her mind and her heart began to ache all of a sudden. However, she immediately reminded herself not to be soft.

“And then?”

Seeing that she still had a calm look, Yue Ying lowered his head in disappointment. Glancing at the corner of her robe, he tightly clenched his fist to suppress the impulse of tugging it. “The World Crossing Door can only stay open for a limited time. Because I couldn’t make it in time, I could only detach my soul. My soul came up, but my body was still left behind with Sesame in the Lower Realm.”

“That’s why you turned into an egg?” Did all God races have emergency management mechanism implanted in them? Back then, during Yi Ling’s instance, that stupid Dragon which smashed

her to death reverted back to its egg form to recover after being injured as well. How did Yue Ying know about this method too? She finally understood how Yue Ying, who still harboured the trash spirit veins back then, could cross realms and enter the Divine Realm. Most likely, the reason was not limited to him turning into a Devil, but because he harboured Shao Bai's memories and had even recovered his status as a God race. This was also why he was a Phoenix when he popped out of the egg earlier. "The mechanism that protected me across the Realm Tide was materialized from your soul?"

"Mn." He obediently nodded.

It was no wonder Sesame had to head over to the Demonic Immortal Continent. Yue Ying was not in his complete form yet.

"Why did Sesame help you? When did the two of you hook up?" Sesame, you traitor. Just you wait.

"In the Spirit Realm." He replied truthfully. "It wanted to find you too, so..."

So you two hooked up into adultery, ah pui! I meant hooked up for a wicked scheme. Sesame knew that Yue Ying was in the egg the entire time, and still hid it from me. Your guts have grown, brat!

She took a deep breath and looked at the anxious Yue Ying. Only then did the fury in her heart slowly dissipate, as she tightened her fists to suppress her rumbling emotions. Actually, she did not know how she should face Yue Ying either. Naturally, she was furious about his actions. Even when she recalled it now, she really wanted to give this troublesome brat a sound beating.

Especially when it came to what he did in the Spirit Realm, her heart would simply turn cold thinking about it.

That was why when she returned from the modern era, she subconsciously did not want to care about his matters anymore.

Even when Sesame intentionally brought him up, she did not want to hear it. However, in the depths of her heart, she understood that escapism was not the way. With his incredibly twisted personality, he would definitely find his way to her sooner or later.

“Yue Ying... I won’t forgive you!” Zhu Yao stared directly at him. “I can never forgive you for what you’ve done in the Spirit Realm.”

His face instantly paled, without a single strand of life to be seen.

“I will never in my life forgive you for wanting to kill little wimp.”

“...” He opened his mouth as though he wanted to say something, but he could not voice it out at all.

Zhu Yao frowned. She stood up and walked straight towards him. Then, she squatted down and looked straight into his eyes that were slowly dyed in despair. With emphasis on every word, she said. “Do you feel sad?”

“...”

“Big sis is really sad too.” At that moment, she could barely control her emotions. “Big sis has always thought that you were a good child. Even if you make mistakes sometimes, I believed you, that it’s fine as long as you mend your ways. But your mistakes continue to grow bigger... to the point where they have pierced my heart cold. I can forgive you for anything. Even when you took my life twice, I can treat them as if those incidents had never happened. However... I can’t accept how you use my name to harm those people who love me the same way I do to them. You are constantly trapped at the same spot, unwilling to take that one step. You enclosed yourself in your own small world, expelling everyone else that approaches it. It looks like you’re only willing to open that door for me... But you aren’t willing to come out yourself. Instead, you think of keeping me inside.”

# Chapter 358: How to Abandon Delusion

## Treatment

---

“...” Biting his lips, his little figure began to tremble.

Zhu Yao however did not want him to continue escaping. “Yue Ying... No, Shao Bai. It’s time for you to grow up. I’ve already told you this many times, that it’s time for you to grow up! You must walk out on your own. In the past, I felt that I could pull you out, but in the end... I’m sorry! There’s nothing I can do now. I can’t forgive your mistakes forever. That’s why, even if you follow me from behind for your entire life, I can never trust you again. It’s because I’m afraid that if I forgive you this time, you will do something that will pierce my heart even deeper next time.”

“Big sis Yao... I’m... I’m wrong.” He raised his head, his eyes were filled with anxiety, regret, and even deep despair. He wanted to grab onto the corner of her robe, but he was afraid that it would make her even angrier.

“I don’t want to hear this.” Zhu Yao shook her head. “I can no longer distinguish truths and lies from your words. However, Yue Ying...” Her expression turned cold, and in an instant, she released a killing intent which he had never seen being emitted from her before. “If there comes a day where you do something similar once more, I won’t mind killing you with my own hands!”

His figure stiffened, as though he could fall at any moment. However, he could not stop Zhu Yao from saying those heartless words.

“That’s why, from now on, I won’t rule out using the most cruelest method to condemn all your actions. You are no longer my little brother, and I don’t want to become your big sister again.”

“Big sis...” His voice was filled with so much despair, that it could scatter with a light breeze.

Zhu Yao let out a deep sigh. “Yue Ying, you’ve disappointed me too much, disappointed me to the point of despair.”

“I... I really know my wrongs now... Big sis Yao, you must believe me...”

Zhu Yao shook her head. “If you really know your wrongs, you wouldn’t plead me to believe you, but prove it with your actions.”

“.....”

“...”

---

After making it clear to Yue Ying, Zhu Yao no longer paid attention to him. Though, she wondered just what was going through his mind, as he still continued to follow after her without making a sound, like a wandering ghost. However, he was no longer that skinny and frail child, instead, he reverted back to the heaven-defying looks that Shao Bai once had.

Zhu Yao wanted to scratch his face in her anger. However, even if she tried to chase him away, he wouldn’t leave, even if she were to scold him, he wouldn’t refute, and even if she fought... she wouldn’t be able to beat him. Someone who can only deal five damage can’t hurt a single thing.

She walked for half a day, and when the sun was right in the center of the sky, she finally stopped. Though she was a Profound Deity and walking did not pose any sort of stress to her, even if she wasn’t tired, she would still get bored of it. After walking in such a mechanical manner for half a day, her lazy bone did not feel like moving any longer. She wanted to hitch a ride with a fellow Deity or a spirit.

However, before the ride could even come, the ambulance had arrived instead. Looking at the two red and white figures flying towards her from afar, Zhu Yao felt like her body was rejuvenated all of a sudden.



“Master...” You’re finally here to pick me up.

The moment Yu Yan landed, he received her embrace. “Yu Yao.” He sized up his stupid disciple for a moment and after realizing that not only was she fine, her cultivation had risen as well, he finally felt at ease.

“See, I already told you that nothing will happen to little little grand disciple.” Yu Jin shook the fan in his hand, his brows curved with his smile. “Her body is marked with my tracking art, so how can I possibly lose her? Look at how anxious you’ve gotten, pulling me out here immediately to look for her. Even if we don’t come, she would have returned on her... Hey, listen to me you, you two.” Do they have to hug that tightly? Can’t they see that there were still two single puppies standing at the side?

Eh? Wait a minute! Two!

“This is?” Yu Jin looked at the black-robed man that was at a considerable distance away, his heart could not help but skip a beat. Just earlier, he actually did not sense his presence at all.

Yu Yan noticed Yue Ying at the back as well, and he unconsciously hugged Zhu Yao even tighter. His expression instantly turned cold. When did he come to the Higher Realm?

Yue Ying still stood there in a daze. He neither replied nor moved, simply staring straight at Zhu Yao.

“Master...” Zhu Yao tugged the person in front of her. She had no intentions to explain either. “Let us return.”

Yu Yan frowned, not probing any further. With a nod, he rose into the air and carried his disciple back.

“Hey, wait for me!” The corner of Yu Jin’s lips twitched. What kind of situation is this? Why did then suddenly leave? He once again glanced at the black-robed man. Would it kill you all to explain? Why are the both of them ignoring him?

Letting out a long sigh, he had no choice but to follow after them

with a resentful look.

In the next moment, Yue Ying's figure instantly disappeared without a trace as well.

With this extravagant VIP transportation tool that was her master, they arrived back at Lightning Divine Palace in less than a quarter of an hour. Not far away behind them was Yue Ying who had followed after them without making a single sound. Zhu Yao could not be bothered about him either, as she followed her master to the courtyard where the stone chairs were.

Yu Yan immediately reached out his hand to check her meridians carefully, and then intentionally asked a string of weird questions. Even Yu Jin stepped forward to check her meridians several times.

“What is it?” Zhu Yao was a little confused.

Yu Yan was silent for a moment. With a wave of his hand, a divine sword appeared on the table. Strange marks filled the sword, though the blade was on the verge of shattering and divine energy was scattering away from it. It even looked a little familiar. “This... Isn't this the divine sword that I was possessing? Why did its rank drop?” She recalled that it was still a second rank divine sword just earlier. Right now, it could not even be considered as a first rank. It would not take long for it to turn into a piece of scrap metal.

“When I retrieved this sword from the storage mystic artifact back then, it began to slowly degrade. These strange marks appeared first, and then, divine energy began to scatter as cracks appeared on it...” Yu Yan frowned and solemnly said. “Initially, your soul was the sword spirit of this sword. Your master had thought that... if a problem had occurred to the sword, something might have happened your own body. Looking at you now, you seemed to be unharmed.”

“Ou.” It was no wonder these two were so tensed. Zhu Yao thoroughly sized up her former avatar that was quickly turning

into scrap metal, and then flipped over the blade to have a look. On the other side, the marks were rather neatly gathered at the center, forming a small symbol. Squinting her eyes, she took a close look at it, and the corner of her lips began to twitch.

“Not only is she unharmed.” Yu Jin continued. “Little little grand disciple was just a mortal earlier, and she returned as a Profound Deity Paragon. This is simply miraculous. Though this sword on the other hand is about to be destroyed, as though...”

“As though the cultivation from the sword is being transferred to me!” Zhu Yao continued in his stead.

The two of them blanked for a moment.

Zhu Yao placed the sword down with a darkened expression. That’s right, she finally found out the origin of her cultivation and why she had suddenly turned into a Profound Deity. It was all transferred over from this strange sword. Because a string of words were written clearly on the blade: Data is being transferred, please wait... (70%)

.....

...

Why was cultivation transferrable? And wireless at that? She was not able to receive a single roaming signal from the Demonic Immortal Continent, so why was she able to receive wireless signals then?

Suddenly, she felt her body turning light, and the sound of something being broken through resounded in her mind. In the next moment, the richness of her divine energy rose by more than twice, and even her Dantian was completely full.

“Little little grand disciple, you’re now a Gold Deity.” Yu Jin was stunned. What just happened? Why did her cultivation suddenly rise just by sitting there?

Zhu Yao silently glanced at that sword. As expected, the string of

words changed. Data is being transferred, please wait... (80%)

It's actually still transferring! Hey, that's enough from you. Is the Bluetooth cut now?

“What happened to you in the past few days?” Yu Yan asked, his eyes inadvertently swept towards Yue Ying who barely had any sense of presence. “And how did you leave Lightning Divine Palace back then?”

“I went to the Demonic Immortal Continent.” Zhu Yao talked about her stay in the Demonic Immortal Continent in the past few days, and then added in her guess about why her cultivation had suddenly risen. Naturally, she included the matters about that traitor Sesame.

After hearing her story, the two were a little dumbfounded. They had heard of sharing cultivation between humans, between Deities, and between humans and Deities, but they had never heard of swords being able to share cultivation with humans.

Just what is this lady made of?

“This incident is strange, but seeing that little little grand disciple now possesses cultivation, her soul must have been stabilized.” Yu Jin said with a serious tone. “In the future, her soul would not leave her body all of a sudden. However, as preventive measures, you should still carry some soul suppressing tools on you.”

“Makes sense.” She did not want to experience switching between two avatars again.

Just as she was about to exploit a few divine artifacts, a figure suddenly came charging in, cutting across her at extreme speeds, and then he picked up the sword on the table. Not staying for a single moment longer, he had already risen into the air and flew in the opposite direction they came from.

Zhu Yao was stunned. When she regained her senses, that sword

burglar had already flown far away. Strangely, that figure even looked a little familiar.

“Wait a minute, Aunt Xue, there’s a formation over there...”

Before she could even finish, dozens of lightning bolts thunderously descended together, immediately blasting him back.

A fried and crisp fragrance floated in the air... Mn, and a part of him even looked a little scorched.

Zhu Yao: “...”

Yu Yan: “...”

Yu Jin: “...”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. Didn’t this idiot know that formations would automatically close after entering them?

She hurriedly walked towards where the charred piece of meat had fallen to. Before she could even approach him, Xue Yi had already regained his senses. He let his charred hair sway, and in a flash, he looked at them cautiously.

He gripped onto the divine sword tightly with one of his hands, and said a little anxiously. “Divine sword maiden, don’t be afraid! I will bring you out of here. This daddy’s cultivation is incredible, you know? They’re just High Deities, let me show you how I’m going to smack them down!”

Zhu Yao: “...” You have already turned into charred meat, just where are you getting all that confidence from?

“Divine sword maiden, respond to me? Why aren’t you replying?” Xue Yi’s expression changed. Not caring about the three people in front of him any longer, he shook the sword strongly. “What’s wrong, maiden? Don’t scare me, hey! Wake up...” He shook it for a long while, yet when he realized there wasn’t any reaction coming from the sword, his eyes instantly reddened and his face was filled with grief. He began to hysterically roar out.

“Maiden! Maiden, what happened to you? You better not die! Didn’t we promised that once you turn back into a human, we will accompany each other to dust, gallop on horses together, and enjoy the extravagance of the Divine Realm with one another?”

“Who promised you that!?” Flips table! Can this idiot’s delusions be cured at all!? “Master... Listen to me, I haven’t done anything!”

Yu Yan’s expression turned cold as he silently pulled his disciple into his embrace. He really wanted to throw out lightning bolts out of irritation, what to do?

“Divine sword maiden... Sword maiden... Maiden!” Xue Yi still persisted in shouting at the sword, but it was all a fruitless effort. Instead, as he continued to shake, Zhu Yao felt that her cultivation had risen quite a bit again, rising straight to the level of a mid-stage Gold Deity.

# Chapter 359: Your Sister's a Life Artifact

---

Xue Yi furiously turned his head around, glaring ruthlessly at the three of them. “You greedy beasts, just what did you all do to my divine sword maiden!?”

Greedy Beast One Zhu Yao: “...” Who’s yours? Faints!

Greedy Beast Two Yu Yan: “...” I’ve already done whatever I should’ve done.

Greedy Beast Three Yu Jin: “...” An innocent bystander who got dragged in.

“Divine sword maiden, I will avenge you!” Xue Yi kept that tattered divine sword, summoned his weapon, and glared at the three of them with an enraged look. “None of you shall even think about escaping today.”

Like I said, where the hell did he get all that confidence from, hey? “Xue Yi, calm down. I’m actually...”

“Shut up!” He coldly glared at her. “This daddy doesn’t want to hear any crap from you lot.”

“...” The hell!

Pointing his sword straight, killing intent instantly burst into the surroundings. “Which one of you is going to come at me first? Step forward!”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. She made eye contact with her master, and then... both of them took a step back.

Yu Jin who was now standing in front. “...”

“Good luck, great great grandmaster.” Zhu Yao did a cheering pose.

“Why me?” What happened to the promised love between sect members?

“Haah! We can’t blame him for being alone, right? It’s not good for two of us to bully one of him, and coincidentally, the numbers match if you go up.” Zhu Yao chuckled.

Flips table! Is a single puppy not human!?

“Those who are skilled get more work, after all. As they say, friendship first, competition second, don’t be too hard on him now. Now go, Pikachu!”

The hell is a Pikachu?

Xue Yi had already flown forward and launched an attack with a swing his sword. In an instant, icicles shot out from the ground, yet Yu Jin did not even bother moving at all. With a wave of his hand, the icicles shattered inch by inch and turned into water.

Xue Yi once again materialized countless spiritual swords and had them smashing down in an overwhelming manner. However, the moment they touched the ground, they suddenly changed their direction and shot towards Zhu Yao’s direction.

He was actually planning a sneak attack, but it seemed like he picked the wrong target.

Yu Yan frowned. With a release of his pressure, forget about the spiritual swords, even Xue Yi was slammed onto the ground. He was no longer capable of moving. Instant kill!

Haah. He clearly said he wanted a solo battle, yet he went for a one against three instead. Why the trouble?

Yu Yan took a few steps forward. Just as he was about to pull out the divine sword from Xue Yi’s robe, Xue Yi who was still lying on the ground suddenly broke into a smile. Zhu Yao instantly had a bad feeling.

A gust of wind swept over from behind her. When she turned to look, Xue Yi suddenly appeared behind her out of nowhere. It was a clone!



Everything happened too quickly. When she regained her senses, Xue Yi was already slashing his weapon at her. She could even see the cold light reflected by his blade, along with the burst of overwhelming and dark aura behind him.

Zhu Yao's heart shook and immediately shouted. "Yue Ying!" Stop!

In the next moment, a lightning phoenix charged out from her body. With its claw, it struck Xue Yi onto the ground and the crackling lightning sparks blasted Xue Yi, as though he was thrown into a steaming hot pot. The dark aura that filled the sky earlier disappeared without a trace. She instantly heaved a sigh of relief. "Lucky!" It was lucky that Yue Ying had retracted his aura. Otherwise, Xue Yi's soul would have already been scattered by now.

"Lucky my ass!" Xue Yi could not even move from the pressure emitted by her sword intent, and so he had no choice but to let his mouth run. "What's so incredible about bullying me with numbers? If you have the guts, let go of this daddy!"

"If you have the guts, then come fight me one on one? So what if you're the Lightning Divine Palace!"

"This daddy isn't afraid of you lot. This daddy will avenge divine sword maiden."

"You lot basically aren't this daddy's opponent at all."

"If you have the guts, then come at me one by one."

His true body and clone happily helped connected each other's sentences, as though he was not the person responsible for giving up on the one-one-one, and turning it into a sneak attack only to fail and made it a group battle.

Where's his shame?

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. Willing her mind, the claw of the lightning phoenix gripped tighter and scattered the

clone, turning into two wisps of smoke that returned to Xue Yi's body. Though he was considerably smart. He knew that he could not defeat Yu Jin and her master, and so she was his target from the start. He had placed a cloning art here from the very beginning, and was simply waiting for her master to leave her side before initiating the attack.

However, he most likely did not expect that she would react so quickly and summon her sword intent!

Zhu Yao could not help but turn around and glance at the figure that was two to three steps away from her. Taking a deep breath, she turned her head back.

Xue Yi could no longer move, and Zhu Yao thus immediately pulled out her "former avatar" from his hands. As expected, the percentage on the sword had already turned to 90%. Just earlier, she instantly leapt from the cultivation level of a Gold Deity to that of a Heavy Deity.

"What are you doing?" Xue Yi grew anxious, yet he could not move at all. "Return me my divine sword maiden."

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes, and then he knocked his head with the sword. "Are you blind!? Can't you let me talk for a moment? Look carefully. I'm this sword."

"Ah?" What did she mean? Xue Yi was confused. "You're... divine sword maiden?"

"Mn." She nodded. "I've already turned back into a human."

"Don't you think about lying to me." Xue Yi instantly grew agitated as he looked at her scornfully. "Hmph, how could my divine sword maiden possibly look like you? She definitely has a graceful figure, peerless beauty, a set of healthy thighs and powerful arms, and also a sincere heart that's filled with infatuation for me. She can also be wrapped around with me till the end of the world..."

Hey, your morals are gone!

“I don’t care if you believe it or not. In any case, I am this sword.” Zhu Yao could not be bothered with him any longer, as she turned around and walked away.

“Hey, don’t go. Return me my sword!” He still persisted.

Zhu Yao glanced at the 95% count on the sword. She tried to use divine energy as a guide, and as expected, a large amount of energy was pouring into her body. This speed was comparable to dropping off bluetooth and connecting to a LAN port directly for data to be directly retrieved. The number on the sword also increased from 95%, to 96%... to 97%... to 98%...

Oh right, at the very end, this string of text flashed. MISSION Complete!

Zhu Yao immediately rose into a High Deity.

The sword was letting out crackling sounds as it began to shatter.

“Divine sword maiden...” Xue Yi’s face was filled with sadness. It was unknown where his strength came from as he suddenly charged right out and snatched the sword in her hand. “Return her to me!”

“Wait a minute.” Don’t move!

Zhu Yao could not stop him in time, yet when Xue Yi touched the sword, he was fiercely deflected away with an incredible force. Xue Yi instantly fainted.

At this moment, the blade that was initially about to shatter suddenly shone a bright red.

Yu Yan realized something was amiss as well and his expression sank. Just when he wanted to step forward, he realized that he could not move at all, and this was the same for Yu Jin. The two of them were rooted to the ground. “Yu Yao!”

Zhu Yao did not know what was going on either, but the sword in

her hand began to peel itself layer by layer. The blade that was initially as wide as her palm was now as thin as her finger. The sword flashed with a bloody red glow while endlessly reverberating a sharp noise.

All of a sudden, the depths of her heart began to resonate with it, as though her heart was following the beat of the reverberations. The sword intent that she had yet to retract earlier charged upwards, slicing through the skies with a long cry. After circling around the sky, it suddenly entered the sword in her hand.

In the next instant, the sword left her hand as it turned into a red ray of light and entered her forehead. The irresistible suppressive force in the surroundings then disappeared without a trace.

“Yu Yao...” Yu Yan pulled his disciple over and checked her body. The incident earlier was too strange. He was actually unable to resist that light himself, and he could not help but feel a little anxious. “How do you feel?”

“Master, I’m fine...” Zhu Yao was confused herself as well. “But... in my divine sense... there seems to be sword in it now.”

Yu Yan was stunned, frowning. “Life Artifact!”

“Life Artifact?” Is it the same as master’s divine artifact? As she exerted her will, a red light suddenly flashed and an entirely red sword appeared in her hand. Different from the other weapons she had wielded before, it felt like it was in sync with her mind and was a part of her body,

“Eh? Why can’t I sense the rank of this weapon?” Yu Jin walked over with curious eyes. He looked at his little little grand disciple’s red sword, and he grew even more puzzled. The sword was actually not emitting any aura, as though it did not exist. Yet, it faintly carried an indescribable pressure, that made it hard for people... to look straight at it!?

Yu Yan said with a sunken voice. “This sword is neither spiritual,

divine, nor a godly artifact...”

“Then what is it?” Her former avatar twirled around and turned into her Life Artifact. Just this incident alone was already profound and mystical on its own. Why was there a need for things to be this complicated?

Yu Yan exchanged glances with Yu Jin, and they both shook their heads. They did not know either.

“Little little grand disciple, finding a Life Artifact is already impressively fortunate event.” Yu Jin smiled as he reached out his hand in an attempt to stroke her head, while giving her a few consoling words. However, he received a “cold glare” attack from the side. Left with no choice, he weakly retracted his hand. “Don’t worry, this sword is now in sync with your mind and heart. It can only be of aid to your cultivation.” Though she was already a High Deity now.

“Really now?” Zhu Yao felt at ease. Actually, she long wanted a weapon of her own. Those days without a single transportation tool was incredibly tiring, you know? Furthermore, this was her Life Artifact, and it would be stored in her divine sense in the future. Even if she were to change avatars, it would be binded to her. The thought of not needing to hitchhike any longer made her a little excited. Though, the colour of the sword was a little strange, the blade itself was a little small, its properties were a little unclear, and even though the two words on the blade were a little ugly...

Wait a minute!

Words?

Zhu Yao looked at it carefully. At the center of the blade, two bolded arial-font words were written on it – Installed Patch!

...

Her smile stiffened, and her expression instantly darkened. She

pushed out her hand and threw the sword on the ground. As though she was venting her anger, she stomped her feet strongly on the ground. Then, she turned around and entered the house.

Realmspirit, I will cuss at your granddaddy!

---

Xue Yi woke up after being unconscious for three days. No matter what Zhu Yao said, he did not believe that she was that sword. Zhu Yao could not be bothered to explain anymore either. Initially, she wanted to release him out of Lightning Divine Palace as he wished, but great great grandmaster Yu Jin's Disciplinary Order unexpected shone again.

The one who sought for help was once again the Gold Deity that wanted to kill Xue Yi. Furthermore, he was not the only one this time. The entire Divine Realm was now looking for Xue Yi. Xue Yi's initial plan was to take the divine sword and flee this place, but now, Lightning Divine Palace had unexpectedly become his safe haven.

“Little little grand disciple, what do you think we should do?” Yu Jin smiled as he shook the glowing Disciplinary Order in his hand. Ever since he accidentally got teleported back then, he altered all of the Disciplinary Orders and implemented the manual teleportation mode.

Zhu Yao sank into silence for a moment, before she solemnly said. “Let him out of Lightning Divine Palace.”

Yu Jin was stunned and found it a little strange. “I thought... you would want to protect him.”

# Chapter 360: Let's Clear the Tower Together, Young Maiden

---

“I indeed thought like that in the past.” Zhu Yao frowned. “Because from my perspective, Xue Yi did not do anything extremely vile. Though there were many people who came hunting him down and sought trouble with him, claiming that he’s an evil Deity, I did not see those acts with my own eyes. So it’s natural that I don’t resonate with them. Instead, as a weapon, Xue Yi did take care of me considerably well. Though his words were a little irritating, at the very least, he did not use me to attack his enemies.”

“Then why...” Yu Jin became even more confused. “If he leaves Lightning Divine Palace now, even if I don’t cause trouble for him, the various sects and clans may not let him off easily. It can be imagined just how hard his life will be. If you do this...”

“Then, from what you’re saying, I should let him stay and protect him under the Lightning Divine Palace’s name? After that, chase away or kill all those who are looking for him for trouble?”

Yu Jin frowned and did not reply.

“I understand Floor Master’s intentions. I indeed had thoughts of helping him in the beginning. Though we were together for merely a few days, we are still acquainted to a certain degree. If I simply left him to die, it will indeed hurt my conscience a little. That was why I didn’t stop great great grandmaster from bringing him here back then.” Zhu Yao sighed. “There was even that one moment when I thought that it would be great if we could have him stay in Lightning Divine Palace. That way, no one will be able to find him. However... If I do that, Xue Yi will still be Xue Yi, and no change would occur to him like this. The people that died in his hands cannot be revived, and the sins he had committed cannot be cleansed. There’s an even a possibly that it would worsen in the

future, that more lives would die in his hands and he would become even worse than now. In that case, if I truly decide to help him, I will become the executioner that's handing him the knife. With every blood he spills, half of it will be on me."

"Xue Yi indeed did not do anything bad to me in any way, but he's not a good person either." Zhu Yao said solemnly. "At the very least, in the eyes of the various sects, and in the eyes of all the people hunting him down, he's most likely an evil Deity whose hands are completely stained in blood. This point cannot be changed just because he treated me well. A wrong is a wrong. This cannot be changed even if the motive for doing the act is correct. This is the same as how a murderer's sin cannot be removed just because he once saved someone. A rapist cannot be forgiven just because he truly loves his victim. Taking that Gold Deity from before as an example, he and his wife were innocent, yet Xue Yi killed his wife just for a single cave residence. Even if this matter doesn't concern me, I don't recognize his actions. Though the Divine Realm is built upon the law that strength reigns supreme, I feel that in this world, nothing is more important than life itself. Since he had actually done it, then he should shoulder the consequences."

Yu Jin let out a long sigh. "You're planning to hand him over to the sects and clans?"

"Nope!" Zhu Yao shook her head. "I'm not an attorney. I don't have the authority to judge someone's sins. And it's not just me, this goes the same for the sects and clans as well. Xue Yi had done many bad things, but out of all of these Deities that had ascended, who could say that they had never done a single wrong? And which one among them do not have their hands stained with blood? They had all done the same once, so who could judge others on what's right and wrong? Even those that came forward to hunt Xue Yi today might not be doing it for the sake of justice either."

"Then, you..." Yu Jin was utterly confused.



“Let them tear up their own matters between themselves. Since neither side is good, then I might as well not bother myself with either side.”

“.....”

“...”

“So, Floor Master, please release Xue Yi. I will not protect him or help him carry his debts of blood. Because I do not wish to become an accomplice. I will not hand him over to the sects either, because they do not have the authority to judge or punish others. If Xue Yi wants to hide, the sects might not be able to locate him either. If the sects truly have the intentions to hunt him down, they will have the ways to do so. Only time can tell everything, while I... will simply be myself.”

Yu Jin was stunned for a while. Suddenly, he laughed, and his laughter continued to grow louder. “Little little grand disciple, you... sure shock me quite a bit.” Taking the opportunity Yu Yan wasn’t here, he reached out his hand to stroke her head. For some reason, he could faintly see something that that could not be found in the entire Divine Realm, something known as an “untainted heart”. Though it was a little silly, it was unexpectedly something that could make people envious.

Zhu Yao awkwardly stepped aside and then slapped away his hand.

He did not mind either, and simply shook his head as he waved his hand to cast an art. In an instant, the heavy lightning clouds that surrounded Lightning Divine Palace scattered as one formation after another was released. Right at that moment, a blue figure turned into a ray of light and flew straight out.

It was Xue Yi.

“Haah, it seems like even if you want to save him, he seems eager to head out?” Yu Jin said smilingly. “Most likely, he would seek

you out to avenge that ‘divine sword maiden’ or something. Even if that’s the case, will you still persist on staying your hand?”

“Who can tell the future? What I can do is simply hold on to this self of mine of this moment, and prevent it from being changed by this world.” Zhu Yao glanced at him and then suddenly smiled. With a joking tone, she said. “If everyone had held onto their own selves, maybe the world could have changed by now?”

“...” Yu Jin was stunned. Suddenly, he felt as if his heart quivering, as though the sun had appeared after the clouds had scattered.

Before he could even understand what this feeling was, the earth and heavens suddenly shook. The entire Lightning Divine Palace began to tremble. Rays after rays of blinding light appeared above its peak, instantly shining the entire floating mountain with a spectrum of colours.

“Lightning Divine Tower!” Yu Jin’s expression changed, and in an instant, his figure disappeared without a trace.

---

Zhu Yao was a little confused as well as she watched the sudden burst of strange light rays raining down. The light consisted of all sorts of colours.

This... Is the sky raining down rainbows?

The light did not have any offensive capabilities, and when bathed in it, she instead felt a comfortable and warm. Why did she find it a little familiar though? Before she could even ponder about it, she heard a light buzz. Her Life Artifact suddenly flew out on its own and circled around her. When she reached out her hand, it then returned to her grasp. No matter how she looked at it, it seemed a little excited.

“The light is coming from Lightning Divine Tower.” Her master walked out from the house as well. He looked at the sky and said.

“An unforeseen event must have occurred. Wait for me here, don’t run off.”

“Wait!” Zhu Yao pulled onto her master. “Let’s go together.”

Yu Yan hesitated for a moment, before he finally decided to grab hold of his disciple and fly to the peak.

The moment they arrived, they were stunned by the tower in front of their eyes. The tower that was initially as clean and white as jade, was beginning to open up from the very bottom, as though a layer of its skin was being ripped apart. The tear slowly rose upwards, leaking out colourful streams of light.

Zhu Yao once saw the Lightning Divine Tower opening up before, but the tower was being more open this time. The tear in the body of the tower was constantly rising up, and slowly, what they could see with their naked eyes were just the colourful streams of light.

“Great great grandmaster...” She could not help but call out to Yu Jin who was standing in front with a stern expression.

“I don’t know the reason either.” He sighed and said. “I did not activate the Floor Master’s divine token, yet the Lightning Divine Tower opened up by itself. Furthermore, the way it’s opening itself is...” Too strange.

If what the Lightning Divine Tower was doing now was considered as opening its tower gates, then what they had been doing in the past was just digging holes. It was as though the entire tower was shedding its skin, as its white parts were slowly being replaced with blinding rainbows. Presently, not just Lightning Divine Palace, even the entire forest below was being showered by the light.

The three of them were dumbfounded. They did not know if this was a good or bad thing either. They could only watch as the white portion of the tower rise higher and higher, and finally

disappearing into the horizon. What was revealed in the end was a tower body with dazzling colours, and an enormous ‘bug’...

Eh!?

Why are the three letters ‘bug’ written on the tower surface!?

When did the Lightning Divine Tower become a bug? It clearly wasn’t just before! Is it hinting her to enter the tower?

You’re treating this as a MMORPG, hey!?

“Yu Yao...” Yu Yan at the side suddenly turned his head and looked at her, his hand tightly held onto hers.

Zhu Yao was startled, and she suddenly widened her eyes. “Master, don’t tell me you too...”

“Mn.” He nodded.

It can’t be? Why is master able to see it too? Realmspirit, what are you trying to pull?

Ting!

Suddenly, a string of red words flashed in front of her eyes: Your vacation has ended. Brave young maiden, it’s time to begin on your final journey!

Vacation? So the reason why she hadn’t seen a single bug before, was because she was still on vacation. Then what was with switching her avatars back and forth? Who the hell would wear their work clothes daily during their vacation? Zhu Yao was instantly enraged, and she seriously wanted to pull out that shameless person behind the string of red words.

Ting!

The string of red words in front of her flashed, changing into another set of words: Congratulations on completing the ‘Correcting the Source Code’ Quest. You are rewarded with a catfight expert. You are rewarded with the title: Pui! Let’s just say I was blind!

“.....”

“...”

What does these all mean? Are you certain you're not cussing at me? Is this 'catfight expert' referring to the case with Xue Yi?

Ting!

Before she could even reach, the string of words once again changed: Final Quest has now been activated. Description: Enter the tower! Clear Reward: Plane Movement Permit (Amount: 2).

Nani!?

Zhu Yao could barely control herself and she had almost crashed into the string of red words. With widened her eyes, she ascertained herself that she was not seeing things! Putting aside how she was informed about the quest beforehand and that it was clearly stating that this was the final quest, the key thing here was that clear reward, the Plane Movement Permit! She wasn't seeing things, right?

“Master, can you pinch me a little?” Please tell me it isn't a dream?

The hand Yu Yan was holding onto hers with tightened. Though he could see the word 'bug' on the tower surface, he could not see the string of red words. Looking at his disciple's tensed expression, he could not help but pull her a little closer and said with a sunken voice. “Are you sure?”

Zhu Yao nodded. No matter if this was truly the final quest or not, she had to clear it for the sake of the Plane Movement Permits.

Yu Yan sighed. Reaching out his hand, he habitually stroked her head and said with a low voice. “Your master shall accompany you.”

“... Mn.” Zhu Yao hugged her master. This time, they were not going to split up again.

\*\*\*

“The cause behind this situation is still unknown.” Yu Jin inspected it for a short while, but he still could not figure out any clues. “I think it’s best for us to return... Eh? Where did they go?”

He looked around, yet he was about to find their figures.

A cold breeze blew...

He turned around and looked at the Lightning Divine Tower which had its doors wide open. As a Floor Master who had guarded the tower for n thousands of years, he suddenly had a bad premonition.

He recalled that... his little little grand disciple seemed to have just reached the cultivation level of a High Deity.

“.....”

“...”

Can I ask something? Can I cuss at someone?

---

The moment they entered the tower, Zhu Yao’s vision was occupied by darkness. Everything in her surroundings had disappeared.

She grew anxious and she subconsciously looked for her master, but she couldn’t see anything at all.

At this moment, it was as if a lantern had swept across her mind. Flashing past was everything that had happened to her ever since the first day she came into this world. Not a single detail was missed out, including those long forgotten memories... and those memories that were “intentionally” forgotten.

She trembled at that moment. Things that she couldn’t figure out before were suddenly all clear to her as she linked up every single clue she had. The anxiety in the depths of her heart instantly disappeared without a trace.

Looking at the surroundings, she found it a little funny. She actually took so long to guess this out, and she found herself quite stupid.

Taking a deep breath, she called out. “Realmspirit.”

The moment her voice fell, the dark space suddenly flashed. A familiar QQ chat window was hanging in the air with the same familiar interface.

Realmspirit: Yo, young maiden! I missed you so much. How was your vacation? Did you have fun? Did you get me a souvenir?

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. As expected, he deserved a beating for daring to bring up that troll of a vacation. She had to take a deep breath in order to suppress the irritation in the depths of her heart. She glanced at the chat window with the corners of her eyes and sighed. “Are you sure you’re going to talk to me like this forever? Realm! Spirit!”

The screen did not have any reaction for a while. After a long time, a question appeared on the screen.

Realmspirit: You found out?

“You didn’t keep it from me since the very beginning, did you?” Zhu Yao pouted. “Realmspirit, Realmspirit! The moment you first contacted me on that very day, you had already clearly told me your identity. Realmspirit... The spirit of the Three Realms.”

The moment her voice fell, the chat window disappeared with a flash. Even the entire space underwent a change. Like curtains rolling up, an immensely beautiful scenery appeared in her surroundings. Beneath her feet was a sea of flowers, and divine mountains and blessed lands could be seen afar. Mountains shrouded in divine energy were floating in the air above, and there were even waterfalls flowing down like silver silk. A pleasant scent was suffused in the air.

The scenery here could not be compared by any of the places she

had seen in the Divine Realm.

Five steps away from her, a figure was slowly appearing. Dressed in a snow-white robe, he possessed a peerlessly beautiful appearance. With just a small smile, he could turn overshadow everything in his surroundings. He walked over to her with a smile, and the surrounding flowers and plants split to the two sides on their own, making a path for him. They even bent their stems, as though they were worshipping him in silence.

Her appearance was reflected within his ink-black eyes, and he reached out a hand towards her. “Zhu...”

Before he could even finish, Zhu Yao grabbed onto his arm and pulled him. Stepping to the side, she then held onto the back of his head and heavily slammed him into the dirt on the ground.

“Aiya! It huuuuuurts...” The flowers at the sides instantly moved several meters away.

“The hell did you take up my master’s appearance for?” Don’t think I won’t dare to bash you up if you take up that appearance. I’ve endured you for far too long!



# Chapter 361: The Biology Teacher Left Early

---

Realmspirit shrank on the ground like a turtle, the heavenly disposition from earlier had instantly disappeared without a trace. “I’m going to die, I’m going to die, I’m going to die...”

Zhu Yao could not help but throw one last kick before letting him go.

With a face covered in dirt, he sat up and looked at Zhu Yao resentfully. “Yaoyao... How can you do this to me?”

“Shut up.” Looking at how he was making such an immoral expression with that face, the image she had of him was collapsing, you know? She then pinched his cheeks and pulled them outwards. “Hurry and swap out from this face.”

“Ah! It h-h-h-hurts...” Realmspirit hissed as he breathed in the chilling air. He couldn’t avoid her demonic hands either. “You can’t blame me for this either! You’re the reason why I have this form.”

Zhu Yao’s hands stopped in mid-air. “What did you mean?”

“Yaoyao, you already know about my true body, right?” Realmspirit said with a smile. “I don’t have a fixed appearance in the first place, so the me you’re seeing right now, is the appearance of the most beautiful person in your heart.”

She was dumbfounded, and at that moment, she understood what he meant. The person with the most beautiful appearance in her heart was naturally her master. After sizing him up for a moment, she could not help but grow a little suspicious. “Are you truly the spirit of the Three Realms?”

He instantly gave a large grin. “Correct. Beautiful maiden, you’re actually able to figure it out so quickly. You’re so smart.” As expected of the one chosen by me?

“Enough of that!” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes, but her heart felt a

little stuffy. “So the things you told me before were all true. And this is what you meant when you said that there’s a problem with this world when I was first brought here?”

“Mn.” He nodded.

Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief. She finally understood everything that she hadn’t been able to figure out before, including why he had such incredible powers. Why was he able to grant her such strange cheats? Why were the River of Forgetfulness, Bai Yuan, and Wood Spirit all so familiar with him? Why could he claim that even the Heavenly Dao could change? The spirit of the Three Realms, a spirit formed by the Three Realms. He was this world, and the Three Realms was his true body. Even the Heavenly Dao and luck were all part of him, so he could naturally change them.

“Since you’re the Three Realms, then those bugs should have been easy to fix on your own. Why did you still have to drag me over to fix them?”

He shook his head. “Yaoyao, I can predict everything in this world, and I can clearly see everyone’s paths, but I don’t know how to cure them. Though I know where the bugs are, I don’t understand the specific methods to fix them.”

“What do you mean?” Zhu Yao was a little confused.

“A medical practitioner can’t cure himself.” Realmspirit solemnly said.

In other words, though he was the one who was sick, he was powerless to stop it? “But there are so many people in the Three Realms, so you can find anyone here to do it. Why do you have to go so far to another plane to drag me over here?”

“The living beings of the Three Realms are all part of it themselves, so they can’t clearly see the problem themselves, so how can they possibly fix it? No one in this world can do it, but

you're different." His eyes shone. "You come from another plane, everything you know and the thoughts you have are all greatly different from ours. You can see things in a way that we can't."

"Why me?" Zhu Yao frowned. "I'm not an incredible figure, and I don't have any astonishing talents. Furthermore, in our world, I'm just a regular person without any special traits that you can find a bunch on the streets. If you just want someone from another plane to help you find loopholes, isn't it better to find someone more outstanding? Why pick me?"

Realmspirit retracted his smile and looked at her straight in the eyes. With an especially serious tone, he said. "Because we are friends."

"..." So you're the type that trolls your friends?

"Yaoyao, I trust in our friendship. Of course, the most important thing is..." He solemnly said. "You have stronger conviction and principles than anyone else, and you never wavered even once. Even after you were in the Three Realms for so long, you kept holding onto your untainted heart. That's why... you're the most suitable choice."

"Then why didn't you tell me right from the start?" Zhu Yao frowned. If he had truly treated her as a friend, why the need to hide everything from her?

"Because..." He sighed. "I want you to see this world with your own eyes and have you personally understand everything. Only by doing that can you find the most suitable method to fixing the problems that occurred."

Indeed, if she had known Realmspirit was the Three Realms right from the start, she would have simply given him suggestions on fixing the bugs and not understand the world in depth. It's like playing a game. Only by going deep into understanding the game can one find the best way to fix the bugs.

“Then what’s with this tower clearing mission?”

“It can be considered as the final dungeon, I guess.” He solemnly said. “Only by reaching the peak of the tower can you understand everything about me. When that happens... It’s also the time for the real patch to be implemented.”

Zhu Yao was shocked. “Real patch? Didn’t I fix a lot of bugs already?”

“No, everything has yet to start.” He shook his head, his smile grew even more dazzling. “Once you’ve understood everything, I will leave all the decisions to you. And you, my friend, is my final hope.”

“What do you mean?” What final hope? Zhu Yao wanted a clarification, but his figure had begun to fade. Even the space itself was beginning to dim.

“I will always believe you, my friend.”

“Wait a minute!” Clarify yourself. Zhu Yao grabbed onto his hand, but she instead was faced with a pair of familiar eyes. The face was the same, but the demeanor had completely changed.

“What is it?” The person in front of her stroked her head, carrying a relieving, chilling intent.

“Master...” She’s back.

---

“No need to be afraid.” Yu Yan however thought that she was anxious and pulled her in a little. “Master is here.”

Only then did Zhu Yao realize the surroundings had changed. Mountains and rivers filled the lands, stretching beyond her line of sight. It wasn’t any different from the Divine Realm. “This is... inside the tower?” The map is a little too big, isn’t it?

“This place should be the lower ten floors of Lightning Divine Tower.” Yu Yan solemnly said. “Teacher once mentioned that the

High Deity level is the lowest cultivation level one would have in Lightning Divine Tower. It's best that we take caution."

"Ou." Zhu Yao nodded. Looking around, she did not see any human figures, though not far behind her, a black light flashed. Right after the flash, Yue Ying appeared.

She knew that he would follow after her. Zhu Yao frowned, but chose to ignore him as usual.

"What do we do now?" When it came to clearing the tower, they still had to figure out where they should clear from!

Yu Yan suddenly pulled out a gold talisman. "Teacher once said that if I enter the Lightning Divine Tower, I can use this talisman to contact him."

Grandmaster! Zhu Yao's eyes shone. There's a 'find guild member' feature, say so earlier! "Hurry, hurry."

He cast an art and instantly activated the talisman. A golden light flashed, but in the next moment, the talisman began to burn and turn into ashes.

"..." What happened.

"It seemed like teacher has already entered the upper ten floors." Yu Yan sighed.

Zhu Yao could faintly hear a notification saying: Finding guild member... failed!

"Let's wait and see then." Yu Yan had no other options either. After all, everything here was too foreign. They could only take a step at a time.

The two of them turned and flew forward. Zhu Yao was still thinking about Realmspirit's words and did not pay much attention to her surroundings. After flying out of a forest, they arrived at a grass plain. Zhu Yao released her divine sense and scanned the surroundings, only to realize the plain was

outrageously large. Her divine sense was actually unable to cover its entirety. After scanning around, she still did not see a single human figure. They could not even ask for directions.

For a moment, she was a little hesitant, not knowing whether they should continue moving forward.

“What should we do?” She turned and looked at her all-powerful master.

Yu Yan frowned. “This grass plain is boundless, and it seems even after venturing a thousand kilometers, we would not find a single town. It looks like we have to turn back.”

Great, we have to head back. Zhu Yao expressed that she was tired.

“Let’s rest for a moment before moving.”

Left with no other choice, Zhu Yao sat down. She wondered just what was going on in the tower? The population density was a little too small, wasn’t it? Even after flying for so long, let alone a person, they did not even spot a single living being. Even in this boundless grass plain, there were only a few long-eared rabbits.

Zhu Yao turned and looked at the rabbit that was currently squatting next to her, nibbling on the grass without the slightest sense of danger. She wondered just what breed it was, as it was actually not afraid of humans.

It even had such a rotten street name called Little White...

Eh?

Name!

Zhu Yao rubbed her eyes. Was she seeing things? Why was she seeing two yellow words hanging above the rabbit – Little White? And below the name was a long red HP bar.

As a qualified game developer, she could not help but poke it with her itchy hand. A row of words then instantly floated above the

rabbit's head: HP – 1

She had a bad premonition...

In the next instant, the yellow words “Little White” turned red. The rabbit that was still one-mindedly nibbling on the grass just earlier turned its head and unceremoniously bit on her hand.

Blood flowed out...

“Mommy! It hurts...” Zhu Yao waved her hand forcefully, immediately flinging the rabbit away. However, a bone-deep wound was left on her hand.

What a terrifying rabbit!

The moment the rabbit landed on the ground, it dove into the patch of grass. After that, shuffling noises could be heard from the grass, as one red “Little White” after another popped up like lights being turned on. It looked like the colour were infectious, as red instantly filled the entire grass plain.

Uh... It seemed like, she accidentally started a battle!

“Yu Yao?” Yu Yan was just about to ask. “What is it...”

“Run!” Zhu Yao grabbed onto her master and madly flew into the forest they came from. Shuffling noises followed after them from behind.

When she turned to look, her heart almost leapt out of fright. A large mass of red names rose into the air and chased straight after them. Aren't they rabbits? Why can rabbits fly? What you guys have are long ears, and not wings, hey! The biology teachers are going to cry!

“Yu Yao...” Yu Yan pulled his flustered and stupid disciple and stopped in the air. With a solemn voice, he said. “No need to panic! Leave it to your master.”

With a short incantation, he summoned a bolt of purple lightning and struck it to the back. Just as the horde of mad rabbits were

about to be zapped, the rabbit at the very front suddenly flapped its ears and propelled itself upwards. Ahmm! It swallowed the lightning... swallowed it... swallowed...

“ ... ”

Zhu Yao weakly turned her head. “Master...” What happened to the promise of leaving things to you?

His expression was still as calm as usual. With a wave of his hand, he called out his Life Artifact and grabbed onto his disciple. After taking a deep breath, he said with a serious look. “Let’s run then!”

With a speed ten times faster than earlier, he turned around and madly flew off...

“ ... ”

Thus, on their first day in the tower, the master and disciple duo ran to as if their life depended on it, while being chased by a horde of little white rabbits.



# Chapter 362: Look At My Pure and Clear Eyes

---

Zhu Yao whose biology teacher had died too early on, swore that she would never offend a rabbit so easily ever again in her life. Even when she were to spot one, she would make a detour if she had to. After all, not anyone would have the precious and deep experience of being chased by a horde of rabbits for three days and three nights.

Even now, she still did not know what mutated breed the horde of rabbits was from. They were actually immune to all types of divine arts. No matter how strong an offensive art she cast, they would swallow them down with an ahmn. Even Yue Ying's devillic attacks were useless. The only differences were whether they would take a single or two bites, or two of them taking a bite together, or three of them taking a bite together.

Most importantly, no matter if they fled into forests, flew in the sky, or dove deep into the ocean depths, those rabbits would always chase after them. They were simply living beings that could live in the land, sky, and sea. As though they had activated invincibility mode, they chased after Zhu Yao and Yu Yan for three days and three nights, and only now did traces of them slowly disappear.

Zhu Yao tiredly laid on her master. She did not want to move again, at all.

“Master...” She felt that her common sense had been struck with a heavy blow. She wanted to head back to the zoo and look at the animals again.

Yu Yan heaved a sigh of relief as well. He pulled over his disciple's bitten hand and cast an art. However, he realized that it was completely ineffective, and his brows began to furrow.

“It’s still useless.” Zhu Yao looked at her own hand, feeling as though she wanted to cry. For some reason, the wound she received from the rabbit’s bite from before could not be healed by using arts. “Nevermind.”

Yu Yan’s face was ice-cold, he clearly had a slightly irritated mood. He kept silent as he stared at his disciple’s hand.

“I’m really fine.” After all, she was a High Deity as well, though it was a little embarrassing to be bitten by a rabbit. Even without arts, it’s been three days and her wound had already closed. It was already considerably healed.

Yu Yan was still silent, though his face was growing colder by the minute. Even Yue Ying at the side was beginning to stare at her hand.

Don’t look as though I’m terminally ill, alright?

“... Then, shall we bandage it up a little?”

“Mn.” Only then did Yu Yan feel contented as he retrieved a white cloth from his storage ring. After tearing it into a strip, he then wrapped it around her hand. He wrapped it extremely meticulously, and at the event, he even tied a beautiful knot. While he was at it, he even embroidered it with something.

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. Master, you’re embroidering a bunny into it, are you sure you’re not doing it on purpose?

“We should not stay in this place for too long.” Yu Yan solemnly said. “It’s best that we find a settle down in a divine city.”

“Mn.” Just as Zhu Yao was about to stand up, a shuffling noise could be heard in the bushes next to them.

A human figure popped out. “Eh? You guys...”

Before he could even finish, Yu Yan had already grabbed onto his disciple and disappeared without a trace.

“Eh!? Wait, wait a minute!” In a flash, that person immediately went to catch up with them.

Hearing this, not only did Yu Yan not stop, he accelerated even faster.

“.....”

“...”

Zhu Yao turned to look at the person chasing after them, and the person poked in front of her. “Master... The person behind is a Deity, not a rabbit!”

A certain person’s face stiffened, as he then stopped in mid-air.

Uh... He had gotten used to it!

In an instant, that person caught up. He looked a little fatigued, his hair was dishevelled and even his clothes were covered in stains. For some reason, his blue robe was stained with yellow on one side and white on the other, a paste flavour was even floating around him. Above his head was a string of yellow words: Unknown Deity (Level 1)

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched, as the feeling of playing a net game overwhelmed her...

He seemed to have had a hard time chasing after them. After panting a few times, he said. “Why did you two run?”

The master and disciple duo’s lips twitched a little.

“Why did you chase after us?” Zhu Yao asked back.

“I saw you two running, so I started chasing.”

“We saw you chase after us, so naturally we ran!”

“...” The man became a little confused. He then unmindfully waved his hand and said. “Nevermind, I finally managed to see a living person. Are you two returning to Hillriver City?”

Hillriver City? Zhu Yao glanced at her master. There was actually

really a divine city nearby.

Thus, they immediately nodded.

“What a coincidence, me too!” That man replied. “Let’s go together. In this Lost Gallery, it’s safer with a bunch of people together.”

Naturally, it was a blessing for them if someone could guide them. The master and disciple duo immediately nodded.

“Let’s go, let’s go!” That man did not have any interest in making friends either. He basically did not make a self-introduction, as though he simply wanted to partner up and head on his way. He immediately flew up and moved past them. While casting a Dirt Removal Art on himself, he casually let out a complaint. “I sure had bad luck today. I wonder which idiot offended that horde of ‘Little White’ rabbits in the grass plain. I only managed to get rid of them after being chased for such a long time.”

The three idiots: “...”

“What’s even more unbearable is that not only did they offend the rabbits, they were even stupid enough to use divine arts to attack them.” The man grew angrier as he spoke. “Who doesn’t know that those Little Whites relied on divine energy for their meals? The more divine arts are used, the fuller they become, and they will have even more energy to give chase. Initially, they could have been gotten rid of in a hundred kilometers, but they actually chased after this daddy here for over a thousand kilometers.”

The group of three who were chased for three days and three nights received a sudden enlightenment.

The man turned around and glanced at the three people that were standing especially straight. “Did you people encounter those pestering horde of rabbits?”

The three of them turned back to face him, and with an especially stern tone, they said in unison. “Nope!” Their

expressions were as pure as the white clouds in the sky.

“Ou.” The man pouted and did not suspect them either. “You guys have great luck.” After a moment, he suddenly thought of something and asked with a mysterious look. “Let me tell you guys this, earlier, among the horde of crazed rabbits earlier, I actually saw one shrouded in lightning. Clearly, it had swallowed a lightning art. It seems like someone from Lightning Divine Palace has entered the tower again.”

Zhu Yao’s heart skipped a beat. She exchanged glances with her master beside her, and intentionally asked. “So what if someone from Lightning Divine Palace enters the tower?”

“Naturally, we have to find that person immediately.” That man said matter-of-factly. “For so many years, only the people from Lightning Divine Palace can enter and leave the Lightning Divine Tower freely. Everyone has had enough of it. Furthermore, the previous one who entered the tower has already entered the upper ten floors, so naturally there’s nothing much we Deities can do about him now. Another one has finally entered the tower, so naturally we have to find him as soon as possible. Right now, Hillriver City has probably gone insane trying to look for that person. Who would have thought that he would appear within Lost Gallery? If I were to spread this news, I would be able to make some small change too.”

He looked as though he had thought of something happy, as his eyes even shone a little.

On the other side however, Zhu Yao’s heart had already sank, and as for her master... It seemed like Lightning Divine Palace did not have a good standing in this tower at all.

“Speaking of which...” The man suddenly turned around and glanced at the three people next to him. With suspecting eyes, he sized them up. “You three...”

Crap! He can’t possibly have seen through us, right?

“Did you see the Deity that cast the lightning-type arts?”

“...” Her heightened caution instantly came crumbling down. “Hoho, of course not!” Zhu Yao immediately shook her head.

“Then anyone with the Daoist title ‘Yu’?” The man continued to ask. “The people of Lightning Divine Palace often like to venture alone. As long as someone is alone, that person is worth the suspicion.”

“None, at, all!” Look at my pure and clear eyes.

Only then did the man close his mouth with a disappointed look, and then, he sped up towards Hillriver City.

# Chapter 363: Don't Be Abstract, Be Realistic

---

The Hillriver City the man spoke of was not that far away. In just a short while, they arrived at an enormous formation. The formation was floating in the air, and occasionally there were golden mystic symbols circling around it. It seemed like a teleportation formation, but it was evidently much more advanced.

The moment they crossed the formation, the surrounding scenery changed. They were now standing on a large street, and the place was filled with people even though they could not see even a single person just earlier. Zhu Yao raised her head, and all she saw was a sea of yellow names and red HP bars. Every single one of them had a string of words above their heads: Unknown Deity. Next to those words were levels, and most of them were Level 1s while a small bulk of them were Level 2s and even Level 3s.

The hell, net game mode can't possibly have been activated for real, right? Then are these people NPCs or monsters? She anxiously turned around and looked at her own master, only to realize he didn't have any. Yue Ying on the side did not have anything above his head either. Just what was going on?

The moment they entered the city, the man waved his hand and separated from them. Zhu Yao wanted to inquire about the present situation, but she realized that the people in the city were mostly in a hurry and did not have any intentions to tend to others. The street was pretty clean as well, without a single stall set up.

Five shining formations of different colours could be seen floating in the sky above the place they entered from earlier. Occasionally, there were Deities going in and out of them. After discussing with her master, they decided to look around the city. In the end, they discovered an extremely large formation at the very center of the city. At the very center of the formation were

layers after layers of stairs. The staircase did not have any support around it, rather, they looked like layers of floating white jade stones. Furthermore, they were even constantly moving about. Sometimes they float high up into the air, entering the clouds, and sometimes, they would sink so low, to merely a few inches off the ground.

Next to this mystical staircase was a huge boulder, and a few golden words were slowly circling around it. There was even a flashing arrow right in front of the words labelled: This way to the lower second floor!

“Lower second floor, what does this mean?” This seemed like a passageway.

“It should be the second floor of the lower ten floors.” Yu Yan next to her said with a low voice. “I once heard from teacher that Lightning Divine Tower is separated into the upper ten floors and lower ten floors. This place must be the first floor of the lower ten floors, and this should be the passageway to the second.”

As expected of a tower, it really was separated by floors. According to the international guidelines of clearing towers, as long as the boss at the very top floor was defeated, then the challenge would be cleared. Reaching the peak of the tower was a necessity. She never expected that they would find the escalator so quickly. “Then what are we waiting for? Let’s head up!”

Zhu Yao immediately took a big step and stepped on the lowest tile. She however ended up stepping on empty air and fell. Fortunately, her master caught her at the very bottom.

What happened? She actually couldn’t step on it.

“Hahahaha...” Laughter suddenly rang from the side, as a green robed man walked towards them. “Girly, you guys have only entered the tower recently, right?”

The person that came forward had a slim but tall figure, giving



the impression that he was a walking bamboo pole. He possessed a rich amount of divine energy, yet he carried a hint of demonic energy. It was actually a Demonic Immortal.

“Without the clearance key, you can’t step on this Ascending Stairway.”

“Clearance key?” They finally managed to find someone who was willing to care about others. Zhu Yao immediately went forward and said with a smile. “This big brother, we’ve indeed just entered the tower, and we are still unsure of many things about this place. Big brother, I wonder if you can give us a pointer or two?”

This Demonic Immortal seemed to be in a very good mood. He sized her up with a glance, then looked at Yu Yan beside her, as well as Yue Ying at the back. “I don’t mind giving you pointers, but first, you have to tell me something. Have you guys... entered a group?”

“Ah?” Enter a group? What’s that? The Communist Youth League? Does the Young Pioneers count? I’m once a fresh and bright red scarf!

“You guys haven’t entered a group yet!” The eyes of Demonic Immortal shone, and he instantly became enthusiastic. “Great! You guys are in luck. Coincidentally, my group is currently looking for members.”

Why did Zhu Yao feel as though she was being dragged into a cult?

“Hoho, do all Deities who enter the tower have to enter a group?” Zhu Yao asked.

“Of course!” He nodded heavily as he pointed to the few formations in the sky. “Do you see the five formations over there? Connected to them are dangerous secret realms, and a Nascent Divided Pearl is placed in each of these secret realms. Only by gathering all five Nascent Divided Pearl can the clearance key for

the second floor be constructed. Furthermore, the five Nascent Divided Pearls must leave the secret realms at the same time, otherwise, they would be teleported back to its original spot by the formations. How can this possibly be done with the strength of a single person? That's why we have to form various groups."

Ou, so it's a dragon ball collection quest. "Then, big brother, which group are you in?"

The slim and tall Demonic Immortal chuckled. Then, he stepped forward and spoke in a mysterious tone. "Girly, have you heard of Amway?"

"..." Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. Then, she turned around and prepared to leave. "We're not going to buy them, thank you."

"Wait a minute, girly!" The slim and tall person pulled her and zealously recommended. "We Amway Group is the second biggest group in Hillriver City. The first group Blue Bird Group is already full. The reason why we're taking in new members today is because our group coincidentally lacks of people right now. If you miss this opportunity, you might not be able to enter again, you know?"

There's actually people who name themselves Amway! She doesn't want to be recruited into Amway, what to do?

---

After going through the slim and tall man's constant recommendations, Zhu Yao in the end relented and got successfully recruited into Amway. Along with her master and Yue Ying, they had supposed become a part of the fifty-fifth squad. Only then did Zhu Yao understand the scale of these so-called groups. According to the slim and tall man, a small squad consists of five people at least. If there were fifty five squads, then there were at least two hundred Deities in the group.

“Then that’s it.” The slim and tall man was really happy that he managed to recruit some fresh meat. He pointed in a direction not far away and said. “You guys first register in the Amway Hall. We still have a member in the squad, I will call him over.”

Just as he was about to leave, he seemed to have recalled something. With an apologetic look, he said. “Oh right, I forgot to ask. I’m Nangong Cheng (Southpalace Orange), a Demonic Immortal. How do I address the three of you?”

“Uh...” Recalling that the Lightning Divine Palace did not have a good name here, Zhu Yao exchanged glances with her master and then activated her name changing mode. “Hoho, hi Nangong Cheng, I’m Dongfang Hong (Eastway Red)!”

“...” Eh, something feels off? He turned to look at Yu Yan.

“Beichen... Lan (Northday Blue)!” A certain master said without a change in his expression.

He then turned to look at Yue Ying who was silent the entire time.

“Ximen... Zi! (Westgate Purple)” He went with the flow.

Zhu Yao immediately gave a thumbs up to her team’s quick wits. What a neat naming style.

“So it’s Dongfang girly, Daoist Beichen, and Daoist Ximen...” Eh, these people have strange surnames? But... why do they feel so intimate? “Then, let’s meet up in a while.”

Nangong Cheng happily went to look for his little companion, while Zhu Yao and the rest entered the Amway Hall. According to rumours, this was where the headquarters of Amway Group was located, though the interior did not look the part, instead, it looked more like an inn. The counter was right in front, and there were resting tables and chairs in the surroundings. However, the place was empty and hence a little calm and quiet.

There was a Deity tending to the counter, and he was spinning a

tablet in his hand. Zhu Yao stepped forward and explained their intentions, and then the Deity glanced at them. He took out three tablets and cast an art on all three of them. Then, he gave each one of them a piece. “This is your squad’s communication tablets, they have all the necessary information inside. Once the Nascent Divided Pearl is found, you can use it to directly communicate with with the people that found the other Nascent Divided Pearls.”

Zhu Yao received it and had a look at it. An unique formation was engraved on the jade tablet, and at the very center, the words ‘Fifty Five’ were written on it. Nangong Cheng said that the Nascent Divided Pearls had to be brought out of the five secret realms together in order to combine them into the clearance key. Otherwise, they would automatically return to their original positions. Most likely, this jade tablet was used to communicate with the other squads, making it convenient to discuss the time to exit the secret realms.

After a short wait in the Amway Hall, Nangong Cheng brought his little companion over. Compared to Nangong Cheng’s skinny and malnourished look, his little companion clearly was the type who was overnourished. That strong build and firm muscles made it look as though a mountain was moving. Yet, he was wearing a white robe that was a size smaller than his build, making his robe so tight it looked as though it was about to burst.

“Dongfang girly, Daoist Beichen, Daoist Ximen.” Nangong Cheng waved them over from afar. “Are you guys done with the registration?” He contently looked at the tablets in their hands, and then pointed at the mountain behind him. “Let me introduce him to you. This is my comrade, Zhonggu Lu (Centerancient Green).”

Great! North, south, east, west, and center! We can finally form a mahjong table.

Nangong Cheng then introduced each of them to Zhonggu Lu, but evidently, this Zhonggu Lu did not buy into our names. He

looked at the three of them with narrowed eyes, and then turned his head around with a scornful look. “Enough, enough. Since we’re all here, then let’s go! If we don’t hurry up, the sky will turn dark.” He rubbed his firm arms, and then he suddenly pulled out a mirror out of nowhere. He looked left of himself, and then to the right. “I don’t want to rush in the middle of the night. It would be bad if my flowery and beautiful appearance is hidden in the darkness, after all.”

“...” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. With those muscles of yours, just how are you beautiful? I can only see ‘flowery’ all over.

Clearly, Nangong Cheng was already used to his good friend’s personality. He pointed at the yellow formation at the very center in the sky, and said. “Then let us head over to Carnetian Jade Secret Realm then! I’m more familiar with the terrain there, and I’ve already inquired about the location of the Nascent Divided Pearl.”

Zhu Yao nodded. They were all newcomers, so naturally they did not have any opinions about his decision. Thus, they followed Nangong Cheng into the secret realm.

However, in an instant, large stone walls and canyons appeared in front of them. There were no longer any greens on the land, looking a little like a wasteland. In order to have newcomers familiarize with this lower first floor quickly, the information in the jade tablets they received earlier had detail introductions to the five secret realms. This Carnetian Jade Secret Realm was the smallest out of the five. Though it did have a huge land area, the place was filled with such canyons. The terrain was thus extremely steep, and finding the Nascent Dividing Pearl was not easy.

Though Nangong Cheng was a rather experienced guide. After entering the secret realm, they did not hurry with their search. Instead, he gathered everyone around for a meeting and shared his experiences.

“The Nascent Divided Pearl is in the deepest area of the secret realm. I heard that it’s about a kilometer away from the Purifying Pool. But, that place is guarded by demonic beasts.”

“Demonic beasts!?” Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. This tower actually still had demonic beasts.

Nangong Cheng nodded as he picked up a twig and drew on the ground. “I’ve already clarified with the others. The demonic beast is extremely powerful. It does not have any spiritual intelligence, does not speak the human language, and does not even have a soul of its own. It cannot be considered as a living being. However, it has an incredibly powerful poison all around its body, and death would follow after being stained by it. Also, the breath that it spits out is even more venomous. Even divine bodies can be harmed by its venomous breath. And, the Nascent Divided Pearl is inside its belly.”

“Then how do we retrieve it?” From what he said, even approaching it would be impossible.

“We do not have to rush with that. Everything has its own strength and weaknesses. Though it’s a highly venomous being, the water of the Purifying Pool can coincidentally treat the poison on the demonic beasts’ body. We have to think of a way to lure it to the side of the pool and kill it there.”

“Didn’t you say that it doesn’t have a spiritual consciousness?” Zhonggu Lu raised his hand and asked. “Then will it follow us to the poolside like that?”

“That is something I’m worried about as well.” Nangong Cheng sighed and said. “Actually, many other squads tried this tactic before, but for some reason, that demonic beast was just unwilling to approach the Purifying Pool. I don’t have the confidence to lure it over either.”

“Then why don’t we bring the pool water over?” Zhu Yao suggested. When fighting monsters, it was natural to bring in HP

and MP potions. “If the pool water can treat the poison, we can keep the water on our bodies. That way, even if we’re struck with the poison, the treatment wouldn’t be too late.”

“No!” Nangong Cheng shook his head and said. “The water of Purifying Pool only has the poison-curing effects if ingested next to the pool. If the water were to be brought out of the poolside, it would turn into regular water.”

It’s effect range was actually limited.

“If both doesn’t work, what should we do?” Zhonggu Lu glared at him a little irritatedly. The veins on his arms protruded out.

“So I decided that we should first observe that demonic beast.” Nangong Cheng said. “Let’s not make a move in a hurry. We should find out about its weaknesses before attacking. Oh right, there’s a large number of demonic beasts around here. In order to prevent you all from looking at the wrong target, I shall first draw its looks for you people. Remember, do not make a move on your own.”

The little companions all came crowding over, watching him closely.

He hurriedly drew on the ground, and a moment later, he retracted his wooden baton. “This is how it looks.”

“...” A long silent pause.

“If you accidentally offend that demonic beast, remember to hurry into the Purifying Pool to treat the poison. Everyone, are you all clear?”

“...”

“Alright everyone, use this as a reference when you’re looking for it. For now, let’s rest a little before we depart!” As he said that, he stepped away from the squad and began to meditate.

“...” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. She silently looked

towards her master. “Master... Can you figure out what is being drawn here?”

Yu Yan was silent for a long while. Then, he said. “... Dog?”

“No, I think it’s a pig!” Zhonggu Lu refuted.

“... Why do I see a sheep?”



# Chapter 364: Demonic Beast Raid Guide

---

“You’re certain that the demonic beast is nearby?” Zhu Yao nudged the muscular man that looked like a mountain next to her.

“Why would I lie to you!?” Zhonggu Lu glanced at her with narrow eyes. “The place ahead is shrouded by poisonous mist, there’s definitely a venomous creature within. If it isn’t the demonic beast, what else can it be?”

“But we have squatted here for three whole hours, yet we haven’t seen that demonic beast. Why don’t we enter and look for it?”

“No.” Zhonggu Lu immediately shook his head.

“Why?” It’s definitely better than growing grass here, right?

“It’s rumoured that the poisonous creature is extremely powerful. What if we’re discovered? Putting aside you being injured, if someone who is as beautiful and flowery like me is injured, are you going to take responsibility?”

“...” Zhu Yao felt like her spirit was tainted. You’re already like a flower, why the hell do you want to be beautiful too!?

“Haah, you must understand that for a beautiful man that possesses such style and peerless beauty, there’s a need for more caution. You don’t understand.”

“...” Please swallow back the words ‘style’ and ‘peerless beauty’, hey! Just where the hell does his confidence come from?

“There’s movements!” His expression changed as he pointed to the mist up ahead. “It’s coming!”

Zhu Yao immediately stuffed back her three views and took a closer look. As he had said, a pitch-black figure appeared out of the mist made of layers of poisonous gas. Coarse breathing sounds could be faintly heard, and the poisonous mist seemed to have grown thicker as well.

A moment later, the figure grew bigger and a thick rotten stench suffused into the air. The figure began to grow clearer as well, until it revealed its rough silhouette.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. "This... is the cow-like demonic beast that Squad Captain Nangong drew?" Just how did he draw a two-legged creature into a four-legged living being?

"It should be." Zhonggu Lu nodded as well, and then said with a stern look. "Though the illustration was a little out there, it's still looks rather similar to a pig."

How is it similar!? Zhu Yao pointed at the demonic beast that was breathing poisonous gas. "How is that two-legged creature similar to a pig?"

"It's figure is really similar. Dongfang girly, your eyesight is really poor."

Your eyesight is poor, your entire family's eyesights are poor.

"It has hands and legs, so it's clearly..."

"A dog!" A cold confirmation sounded from behind.

"Master, why are you here?" Zhu Yao was stunned. Wasn't he teamed up with Squad Captain Nangong? They were headed to the other side to inspect the terrain.

"I was worried about you." Yu Yan walked past his disciple, his face did not carry the slightest bit of guilt for acting on his own. What if my disciple courts death when I'm not looking again? He glanced at the black figure in front. "It's a dog!"

"....."

"..."

"What's with both of your eyes?" Zhonggu Lu rolled his eyes. "It's clearly a pig."

"No, a dog."

“It’s definitely a pig.”

“Isn’t that supposed to be a sheep?” Another voice weighed in as well.

Yue Ying... The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. Why was he here as well? What happened to splitting up in teams?

Zhonggu Lu: “You guys must believe me. That’s a pig.”

Yu Yan: “A dog.”

Yue Ying: “Sheep...”

Zhu Yao: “...” Was she the only worried that student Nangong was on his own right now?

Roar~~~

A loud roar interrupted the four’s debate. A large mass of poison gas came spraying in the direction where the four of them were hiding.

“Crap, we were discovered.” Zhonggu Lu’s face changed. In a flash, he retreated to the back. “Retreat!”

Yu Yan grabbed onto his disciple, and then along with Yue Ying, they retreated several dozens of meters away. They then looked at the place where they were hiding just earlier. The bushes had already begun to wilt as they get dyed with layers of black, and they did not have any signs of life before long.

And that poisonous gas was beginning to spread towards them as well at incredible speed. That ferocious roar grew even louder and clearer.

“Let’s go!” Zhonggu loudly shouted. “To the Purifying Pond.”

The moment his voice fell, a black substance shot out of the mist and flew towards him.

“Watch out!” Zhu Yao called out to notify him. Zhonggu Lu materialized a defensive barrier at the nick of time, yet it was still

useless. The black substance broke directly into the barrier. Fortunately, he was nimble enough to dodge it by shifting his body to the side, and the black substance grazed his body as it fell onto the ground with a long bang. In an instant, a large crater was formed, and it was even expanding still, corroding everything in its surroundings. The rotten smell grew thicker, and Zhu Yao was dumbfounded from this sight. This is basically a biological weapon, right?

Zhonggu Lu's body was grazed by it as well, and his mystic robe began to melt. Hurriedly stripping it off, he was saved from being corroded himself.

With such a powerful corrosion that could instantly corrode such a large crater, it was no wonder Squad Captain Nangong said that one would die from being touched by it. If the corpse and bones were melted as well, then wouldn't that be certain death?

The surroundings of the crater began to emit out poisonous gas as well, and they had no choice but to make a detour out. The roar of the demonic beast sounded from behind once more, and the black poisonous substances from earlier suddenly came smashing at them like raindrops.

"Hurry and dodge!" Zhonggu Lu loudly reminded them. It was already too late for the four of them to run, so they had no choice but to dodge those raindrop-like poison as they flew. The surface of the ground looked as though they had been smashed by a rain of falling boulders, craters appearing one after another. The moment a crater was filled with poisonous gas, they would form a large mass of poison mist in the next moment.

They had no choice but to stop. "What do we do? We can't escape now!"

The demonic beast from behind caught up to them as well. A large figure stepped out of the poisonous mist. Possessing a muscular figure, there were a pair of ram horns on its head, and

four limbs that were shaped like a dog's. With its entire body made of purple, its two paws were raised in the air and two were on the ground. On the sides of its lips, two long teeth could be seen. It would occasionally ooze out a black liquid with incredible stench, and the mere sight of it was incredibly disgusting.

This demonic beast was neither a cow, sheep, pig nor a dog. If it were to put down its front paws, it would unexpectedly look the same as the creature that Squad Captain Nangong had drown.

Everyone present: "...". So it wasn't student Nangong's art being unrealistic, rather, this demonic beast was simply too abstract.

The surrounding poisonous gas was growing ticker by the second. Since they couldn't get out, they could only fight!

Zhonggu Lu immediately cast an art and summoned several hundred vines, trapping the demonic beast in front of them. Zhu Yao immediately materialized millions of icicles and shot them at the demonic beast. That strange-looking demonic beast however did not dodge either. Instead, it opened up its bloody mouth and madly shouted out. It was incredibly piercing to the ears.

The vines that were still lush green earlier instantly wilted and turned into ashes, while the icicles that filled the sky immediately turned into water as well. Furthermore, they were tainted by the poisonous gas, and they fell back to the ground as poisonous rain. Yu Yan immediately materialized a fire dragon which charged up into the sky. The sky was instantly filled with flames, burning the poisonous rain in time.

When they thought that things were finally settling down, Zhu Yao remembered what her biology teacher had told them a long time ago. If water were to encounter fire, it would turn into... steam! In the face of this venomous demonic beast, the situation became even more dire as poisonous steam was formed.

That's right. The poisonous mist grew thicker.

The four's range of movements grew smaller, and in just a few moments, merely a few square meters of area remained untouched by the poisonous mist. That demonic beast suddenly opened its mouth wide, black sparkles could be seen from within, as though it was about to spit something in their direction. Naturally, it was definitely the poisonous liquid that smashed the ground into a crater from earlier.

What to do? Ice, fire, and wood type attacks were all ineffective, and the demonic beast's magic defense was simply too high.

Yu Yan's expression sank. With a twist of his hand, he summoned his Life Artifact – the lightning sword.

“Master...” Zhu Yao's heart clenched. If he were to use lightning-type arts, their identities would be exposed.

“No matter.” Yu Yan stroked her head. They were left with no choice right now. At the very most, they would face some troubles in the future. Just as he was about to attack, a gust of wind swept past from the sky above, instantly scattering the poisonous gas that surrounded them. Student Nangong who was “abandoned” by his team was standing within the wind. He came to save them! As expected, he was definitely a great party member!

“Hurry and go!” He only had the chance to utter this, as the surrounding poisonous gas was already beginning to gather once more.

The four of them immediately caught up with him as quick as possible. While scattering the poisonous gas with wind-type arts like he did, they madly flew towards the direction of the Purifying Pool. The enraged roar of the demonic beast resounded behind them. They did not dare to stop. As they flew towards the Purifying Pool, they thought that the demonic beast would stop chasing after them. However, the moment they heard the ‘sousou’ noises, black poisonous liquid came shooting at the small group of five.

They immediately flew to the shores of the Purifying Pool, and with a few resounding bangs, craters once again appeared in the surroundings. Strangely, in a radius of a few squared meters from the Purifying Pool, the poisonous gas would immediately scatter.

However, the poisonous gas outside the Purifying Pool grew thicker, and in just a few momements, the figure of that demonic beast appeared. However, it did not dare to approach them, and simply contained to patrol around several meters away.

“What’s going on?” Zhu Yao pointed at the demonic beast and said. Then, she looked towards student Nangong. “Didn’t you say that it wouldn’t follow us here?”

“I don’t know either.” Nangong was confused as well. “When I came here the last time, the demonic beast would return right after we arrive in this pool. No matter what we did, we could not lure it in. Today... it might have been in a good mood.”

“...” This reason was a little too nonsensical!

“Alright, with the Purifying Pool here, let’s take this opportunity to bring it down. “Squad Leader Nangong’s eyes shone and he said. “This is simply a god-sent opportunity.”

He inspected the terrain and said. “This poisonous mist is incredible, but it can still be scattered with wind-type arts. Adding that we have our divine physiques, even if we’re latched on by the poisonous gas, sustaining for seven minutes or so isn’t difficult. Not to mention this pool can instantly scatter the poisonous gas. We can use wind-type arts as our shield, and then take turns in pulling the demonic beast and coming back here to detoxify. As long as we aren’t injured by the poisonous liquid, defeating this demonic beast at a slow pace isn’t impossible. What do you guys think?”

Is he talking about swapping tanks? It is indeed a good plan. After everyone considered it for a moment, they all nodded their heads.

“Then that’s settled.” Squad Captain Nangong looked at the demonic beast that was still loitering outside. He did hand seals with one of his hand, materializing a shield of wind which instantly enveloped his surroundings like a spiral of wind. Then, he took the lead and charged out.

Just as Zhu Yao was about to cast an art, a shield of wind had already begun to envelop her surroundings. When she turned to take a look, her eyes landed on a certain someone who was just putting down his hand. “Master?”

“Don’t leave too far away from your master.” He instructed as he began to fly up.

Zhu Yao instantly felt her heart warming up. Who says “warmth” is useless?

Squad Captain Nangong’s plan may sound perfect, but it did not account for the boss’s tough muscles and hard skin. Furthermore, the various mystic arts that they threw on it earlier were all completely ineffective. Though the five of them were not injured, they did not have any advantage over it either.

Squad Captain Nangong seemed to specialize in wind-type arts, but at the very most, he could only drive away the mist. Whenever he were to throw a wind blade at the opponent, a ‘miss’ damage marker would float up. It lacked destructive power. Zhu Yao and her master did not find it good to simply use lightning-type arts either. Fortunately, her master’s sword skills were at the very peak as well. With a sky filled with spiritual swords, he firmly locked the demonic beast’s movements. Furthermore, his cold sword intent was the only thing that could break past its skin, and thus became the main DPS of the team.

Zhu Yao knew all five types of mystic arts. Other than the lightning-type arts, she was most familiar with either water or ice, which were the elements she researched deeply on in order to teach Little Radish well back then. However, this demonic beast



was simply unafraid of them. When the icicles struck its body, not even a single scar was left on it. The words ‘miss’ constantly floated above its head.

Zhonggu Lu was even more unfortunate. His wood-type arts basically wilted before they could even form, leaving behind a bunch of dead grass. Yue Ying was still able to provide some help as he restrained the demonic beast with her master. He retracted all of the devillic energy in his body, and was using mystic arts to attack like everyone else. Zhu Yao did not know what he was thinking, and did not want to bother either, simply letting him do whatever he wanted.

“You guys hold on, let me catch my breath.” Zhonggu turned around and returned to the Purifying Pool to detoxify himself. With a defeated look, he said as he walked. “This demonic beast is really... It’s as though it’s born to be my mortal enemy. It instantly destroys all of the life within my wood-type arts.”

Life? Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment, as something flashed across her mind. She raised her head and looked carefully at that demonic beast. Ever since she entered the tower, all of the living creatures would have names and levels shown above their heads, as though she was looking at a net game’s point of view. She had asked her master about it, and it seemed like this was something that only she could see. Zhu Yao had thought that this was a cheat that Realmspirit had given her. This demonic beast was no exception, with the words ‘Early-stage Demonic Beast (Poison)’ floating about it, though its name was red in colour.

As for Zhonggu Lu and Squad Captain Nangong, the words above their heads were initially ‘Unknown Deity (Level 1)’. After making their introductions, the words above their heads turned into their own names, and their colours changed from yellow to blue.

Zhu Yao was not entirely mindful of these words in the beginning. Now that she thought about it, these names were truly similar to the settings found in net games. Red names signified

enemy targets, like the current demonic beast. Yellow names referred to passive targets, where they would only turn red and counterattack when they receive an attack. Those heaven-defying rabbits in the plain back then chased after them because she poked it a little, and they did not bite her on their own initiatives. The reason why Zhonggu Lu and Nangong Cheng had blue names, was because they had formed a party with her! The names would only turn blue if they were party members of the same party.

In that case, in the brackets next to the names, that should be where the levels and attributes were displayed.

This demonic beast was a poison-type, and according to the rules of net games, poison was a type that deprived life. Water, wood and fire type attacks were thus ineffective on it. It would thus make sense why a bunch of ‘miss’ would float above its head when she struck it with icicles.

If they wanted to deal with it, then the only choice would be...

Zhu Yao immediately flew towards the Squad Captain. She had to inform the Squad Captain of the raid guide. “Squad Captain...” Eh? What was the Squad Captain called again? “Nangong... Huang (Yellow)?”

“I’m Nangong Cheng!” Flips table! Who the hell is Nangong Huang?

“Aiya! Whatever! In any case, it’s all about the same~”

“...” How are orange and yellow about the same? The colours are different, alright?

“Why are you here?” His expression darkened as he released a wind blade to blow away the poisonous mist near Yue Ying and Yu Yan. He did his best to provide support to the main DPS players.

# Chapter 365: Exorcism Squad

---

“I have an idea. Our mystic arts are all ineffective, and I believe that this demonic beast’s poison is capable of snatching away the lives of all living beings, using them as its own.” Zhu Yao analysed. “The way to restrain it must be mystic arts that do not possess life.”

Nangong Cheng was stunned for a moment. With widened eyes, he said. “You’re saying, earth and metal type attacks are able to harm it?”

“Mn.”

“No wonder fellow Daoist Beichen and Daoist Ximen are the only ones able to harm it.” Nangong pondered for a moment, looking enlightened. “That sword formation is metal-type.”

“That demonic beast is nimble and fast, though the sword formation can harm it, the formation cannot restrain it for long. Nangong Huang, how’s your earth-type arts?”

I already told you I’m Nangong Cheng!

“I don’t specialize in wood-type mystic arts, though...” He turned to look at Zhonggu Lu who had been producing negligible damage.

“What?” The muscular Zhonggu Lu said with a despised look. “I don’t want to go. That demonic beast is so disgusting! What am I supposed to do if I accidentally injure my flowery and jade-like face when I approach it?”

“...” Is this the time to care about your image?

Roar~~~

Suddenly, that demonic beast once again let out an angry roar. Under Yu Yan’s and Yue Ying’s sword formation all-round attack, its body was covered in injuries. As though it had grown anxious from being pushed back, its roar sounded especially violent and

mighty. It suddenly placed its four limbs on the ground, changing its stance. Poisonous liquid began to pop out from all over its body.

“Not good, it’s about to use the poisonous liquid to attack.” Nangong Cheng’s face changed. It had intentionally released such a huge amount of poisonous liquid, and if it were to shake its body, the deadly poison would definitely fall in all directions. Even if they were to return to the Purifying Pool, they wouldn’t be able to hold on. What to do?

They could not drag it out any longer, they had to finish the battle quickly. However, the rough man Zhonggu Lu of the good-looking club actually backed out at this critical moment.

“Then that settles it.” Squad Captain Nangong Cheng said with a serious look, and he took this time to send a voice transmission to the two people at the front. “In a moment when the earth-type mystic art restrains it, the four of us will unleash our attacks at the same time and kill the demonic beast.”

“I don’t want to head over! That poisonous gas isn’t a joke.” Zhonggu Lu had a determined look. As he said that, he flew straight towards the Purifying Pool. “I have such good looks, I don’t want to...”

Before he could even finish, Nangong Cheng had already silently cast an art and summoned a human-sized water mirror in front of him. What reflected in it was a face that was stained with the purple poisonous gas.

Two seconds later...

Nangong Cheng silently covered his ears. Before Zhu Yao could even understand his intentions, a scream instantly broke through the skies, causing everyone’s body to tremble.

“Ah——! My faaaace!!!!”

After entering this poisonous mist, every single one of them had already been contaminated with a slight amount of poison, though

he seemed to have been contaminated slightly more than the rest. Furthermore, the symptoms appeared directly on his face.

It felt as though Zhonggu Lu's entire being had changed. The divine energy on his body instantly exploded forth. Zhu Yao could faintly see what might be known as 'flames of fury' being emitted out from his body, and it was burning with rage. Stomping his feet forward, his entire body was emitting out killing intent in all directions. He ruthlessly glared at the demonic beast behind him. "You trash, you dare to harm my face!"

In a flash, he suddenly charged out. A few rumbling sounds could be heard as earth thorns popped out from the ground, directly pinning the demonic beast's two claws. The demonic beast let out a scream as its poisonous liquid attack was interrupted. However, that was not the end. Right below it, a fist made from the earth suddenly appeared at high speeds, directly smashing the demonic beast onto the ground. In an instant, countless earth thorns and stone pillars popped out from the ground, smashing the demonic beast from all directions.

"You granddaddy, you dare to harm my face, you motherf\*\*king dare to harm my face! This daddy here has cultivated for so many years, yet no one has ever dared to harm my face. You garbage, you piece of trash, you actually dare to injure me! Die, die, die..."

As he pummeled and shouted at the demonic beast, his mystic arts were both quick and ruthless. Even his hair was standing straight up from his fury. Zhu Yao watched as the a bunch of damage counters floated above the demonic beast's head. -1,000, -2,000, -3,000...

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. Was this truly that smug party member that only knew how paddle on water? Why did it feel as though some sort of incredible seal had been released, hey!?

"Girly, let's attack then." Squad Captain Nangong waved at her with a calm look. "Mn, everything is going according to plan."

“...” Plan my ass! Flips table! Don’t look as though everything is in the palm of your hand! You fellow gay friend has evidently gone berserk, hey!

After Zhonggu Lu vented off his steam with his earth-type arts, that pitiful demonic beast no longer had any strength left to retaliate. He managed to muster out a crazed growl, and then used his claws to slam away the thorns. It wanted to take back its dignity as a boss monster, but Zhonggu Lu suddenly circulated all of the divine energy in his body to cast an art. In an instant, the earth began to shake, and at the moment he finished his hand seals, he instantly activated the art. “Mountain Collapse.”

In an instant, the ground began to rumble and then split to the two sides like an earthquake. The demonic beast did not have a stable footing and ended up slipping into it. However, the moment it was about to fall, its body began to change. It grew out a pair of wings and flew. Just as it was about to escape the fissure, Zhonggu Lu gritted his teeth and in an instant, several stone pillars stretched out from the ground at high speeds. Like chains, they restrained its body and directly pulled it back down.

“Now!” Squad Captain Nangong commanded. The other four people circulated their divine energy at the same time. Four enormous spiritual swords with the size of mountains appeared in the air. Carrying boundless might, they instantly scattered the surrounding poisonous gas and smashed exactly downwards where the demonic beast was.

A scream instantly resounded through the entire secret realm. Four rows of the same numbers instantly floated above the demonic beast’s head. Fatal damage -100,000! It desperately flopped about for a moment, and then, slowly, it lost all signs of life.

The surrounding poisonous mist began to scatter at this moment as well, revealing the initial blue sky.

They succeeded!

Zhu Yao felt a little fatigued. That sword earlier had drawn out a large half of her divine energy, and for a moment, her legs were a little wobbly. Her body shook, and suddenly she felt a grip by her waist. In the next instant, she leaned against a familiar chest.

“Master...”

Yu Yan glanced at her, and after realizing that nothing serious had happened to her, he habitually stroked her head. He wanted to praise his disciple for her exemplary performance, but he did not know how he should go about doing it. I’m not familiar with praising people, what to do?

Zhu Yao however had already pulled him towards where the demonic beast’s corpse was. She had to say that this boss monster was really hard to beat. Compared to the monsters she had encountered before, it had hard skin and thick blood. Only Gods and Devils were stronger than it. The key thing here was that it even had enhanced magic defense, which made it highly resistant against divine arts.

Fortunately, they still managed to bring it down. Squad Captain Nangong mentioned that the Nascent Divided Pearl was located in its belly. Zhu Yao glanced at this mountain-tall corpse, and her expression darkened. “This... Do we really have to cut it open?” She had no interest in dissecting corpses at all!

“Cut it?” Squad Captain Nangong looked at her strangely. “Why!?”

We’re not cutting it? How are we going to retrieve the quest item then? Just as she was about to ask, a lustrous light suddenly shone out from the pitch-black poisonous corpse. The corpse then slowly began to turn foggy, and finally, it actually turned into a dark purple poisonous mist. Compared to the poisonous mist from before, it was at least a hundred times thicker. “This... This is?” She was frightened.

“Don’t you know these demonic beasts are undying?” Squad Captain Nangong had an expression that looked as if it was saying ‘my party member has no common knowledge’.

“Undying?” Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. She then turned to look at the half-mistified corpse. “It can actually resurrect?”

“That’s right!”

“...” Do you have to tell me such a terrifying setting with such a calm look, hey?

“This demonic beast is birthed from the poisonous gas of these lands in the first place.” Nangong explained with a matter-of-factly look. “After all, how can poisonous gas have life? We had simply scattered it off. In three days, these poisonous gases will once again gather and form a new demonic beast.”

“...” It really is a dungeon mob. It can spawn limitlessly, hey.

After Squad Captain Nangong finished explaining, he looked towards the center of the poisonous mist. A red light flashed, and following after, a red pearl slowly raised up into the air. It continued to fly even higher, and it looked as though it was about to charge out of the poisonous mist. Nangong had an excited look as he pointed at the pearl. “That’s the Nascent Divided Pearl. I shall first contact the groups from the other secret realms.”

Zhu Yao took a closer look. Above the red pearl, six white words were floating. One of the secret key fragments

Just as the pearl was about to fly out of the poisonous mist, Zhu Yao took a step forward and reached out her hand, attempting to retrieve the boss quest item. She then glanced at the strand of purple gas that was being carried by the pearl, and she could not help but hesitate for a moment. A figure suddenly flashed and appeared next to her. That person was a step ahead and obtained the Nascent Divided Pearl.

“I never expected that with just a few of you people, you were



able to defeat this demonic beast.” A few foreign faces suddenly appeared in the air. Their attires were all different, and there were a total of seven men and one woman. Their eyes were faintly filled with excitement. And, the person who snatched away the Nascent Divided Pearl was a blue-robed male Deity that was leading them.

“Who are you people?” Nangong Cheng frowned deeply as he cautiously looked at this crowd of people who harboured ill intentions.

“Naturally, we’re people who are here to look for treasures.” The leader coldly snorted as he looked with contempt at the five people who were evidently fatigued. “Seeing how you lot took desperate measures to kill this demonic beast, you all hold merit for your hard labour. I won’t kill you guys. Leave now.”

“You’re trying to steal our treasure!” Squad Captain Nangong had a furious expression.

“So what if I am?” That man said without the slightest of guilt.

Squad Captain Nagong clenched his fists, his teeth grinding. Stealing treasures was a very common occurrence, and such people could be found everywhere in these secret realms. The Nascent Divided Pearls were not hard to obtain, what’s hard were protecting the Nascent Divided Pearls and finding the opportune time to leave the secret realms together. That was why he had done the necessary countermeasures before attacking the demonic beast. However, he never expected that these people in front of his eyes would be this shameless. They charged right out to steal the treasure the moment the demonic beast was killed. Evidently, they had their eyes on Zhu Yao’s group right from the start. Yet, their divine energy had still yet to recover, after all, they used up a large amount of them during the battle earlier. This was especially so for Zhonggu Lu who seemed to have expended all of his strength. There was completely no victorious outcome when up against these people in their current states.

“You guys have already done pretty well. A mere five of you was actually able to kill this demonic beast, and even I can’t help but feel impressed.” Though that man was speaking a respectful manner, he looked as though he was gloating with that smile on his face.

Squad Captain Nangong was already grinding his teeth noisily from his anger, while Zhonggu Lu looked like he wished he could destroy that person’s face. The other three on the other hand had slightly strange expressions. Yu Yan still had the expressionless face that looked like a block of ice from ten thousand years ago. Yue Ying was simply looking intensely at Zhu Yao on the side. Zhu Yao on the other hand, had a... worried look?

“Umm...” Zhu Yao could not help but call out to the leader who snatched their treasure.

“Oh?” That man coldly snorted. “What? There really is someone who is unafraid of death?”

# Chapter 366: Poke the Demonic Beast For Show

---

“I’m trying to say...”

“Mn?” That man frowned as he glared at her with slight dissatisfaction. “What? You still wish to go against us?”

“Uh... Not that. I just want to...”

“Let me give you an advice. Know the time and place. I’m already kind enough to let you all off alive.”

“I want to say...”

“If you lot stay stubborn, I don’t mind sending you all off on the road either!”

“... Fellow Daoist.”

“As for the Nascent Divided Pearl, heh, you guys can stop dreaming. Just treat it as though you’ve never obtained it.”

“Actually...”

“That way, I believe you lot will feel a little better.”

“Is your hand really alright?”

“My hand... What?” The man was stunned for a moment.

Zhu Yao weakly pointed at the pearl in his hand. “I’m saying... is it really alright for you to hold onto that pearl for so long? I just saw that there were still remnants of the deadly poison on it...”

“...” The man’s complacent face instantly turned pale. “What did you... say... urgh...”

His expression changed as his body was suddenly dyed dark purple. He began to break out into spasms, as he directly fell into the thick mist which the demonic beast had transformed into. Screams resounded as his body began to corrode at high speeds.

Yet he could not unleash even a single hint of divine energy. “Save... Save me...”

He reached out a hand towards his party members in the air, pleading for their help. However, as he stretched it halfway through, his hand had already turned into bones, and in an instant later, the bones completely melted. This change happened so quickly, it hadn't been five seconds since it began. The man's figure was no longer in the mist, and what remained were the various screams filled with terror and despair that still continued to echo in the air. The party members that he had brought along did not even budge, all their faces were filled with dumbfounded expressions.

Zhu Yao frowned. That's why... Antagonists die because they talk too much.

“Boss!” The crowd of people finally moved. A female Deity with a miserably pale expression cried out. Her voice was filled with fear. She then turned to glare at the five people on the ground, fury filled her lungs. “You... You lot killed him!”

“Oh please!” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at her belated effort. If she was truly that worried, why didn't she save him earlier? “We didn't do anything at all?”

“You... You knew that there's poison on the Nascent Divided Pearl, why didn't you say so earlier?” The female Deity said as she gritted her teeth.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. “Is your brain made of mush? You guys came here to snatch our loot, so we have to wash it clean and wait for you to snatch it away from us, is that it?” How are you acting all righteous right now?

“You!” The woman grew irritated.

“Who you're calling ‘you’, you?” Zhu Yao however grew enraged. “So are you guys still going to snatch away the Nascent Divided

Pearl or not? In any case, it has poison on it. If you guys want it, then this granddaddy here will give it to you. You can have it if you want it. Though if you guys really want to find, let me warn you that a starved camel is bigger than a horse. Don't think we're afraid of you. It's either the fish dies or the net gets torn, we can all perish together! Hurry and make a decision, we still have to rush off to fight other mobs."

"You..." The female Deity's face turned green from anger. Just as she was about to step forward, next to her, a man dressed in a blue robe embroidered with white marks stopped her. This person was also the only one among them with the words 'Unknown Deity (Level 2)' shown above its head. "Wait a minute!"

"Why did you stop me?"

"Since it's already a worthless object, why the need for an unnecessary struggle?" The man said with a solemn voice.

Only then did the female Deity grit her teeth and stand her ground. She ruthlessly glared at Zhu Yao, and then, with a unwilling look, she left with the crowd.

Only then did Zhu Yao heave a sigh of relief, though Yu Yan next to her was frowning. He held onto her hand and solemnly said. "No need to worry, your master..."

"I know." Zhu Yao chuckled. If they really had to fight it out, though they might look disadvantageous in terms of numbers, with her master here, it would definitely be a stable victory for them even against a few High Deities. Though in this tower, the hatred meter for the Lightning Divine Palace seemed to be off the charts. If they need not expose themselves, then it would be for the best.

"Haah, I never expected that we would obtain an useless pearl." Squad Captain Nangong was saddened as he glanced at the red pearl that was still sparkling within the poisonous mist.

“Such a waste of this daddy’s efforts.” Student Zhonggu Lu was a little irritated as well as he unconsciously stroked his own face, looking as though it was aching a little. He wondered if the poison had vanished and hurriedly materialized a water mirror to inspect his face carefully.

“That might not be the case!” Zhu Yao chuckled as she cast a wind-type art. She used a huge amount of efforts to blow away the layers of thick mist and hurriedly set a formation to suck in the Nascent Divided Pearl. The pearl then rolled a few rounds and stopped by her feet. The poisonous mist once again gathered back together. Before being affected by the thick poisonous mist for the second time, the red pearl merely had a few black strands in it earlier. Now, black covered almost half of the entire pearl.

“Dongfang girly, what are you trying to do!?” Squad Captain Nangong looked at her anxiously. “You saw it for yourself earlier. This pearl has deadly poison on it, it must not be touched.”

“I have an idea, Squad Captain Nangong Huang.”

“I’m Nangong Cheng!” Flips table. Why do you call my name wrongly whenever you have an idea!?

“Come on, don’t mind such details.”

“...” I mind, alright? He glanced at the white-robed male practitioner next to her. Manage your disciple properly, hey.

The latter maintained his expressionless look. As long as my disciple doesn’t court death, it doesn’t concern me.

“Squad Captain Huang, I think this pearl isn’t worthless.”

“...” Why did I turn into Squad Captain Huang again, hey? “This pearl is stained with deadly poison and can’t be held, how can we bring it out of the secret realm?” Take a deep breath, I’m a squad captain with principles!

“This demonic beast is undying, so it must have been challenged by several others. There’s so many practitioners who have risen to

the higher floors, so we're definitely not the only group that encountered this problem."

"You're saying there's a method to remove the poison?" His eyes shone.

"Everything has its strengths and weaknesses. How do you think the Purifying Pool is formed?"

"Oh right!" He slapped his thighs as he recalled the Purifying Pool behind him. Since the pool could disperse the poisonous gas, then dispersing the poison within the pearl might not be impossible.

"Without further ado, let's hurry and place the Nascent Divided Pearl inside the pool, Squad Captain Huang!" Zhu Yao waved her hand and then turned to Zhonggu Lu next to her. "Oh right, Little Teal, we have to trouble you to use your earth-type arts to move the pearl over. You're more specialized in such matters."

Nangong Cheng: "... I already told you I'm Nangong Cheng.

Zhonggu Lu: "... Who the hell is Little Teal?

---

Zhu Yao's idea was correct. The moment Zhonggu Lu threw the poisoned pearl into the pool, the poisonous gas inside the pearl began to disperse. Though it's much slower than dispersing the regular poisonous gas, it finally began to revert back to its original red colour.

"I've already contacted the groups from the other secret realms." Squad Captain Nangong sighed and said. "Looking at the current situation, only three out of the four Nascent Divided Pearls in the other four secret realms have been found. The last secret realm has yet to be cleared yet. It seemed like we can't exit the secret realm right now."

"Could it be that we have to wait like this?" Zhonggu Lu was a little irritated. "The poison in this Nascent Divided Pearl will most

likely scatter in about a day, and when that time comes, there will definitely be possible who will try to steal it. We won't be so lucky that before either."

Zhu Yao frowned as well. Finding treasures was easy, but protecting them was hard. The robbers back then left because the pearl was poisonous, but now, the pearl was no longer poisonous. Once the news spread, it would lure in quite a huge number of people. No matter how high their cultivation levels were, they would not be able to fend off against a sea of people.

"Heh. And yet there's still one Nascent Divided Pearl that hasn't been found, so we can't leave immediately."

"Wait!" Yu Yan, who had stayed silent for everyone other than his disciple, suddenly spoke. His ice-cold gaze swept across everyone, and then when his eyes landed on his disciple, a little warmth returned. "Setting a formation down is enough."

He did not care if they understood either, as he immediately placed down layers upon layers of concealment and defensive formations next to the pool. The half-purified Nascent Divided Pearl in the pool, along with the unpurified poisonous gas, slowly disappeared without a trace. The formations were extremely ingenious, as they were actually able to conceal the ripples of divine energy as well.

"Continue engaging the demonic beast." He continued with a solemn voice.

The group was stunned for a moment, and then, they immediately understood his intentions. "Good plan!" Nangong Cheng said with an excited look. "We shall hide the Nascent Divided Pearl inside the pool, and when the demonic beast resurrects naturally three days later, we shall act as if we haven't obtained the Nascent Divided Pearl by engaging the demonic beast. As long as we don't kill it, we will naturally not arouse the others' suspicions. Once the final secret realm makes contact with us, we



will then charge out together! It's truly a great plan!"

"Daoist Beichen..." The more Nangong Cheng thought about it, the more he felt that the plan would work. He looked at Yu Yan with sparkling eyes. He looks ice and cold, but he actually has good ideas of his own, doesn't he? Just as he was about to express his admiration, Zhu Yao suddenly squeezed in and slapped his stretched-out hand back to where it belonged.

"Hoho, Squad Captain Huang, let's think about how we should conceal our traces for the next three days, shall we?" Zhu Yao smiled with a friendly and intimate look. I dare you to try touching my master with your claws!

"Uh..." Why do I feel as if Dongfang girly's expression has suddenly become terrifying?

In order to conceal the fact that they had already obtained the quest item, and adding that the demonic beast has yet to resurrect, the group pondered for a moment and decided that they might as well make a trip back to the city. There was already a squad that found out that they had already killed the demonic beast, so there would definitely be people who wouldn't give up and return to investigate. Rather than staying, they might as well return to the city and make their presence known. That way, the suspicions that people still had would most likely be removed. Because according to the Nascent Divided Pearls' setting, it would be ineffective if only one of them was brought back to the city, all five of them must be brought back together.

As expected, the moment they returned to the city, they received countless pitying or gloating gazes. Zhu Yao and her two companions were newcomers, so they were not affected that much, but for familiar faces such as Nangong and Zhonggu, they already had some connections in the city. They immediately received a large amount of questions from the various passers-by, and among them were some that added insult to their injury.

The two of them received all of these with gloomy expressions, perfectly unleashing the images of sad, unlucky young men who had been possessed by the god of misfortune.

As for Zhu Yao, her master and Yue Ying, they stood quietly at the side as they watched their act.

Three days later, the few of them announced that they were once again entering the same secret realm to challenge the same demonic beast, in order to earn back their dignity. Not a single person suspected them. Instead, what the group received was a friendly bonus of taunts and mockeries, as the crowd watched the group enter the secret realm.

The fifty-fifth squad thus casually returned to where the demonic beast was, and the Nascent Divided Pearl was still safely lying in the pool. The few of them had talked it over, and agreed to poke the unfortunate resurrected demonic beast every two hours for show, in order to deal with the Deities that were to come spectating. Of course, other than Zhonggu Lu. The poisonous gas from back then had left a mark in his heart, and he was unwilling to move out again even if he had to die. Every day, he would squat by the pool and look at his own face with a water mirror, afraid that he would be poisoned again.

A month later, when the crowd of Deities saw that the five of them were still defending against the demonic beast and were unable to kill it for so long, one after another, they sighed and left. These people sure are idiots. This isn't the only demonic beast in the secret realm, yet they seemed to have brought themselves into a stalemate with it. At that moment, everyone cleared off their thoughts of snatching away the treasure, and slowly, not a single one of them blocked their path any longer.

When the people in all five secret realms who found the Nascent Divided Pearls finally contacted each other, the group charged out of the secret realm together.

Only then did the crowd of Deities regain their senses. They were fooled! Unfortunately, the results had already been decided.

# Chapter 367: The Three Levels of Bastard Aura

---

At the same time they exited the secret realm, the Nascent Divided Pearl flew out. Along with the other four pearls brought out by the other secret realm teams, they merged together. Then, they turned into several rays of white light and entered the foreheads of every single person that came out of the secret realms. A talisman inscription of the number '1' could be faintly seen floating off their foreheads.

The stone stairs to the second floor that they were basically unable to step on earlier, automatically floated under their feet, and then they dragged the groups up towards the bright place above them. Zhu Yao curiously touched the number '1' inscription on her forehead. It seemed like the inscription was their proof of passing the first floor, and the number was recorded based on the number of floors they passed.

The first floor was '1', so the second floor should be...

Wait a minute!

The thought of having the number '2' hanging above her head in the future instantly made her feel uncomfortable.

With the successful gathering of the five Nascent Divided Pearls, there were a total of nineteen people this time that passed the stage, and together, they flew towards the white light above them. In just a few moments, the crowd was enveloped by the white light. Zhu Yao watched as the white light flashed in front of her, and she could see flowing streams of light encircling their bodies. She suddenly felt like her mind was clear and refreshed, and the speed of her internal breathing seemed to have increased twofold. In the next instant, the crowd was already standing on a white stone stage, and the names above the heads of these Deities had all been refreshed as well. 'Level 1' could no longer be seen, and most

of them were all ‘Unknown Deities (Level 2)’. Was this a group level up?

This went the same for her squad as well. Above the squad captain’s head was ‘Nangong Huang (Level 3)’, while next to him, the muscular group member’s was ‘Little Teal (Level 2)’.

Eh, something seems off?

Zhu Yao once again glanced at her master next to her and Yue Ying who was at the back. The names and levels of the three of them were still not shown. Could the system have glitched out or something?

However, even though they all fought the same mobs, why did Nangong Huang’s level rise twice while Little Teal only leveled up once. Was it because as a party leader, he gained more experience?

The white light in the surroundings scattered off, and suddenly, a cry could be heard up ahead.

“He’s here! Hurry and surround him so that he won’t escape.”

Zhu Yao heard a few shuffling sounds, and then, in front of her, she could see a large crowd of unknown Deities, with all their levels ranging between two and three. In an instant, they surrounded the nineteen of them with no paths of escape. Their pairs of eyes stared at the new groups intensely, and then, they looked at each one of them interrogatively and excitedly.

Zhu Yao was frightened as she looked at the people that surrounded them. Are they about to bully newbies to show off their power?

“Stop them. He’s definitely among them.”

“Inspect them carefully. Do not let him escape.”

“This bunch is the first to come up here after receiving the news. He’s definitely here.”

“This is such a good opportunity, do not let him run.”

A large crowd of Level 2 and Level 3 Deities began to discuss among themselves, anxiety and excitement could be faintly felt. They seemed to be looking for a person. Zhu Yao's heart clenched as she had a bad premonition. She could not help but tug onto her master.

“No need to worry.” Her master instantly sent a voice transmission over. “We’ve never received the Floor Master’s divine imprint. As long as we do not expose our mystic arts, they won’t be able to recognize us.”

Oh!? No wonder master wouldn’t become the Floor Master no matter what. So it’s not because of the trouble, but to prevent this? Master sure has thought things too far ahead, but isn’t this unfair for a certain Floor Master? But... I still have to give him a thumbs up!

“Eh? None of these people have the aura emitted out by the divine imprints of the Lightning Divine Palace at all. Could it be that he isn’t here?” As expected, a Deity that was among the pursuers frowned as he scanned the few Deities that had just entered the lower second floor carefully.

They’re really looking for them!

“How’s that possible?” Someone else discovered the problem as well. “Didn’t the person that came up here before mention that he saw someone use lightning-type arts on the first floor? Theoretically speaking, he should be up here by now? Even if the Floor Master’s divine imprint has been passed down, its aura shouldn’t disappear so quickly. Could it be that we have to wait for the next batch?”

The surrounding crowd of Deities instantly had disappointed looks on their faces, and some of them had already begun to leave. Some still did not give up and squeezed their way in to inquire about the groups. “I don’t believe it. The new Lightning Divine Palace disciple is definitely among them. What are all your names?”

Every one of you take turns. Is there anyone here with the Daoist title ‘Yu’?”

Though the nineteen people that had just ascended were a little irritated and furious, they had just arrived here and they were not in the place to offend others. Every single one of them reported either their names or their Daoist titles. As more people reported their names, the more disappointed the surrounding Deities became. Very quickly, it was the fifty-fifth squad’s turn.

Zhu Yao was instantly filled with confidence, and she lied without the slightest hiccup.

“I’m called Third Zhang”.

Yu Yan: “Fourth Li.”

Yue Ying: “Fifth Wang.”

Zhonggu Lu: “Sixth Zhao.” What the hell?

Nangong Cheng: “Seventh Sun.” Eh? Why do I have to follow their naming conventions?

The faces of the Deities faintly twitched. Why did they feel as though something was off?

Only when the nineteen people had all reported their names did the crowd finally scatter with disappointed look on their faces. All of them returned to their various homes and find their mothers.

The bamboo-figure student Squad Captain Nangong was stunned for a moment as well. Why did I unconsciously speak out the name ‘Seventh Sun’, hey? Whatever. He turned to glance at his party members behind him. “Dongfang girly, we have to hurry to the Amway Hall to receive our next quest.”

“There’s an Amway Hall here as well?” Zhu Yao was stunned.

“But of course.” Squad Captain Nangong said proudly, acknowledging that there were someone of higher rank than his. “Our Amway Group can be found in every floor of the lower ten

floors.”

“...” Just how many people do you have in your Amway Group?

---

The divine city in the second floor was much larger than the one in the first floor. The five of them searched around for a long time before they found Amway Group’s sign at the corner of the east street. Compared to the first floor, there were more Deities in the Amway Hall in the second floor. They also saw the same flight of stairs at the very center of the streets, which should be headed to the lower third floor.

This time, when they returned to the Amway Hall, there wasn’t a Deity at the counter. Instead, there was a small formation currently flashing in the hall. After looking at it carefully, the formation seemed to be similar to the one that led to the third floor, just that it did not have the layers of stone stairs.

Only after she asked did she find out that the formation was used to send messages to newcomers. Zhu Yao immediately placed the jade tablet, that she received on the first floor, into the formation. She then scanned it with her divine sense, and as she was told, there were now many additional things in the jade tablet, including the quest clear requirements and the map for this floor. After taking a closer look, compared to the previous floor, the quest of this floor was much harder. In summary, in the previous floor, it was a quest that made a group of people attack a single monster, while in this floor, it was quest that made a single person go up against a group of monsters.

The description was similar as well. Gather the Nascent Divided Pearls in order for them to merge and form into a gate access key. However, the number of pearls this time was a little much. Every single person needed ten.

“This jade tablet did not mention how we should go about obtaining the Nascent Divided Pearls. This quest is surely more



difficult than the previous one.” Squad Captain Nangong frowned. “Furthermore, the materials needed this time are too much. With just the five of us combining our forces, it would most likely still be a difficult task to achieve. Why don’t we...” He suddenly turned to look at Zhu Yao, his eyes were burning with sparkles as he said. “Dongfang girly, let’s use some backdoor methods!”

“...”

In a flash, a cold sword reflecting a chilling light was already hanging next to his neck.

“W-W-W-Wait, Daoist Beichen, don’t be too agitated... I’m talking about taking people in... taking people in... I made a mistake with my choice of words, it’s my mistake.”

This mistake of yours is too far off the mark, right? Are you certain you didn’t accidentally expose your true nature?

“Fellow Daoists, are you all from Amway as well?” A gentle, resounding voice suddenly rang out behind them.

When they turned to look, they saw a blast of clear wind. Radiant figures appeared in the entrance, and Zhu Yao suddenly felt the aura of bastard... Ah pui! She felt a tyrannical aura assaulting in their direction.

## Chapter 368: Meeting Another Mary Sue

---

Among the people that came, the woman was gentle and beautiful, while the men were dashing, making up a total of five men and one woman. At first glance, they were pleasing to the eye. Their bodies even seemed to be glowing, as though they were carrying special effects for making their first appearance. It would have been perfect if there was background music playing behind them.

The person who called out earlier was the woman walking at the center. She wore a pink long robe and had an especially sweet smile. She walked straight over and sized up the few of them. When her line of sight landed on Yu Yan who was next to Zhu Yao, she was slightly stunned for a moment. She then took a few steps forward and lightly asked. “Fellow Daoists, are you worried about the matter concerning the Nascent Divided Pearls as well?”

Though her words were directed at their entire group, her eyes were fixated on Yu Yan. She strangely blinked a lot more than normal, looking as though there were some things she wanted to say, but was too shy to do so. Clearly, Zhu Yao and Nangong Cheng were nearest to her, yet she covered a longer distance to ask her master. Zhu Yao’s heart turned stiff for a moment as she took a step forward. What are you doing, huh? This man has an owner.

“Fellow Daoist, we are also worried about being unable to find helpers. Why don’t we work together?” The woman acted as though she did not see Zhu Yao, and continued to look at Yu Yan with a face filled with smiles. Her smile carried a hint of playfulness, like the typical neighbour’s little daughter next door. As for the five men next to her, they were looking at her with coddling smiles the entire time.

Yu Yan glanced at the person that suddenly barged her way in front of him and habitually frowned. The chilling air around his body grew a little heavier as he pulled over Nangong Cheng who

was next to him. “Decide.” This is your job, why are you slacking?

Nangong Cheng: “...” She didn’t look for me, and you’re blaming me?

“Fellow Daoist, I’m the captain of this squad. May I know what you mean by working together, young lady?”

“Ah, so you’re the squad captain.” The woman was stunned for a moment, and then her expression changed. Her face turned red from shyness, as she meekly glanced at Yu Yan. “I’m sorry, I...” With pure eyes similar to a fawn, and the hint of redness on her cheeks, her gesture could arouse the feelings of pity in every male creature’s heart, making it unbearable for others to reprimand her for her actions. As a woman, Zhu Yao expressed that this was a skill that she hadn’t witnessed before.

As expected, Nangong Cheng’s expression immediately softened. “No worries. Daoist, do you plan on grouping with us?”

“Mn.” She nodded. “I’m Mei Xue, and I’m a recent newcomer in the Amway Group as well. Ten Nascent Divided Pearls are simply too many. Also, the places with the Nascent Divided Pearls on the second floor are all extremely dangerous. That’s why I wish to invite all of you to work together. May I know your answer?”

Nangong Cheng had a joyous look. The other party had six people, and including them, their numbers would total up to eleven. Their strength would ultimately double. Even if they had to face three demonic beasts at the same time, it wouldn’t pose a problem.

“What a coincidence, we wanted to find more people as well. Daoist Mei Xue, your invitation is well-timed. Let me discuss about this with my fellow teammates, as long as they...”

“I object.” Zhu Yao raised her hand.

“Dongfang girly!” Nangong was stunned for a moment.

Zhu Yao patted on Nangong Cheng’s shoulder. “Squad Captain

Huang, you and Little Teal can join their squad. My master and I shall not intrude.”

“Don’t do that, Dongfang girly. We all came from the lower first floor together, so we’re already considered to be tied by fate. Why do you want to leave?” Also, I’m not Squad Captain Huang.

Just as Zhu Yao was about to explain, Mei Xue suddenly stepped out and butted in. “This big sis... These Nascent Divided Pearls are very hard to obtain. With every new member, there will be a higher chance of success. Also, we have already been on this floor for several days, so we are extremely familiar with the terrain. With more helpers, we can definitely reach the third floor faster. Why is big sis making it difficult for your squad captain?” She said with a painful expression, as though Zhu Yao’s rejection towards teaming up with them was something unfair.

“Does this concern you?” What does this have to do with you!? This person must be sick, right? Why the hell did you pull aggro towards me for no reason?

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. She did not have a good impression of her in the first place. This time, she couldn’t be bothered to care about her and continued to speak with Nangong Cheng. “Squad Captain Huang, the Nascent Divided Pearls of the second floor are not in secret realms, and there’s no requirement of activating them altogether at once. Though the required amount is a little more than before, it isn’t impossible for us to gather them all slowly by ourselves. For now, I have no intentions of forming another group, let us say our goodbyes here then.” Actually, when she saw the information earlier, she already had the intention of moving alone. The hatred towards Lightning Divine Palace was simply too large, if they were to move together, not only wouldn’t they be able to cast lightning-type arts, there might be possibilities that they would be exposed somehow. If it was just her and her master, then they wouldn’t have much scruples about such things.

“Wait!” Mei Xue realized that they were truly intent on leaving.

She suddenly stepped forward and tugged onto her sleeves. “Big sis, you...”

“Stop!” Zhu Yao interrupted her. “One, I don’t have a younger sister. Two, you already said that you’ve been on this second floor for several days. It’s my first day today, and I’ve never heard of you in the Divine Realm either, which proves that your stay here in the tower is much longer than mine, so you’re definitely older than me. Calling me big sis... don’t you feel you’re acting a little too cutesy? Third, this is our first encounter, so why the hell are you pestering me this much?”

“...” Mei Xue’s face stiffened, and suddenly, her eyes reddened, as though she had just suffered some great injustice. Zhu Yao instantly received five sets of killing intent from behind. “I... I’m doing it for your own good too. I want everyone to be together... If big sis isn’t willing, then I... I...”

“It’s fine, Xue’er.” A green-robed man on her right suddenly stepped out. He glared at Zhu Yao for a moment, and then coldly snorted. “In this world, there are always such people who are blind and do not know their place. Not everyone is as kind as you. You do not have to feel sad for such people.”

“...” The hell. I just want to leave the party, and I’m not leaving your party either. How am I blind and unaware of my place? Who are these brain-deficient people?

“I’m alright.” Mei Xue shook her head. Then, she looked at Zhu Yao again and said. “I just feel that big sis will definitely regret her insistence on acting alone, and it will definitely implicate the Daoist that is with you.” She then looked at Yu Yan with sincere eyes. “This Daoist, I hope that you think this through as well. The second floor cannot be compared to the first floor.”

“Hoho!” Zhu Yao side-stepped and stood in front of her master. Those eyes of hers gave Zhu Yao the feeling that she was being robbed. “From what you’re saying, for someone like me who

insists of working alone, all the more I shouldn't join your group and drag all of you down. Shouldn't you thank me for that?"

Mei Xue was stunned for a moment, and instantly, her eyes turned even redder. Her expression grew even pitiful than before and the glittering from the reflection of tears could be seen. "I... I, big sis doesn't like Mei Xue? Is that why you don't agree to teaming up with my group?"

"That's right!" Zhu Yao nodded.

Everyone present was dumbfounded. No one had expected that she would admit it so directly.

"I don't like you!" Zhu Yao seriously said. "I don't even know where you come from, yet you insist of preventing me from leaving. There must be something wrong with me if I were to like you. I thought you knew, but you actually didn't?"

"You..." The green-robed male Deity from earlier was instantly enraged. "You dare to be impolite towards Xue'er!" In an instant, a powerful pressure came pressing down at her, and it was filled with killing intent.

Zhu Yao was startled. She never expected that he would attack her so straightforwardly, and she couldn't react at that moment. Just as the pressure was about to land on her, the side of her waist tightened as she was pulled directly into Yu Yan's embrace. In the next moment, an even more powerful pressure that carried a chilling intent was sent back. In an instant, a terrifying aura enveloped the entire Amway Hall. The green-robed male Deity was unable to stabilize himself, and he puked out a mouthful of blood from the divine energy rebound.

"Big brother Ye Yu!" Mei Xue cried out in surprise. She hurriedly held onto him before he could fall onto the ground. The others were not in great shape either. Though the pressure was not targeted at them, their hearts clenched, and cold sweat dripped down.

The other four men instantly paled as they looked at Yu Yan with bewildered eyes. Someone who had just arrived on the second floor actually had such incredible strength.

Yu Yan coldly glared at the crowd. In an instant, the temperature of the room fell by a few degrees. "Argument, yes. Fight, no!" Daring to injure his disciple right in front of him, were they treating him as blind?

At that moment, everyone present did not utter a sound. The few men with peerless looks especially had heavy expressions on their faces. The female Deity called Mei Xue on the other hand, had a hint of dazzling light flashing past her eyes as she looked at Yu Yan. Then, the light immediately disappeared as she changed into a worried expression and held onto the injured green-robed male Deity. Zhu Yao frowned. A strange feeling welled inside her the depths of her heart. She faintly sensed that something was amiss, but she couldn't figure it out.

Yu Yan turned around, looked at Nangong Cheng, and coldly spoke these two words. "Leaving group!"

"Ah?" Nangong Cheng was stunned for a moment, and then he immediately nodded. "Ou."

Yu Yan did not stay for idle chatter either. He grabbed onto his disciple and left. This time, their exit was a success with no one daring to stop them. See? Who says violence can't solve problems?

---

They flew straight towards a forest south of the divine city, seeking the whereabouts of the Nascent Divided Pearls. Recalling the incident from earlier, the strange feeling in the depths of Zhu Yao's heart grew even heavier. That Mei Xue was constantly giving her a strange familiar feeling, especially that party configuration consisting of five men and one woman.

The looks and demeanour of those five male Deities were all

decent. Even in the Divine Realm where the people's appearances were beautiful to the point of being off the charts, they were considered to in the upper tier, and they were not lacking much compared to her master either. Furthermore, their levels were all three, which meant that they were leaders in their own rights on this second floor. She just couldn't figure out why they would bring along Mei Xue who was level one.

That's right! Mei Xue was level one! When Zhu Yao noticed her level, she was shocked as well. She was the first level one player that Zhu Yao saw in this lower second floor. Furthermore, from the eyes of those few men, they were not your average companions among Daoists. Instead, they looked like... the eyes of lovers! Five to one, uh... their taste was incredibly heavy.

Wasn't this the standard of a Mary Sue story?

Zhu Yao stopped her feet, as something rang in her mind. She linked up the clues and figured out what this strange feeling was. She was too similar to Yi Ling from before. They both had appearances of a white flower, they both had the Mary Sue attribute, and they were both surrounded by a bunch of men that would die for their sakes. Furthermore, they both wanted to pull beautiful men into their harems at first sight. However, why didn't her face have the word 'bug' on it?

She was simply walking on the harem route, but not the world destruction route? Or was the Lightning Divine Tower a separate world? Why did she feel that a person like that was even more terrifying!? That girl's a human-shaped biological weapon that attracts attention wherever she goes!

"Master..." She pulled the man next to her and hugged him tight. Raising her head, she said with a stern tone. "Promise me, just like how the Fifth Prince promised Xiao Yanzi, cherish your disciple and stay far away from Mary Sue Mei Xue, alright?" If you dare to have a change of heart, I will take my revenge on society.



Yu Yan was stunned for a moment. He looked at stupid disciple a little strangely, and then, with a frown, he asked. “Who is Mei Xue?”

“...”

Alright then. Face-blindness saves the world.

# Chapter 369: Please Call Me Lei Feng

---

Zhu Yao carefully looked at the map, and then glanced at the surrounding trees that were as tall as the clouds.

“Master, why are we here?”

“Naturally, to find the Nascent Divided Pearls.” Yu Yan replied seriously.

“Are you certain we can find one here?”

He reached out his hand to stroke her head. “Previously, the Nascent Divided Pearl was inside a demonic beast’s body, and demonic beasts usually conceal themselves within dense forests.”

“But master... We have already circled around for a month?”

“Demonic beasts do not emit out auras, so we are unable to find them with our divine senses.”

“But we have already walked through this path three times today.” Are you sure we’re not lost?

The white figure in front of her stiffened for a moment. Then, he immediately said with a stern look once more. “Do not be anxious.” Saying that, he turned towards another small road.

“Master, we came from that road earlier.”

“...” His figure paused for a moment, and then, he decisively turned towards another road. Mn, he simply wanted to have a closer look. He definitely wasn’t lost.

Zhu Yao caught up to him with a darkened expression. So her master was not just face-blind, but had a poor sense of direction as well. Without the GPS known as divine sense, he was completely unable to find his way. It’s no wonder he’s a shut-in?

In the next few days, a certain master completely demonstrated his basic conduct as someone with no sense of direction.

“Master, we walked through that road before.”

“Master, at the end of this road is the riverside which we rested at earlier.”

“Master, we crawled up from that boulder over there earlier. Did you forget?”

“Master, stop marking on this tree. You have already marked it four times, this makes it the fifth.”

“Wait! Master, why are you turning back? We just came from there.”

“Master...”

“Yu... Yao!” Yu Yan frowned as he finally stopped. He pulled in his disciple and said with a stern expression. “Your master feels that it’s best that we search from the sky, and use our divine senses to probe the area.”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “Master, weren’t you the one who said that we can’t use our divine senses to search for demonic beasts?” You’re just trying to escape the fact that you have no sense of direction, right?

“Your master feels that for something such as Nascent Divided Pearls, they might not all be inside demonic beasts.” He analyzed with a serious look.

“... Master, are you certain you’re not lost?” Enough, enough! I know you have no sense of direction already. Please pass me the authority to lead the way, alright?

“Nonsense.” A certain master still kept up his stern expression. “Previously on the first floor, among the five Nascent Divided Pearls in the five secret realms, not all of them were found within demonic beasts. It must be the same for this place as well.”

“Then master thinks that...” Enough! Though having no sense of direction isn’t an illness, please do not give up treatment!

“The Nascent Divided Pearls. They might be somewhere else.”

“Hoho...” Master, the way you’re quibbling is so refreshing. She took a deep breath, and casually picked an unknown fruit from the tree next to her. “If it’s not inside demonic beasts, are you saying they can even be grown from trees?”

Ting!

You received 1 Nascent Divided Pearl. Gate Key 2 – Completion Rate: 1 / 10

Zhu Yao: “...”

Yu Yan: “...”

Yue Ying: “...”

She looked at the fruit in her hand that suddenly turned into a green pearl, staring at it silently for three seconds...

They’re really growing from trees, hey!

Where’s your most basic conduct as a quest item? Do you have to be this random?

“Mn, it seems the path that your master has chosen isn’t wrong.”

“...” Master, do you have to be this shameless?

---

Zhu Yao carefully inspected the tree, and it looked extremely normal. If not for it being filled with fruits hanging on its branches, it wouldn’t even have any decorative value either. Furthermore, the fruits on the trees were extremely green. Just by looking at it, she knew that they were the type where their sourness would seep into her tastebud with just a single bite. However, a tree like this was actually filled with Nascent Divided Pearls. At that moment, Zhu Yao felt that she had truly stepped on dog shit.

It seemed like them circling around this forest for more than a

month was not a fruitless effort.

All of them grabbed ten each. After hearing a series of notification bells, the ten Nascent Divided Pearls merged into a colourful marble-like pearl. Written on it was 'Gate Key (2)'.

Zhu Yao never expected that they would pass this stage so easily this time. It was so easy, she couldn't believe her own eyes. After adjusting themselves, they decided to hurry back to the previous divine city and head up to the third floor.

This time, they did not need to look for demonic beasts, and so they could wantonly use their divine senses to look for the path back. In the end, after scanning through, she found out that they were actually at somewhere extremely north of the second floor. Zhu Yao recalled that when they left the city back then, they had clearly gone south. Yet, they actually managed to find their way to the northern side. She had to admit that her master's standard of direction sense was already beyond godlike.

"Let's go." Yu Yan held his disciple with his usual look, and flew up into the air. They, he headed straight in the direction of the divine city. In the depths of his heart, he was already experiencing waves of joy. With the powerful GPS known as the divine sense, a certain master had instantly turned into an expert guide as he picked the nearest road. He could finally fly confidently, fly freely, and fly willfully! His disciple no longer had to worry about him not having a sense of direction either!

Because they made an incredibly huge detour in the beginning, they naturally did not pick the same road as before. Zhu Yao thought that their speed would increase dramatically, but her master suddenly stopped after flying for an hour and stayed in the air.

"What is it?"

Yu Yan frowned as he looked towards the distance. "There's people in front of us."

Zhu Yao swept her divine sense through, and indeed, there were auras of Deities in the surroundings. However, they were quite a distance away, so she couldn't get a clear sight of them. Furthermore, a faint scent of blood was lingering in the air. "Who is it?"

He did not reply, instead, his expression simply turned heavier.

Though, Yue Ying at the side spoke up. "It's the people we formed a squad with before."

"Our former squad?" Zhu Yao was stunned. "Squad Captain Nangong Huang!? Let's go over!"

She increased her speed and immediately flew in the direction where the scent of blood was coming from. As she had expected, fifty kilometers away, Former Squad Captain Nangong was lying on the ground covered in blood. He was missing an arm, and the wound there was uneven, as though it was tore out by something. A large pool of fresh blood stained the ground as he panted, half-kneeling on the ground. His aura was unstable, and even the number above his head was constantly flashing between '2' and '3'. Was he about to drop a level?

"Nangong Huang!" Zhu Yao could not help but call out.

"I'm called Nangong Cheng." The person on the ground roared back out of habit, and then he was stunned when he saw Zhu Yao. "Why is it you? Why... are you all here..."

"I'm the one who should be asking you that. Why are you injured so heavily? Where's the others?" Zhu Yao cast a few arts to stop his bleeding. Wasn't he in a squad with that Mary Sue? Why was he here alone?

"The others..." Just as he was about to explain, he suddenly recalled something and pushed her away. "Hurry and leave this place. Otherwise, it will be too late."

"What?" Before Zhu Yao could even figure out the situation, she

hearing a sharp and terrifying roar. The surrounding atmosphere felt as if it had dropped by several dozen degrees as a bone-piercing chilling wind blew.

“It’s too late!” Squad Captain Nagong’s face instantly turned miserably pale.

“Yu... Yao!” Yu Yan pulled up his disciple and shielded her behind him. Forming hand seals with his two hands, various inscriptions instantly flew out of his hands. At that moment, spanning a territory of several dozen meters in radius, a transparent barrier was instantly erected. Dozens of enormous spiritual swords descended from the sky, circling around the surroundings and firmly protecting the people within.

This was... the Five Ways Sword Spirit Formation! A defensive formation that merely second to the Nine Tribulations Five Ways Lightning Formation of Lightning Divine Palace!

The moment the formation was completed, the surroundings rumbled. Several hundreds of demonic beasts of various types and sizes appeared. They then began to wildly crash against and bite the barrier.

Zhu Yao was stunned. Earlier, there wasn’t even a single movement. Just where the hell did all these demonic beasts come from?

“It’s no use.” Nangong Cheng’s face turned ash-grey in defeat as he looked at the three people in front of him with eyes filled with guilt. “This demonic beast is lured over by an Annihilation Formation. More and more of them will appear. Forget about the three of you, even if there’s thirty of us, we definitely wouldn’t be able to defeat all of them.”

Annihilation Formation...

The Annihilation Formation that would annihilate all living beings! Who would place down such a formation?

Yu Yan frowned even deeper. He directly called out his own Life Artifact, the lightning sword, and took a few steps forward.

“I’m sorry... for pulling you all down.” Nangong Cheng looked at Zhu Yao with a face filled with guilt.

“Do not speak for now.” Zhu Yao cast an art to temporarily stop his bleeding, and then entered his body to inspect it with a strand of divine sense. She realized that his internals were damaged especially heavily, and even his meridians were about to turn into mush. His Dantian even had the dangerous traces of cracking. She immediately sat down in a lotus position behind him. “Focus and calm yourself, I will help restore your Dantian and heart meridians.

“Nevermind!” Nangong however shook his head. “We are not even able to escape now. You will just be wasting your divine energy. Dongfang girly, don’t care about me any longer. I can’t live for long anymore. If you all of you charge out with all of your strength, there might be a sliver of hope...”

“What’s with all these nonsense that you’re spouting!” Zhu Yao ignored his words and immediately slammed her palm onto his chest and inserted a strand of divine energy into his body. This strand stabilized his collapsing Dantian with all its might.

Nangong Cheng still insisted on explaining. “There are so many demonic beasts, and not to mention, they are demonic beasts with an extremely dark attribute. If you bring me along, you guys basically can’t escape at all. Take this opportunity where the demonic beasts are not stacking up yet and flee.”

“Shut up!” She did not realize it before, but he was even a chatter.

“I’m being serious, Dongfang girly!” Nangong Cheng was anxious. He persuaded her while spitting out blood. “This gratitude for helping me, this old man shall pay back in my next life.



However, this crowd of demonic beasts are all extremely dark beasts that stay in the north. Only lightning can deal with them effectively. You guys beat them.” The more he spoke, the more he felt despair. “If we don’t leave now, we won’t make it in time. Unless you guys are capable of inviting the people of Lightning Divine Palace...”

Rumble!

Before he could even finish, lightning sparks lighted up the entire sky. Lightning bolts with the width of a bucket and descended from the sky. The lightning bolts that surrounded the encircling demonic beasts struck fiercely. In the sky, a snow-white figure was currently holding onto a lightning sword. Even with a light swing, lightning sparks continued to fill the sky.

Eh!?

“Light... Lightning... Lightning Divine Palace!” There must be something wrong with how I got injured. Why the hell does Daoist Beichen know how to wield lightning-type arts!? “Dong... Dongfang girly!”

“What?” Zhu Yao used this opportunity to guide out her divine energy and sealed four out of five of his damaged meridians. Then she stabilized his near-collapse Dantian, before standing right up.

“He... Is he really your master?”

“Mn.”

“Direct disciple?”

“Of course!” If he’s not my direct master, are you telling me that you’re my master?

“...” Didn’t they say that only a single person from Lightning Divine Palace had entered? When did it become a total of three?

# Chapter 370: It's Definitely Not That Easy

---

“Yu... Yao.” Yu Yan swept away the demonic beasts and immediately flew over. He glanced at Squad Captain Huang who was no longer in a critical state. “Let’s go.”

Zhu Yao nodded and then grabbed Nangong Huang off the ground. “Off we go!”

“Wait!” Nangong Cheng reached out towards the ground and seemed to have picked something up, before allowing himself to be pulled by Zhu Yao. Following Yu Yan, they flew towards the cleared path which was blasted open by the lightning strikes.

After flying up did they realize just how many demonic beasts were roaming in the surroundings. The entire place was shrouded in thick darkness. At the very least, their numbers were up in the high thousands. It was no wonder they had circled around the forest without bumping into a single demonic beast. They had all run over here.

Yu Yan summoned a lightning dragon. Zhu Yao did not stay idle either and directly summoned her Life Artifact – ‘Patch’ Sword. With a light swing, she easily released her sword intent. A phoenix which was formed by red lightning bolts, along with her master’s lightning dragon, instantly swept open a single road in front of them.

The demonic beasts that were scattered towards the surroundings, once again began to gather.

“Charge out!” Yu Yan grabbed onto his disciple and flew towards the swept-open path while blowing away the leftover demonic beasts. Zhu Yao was just about to catch up, when she suddenly stopped once more. Lowering her head, she looked at the bottom, at the figure that was standing at the very center of a formation. She could not help but call out. “Hurry.”

The figure below was stunned for a moment, and then immediately after, the corners of his lips stretched upwards, looking as if he had just felt the spring breeze. His smile, that looked as though he had been given a new lease of life after being frozen in ice for so long, was as if he had just found hope to continue living on.

Zhu Yao's heart sank, and she somehow began to feel a little irritated as she continued forward. Only then did the figure on the ground flash and appear behind her. He still maintained that considerable distance, but compared to the complete lack of presence before, he seemed to now possess a hint of life.

They flew straight back towards the forest they got lost in, and only after they could no longer hear a single beast howl did they finally stop.

Yu Yan searched for a rather concealed valley so that Nangong Cheng could tend to his wounds. Though his injuries were really severe, since Zhu Yao was able to seal his meridians and protect his Dantian in time, his foundations were not damaged. Adding that he was Demonic Immortal in the first place, he had a powerful body and his recovery power was much faster than regular Deities. After a few hours, the wounds on his body had all begun to close,. Though, a little more time was needed for his severed arm to regrow.

The level above his head dropped by one, from the initial '3' to the '2' now. He was now exactly the same as his gay friend Zhonggu Lu.

“Dongfang girly, really, thank you very much. I... I...”

“No need for thanks, call me Lei Feng! Oh right, where's Little Teal?” Zhu Yao suddenly recalled. “Did the two of you split up? Why are you the only one here?”

“I'm not. He's right here!” Nangong Cheng reached out his hand to pick up a bloodied object that had been placed next to him.

Zhu Yao took a serious look at the thing in his hand. It was completely stained in blood, and was something similar to a bundle of withered grass roots. “This... Is this straw?” And it’s harvested too.

“This daddy is a Flower Deity!” The withered grass on Nangong Cheng’s suddenly leapt up, and then shook four of its branches about. “You actually compared me to those extremely ugly grass roots. How are they as handsome and suave as me?”

This voice is...

“Little Teal!?” Zhu Yao was shocked. She cast a Dirt Removal Art on it, revealing a yellow branch that looked as though it hadn’t been watered for several hundred years. A flower was grown at the center of it, though its four petals were all distorted together, as though they could wilt and fall off at any moment. “You’re actually a Flower Deity? There are not many spirits capable of cultivating in High Deities. You’re rather incredible.” The cultivation of spirits were usually quite low. This was the first time she saw one that could reach the level of a High Deity and enter the Lightning Divine Tower.

“W... Well, at least you have some... eyes.” It shook about its dried plum-like leaves, and then, at the same time, folded them a little. “But, even if you praise me like that, I... I won’t be really happy either.”

(¬\_¬)

Even though he was clearly really happy!

“Why are you back in your original form?” Zhu Yao looked at the two of them back and forth. Did you two formed a group with Mei Xue? Why are you two the only ones left here? Where are they?”

The leaf that Zhonggu Lu raised once again wilted down. Nangong Cheng had a furious look as well, as he gnashed his teeth audibly.

“Don’t bring it up. My eyes were blind for mistakenly trusting those shameless people.” Nangong Cheng angrily told them the events that happened after they left. “Initially, we agreed to come over to the north to search for demonic beasts with Nascent Divided Pearls in them. However, that ridiculous Mei Xue wanted to head to the depths of this dense forest, explaining that she had just obtained an ancient secret formation. She said that as long as we bring in all the demonic beasts inside the formation, we can obtain Nascent Divided Pearls without even lifting a finger. However, who knew that the so-called formation she spoke of, was actually an Extermination Formation?”

“This daddy here has lived for so long, yet I’ve never seen such a stupid person before.” Zhonggu Lu interrupted. “That Extermination Formation is capable of exterminating all living beings, but those demonic beasts cannot be considered living beings in the first place. They are unkillable and unexterminable, their births are tied to fate itself. They are creatures without souls. The moment she unleashed the Extermination Formation, all other living beings died, leaving behind the demonic beasts. How is that seeking Nascent Divided Pearls? We’re clearly seeking a beating there!”

Uhh... She certainly was not aware that this particular Mary Sue’s thought process would be this surprising and fresh.

“Haah... We actually had a chance to escape.” Nangong Cheng continued. “The moment the Extermination Formation activated, I realized something was amiss, and informed everyone to hurry and retreat. However that girly called Mei Xue insisted that the formation was effective, and wasn’t willing to leave even if she had to die. And those squadmate of hers, every single one of them was blind as well. The moment she put it that way, all of them actually believed her. Only when the demonic beasts come chasing were they finally willing to believe that was an Extinction Formation.”

“Then why were you two there?” When she discovered them

earlier, there weren't presences of any other formations in the surroundings, and the place did not look as if a formation that could exterminate all living beings had been activated. This proved that they had already escaped.

"Haah..." Nangong Cheng's expression grew even uglier. "We desperately wanted to slaughter out way out. By combining the strength of all eight of us, it shouldn't have been impossible. Who knew that the female Deity Mei is merely a decoration? Forget about crying throughout the entire journey, the others even had to split some of their attentions to protect her. There were several times where we were this close to being devoured by demonic beasts, but those five people seemed to have taken the wrong medicine and all went to protect her. In the end, Brother Zhonggu Lu and I were the only ones left killing the enemies." The longer he spoke, the angrier he became as he painfully gritted his teeth. "I simply told her off a little, and then she began bursting out in tears, making a ruckus and saying things like wanting to commit suicide, not wanting to pull us down. The hell, just what kind of situation did she think we were in back then? Yet she still wanted to make a ruckus. If she wanted to cause a ruckus, then do it. Charge right into the mouth of a demonic beast and end it right there and then. Yet she still wanted to go crazy and wanted to snatch my weapon away to commit suicide using it."

"Uh..." This is an Oscar award nominee, young man. "And then?"

"Then..." His expression darkened, his teeth gnashed resoundingly. "After that, the other five Daoists went crazy as well. They actually wanted to fight me because of her, initiating duels and whatever! The hell, just what kind of situation did they think we were in? They actually wanted to duel me right there and then! If not because she was female, I really wanted to bite her to death!"

It seemed like there were deep internal conflicts huh. "Then..."

how did you guys get out?”

Nangong Cheng took a few deep breaths, before he slowly said. “Brother Zhonggu Lu used up all the divine energy in his body and ignited a shattering technique, blasting open a crack. We were then able to escape the Extermination Formation and arrive in that dense forest. That was how my arm was shredded off as well. After we got out, we split from the group. After that, because my injuries were too severe, I could no longer muster any energy to fly and fell into that dense forest. I was then caught up by those demonic beasts.”

It’s no wonder Little Teal reverted back to his original form.

“If Dongfang girly hadn’t appeared in time, even if I wasn’t eaten by those demonic beasts, my Dantian would have most likely been shattered, and my cultivation would have been destroyed.” He said with a gratitude. “Thank you, Dongfang girly.”

“We were passing through anyway.” Zhu Yao patted on his shoulders and said with a proud look on her face. “You don’t have to be courteous with me now, Squad Captain Nangong Huang.”

“...” I’m Nangong Cheng!

“Your Dantian is fine now, but it will take some time for your meridians. As for Little Teal...” She looked at the withered plant next to her, and inspected it with her divine sense. She discovered that there really wasn’t the slightest bit of divine energy in his body. How was she going to heal a damaged plant? Could it be...

“Hey, what’s with that face of yours that looks like you’re about to give me fertilizers?” Zhonggu Lu suddenly straightened up. It shook its two leaves forward, making a large cross.

“Little Teal, you don’t have to be so sensitive! I never thought of giving you fertilizers.”

“Then it would be something close to...”

“I just wanted to water you.”

“.....”

“...”

---

Student Zhonggu Lu firmly resisted against all unreasonable cultivating actions. Through its words, it resolutely rejected all of Zhu Yao's kind intentions of watering it and providing it fertilizers. Zhu Yao expressed that she was really sad. Raising flowers or whatever, was something she specialized in. In the modern era, the flowers and plants that she raised were all immensely beautiful. Her techniques were definitely on the professional level. She never expected she would be despised for it.

Left with no other choice, they could only plant it in soil. In order to make it convenient for travel, she even especially used earth-type mystic arts to make it a flower pot, so that it can be carried around easily. Mn. I'm a little excited as to what type of plant Little Teal is!

The moment student Little Teal entered the flower pot, it sank into deep sleep. Squad Captain Nangong's injuries still needed to be tended to as well. Zhu Yao had no choice but to put aside her floor rising plan and stay in this valley for a night. Tomorrow, she would then head over to the center of the divine city and raise her level.

Turning around, she glanced at the two people who were in meditation and deep sleep. She could not help but let out a sigh. “They sure were unlucky.” Mary Sues were terrifying alright. She didn't do anything much, and she ended up landing them in such pitiful states. Zhu Yao then pulled her master over from the side and once again reminded him. “Cherish your life, stay far away from Mary Sues.”

“Yu... Yao.” Yu Yan glanced at the two people and frowned. “I'm afraid this matter isn't that simple.”



“Ah?” Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment.

“From what I know, though Extermination Formations are powerful, they do not have the capabilities to lure in demonic beasts.”

“What do you mean?”

“Have you ever wondered why these two people were still constantly chased by those demonic beasts even after they left the formation?” He said with a calm look. “Or should I say, just the two of them?”

“...” Zhu Yao’s heart sank, her eyes widened. “Master, you’re saying...”

He nodded. “I believe the Nascent Divided Pearls within the Extermination Formation had all been cleared out by now.”

“...”

# Chapter 371: Two-Person Instance

---

Zhu Yao returned to investigate the Extermination Formation, and as her master had said, the place had been cleared up nicely. It was a barren wasteland within a hundred kilometers radius. Forget about Nascent Divided Pearls, even the demonic beasts had disappeared. She even intentionally circled around the area, yet she did not even discover a single one.

“Other formations have been mixed within the Extermination Formation.” Yu Yan solemnly said. “Most likely, one of the formations was used to lure in demonic beasts, and the formation core was on one of their bodies.”

Zhu Yao’s heart turned chilly for a moment. She thought that Mei Xue was like Yi Ling, a white lotus with excessive hormones. Never did she expect that she was actually a black-hearted lotus. Most likely, she had already planned on using Squad Captain Nangong and Little Teal right from the start.

Though there were many ways to obtain Nascent Divided Pearls, they were all in this dense forest. There were many living creatures in the forest, and they were extremely hard to find. That was why she decided to exterminate all living beings, and after that, finding Nascent Divided Pearls would turn much more convenient.

However, the moment this formation were to active, other than Nascent Divided Pearls, there were still demonic beasts in the dense forest. In order to buy more time to collect the scattered Nascent Divided Pearls, she needed a cannon fodder to help her lure away the demonic beasts. That’s why she chose Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu.

She secretly placed the formation core for the demonic beast luring formation on them, and as long as they split up, the demonic beasts would naturally chase after Nangong Cheng and

Zhonggu Lu. All they had to do was return to collect the Nascent Divided Pearls and they would be done with their work. Such convenience.

“Then where are they now?” Zhu Yao’s heart sank. The demonic beasts can’t possibly chase all the way here, right?

“No need to worry.” Yu Yan shook his head. “That demonic beast luring formation must be time-limited. By now, it should be ineffective.”

With a wave of his hand, a dull-coloured formation inscription floated out of the two were meditating.

Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief. Thinking back for a moment, she suddenly felt that Mei Xue was rather terrifying. In order to obtain Nascent Divided Pearls, she would actually slaughter all the living beings within a hundred kilometers radius without batting an eye. She sure was ruthless. Furthermore, the Extermination Formation was just a thousand kilometers away from the divine city. Zhu Yao wondered if there were any unlucky Deities who came walking into the forest and were killed along with all of the living creatures. Let’s not forget there were definitely several demons, beasts, or spirit among them.

As an honest person with great EQ and IQ, Zhu Yao felt that she definitely had to stay away from this black-hearted lotus in the future. She might one day be conned into her schemes.

Zhu Yao directly told Squad Captain Nangong the truth, and his face instantly blackened. He looked as if he badly wanted to head back immediately and beat up the other side. Little Teal’s leaves even turned black from anger. This seed of vengeance had truly been planted deep.

Though by now, they must have already flown up to the third floor. They did not idle for long. After student Nagong’s injuries were better, they immediately plucked out a few Nascent Divided Pearls and stepped onto the level-raising elevator.

---

Zhu Yao was awakened by the cold. There was cold wind assaulting her, and it was bone-piercing chilly. Startled up, she opened her eyes and what she saw was complete darkness. The entire place was pitch-black. She instinctively reached out for her master beside her, but she grasped empty air instead.

“Master!” Zhu Yao was shocked. She reached out left and right, and only then did she grab onto a gentle hand. She instantly heaved a sigh of relief. Her sight was still covered in darkness. “This is... We’re on the lower third floor?” It’s a little too dark, isn’t it? Isn’t the exit supposed to be the divine city? Why isn’t there the slightest bit of divine energy around here?

Zhu Yao casually whipped up a fire art and glanced around. “Where’s Nangong Huang and Little Teal?” Weren’t they in front of me? How did they disappear? “Master, you...” When she turned around, she was stunned. “Yue Ying, why is it you?”

She subconsciously swung her hand away and raised up the ember in her hand, beginning her search. “Master, Nangong Huang, Little Teal...”

Yue Ying’s eyes which were dark in the first place, instantly dimmed quite a bit. He slowly tightened his hand, and only after a short while did he retract the hand which she had mistakenly grabbed onto. Moving his lips, he spoke a moment later. “He’s not here... There’s no one else here...”

Zhu Yao’s feet stopped, her eyes instantly sharpened. “Is it your doing?” Bringing her here all alone.

Yue Ying was startled, his eyes instantly widened. His stunned face instantly turned miserably pale as he strongly shook his head. “Big sis Yao...”

“It best not be!” Zhu Yao turned her head around and took a deep breath. Not bothering about him any longer, she immediately flew

up and materialized a fire dragon. In an instant, a streak of light cut across the sky.

When she took a closer look below, she realized that this place was a tattered divine city. The entire place was filled with broken walls and collapsed buildings. As Yue Ying had said, other than the two of them, there wasn't a single other human figure around.

Why was she here? She recalled that she was clearly standing on the elevator to the third floor. When she reached the top, a white light assaulted her. She simply felt a light headache, and immediately after, she found herself here.

Was this truly the lower third floor? Where was her master and the rest? Could it be that the third level had different exits?

The surrounding winds grew stronger, and they were turning colder as well. It was as if they were blowing through the gaps of the bones. The winds were accompanied by strange howls, causing one's heart to feel chilly.

Zhu Yao decided to first look around and search for other people. She immediately chose a direction and flew towards it. Yue Ying immediately followed after her as well.

However, the further she searched, the darker it became, and the winds were so strong they could blow away a human being. The defensive barriers that Zhu Yao placed down were not very effective either, and she had no choice but to stop. She could not help but feel a little worried. Just what was this hell of a place? She had flown for half a day, but she did not spot a single person. Furthermore, there wasn't a single hint of divine energy in her surroundings. She couldn't be trapped here, right?

She took a deep breath and calmed herself. Then, she used all of her strength to release her divine sense to investigate. She realized that in a hundred kilometers radius, the scenery was all the same. A barren wasteland. Forget about Deities, even a small animal or a plant couldn't be seen. There wasn't divine energy, nor spiritual

energy in the air. Other than the constantly howling winds, there was nothing else around.

Wait a minute!

Her divine sense swept towards a place several dozens of kilometers in front of her. There seemed to be something as huge as a mountain? And why did it feel familiar? Zhu Yao's heart shook, and she immediately flew in that direction. After closing in, she then discovered that they were actually a huge bones. She wondered what kind of demonic beast they belonged to, as the bones were extremely enormous. At the very least, they could reach up to a height of five or six floors. Strangely, they was actually entirely red and was emitting out flowing light like a gem. Furthermore, they were all ribcages, while some of them were buried in the ground. What was exposed were sharp and pointy bones that reached out to the sky.

"What are these?" She hadn't seen any red bones before. Yue Ying took a few steps forward as well, and then, lowering his head, he looked at the strange bones in front of him.

Zhu Yao stared at it for half a day, but she still couldn't figure out what's strange about it. Though, the sinister winds in the air grew even stronger. Whatever, let's first locate master for now.

"I'm leaving." She called out. Just as she was about to cast an art and fly, her side tightened, and she was pulled back. When she turned back to look, Yue Ying was currently grabbing tightly onto the corner of her robes. Zhu Yao frowned. "Let go!"

"..." Yue Ying did not reply. He simply lowered his head, and held onto the corner of her robes tightly just like in the past.

Fury instantly enveloped Zhu Yao. After not being able to jerk out after a few shakes, she immediately cast an art and sliced off that piece of cloth.

"What are you trying to pull?"

He still did not reply as the hand he was holding onto the piece of cloth with, trembled. He took a step forward, as though he was still trying to pull onto her. This action reminded ZHu Yao of his previous actions, and immediately swatted his hand away. Just as she was about to fly up into the air, a very soft voice called out behind her.

“Egg...”

Zhu Yao’s feet stopped. It was as if her heart had been slammed heavily by something, as she hurriedly turned her head around.

Yue Ying who was still a head taller than she was earlier, actually began to slowly shrink. In just a few moments, his height was merely at her waist level, and his clothes had turned tattered and broken as well. The flesh on his face caved in, as though his moisture had all been sucked out in an instant. What remained was a bone-skinny skeleton figure.

This appearance...

“Shao Bai.”

The skinny-figured child walked over shakily. Opening wide his branch-like arms, he tightly hugged her waist. A voice that was so coarse which made it unclear, sounded. “Egg... Don’t be afraid! I will protect you, don’t be afraid.”

Zhu Yao was stunned.

Just what was going on?

“Yue Ying! Stop fooling around.” She immediately pulled his hand away. “Just what is going on? Why did you become like that?”

However, he seemed to ignore her. Suddenly, he raised his hand and slit his wrist, the surrounding winds instantly turned wild. Like sharp blades, they came assaulting towards her. Yue Ying used all of his strength to scatter his blood towards the air, angrily shouting. “Go away, don’t you all dare touch her!”

This... This was the same scene she saw in the Nether Abyss back then. He was Shao Bai?

“Yue Ying! What’s wrong with you?” Zhu Yao’s mind was in a mush. She turned to look at the red bones. Could those bones be the reason? Could they possibly be capable of confusing the hearts of people? Was all these an illusion? However, Yue Ying’s cultivation was clearly higher than hers. Why was she fine, while he turned out that way?

Zhu Yao hurriedly cast a few dispelling arts, but they were all ineffective.

Yue Ying was still scattering his own blood, constantly slitting his own wrist.

“Are you crazy!?” If he continued to slice his wrist, he would empty all the blood in his body. They were just dark winds, not devillic energy!

Zhu Yao grabbed his hand, stopping him from his self-harm. She turned to look at those red bones, and immediately carried Yue Ying off with her fastest speed.

However, Yue Ying did not recover his reason in the slightest. Instead, he raised his head and looked straight at her. Then, he reached out to hug her neck. Using his pair of withered small hands, he patted slowly on her back.

“Egg, don’t be afraid, don’t be afraid... I will protect you. Second elder brother will protect you!”

“...” Zhu Yao instantly felt as if her heart had been stabbed a little. A bone-piercing pain welled up, and even her heart began to ache. She could not help but call out. “Second elder brother...”

The moment her words fell, the surrounding scenery instantly began to distort, as though something had been triggered. The darkness in the sky disappeared and the surrounding boundless wasteland disappeared without a trace. What replaced it was a



huge green plains. The sky was covered by enormous leaves, only small bits of light could seep through the cover. Like a starry sky, the light that landed on her body felt warm and fuzzy.

—— Parasol Tree.

“Little sister, this is for you!” In front of her, Shao Bai’s large face suddenly appeared. He no longer had the look of a child like before, instead, he turned into his previous handsome appearance. He was currently holding onto a bag of something which he stuffed into her hands. She unconsciously opened it up, and they were all melon seeds.

“ ... ”

## Chapter 372: National Big Giveaway

---

“What is it? Don’t like them?” Seeing her unmoving, Shao Bai gave an even warmer smile as he reached out to stroke her head. “It’s fine, second elder brother prepared others as well.” As he said that, he pulled out bags and bags of snacks and stuffed them in her hands.

Zhu Yao was a little stunned. She glanced at the various familiar bags in her hands. “Second elder brother...” Just what was going on?

“Hurry and eat them, before your teacher discovers them.” Shao Bai helped combed her hair and gently said. “If he discover them again, he would once more...”

“...”

“What did you get this time?” Before he could finish, a figure dressed in snow-white robes appeared from not far away.

“Master!” As expected, he was here as well. “This place is really strange...”

Before she could finish, the person in front of her frowned. With a cold face, he walked over. Then, he turned towards a rock at the side and began his lecture. “Your teacher has told you several times that you’ve already abstained from food. There’s no benefits to your cultivation if you constantly take in mortal food.”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “Master, I’m over here...” Please forgive that rock.

The person in front of her stiffened for a moment, and then he immediately turned around with his usual look. Facing a tree at the side, he continued with his justifications. “I’ve mentioned it to you yesterday, and what did you promise to this teacher? Does that still count?”

Zhu Yao sighed. Left with no choice, she grabbed onto the person

in front of her and turned him around. “I’m over here!” This face-blindness that did not discriminate across races could only belong to one person. “... Teacher?” He was the Far Ancient Highgod? Wasn’t he already...

“What is it? Did you even forget about your teacher?” His frown grew deeper. With a long sigh, he said. “Yu... Yao. Though you’re a Phoenix, you cannot slack on your cultivation.”

“What did you call me?” Zhu Yao was stunned. She had never told her teacher her name, and the only person who could possibly call her Yu Yao was her master! Just what was going on?

“Mn?” He looked at her, confused.

Zhu Yao immediately stepped forward and grabbed his hands. “Who are you?”

Before the person in front of her could speak, Shao Bai next to her stepped forward. Bowing forward, he then courteously said. “Sovereign Yu Yan, please forgive her. These snacks were something I brought over, and it’s not related to her. You should be aware that Little Seventh is my only sister, so naturally I pamper her a lot more. Please do not blame her because of this.”

Sovereign Yu Yan? Master! He’s really my master, but...

“Nevermind.” Yu Yan’s expression slacked a little. Lowering his head, he glanced at Zhu Yao and habitually stroked her head. A familiar warmth surfaced in his eyes, and he lightly said. “No more exceptions in the future. Tomorrow...” He turned his head away a little unnaturally, and then after a moment, he said. “Head up the mountain a little earlier.”

After saying that, his figure flashed.

“Master, wait...” Before Zhu Yao could even react, he had already disappeared. Her mind was growing confused by the moment. Yue Ying, Shao Bai? Master, Teacher? Just what was going on?

“What is it? You’re afraid that he’s angry?” Shao Bai smiled and

revealed a pair of relieving eyes. “Don’t worry. You’re already about to get married, so why would he blame you?”

“Get married!?” Just what kind of godly development is this?

“That’s right, isn’t it next month?” Shao Bai gave an even gentler smile. Just as he was about to explain, he suddenly sensed something. He turned around, and with a sunken expression, he sharply called out. “Stop there!”

Behind a boulder, a little red figure that was about to leave instantly stiffened. He stopped in his tracks, and turned his little pitiful face around. “Second elder brother, seventh elder sister.”

“Little Eighth!” Wasn’t he with the Wood Spirit? Why was he here? And he was even his child form.

Shao Bai shook his head as he reached out one of his hands. “Take it out.”

“Second elder brother...” Little Eighth’s voice grew even more pitiful.

“Mn?”

Little Eighth pouted with his lips up high, and then took out a bag of melon seeds from behind him, something that he was about to slip away with. Yet, he still held tightly onto the bag. “I will give it to you, I will give it to you! I will give them all to you! I knew second elder brother will only pamper the ugliest seventh elder sister, and not Little Eighth the slightest bit. Little Eighth’s life is so hard...”

“...” Then release your grip on the bag!

“Nonsensical!” Shao Bai knocked heavily onto his little head, and then heartlessly took away the bag of snacks from his hand, which he then passed back to Zhu Yao’s hands.

“Seventh... elder sister...” Little Eighth hurriedly changed his target and looked towards Zhu Yao. He pointed at the other bags

that she placed on the boulder. “You already have so many of them, just give Little Eighth one! Though you’re ugly, I won’t despise your melon seeds.”

“...” So I should thank you for not despising my melon seeds, is that it?

“Seventh elder sister...” Seeing that she wasn’t replying, Little Eighth had no choice but to hold her hand and began to shake it in a flighty manner.

Zhu Yao instantly felt something crawling all over her body. This glutton has sacrificed enough morals just for a bag of melon seeds alright. Zhu Yao immediately stuffed the bag in his little hands. “I’m giving it to you!”

“Thank you, seventh elder sister!” He voiced out in joy. Carrying the bag, he turned around and quickly ran far away. He even intentionally ran in the opposite direction he came from, afraid that she would mince her words.

“You will spoil him like that.” Shao Bai sighed.

Zhu Yao shook her head. “Little Eighth is still young.”

“He’s a Phoenix, not an emperor.” Shao Bai said with a sunken voice. “Men of our Phoenix race should’ve long known to be obedient at his age. How should him being such a glutton be allowed? How can he take up challenges by himself in the future?”

Zhu Yao’s heart sank, and she could not help but recall the moment when Little Eighth was trapped in that spatial dimension. The pool was filled with his fresh blood, and the mountain wall was dyed red. She felt a sharp pain in her heart, and she took a deep breath to toss away these unknown emotions.

She turned around and looked at Shao Bai who had a heavy look on his face. Then, she pointed at the other bags on the boulder and said. “Aren’t you the same towards me?” The snacks were clearly things that he brought for her, right?

“You’re different.” Shao Bai’s expression instantly turned gentle, as water could flow out at any moment. He looked straight into her eyes, and his were reflected with her figure, as though she was the only person remaining between this heaven and earth. Pulling her hand, he placed it on his own cheek and then showed a smile that instantly greyed out the entire sky. “Because you’re my little sister, my only... and most important little sister.”

“.....”

“...”

---

Dong!

An olden and distant bell ring sounded, and it instantly reverberated across the entire Parasol Tree.

Zhu Yao was stunned. Wasn’t this bell...

“It’s the bell of Ancient Hill Sect.” Shao Bai suddenly said.

“Ancient Hill Sect!” How was that possible? How was the world of the God race tied together with Ancient Hill Sect?

“Little sister, let’s take a look?” Shao Bai however looked as usual. “Something must have happened at Yu Luo’s side.”

“What?” Little Radish?

Before she could even reach, Shao Bai had already brought her up into the air and flew towards an enormous Parasol Tree leaf at the top. Several extremely familiar floating mountains suddenly appeared in the sky before her. The Main Mountain at the center was the largest, while the other mountains were surrounding the Main Mountain. There was one single mountain that was floating high up above the various mountains.

That was... Jade Forest Peak.

This really was the Ancient Hill Sect! But when did Ancient Hill Sect become neighbours with the divine Parasol Tree of the

Phoenix race?

“Master.” The moment they landed, a red-robed female practitioner welcomed them. With a joyous face, she looked at Zhu Yao. “You’re here.”

“Little Radish!?” It really was her. How was this possible? Was this all an illusion? Zhu Yao instantly pinched her cheeks and then twisted them up and down. They were warm. “Does it hurt?”

“Mush... twrr. (Master)” Little Radish’s face darkened. After enduring for a long while, she pulled down Zhu Yao’s hands. “Should I try pinching master then?” Don’t force me to go against my teacher and disregard my ancestors.

“...” She was the real deal!

Shao Bai faked out a few coughs. “Yu Luo, what happened?”

“Divine honour Shao Bai.” Yu Luo then released Zhu Yao’s hands and bowed in front of Shao Bai. With a frown, she said. “It’s Mu Meiyen. She has once again infiltrated into our sect’s Great Mountain Barrier Formation.”

“Mu Meiyen!” Zhu Yao was stunned. “Wasn’t she dead?”

“How can she possibly die so easily after hooking up with the Devil race?” Little Radish looked at Zhu Yao with puzzled eyes, and then said with a worried expression. “Master, what’s wrong?”

“.....”

“...”

“Let’s go take a look for now!” Shao Bai reminded.

With a stomach filled with questions, Zhu Yao arrived in front of the hall of the Main Mountain. As expected, there were several people engaged in battle, and at the very center, concealed within a mass of devillic energy was someone’s face. It was actually Mu Meiyen who had already died in the past! Next to her were also a few familiar figures. After having a better look, they were actually

Xiao Yi, Cheng Qingdiao, Wu Hua...

Uh... All of the bugs are actually gathered.

Is this the National Boss Big Giveaway?

There must be something wrong with how I entered the plaza.

“Little Radish...” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. She nudged Yu Luo next to her. “Why don’t you really try pinching me?” I want to see if I’m really dreaming or not.

“Master?” Little Radish’s expression looked as though she was looking at someone who had no hope left whatsoever. She glanced at Zhu Yao from head to toe several times. Suddenly, as though she had thought of something, she said with an enlightened look. “Oh! I know now. These the premarital doubts that master had mentioned before, aren’t they? Don’t worry, though Mu Meiyang has hooked up with the Devil race, you’re a Phoenix of the God race. Furthermore, divine honour Shao Bai is here. Nothing will happen to you.”

“Premarital?” This was already the second time she heard a relevant term. “What premarital?”

“It can’t be, master!?” Yu Luo was stunned. With a lecturing gaze, she looked at Zhu Yao. “It’s only a few days left till the big day. It’s already too late for you to go back on your words.”

“...” Just what’s with this mess? “Just who is marrying who?”

“Naturally, it’s your and grandmaster’s. Haven’t you two been engaged for several years?” Yu Luo said matter-of-factly. She looked around, and then carefully leaned closer to whisper in her ears. “Grandmaster has already sewn your wedding dress for several months. I had a slight glance of it, and it’s incredibly beautiful!”

“Uh...” Master...

“Don’t worry, don’t worry. Master, the fact that you’re not good



at needlework and have instead forced grandmaster to sew your wedding dress for you, are things that I will definitely not speak to others of.”

“...” When did I force anyone to do things, hey!? Don’t charge me with a crime so randomly!

But, marrying master... What’s with this slight excitement that I’m feeling?

“How far are we from the marriage date again?”

“One month.”

“So long...”

Eh! Wait, she was here to investigate just what in the world was going on here. She shouldn’t be enticed by these illusions! Calm down, calm down!

“Little sister.” Shao Bai held Zhu Yao’s hand tightly, and instructed her with a solemn voice. “Wait for second elder brother here, don’t run off.”

After saying that, his figure flashed. Turning into an enormous red Phoenix, he flew towards the battlefield at the front.

In an instant, monstrous flames began to ignite and burn...

# Chapter 373: Evolved Heart Demon Tribulation

---

The final outcome of the huge battle in the sky was naturally a victory towards Shao Bai's side. All of the enemy bugs had all been captured and locked behind bars.

From that day on, time seemed to flow especially quickly. Using the reason of sending the wedding invitation cards, Shao Bai brought her around every corner of the world, and even to where the Dragon and Qilin races resided. She met many old friends, every single person that she had met ever since she transmigrated. Even though they clearly lived in different worlds, they seemed to have all gathered together here in an instant. Furthermore, the Three Realms were experiencing peace and harmony. Other than the occasional harassments from the Devil race, the life here was considerably calm.

Everything in the world was becoming perfect, as though there was no longer an endless stream of bugs to fix. There was thus no need for her to die and resurrect again. Master, Little Radish, everyone in Ancient Hill Sect, Little Sixth, Little Eighth, all of the people of the Phoenix race, even Little Tyrant, Ye Qingcang, the Little Qings of the dandelion race and Mushmush. All of them had appeared in their best state in this present life of hers. There was no need for her to fuss about anything, and she merely had to peacefully and calmly wait to be married to the person she loved.

Everything was really perfect. So perfect, it felt as if everything that happened in the past had never occurred. However... It was just too perfect.

“Let's go, little sister.” Shao Bai reached out for her hand. “Your practitioner-pair ceremony is about to begin. Sovereign is waiting for you. Let second elder brother bring you over to the celebratory hall.”

His smile was especially brilliant, and his entire body was emitting out a sunny glow which made people feel warm and fuzzy. It was as if as long as she reached out her hand, she would be able to hold onto the entire world. Zhu Yao however blanked while staring at his slender and long fingers.

“What is it? Are you afraid?” Shao Bai took a step forward and directly held onto her hand. “Don’t be afraid. If he dares to bully you, then let your second elder brother know. Second elder brother will always stand by your side and protect you.”

His words were sincere. Though they carried some intentions of teasing behind them, every single word of his was serious and true. It was as if she was looking at the second elder brother that came to fetch her from the bunch of large rocs. “Little sister, let me bring you home.”

Shao Bai pulled her and was planning to walk her out, but Zhu Yao did not budge.

“Little sister?”

She raised her head and stared intensely at Shao Bai’s familiar face, till a slight sense of anxiety that could not be easily detected flashed across his eyes. Only then did she slowly retract her hand.

“Little sister, what’s wrong?” Shao Bai turned around and looked at her with the usual smile, though his eyes were a little anxious.

Zhu Yao took a deep breath. “Shao Bai, thank you! You will always be second elder brother.”

He stiffened for a moment, and then immediately recovered his usual demeanour. “What kind of nonsense are you spouting? I’m naturally your second elder brother. It’s your bid day today, if we don’t head off now, we will miss the auspicious time.” As he said that, he once again reached out his hand to pull her, but Zhu Yao dodged it this time.

“Second elder brother.” Zhu Yao raised her head and looked deep

into his eyes. “Actually, I’ve always... I’ve always wanted to tell you something.” She paused for a moment, and then said with emphasis on every word. “Second elder brother, I’m sorry!”

“.....”

“...”

“I’m sorry... I’m not a good little sister. I’m sorry... I didn’t save you. I’m sorry... I wasn’t able to find a better path for the God race. I’m sorry... It’s my fault for making you turn towards the side of the Devils. Back then... when I activated the World Crossing Door, I initially wanted to save all of you. However, the outcome of the world crossing... did not seem to be as perfect as I thought it would.”

“You...”

“I saw Little Eighth!” He... didn’t have a good time. The others... don’t seem to have a good time either!”

“Little sister...” The smile on his face had stiffened. He finally caught her hand, but his was faintly trembling a little. “You... What kind of nonsense are you spouting?”

“I’m not sure now. Was it right for me to have forcefully sent all of you into the Three Realms?” Zhu Yao took a deep breath and suppressed the sense of fatigue in the depths of her heart. “However... I didn’t have any other choice back then. If I simply let all of you stay in that collapsed world, most likely, none of you will even have the chance to reincarnate. This is simply too unfair for all of you, who have always been suppressed by the Devil race! That’s why... even if I was wrong, I don’t regret my decision!”

“.....”

“...”

“But... You’re the only guilt that I have.” A hint of pain surfaced in the depths of her heart. “Sometimes, I wondered if I’ve clearly told you all of the causes and effects, would things be different?

That way, he wouldn't have turned towards the side of the Devils, and maybe... just like Little Eighth, I would have been able to meet him again in another world."

"... He won't." He replied solemnly.

Zhu Yao sighed. "That's right, he won't! Given his personality, most likely, he won't simply stand idly by and watch me die!"

"Little sister..." He stepped forward and grasped her hand tightly, his face was filled with anxiety. "Aren't things good right now? Is this really bad? Can't we stay like this forever?"

"Good!" She nodded heavily. Looking at him for a short moment, she then said. "But it's just too perfect, to the point where..." Everything is just too unrealistic.

His expression instantly paled.

In the beginning, Zhu Yao thought that this place was just an illusory realm. However, she had tried to use arts to break through it, but they were all ineffective. After that, she then thought that it was some sort of illusion art. However, everyone here was clearly behaving and acting the same way as they were in reality. Finally, she thought that this was her heart demon. However, the so-called heart demon would simply expose all of the perfect things in her heart, and then give her the final fatal blow. However, she had stayed here for so long, yet she didn't feel the slightest bit of evil intentions. Instead, things were so perfect that one could sink into it, as if this place was trying to keep her here through all means possible. More importantly, she clearly knew what her own heart demon was, and it was far from what she was seeing here. Not to mention, back then, Realmspirit had given her a heart demon barrier.

That was why everything was unreasonable, except for...

"This place is indeed really great." Zhu Yao grasped back onto the person in front of her instead. "Unfortunately, everything here

isn't real. I am no longer Little Seventh of the Phoenix clan, and you... are no longer my second elder brother Shao Bai. The past in the past, and it can never return. Don't you think so... Yue Ying?"

He was stunned, and then, the light in his eyes instantly extinguished, turning misty and dull. Something seemed to be slowly collapsing as tears flowed out just like that. The tears fell onto her arm, filled with the pain of heartburn. "Big sis... Yao."

Everything that happened here was not her heart demon, but Yue Ying's.

The scenery in the surroundings instantly began to distort and change. Ancient Hill Sect disappeared. The Parasol Tree began to collapse, as though it was returning to the day where the world of the God race was being destroyed. The heaven and earth was in chaos, and the place was filled with the cries of the three God races as one enormous figure after another fell from the sky.

A moment later, the ground turned into a barren wasteland. Corpses filled the place, piling up like a mountain. She once again looked at the entirely red bones. She finally figured out that those were actually the bones of a dead Phoenix.

"Yue Ying. You're Yue Ying." Zhu Yao looked at the person in front of her who had reverted back to Yue Ying's appearance. "You're not Shao Bai, and I'm not Little Seventh either. Do not be trapped in your past life again."

Yue Ying raised his head, tears were still flowing down his face. However, he suddenly laughed out, his laughter was filled with chilling intent. "Yue Ying? If I'm Yue Ying... Will big sis Yao forgive me? Even if I admit my wrongs, and no longer make big sis angry, will you... believe me again?"

"....."

"..."

"Then I don't want to be Yue Ying." He shook his head strongly,

as if he had descended in some form of madness. “I don’t want to be abandoned! I’m Shao Bai... I shall be big sis Yao’s second elder brother, alright?”

“...” Zhu Yao was stunned. So this was his heart demon. Because of her... he even wanted to kill off his own existence?

“Big sis Yao.” He tugged her sleeves a little anxiously. “Look at me, I won’t be Yue Ying anymore. I’m Shao Bai... Yue Ying made you angry, Yue Ying had done many bad things. But... Shao Bai will never do it. In the future, I will never make you angry again, so don’t ignore me anymore, alright?”

“Yue Ying...”

“I’m really changing now.” His hand was shaking, as if he was grasping onto that final bit of hope. “I didn’t kill Wang Xuzhi. I began to treat the people next to you well. I even protected Sesame when we crossed worlds. In the future... In the future, I will still continue to learn how to become a good person. The things that big sis Yao won’t allow me to do, I won’t do them... I... I won’t even be Yue Ying, alright? In the future, I will be Shao Bai, is that fine?”

Zhu Yao’s heart ached. Letting out a long sigh, she had no choice but to break apart his heart demon.

“However... You’re still Yue Ying, not Shao Bai!”

“.....”

“...”

The hint of light in the depths of his eyes finally extinguished entirely.

---

When she opened her eyes again, she saw a familiar white figure carrying an anxious look on his face. “Yu... Yao.”

“Master?” Zhu Yao was a little startled. “What happened to me?”

“There was a heart demon tribulation within the floor-raising light. You sank into your heart demon, and it has been a month since then.” Yu Yan explained.

“A month!” Zhu Yao was stunned. When she recalled about the matters concerning the heart demon, she hurriedly turned her head. “Where’s Yue Ying?”

Yu Yan looked towards the right not far from her. When she turned to look, as expected, she saw Yue Ying whose eyes had already opened. However, he was unmoving, and eyes were staring upwards listlessly, as if he had lost a part of his soul.

Zhu Yao frowned. After hesitating for a moment, she could not help but walk over and sit next to him. Though she did not know how she had entered his heart demon, there were some things that shouldn’t be dragged on.

“Yue Ying.”

He did not have any reaction, and simply maintained the same posture.

“I can’t lie to myself, and I can’t lie to you. “... really can’t forgive you.” Zhu Yao sighed heavily. “Everything that you’ve done, I’m really, really angry about them. I really wish that I could give you two big slaps and no longer see you ever again.”

“...” His hands that were by his sides slowly curled into balls.

“However... After calming down and thinking back about it, how can I not have the slightest bit of responsibility in everything that you’ve done?” She looked sternly at his face. “I treated you as my little brother, and I had used up all my power to teach you everything, but you were never able to learn them. Furthermore, you began to stray even further away. At the same time I despaired about you, how can I not be disappointed in myself? When a child isn’t taught properly, it’s not just because he or she is born stupid, but rather, there are some problems with the way education is



brought to that child as well.”

Yue Ying was stunned. He finally had some sort of reaction, as he slowly turned his head over.

Zhu Yao then stroked his head and continued. “But Yue Ying... When you’re wrong, you’re wrong. I admit that I didn’t teach you well, but everything that you’ve done are indeed unforgivable. Even now, I still can’t find myself to forgive you. Big sis is human, and big sis’s heart is made of flesh as well. It can’t take your constant beatings. When my disappointment for you turned into despair... I no longer had the courage to continue teaching you.”

“.....”

“...”

“So Yue Ying... Why don’t you be the one who show me this time?” Zhu Yao retracted her hand, and said with a serious look. “You said that you already know your wrongs, and is changing your ways. You said that you no longer want to be Yue Ying of the past. I don’t have the courage to believe you right now, so why don’t you show it to me? Let me see just how you’ve changed. From today on, I will no longer avoid you, and I won’t ignore your existence. However... You are no longer my little brother either. Let us begin right from the start as strangers. Let us witness just how great you have become. This courage of trust, give it to me.”

“Big... sis... Yao.” His eyes began to grow distant, and were being covered by mist little by little.

Zhu Yao took a deep breath, reached out a hand and said. “Hello, nice to meet you. I’m Zhu Yao.”

Tears instantly flowed, pouring out like flood. He hurriedly stood up and stuffed his head into her embrace, crying out loud. It was as if he was letting out all of the grievances, joy, discomfort and guilt. He was gasping for air as he cried, and the same words were constantly being uttered.

“Big... sis... big... sis...”

## Chapter 374: Please Speak Politely

---

Zhu Yao glanced at the dim surroundings. The place that they were currently in was extremely desolate, and sinister winds blew. Various terrifying and strange noises could be heard. Sometimes, they sounded sharp, while sometimes, they sounded low, and one's skin would crawl just by hearing them. She thought that she had once again returned to the Netherworld.

There was a green barrier surrounding them, and occasionally, there would be hazy shadows bumping into it, emitting out sharp noises.

“Master, this place is... the lower third floor?” The style changed too quickly, didn't it?

“No.” Yu Yan shook his head, and his expression sank. “Upper first floor.”

“What?” Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. “Didn't we just exit the lower second floor?” Why were they in the upper first floor now? There were exactly eight floors between them!

“I am uncertain of the cause either.” He frowned. He took out the jade tablet they received from the Amway Hall back then, and the words “Upper First Floor” were indeed written on it. “When we crossed floors back then, all of us fell into our heart demon tribulations. Your master was the first to awaken. Most likely, people who pass the heart demon tribulations would be randomly sent to other floors.”

So they could actually skip levels! Zhu Yao looked around and saw that there were other Deities as well. Some were lying on the ground unmoving, while there were some who had already woken up and were hesitatingly and uneasily looking at those shadows outside. Though, without a single exception, everyone had a layer of translucent barrier surrounding each one of them. The colours, however, were different. Some were red, some were green, and

some were yellow. There were still a row of words above each of their heads – Unknown Deity (Level 10).

Level 10! The hell! All of them are high-leveled players.

“Master, they...” Just as Zhu Yao was about to speak up, she raised her head and was stunned. A row of words were floating above her master’s head as well. Yu Yan (Level 10).

Why was she able to see his now!? Was being too levelled the reason why she couldn’t see it back then?

She hurriedly turned to look at Yue Ying. A string of words was also written above his head. Yue Ying (Level ??)

“...” What’s with those two question marks?

“Dongfang girly, you’re awake!” A surprised voice sounded. Nangong Cheng ran over with heavy steps. Next to him was Zhonggu Lu who had already completely recovered his muscular features.

“Hi, Little Huang, Little Teal.” Zhu Yao waved her hand and greeted.

“Little...” The corner of Nangong Cheng’s lips twitched. As though he had accepted his fate, he sighed. “Nevermind, Little Huang it is then! Dongfang girly, you two have taken too long to fight off your heart demon tribulations. It’s been an entire month. You two worried us to death.”

“Hoho, sorry for the trouble.” Zhu Yao smiled. She turned to look at Yue Ying who was obediently sitting at the side, and did not explain much about it either. “Oh right, where did the two of you go?”

Nangong Cheng’s expression turned stern. He took few steps forward and hinted them to sit, before he spoke in a serious tone. “I went to listen in some information. This place is indeed the upper first floor, but it’s different from the upper floors from legends.”

“What’s different?” Zhu Yao asked.

Nangong Cheng and his good homosexual friend Zhonggu Lu exchanged glances, their expressions turned heavy. After a moment, he said. “Everyone believed that the Lightning Divine Tower is split between the lower ten floors and upper ten floors. However, from the situation that I managed to gather, it’s different in actuality. The upper floors do not have ten floors.”

“There aren’t ten floors? What do you mean?”

“People that enter the upper ten floors are not able to return to the lower floors, and they will lose the opportunity to exit the tower as well. This is something that you all are aware of, right?”

Zhu Yao nodded.

“Actually, no one knows about the situation in the upper ten floors. The people in the lower ten floors basically aren’t able to find out. Everyone thought that the upper floors would be similar to the lower floors and be split to ten floors. However, in actual fact, there’s only a single floor in the upper layer.”

Zhu Yao and her master were both stunned. After a moment, Yu Yan said. “You’re saying that the God Realm is above this floor?”

“That’s right!” Nangong Cheng nodded. He pointed far towards the horizon in front of him. “Do you see that light?”

After looking closely in the horizon, there was indeed a glowing vertical line that shot straight upwards towards the sky. It was as if it was splitting the sky into two halves. Because it was so faraway, all they could see from here was a thin line.

“That’s the passageway to the God Realm.” He continued. “From here, it’s about several hundred kilometers away. As long as we reach that place, we can head straight towards the God Realm.”

“Several hundred kilometers.” Zhu Yao’s heart shook. They were going straight for the peak of the tower over here. “That’s not far either.” If they were to fly on their swords, they wouldn’t even

need an hour.

“It’s not far!” Nangong Cheng’s eyes opened wide, his face looked strange. As though he had thought of something, he turned to look at Yu Yan and said. “Didn’t you tell her?”

Yu Yan shook his head. “Not yet.”

“What do you mean?” What kind of secret are you guys keeping?

“Dongfang girly, haven’t you tried sensing the divine energy in your body?”

“Sensing div... the hell!” Zhu Yao tried sensing, and then she began to feel uncomfortable all over. Her cultivation and divine energy were still present, but... she couldn’t use them!

Nangong Cheng had a bitter look. “From here to where that Light of Guidance is, we aren’t able to use any mystic arts in the area. That’s why... we have no choice but to walk there.”

“...” Are we going back to the stone age now? This entire floor is a mystic arts restricted zone!

No wait!

“If we can’t use mystic arts, then what about these barriers?” She pointed at the green translucent barriers that were surrounding her and the rest of the people.

“Nascent Divided Pearls.” Yu Yan took over. “When we came up, the Nascent Divided Pearls that we gathered before automatically opened up barriers. Every Nascent Divided Pearl can sustain the barrier for about half a day. If the barrier is destroyed...”

Before he could even finish, a scream suddenly sounded from the side. A Level 10 Deity not far away was currently rolling on the ground, covered in fresh blood. Surrounding him were a bunch of shadows, which constantly crashed into him. With every shadow slicing through, a piece of his meat would be torn off. Though he was resisting against them with all his might, he could not block

the horde of shadows that could already cover the sky itself.

The blood on-site made it look like a very terrifying zombie film. A living Deity was dismembered right in front of them just like that. Zhu Yao could not help but take a step forward, but was stopped by Yu Yan. “It’s too late!”

Yu Yan then pulled her over, covered her ears with his two hands, and sank her in his embrace. As expected, the noises from over there disappeared a short while later.

Zhu Yao felt that her heart was suffocating.

“Haah... This is already the third one.” Nangong Cheng sighed. “The moment the barrier disappears, we will be attacked by the surrounding shadows. We don’t even know what those shadows are. We can only hope that the barrier can block them.”

“How many more Nascent Divided Pearls do we have?” Yu Yan asked.

When they were in the lower third floor back then, in order to prevent the scenario where they had to gather even more quest items, they intentionally gathered a little more.

“About a dozen.” Nangong Cheng said. “When everyone fell into their own heart demons, we had used up more than half of them. The remaining ones can only sustain us for five more days or so. However, from this place to that Light of Guidance, ten days of travel is required.”

“In other words, we will be attacked by those shadows if we simply sit here. However, the moment we get out, if we don’t reach our destination within five days, we will be in danger?”

“Mn!” Nangong Cheng nodded with an anxious look. “I don’t know we should approach this either, and thus wanted to discuss with you people about it.”

Zhu Yao sank into silence for a moment. They were truly caught in a dilemma now. She turned to look at the person at the side who

hadn't spoke all this while. "Yue Ying, what do you think?"

Yue Ying was startled, as though he never thought that Zhu Yao would ask for his opinion and was dumbfounded. Looking at the surrounding eyes that were sweeping towards him, he lowered his head a little anxiously. After a moment, he said. "Head... Heading out, will provide us the opportunity to live. Also, I have a feeling that... there must be a reason behind the appearances of these shadows. If we can figure it out, we might be fine after that."

"I have the same thoughts as well!" Nangong Cheng happily slapped his thighs and said. "Rather than waiting here for our deaths, why don't we take a gamble and head out? What do you guys think?"

"I don't have any objections!" Zhonggu Lu said nonchalantly.

Yu Yan nodded as well.

"Then let us be off! In order to save our Nascent Divided Pearls, it's best we move together." Zhu Yao immediately stood up. She turned around and glanced at the person who was still sitting on the ground. "Let's go, Yue Ying."

Stunned for a moment, he then hurriedly nodded his head and stood up. In those pair of deep eyes, a slightly different luster shone.

---

After speaking their minds, Zhu Yao felt that Yue Ying was slowly becoming different. The eyes he had when looking at others now carried a degree of sincerity. He was no longer someone with bottomless and incomprehensible thoughts, where she couldn't figure out what he was thinking like before. The reason why he had such deep obsession for her was most likely because of the influence of his memories of his past life as Shao Bai. When she picked him up for the first time back then, he must already possessed a few of his memory fragments, and thus wanted to stick



to her no matter what. After that, when he became a Devil, most likely, he had completely remembered it all at that time. However, what struck him the most in his memories, was actually the matter where she forcefully sent him into the World Crossing Door. That was why he was so mindful that she would throw him aside.

And it was exactly because of this, that no matter how much she tried to reason with him, and no matter how much she spoke to him, he basically did not take them to heart at all. He, who turned into a Devil because of his obsession, had always lived in the memories of his past life.

Zhu Yao felt that the current Yue Ying was off to a great start. At the very least, he was willing to present his true self, and was sincerely willing to listen to her words. He was learning to become a good child, and not ignore everything in his surroundings. With how he was able to walk out on his own now, Zhu Yao felt that as long as he interact more with others, everything would be better. After all, be it shutting himself in or his obsession, the root of everything was his lack of interaction with others.

However, interaction seemed to be... a little difficult for Yue Ying.

“I say, Daoist Ximen...” Nangong Cheng said passionately. “You don’t speak very often, so I never expected that your thoughts would be similar to mine! The more I look at you, the more intimate I feel! Oh right, so your real name is actually Yue Ying!”

“...” Yue Ying was expressionless.

“You guys are really too much, to even go to the extent of using fake names.”

“...”

“The three of you are all from Lightning Divine Palace, right? Why do the two of them have ‘Yu’ as their Daoist title, while you’re called Yue Ying?”

“...”

“Dongfang girly calls Daoist Beichen master. Looking at your age, you can’t possibly be Daoist Beichen’s grand disciple, right?”

“...”

“Eh? Daoist Yue, why are you walking so quickly? There’s nothing much going on right now anyway, so why don’t we chat about Dongfang girly?”

“...”

“Oh right! Are you married? Do you have a partner? Mingling with the two of them everyday must be really hard, right? I understand!”

“...”

“But don’t you worry, there might be many Goddesses waiting for us in the God Realm, you know! We can’t give up! You think so too, right?”

“...”

“I wonder what Daoist Yue’s preference is? Let me tell you a secret. Even though my true form is a mammal, I like those with wings.”

“...”

“Let me tell you this! Every winged female beast...”

Yue Ying’s feet stopped abruptly. As though he had truly been annoyed by his questions, he sent him a cold glance and in an instant, killing intent filled the surroundings. “Scram!”

“...” Nangong Cheng was stunned. What happened to him now?

Zhu Yao had no choice but to smooth things over and nudge the person who was driven crazy by the questions. “Yue Ying, talk nicely.”

Yue Ying’s killing intent sizzled, and he immediately changed to

another manner of speaking. “Shut up!”

“You can’t be that fierce. Try again.”

“How do you want to die?”

“... A little more politely.”

“Please go and die!”

“... A little more tactful.”

“You lowly beast, don’t speak to me. Given my race’s esteemed status and bloodline, I am not someone you can afford to speak to. If you dare to utter even a single word more, if you have two legs, I will break your two legs, and if you have four, I will break all four of them. Do you understand?”

Zhu Yao: “...”

Yu Yan: “...”

Little Teal: “...”

Nangong Cheng: “...” His heart suddenly began to ache painfully! Dongfang girly, are you certain you’re not here to make things worse?

# Chapter 375: This Sure is Fate

---

Probably because Yue Ying had released the knot in his heart, student Nangong Huang recently seemed to especially like sticking with Yue Ying. Though, he would always be abused by Yue Ying's words and be shamed for his actions. Furthermore, whenever she wasn't looking, he would be quietly be beaten up.

Nangong Huang however still continued to press forward and seek abuse. If not because she wasn't aware how perverse the suppression of a God race's bloodline was, Zhu Yao would have thought that he was trying to make Yue Ying gay. Though Yue Ying looked like he was becoming more and more irritated, his expressions seemed to have grown livelier, harbouring more human-like characteristics. Seeing that the two of them were tearing each other through their words, Zhu Yao was not in the position to step in either. Because whenever she tried to interrupt, Nangong Huang's treatment would instead become even more intense. After a long while, she then grew lazy and no longer bothered them. Though, the true homosexual friend of student Nangong grew dissatisfied. Occasionally, he would send her resentful and complaining eyes.

Uh... Student Little Teal, why are you looking at me? This doesn't concern me at all, flips table! Yue Ying is the one who stepped in between the two of you, and even without him, with how one of you being a flower demon and him being a demonic beast, there's no future for you two with different races, alright?

Eh, why did she feel something was strange here?

"Have you truly decided to forgive him?" Her hand warmed, as long and slender fingers slowly interlocked with hers.

Turning her head around, Zhu Yao looked at her master and nodded. "Mn. After actually thinking about it, I too hold responsibility for Yue Ying turning out that way. When I picked

him up back then, I didn't know he was Shao Bai. Also, given his identity back then, he would have gotten trouble with Celestial Indus Sect. I thought that by leaving him in Ancient Hill Sect, I would be giving him a home. Also, I believed that with Little Radish's sincere care, it was the best arrangement for him. I never expected that it instead drove him to becoming a Devil."

"Life is unpredictable." Yu Yan solemnly said. "You hold too many mysteries, and your methods have always been extremely dangerous. If you had decided to leave him by your side back then, he might have died long ago. How then could he have the chance to become a Devil?"

"But..."

"Yu Yao." He reached out to hold onto her waist and stroke her head. With a long sigh, he said. "You can't possibly do everything perfectly. In regards to the things that you do, I believe that even when it comes to your master... you wouldn't be willing to bring me along, right?"

Zhu Yao stiffened.

"You're afraid, aren't you?" Yu Yan continued. "You're not afraid of your constant deaths and resurrections, but you're afraid of any harm that comes our way. You're worried that we might... encounter misfortune, and then unable to resurrect like you, right?"

"Master..."

"Your master doesn't blame you." Yu Yan sighed, and then hugged her a little tighter. "You've already done really well. With the responsibility of saving lives resting on one's shoulders, who else would have the confidence of doing better? That's why even though I've always been furious at you acting on your own... I've never ever blamed you."

Zhu Yao was silent as she tightened her arms around the person

in front of her. Breathing in the slightly cold air emitted from his body, she raised her head a moment later. With a slightly trembling voice, she said. “That’s why, master. Nothing must ever happen to you. Nothing. Otherwise... I don’t know what I will do?”

Yu Yan lowered his head and pecked her forehead. With a gentle voice, he said. “Mn, your master will accompany you always.”

“Hey! That’s enough from the both of you.” Zhonggu Lu rolled his eyes with scorn. The two of them suddenly hugged each other while walking. Did they forget that was still a spectator here?

“The both of them are about to fight again. Are you sure you’re not going to stop them?” He pointed at the two people in front.

Zhu Yao turned to look, and saw that Yue Ying’s face had already turned as dark as the bottom of a pot. He was taking steps forward with a furious face. Student Nangong was currently hugging his thigh tightly. As he was dragged on the ground, he cried out. “Don’t! Daoist Yue, why are you so violent? You must treat me a little gentler, ah... it hurts!”

Spectators: “...”

Just how the hell did he spout out such yaoi-like lines? Don’t think because you’re Nangong Huang, you can act so raunchy, hey! Yue Ying is still a child!

“Yue Ying, come back.” Zhu Yao hurriedly waved him over, preventing him from being led astray.

Yue Ying’s irritation instantly dissipated quite a bit as he obediently walked back. Before that, he did not forget to give Nangong Huang on the ground a kick, along with a chilling glare.

Nangong Huang did not feel hurt or displeased, clearly, he had already gotten used to it. Patting off the dirt on his clothes, he then began to pick up the morals that he dropped on the ground.

“And what happened to the two of you?” Zhu Yao pulled Yue Ying to the back and questioned him sternly.

Yue Ying's face was still dark as he desperately glared at Nangong Cheng at the side. His eyes were filled with: I will kill you, I will kill you, I will kill you.

“Dongfang girly, this time it's not my fault.” Nangong Cheng said with a bitter look. “Daoist Yue wanted to hold onto a Nascent Divided Pearl no matter what and head out alone to scout the way forward. This place is too dangerous, so I decided to stop him.”

“What!?” Zhonggu Lu became anxious when he heard it as well, and he said with a furious look. “That's simply too preposterous. We have limited amount of Nascent Divided Pearls in the first place. We have only walked for two days, and we don't have a surplus of them to waste. Rejected!”

Yu Yan slightly frowned as well. Indeed! They were not lost right now either, so there was no need to waste Nascent Divided Pearls to head out for an investigation. Even if Yue Ying was irritated with Nangong Cheng's pestering, bringing such a request up was indeed too much.

In an instant, everyone faintly carried criticizing eyes.

Yue Ying did not refute and simply lowered his head. His expression was unclear, but he was tightly clenching his hands. The emotions that he had been beginning to gain in these few days, were slowly beginning to turn back into a deathly calm.

Zhu Yao's heart sank and immediately pulled up Yue Ying's hands. “Yue Ying, tell us. Just what happened earlier?”

Before he could speak, Zhonggu Lu furiously said. “Didn't Nangong say it earlier? He wanted to steal...”

“Shut up!” Zhu Yao glared at him. “I'm asking Yue Ying, not you. Why is a single puppy trying to interrupt?”

“Uh...” Why did he feel as though his knee was shot with an arrow?

“Yue Ying, tell me. What happened just now? What were you

thinking?” Zhu Yao continued to ask.

Yue Ying stiffened, the hands which were held by hers were trembling a little. After a moment, he slowly raised his head. However, he no longer carried that furious expression. His brows were slightly furrowed, his lips curved downwards, and even his tone changed. “Big sis...”

He lightly called out, as though he was being heavily wronged. She had never seen him like this, and for some reason, her heart began to melt.

“Take your time.”

His expression only maintained for a second, and immediately after, it reverted back to his former blank look. Even his tone had reverted back to being monotonous. “I realized that I can sense the surrounding back figures, and they might not have any influence on me. Also, as we moved forward, the shadows had actually been decreasing. I feel that in two days at the very most, they will completely disappear. I just wanted to ascertain just how far we have to go in order to shake off those shadows, and so I wanted to first head out to investigate.”

“You’re saying that these shadows aren’t found everywhere?” Zhonggu Lu was stunned. “Great! In that case, we can arrive at a safe place before our Nascent Divided Pearls run out.”

“Daoist Yue, why didn’t you say so earlier!” Nangong Cheng came squeezing in. “Since you can sense those shadows, we have some form of hope now.”

Zhu Yao pulled Yue Ying back, and activated her debt-settling mode. “Who was the one that said he was being nonsensical and preposterous earlier?”

The Yellow and Teal group stiffened, and they carried embarrassed faces. “Haah. It’s my fault, I’m sorry, Daoist Yue.” Nangong Cheng was rather magnanimous, as he scratched his head



and showed an apologetic look.

“I’m sorry.” Zhonggu Lu immediately followed up. “I was too anxious earlier, and though... Haah, it’s all Little Huang’s fault for speaking nonsense!”

“Eh?” Nangong Cheng was shot twice consecutively. Why was he taking full responsibility for this now? Even for his good homosexual friend, he shouldn’t shoot like that! Also, who’s Little Huang?

Zhu Yao turned to glance at Yue Ying. Seeing that he was carrying his usual expression and cold eyes, looking as if he disliked jokes and conversations, Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief. The current Yue Ying was like a child who was overly sensitive. She was truly afraid that because of this matter, he would lose the courage to interact with others.

However the fact that these terrifying shadows had a limited activity range had ignited the confidence of the squad. Just as Nangong Cheng planned on restarting a discussion how they should move forward from here, a sharp scream suddenly interrupted him.

The noise came from nearby, and it belonged to a woman as well. In these silent and dark space, it was especially horrifying. A bad feeling suddenly surged within Zhu Yao. The scream came so suddenly, so it definitely was ominous. Just as they were planning to make a detour...

A stream of hurried sprinting noises could be heard from in front of them. In the next moment, a few dishevelled figures was running over to them. There were a total of four people, and they each was running, limping with a messy pace. They seemed to be composed of three men and one woman.

They initially had panicky and fatigued looks, but when they saw Zhu Yao’s group, they instantly came charging over filled with excitement. They stopped outside their barrier and desperately

knocked on it. “Save us, save us! I beg you all, save me!”

Only then did Zhu Yao have a good look of their faces. It sure was a coincidence. It was actually Mary Sue Mei Xue who fooled Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu on the second floor. This sure was fate!

“It’s you!” Nangong Cheng naturally recognized her as well, and angrily charged forward.

“You...” Mei Xue was stunned as well, and only then did she recognize Nangong Cheng. In an instant, her face was filled with a pleasant surprise. “Daoist Nangong, it’s you! That’s great! Those shadows are closing in, Daoist Nangong please open the barrier and save us.”

Nangong Cheng coldly laughed. “You lot schemed us before, and we have yet to settle the score for that. Yet you still dare to show your face in front of us!”

Mei Xue was stunned as something flashed within her eyes. Immediately after, she recovered herself and tears instantly flowed out. There was no cooldown to her acting skills at all. “Daoist Nangong, could you possibly have a misunderstanding? I can explain! Did something happen after we split up? After we split up, we were really worried of you two as well, and we even returned to search for you two, but... but we simply couldn’t find you. Mei Xue understands that we have let you two down, and in these few days, I have also found it hard to swallow down my food because of that incident. Now that we’re in a crisis, if you don’t let us in, we will immediately lose our lives here.”

From the nonsense that she was spouting, most likely, she was still unaware that they had already figured out the secret behind the Extermination Formation. Nangong Cheng’s face had already turned green from anger, as he turned back to look at the rest.

Zhu Yao shrugged. “This doesn’t concern me. This is your issue, decide on your own.”

After saying that, she pulled her master and Yue Ying. They then took a few steps back and turned around.

She looked as if she did not want to step in at all, but she could not help but speak with a suppressed voice. “Yue Ying, there’s something I want to ask you.”

## Chapter 376: Don't Pull Aggro Off Tanks

---

“Daoist Nangong, are you really willing to stand idly by and watch us die?” Mei Xue was still pleading with tears and cries. She had considerably good looks in the first place, and adding that her cries were accompanied with a degree of gentleness and frailness, a feeling of pity could not help but well up within people’s hearts.

However, Nangong Cheng suffered some losses because of her before. This time, no matter how much sadder she was going to cry, not even the slightest hint of pity would well up within him. “Don’t think I’m unaware that you’ve tempered with the Extermination Formation. Since we’re alive right now, it proves that we’ve long known about the truth. There’s no longer a need for you to act in front of us.”

Mei Xue’s expression stiffened, showing a terrible face that looked as if her secret had been exposed.

Nangong Cheng coldly snorted. No longer having the thought of caring about such lowly people, he called out to the rest to continue on their way. The surrounding sharp screams grew even louder, and ominous winds wildly blew. It was as if something terrifying was hurrying in their direction.

The faces in Mei Xue’s group instantly turned miserably pale. She couldn’t be bothered with anything else any longer and immediately block their path. “Daoist Nangong, it’s all my fault back then! That’s right! I made use of you people. But that’s an idea that I came up with alone, and it’s unrelated to the rest. You can watch me die, but please save my three companions.” SHE pointed at the three men next to her. “As long as you’re willing to let them into the barrier and have them stay inside till those crowd of shadows move away, Mei Xue is willing to die to pay for her sins.”

When her words fell, the few men next to her were not the only

ones that were stunned, even Zhu Yao herself could not believe her ears. This was illogical! Mary Sue had actually learnt how to sacrifice herself to save others!?

“Mei Xue, you can’t! Even if we die, what regrets would we have?” One of the men in green robes refuted.

“That’s right!” Man Number Two replied as well. “As long as we can be with you, so what if we die right now?”

“Even if we die, we have to die together.” The other man immediately expressed his intentions as well.

Everything became sensational in an instant. Mei Xue however heavily shook her head, sprinkling the tears that had yet to dry. The scene could only be described as mournful. “No! I can’t pull you all down. It’s all my fault, so let me bear this burden alone! Daoist Nangong, please save them.”

“...” Nangong Cheng was stunned, and grew a little hesitant in an instant, as though he never expected that Mei Xue would die for the sake of others.

“Mei Xue!” The three men was still planning to stop her, when suddenly, Mei Xue forcefully pushed them away. She then pulled out a long sword out of nowhere, and with determined eyes, she looked at Nangong Cheng. “Daoist Nangong, please keep to your words.”

As she said that, she had already pushed her sword towards her neck. Just as the tip of the sword was about to reach her neck...

“Hey, hey, what are doing!?” The hell, he hadn’t even agreed to it yet! Nangong Cheng was stunned, and out of reflex, he reached out his hand attempting to stop her action.

Zhu Yao’s heart sank. “Wait, Nangong Huang!”

Unfortunately, she was a step too late. His hand had already reached out of the barrier, and the barrier opened up right at that moment. Almost at the same time, the plot changed drastically.

The three people that Mei Xue pushed away restrained Nangong Cheng in an instant, while the sword that Mei Xue planned on stabbing her own neck with was now held against Nangong Cheng's neck. The barrier immediately disappeared.

The hell!

“Hahahaha...” Mei Xue who was still incomparably gentle and frail earlier, had already changed her expression. Her laughter was filled with extreme arrogance and impudicity. “I’ve never expected that such a stupid person like you would actually be tricked so easily. You lot deserve to die here.”

“You venomous woman, let go of me.” Nangong Cheng trembled in anger. However, this floor was a divine energy restricted zone in the first place, and with him being restrained by three people, he was basically unable to move at all.

“Let go of you? I finally managed to capture you, how could I possibly let go of you so easily?” Mei Xue kicked him, and then looked at the rest. “None of you move, otherwise, I will kill him right here and now!” The sword in her hand moved, instantly drawing out a slit of his blood.

“Nangong!” Zhonggu Lu trembled in fury. “What can you show by threatening others? If you have the guts, then fight me one-on-one.”

Mei Xue coldly laughed and ignored him.

Zhu Yao frowned and took a step forward. “Mei Xue, just what are you trying to do?”

“What I’m trying to do? What else can I do in this upper floor?” Mei Xue coldly snorted, her face was filled with scorn. She sent a glance to the man at the side, and he immediately received her intentions. He began to search Nangong Cheng's body, and in a few short moments, he found a bag that was filled with Nascent Divided Pearls.

“He still has five of them.”

Mei Xue then nodded satisfyingly. Right from the start, her goal was to steal their Nascent Divided Pearls. Her pleads earlier were all just an act.

As they held onto Nangong Cheng, the four of them retreated to a safe distance, and then she coldly laughed. “Then, I hope you all enjoy your final moments.”

She suddenly moved away her sword and then ruthlessly stabbed Nangong Cheng in the back, piercing straight through his chest. Pulling her sword out, she then pushed him towards them. “Let’s go!” They then turned around and fled towards the front.

“Nangong!” Zhonggu Lu hurriedly caught the injured Nangong Cheng.

Mei Xue and her gang had already disappeared without a trace, but that stab of hers was truly ruthless, as Nangong Cheng’s chest was already completely dyed red. Such injuries wouldn’t amount to anything if things were like before, but they were unable to use mystic arts here. Even with his divine physique, he wouldn’t be able to hold on if his blood continued to flow like this.

Zhu Yao squatted down and cupped his wrist. As expected, his loss of blood was severe.

“Dongfang girly...” Nangong Cheng wished that he could smash his head into the wall right now. “It’s all my fault! I got tricked by that bitch’s scheme again! Even the Nascent Divided Pearls are...”

“Nevermind, what use is there to bring it up now?” Zhu Yao was a little irritated. Nangong Cheng’s earlier action was all pure instinct, who would have thought that Mei Xue was here to steal their Nascent Divided Pearls in the first place? Her stupidity was to blame as well. Mei Xue was a ruthless character in the first place, how could she possibly plead to them? She should have realized it earlier.

Initially, Mei Xue had five men next to her, while there was now only three of them left. Clearly, something must have happened. For a woman who would even use her own people, what else wouldn't she do?

“Dongfang girly is right, this isn't the time to pursue responsibility.” Zhonggu Lu was incredibly anxious as well. Seeing blood endlessly flowing out of his chest, even his hands were beginning to tremble. “Let's think of a way to stop your blood from flowing out for now! If things go on like this, you will be in trouble!”

“There isn't only one trouble right now!” Yu Yan suddenly spoke out coldly.

With a wave of his hand, his Life Artifact had already appeared in his hand. Raising his head, he looked to the near distance and solemnly said. “They're here!”

The moment his words fell, a wave of sharp screams rang deep into their ears, and they could not help but feel an immense chill in their hearts. The human-devouring shadows were here.

Zhu Yao immediately pulled out that red “patch” weapon as well. Fortunately, it was her Life Artifact, and was already considered a part of her body, so there was no need for the circulation of divine energy to pull it out. Though, the effects of the sword would be greatly limited, and it could no longer be considered as a divine artifact, but a normal weapon.

“But Nangong, he...” Zhonggu Lu grew even more flustered.

Zhu Yao clenched her fists, and then turned to look at the person behind her. “Yue Ying, can you help stop his blood from flowing out?”

Yue Ying did not hesitate and simply stepped forward. With a wave of his sleeves across Nangong Cheng, the blood from his chest immediately stopped flowing.



“This is...” Zhonggu Lu was completely dumbfounded, as he looked at Yue Ying with a face that seemed as if he was looking at a ghost. “You... Could it be that your mystic arts aren’t sealed?”

“There’s no time to explain, those shadows are coming.” Zhu Yao turned towards the front. Holding onto the sword in her hand tightly, she stood next to her master.

Zhonggu Lu understood that this wasn’t the time to ask questions. He stood up and made preparations for battle as well. Even Nangong Cheng took a deep breath and struggled to stand up on his feet.

A moment later.

Ding dong. Something fell in front of them, and then it rolled for a short while on the ground before shattering resoundingly. That was actually a completely used up Nascent Divided Pearl. Zhu Yao instantly understood why Mei Xue actually had the time to come up with such a long act even though they were clearly being chased by those shadows.

This Nascent Divided Pearl seemed to have been placed here by them preemptively, in order to block those shadows that were roaming everywhere and buy them time for their act. Zhu Yao and her group had most likely unknowingly walked into this barrier. This Nascent Divided Pearl could not last for long in the first place, and it had already reached its limit.

The instant the Nascent Divided Pearls shattered, immense number of shadows crazily pounced towards them. Piercing screams rang painfully in their ears. The place was filled with flying shadows, and occasionally, those shadows would flash their human faces that grew even more sinister and terrifying as more of them did. Even the shadows that flew past them carried a bone-piercing chill, as though they could injure them with frostbites.

Those shadows seemed to have specific goals in their minds. Some charged towards her master, some charged towards Nangong

Cheng, some charged towards Zhonggu Lu, and even more of them charged towards Yue Ying, except her!

“.....”

“...”

Zhu Yao was a little dumbfounded. Looking at the waves after waves of shadows, they split towards the people at the side and were completely avoiding her. Not a single one of them turned around and give her a glance. Not a single one!

Just what was going on? Did Realmspirit give her a cheat again? However, ever since she entered the tower, she wasn't given any sort of preferential treatment. Even her World Favourable Impression passive seemed to have been completely ineffective right from the beginning.

“Master...” She looked at the people next to her with strange eyes.

“Mn?” Yu Yan swung away the several shadows with his sword, and then turned to look at her.

Zhu Yao did not have time to explain when the next shadow took the opportunity to attack Yu Yan's back. “Master, watch out!” Zhu Yao immediately slashed at it and that shadow instantly dissipated, turning into a mass of black smoke. However, the smoke did not scatter off, and instead began to gather together once more. In just a few moments, it once again formed a complete figure, and a human face instantly surfaced. That was a face of an old man. He had a long beard and white hair, looking extremely kind. He even looked a little familiar.

In a blink of an eye, it turned into a sinister look, and with a sharp scream, it came pouncing towards her. Zhu Yao swung her sword and once again scattered it.

As expected, in less than ten minutes, that shadow once again changed back, and Zhu Yao seemed to have accidentally caught its

attention. This shadow began to change its target and launch attacks at her.

Zhu Yao was not a physical practitioner. Her sword techniques were not as strong as her divine arts, and could only be considered average. However, it was more than enough to deal with a single one. However, if this went on, nothing would change. These things could reform themselves limitlessly and could not be killed at all. They had to find a plan.

Zhu Yao inspected her surroundings, but was shocked by the person behind her.

“Yue Ying!” He was actually staring blankly in the air while standing in the center of a large number of shadows!

Without even thinking, Zhu Yao charged over. With a few slashes, she cut away several shadows that were surrounding Yue Ying, instantly pulling a large number of aggro.

In an instant, large number of shadows came flying towards her.

Uh... She seemed to have become an off-tank.

# Chapter 377: The Truth Behind the Final Floor

---

Zhu Yao felt a large wave of cold winds charging towards her, and it was both quick and hurried. She hurriedly swung her sword to deflect them, slashing apart the gathering shadows. However, she was not able to dodge all of them either. After slashing apart the ones at the front, the ones at the back came charging forward as well. The first few swings were still fine, but slowly, her strength began to dwindle. After scattering a few shadows, an ominous wind came charging towards her back. She instinctively shifted to the side, but she was still a step too late. An aching pain spread from her arm as something had pierced into it. It was as if something was trying to slice off a piece of her flesh.

When she turned to look, she saw a shadow was biting deeply into her arm, and her hand was already drenched in fresh blood. That figure merely revealed half of its face, but his appearance could be vaguely seen, and Zhu Yao was stunned after seeing it.

“Big sis!” Yue Ying was startled, hurriedly walking over.

Zhu Yao gritted her teeth as she passed her sword to her other hand and scattered the shadow. However, the bite was so deep, her bones could already be seen. This bite could not be compared to any of the injuries she suffered in the past, but back then, she still had her cultivation no matter how severe her injuries were, so she would have still been able to hold on even if she was bitten. Presently, with how her divine energy was suppressed, this pain clearly hurt even more. She could barely feel her own hand now.

“Big sis!” Yue Ying was a little flustered, as he hurriedly helped stop her blood from flowing out. Something seemed to be burning with his eyes.

“Yu Yao.” Yu Yan’s face clearly looked a little anxious as well, but he was being surrounded by a large number of shadows and could

not push his way through.

“I’m fine.” Zhu Yao solemnly said. “Don’t lose focus.” This wasn’t the time to be worried about such things.

Zhu Yao’s right arm was injured, and at this moment, she couldn’t even hold her sword properly. However, she had no choice but to stand up again. The hell, you’re bullying me because I’m not a leftie, right?

But it really hurts! She was basically using her own flesh and body to block attacks.

Most likely because of the stimulation from her blood, those shadows grew even wilder. Their terrifying screams grew sharper, causing one’s skin to crawl. They seemed to be waiting for something, as they circled around their surroundings. Then, they once again attacked her from her back.

Zhu Yao had no choice but to shift to the side and hold up her sword again. With this action of hers, her blood began to pour out once more. Just as she was about to be submerged by an overwhelming amount of shadows, Yue Ying suddenly grabbed onto her hand, and his eyes instantly turned crimson red.

“Scram!”

In an instant, a dark aura that was even thicker than the shadows’ was emitted out from his body, instantly devouring those shadows. The shadows revealed flustered looks, and the situation instantly flipped around. The shadows that were still anxiously targeting them before were now fleeing in all directions.

In just a few seconds, the area suddenly quietened down.

There was no longer any shadows in the air, but they were replaced by a devillic aura that was even colder and more terrifying than those shadows. Yue Ying was enveloped within the devillic aura, and what remained was a pair of crimson-red eyes filled with anger. The light coming from his eyes were enough to

send cold shivers down everyone's spines.

Zhu Yao instantly calmed down and grabbed him with her other hand, desperately ignoring the devillic aura that was making her tremble. With a solemn voice, she said. "Yue Ying, I'm fine now! Everyone is fine now."

Only then did the anger in his eyes slowly extinguish, reverting back to their former clarity. The surrounding devillic aura then slowly began to return into his body as well, till they completely disappear. He lowered his head and looked at her hand which was dripping with blood. "Big sis..."

"I'm fine." Zhu Yao smiled at him. "Thank you." She never expected that even though these shadows were fierce, they could not match against devillic aura. It was no wonder Yue Ying was unmoving earlier. It wasn't because he was in a daze, rather, the shadows must have realized the aura emitted from his body and did not dare to approach him.

"Devillic aura!" Zhonggu Lu looked over with a stunned expression. "Could... Could you actually be..."

Even Nangong Cheng's face changed as well.

Zhu Yao sighed. It seemed like they couldn't hide it any longer. "That's right, Yue Ying is of the Devil race. The shadows earlier were chased away by him as well. What are you two planning to do?"

Zhonggu Lu and Nangong Cheng were stunned for a moment.

"No wonder... No wonder he's the only one who can still use mystic arts." Zhonggu Lu muttered. They were unable to circulate divine energy, but devillic energy was not restricted.

Nangong Cheng looked at Zhu Yao, and finally let out a sigh. "So that's the case. Da... Daoist Yue, thank you very much. With that many shadows, I thought we were dead for sure!"

"Isn't your stupidity at fault here? Otherwise, why would we

have encountered so much trouble?” Zhonggu Lu retorted.

“The hell, can you blame me for that? It’s because that Mei Xue is too treacherous, alright?”

Zhonggu Lu immediately rolled his eyes.

It seemed like they were intentionally ignoring the fact that Yue Ying was a Devil. After all, everyone had come a long way together, and it would be best that a conflict wouldn’t occur.

Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief, when a her right hand was suddenly held by someone. She could not help but let out a cold gasp. “Szz...”

“Don’t move.” A certain master glared at her unhappily, as he began to roll a white cloth around her injured arm.

“I’m fine, master. The blood has already stopped flowing. It will be fine in about an hour.” After all, she still had a divine physique, such injuries would heal really quickly.

His eyes narrowed. “Mn?”

“Uh... Wrap it, wrap it then!” Wuuuu, master is angry at me again.

---

They did not stay around, instead, they took the opportunity when the shadows were scattered and hurriedly pressed forward towards their goal. Initially, they thought that they would at least encounter another two or three waves. Strangely however, they had rushed for two days straight, but not a single shadow came attacked them again.

Even if there were occasional misty shadows floating past, they completely ignored Zhu Yao’s group and simply floated away after swaying about a few times. Zhu Yao thought that this was due to fear of Yue Ying’s devillish energy, or there was simply too little shadows in their present surroundings. However, Yue Ying had

clearly retracted his devillic energy and was not leaking out even the littlest bit. Furthermore, the sharp and terrifying screams in the air did not lessen that much either.

Zhu Yao's heart began to sink, as the guess she had continued to grow clearer. On the third day, they finally walked out of the sinister and terrifying territory, and they instantly saw the light in front of them. It was as if they had suddenly walked out of the darkness and into the light, as the sinister air was completely swept away, and what replaced it was a lush green forest.

"Great, we finally got out." Nangong Cheng said with joy. "We no longer have to be harrassed by those shadows. We're safe now."

"That might not be the case!" Zhu Yao clenched her fists, her worry grew heavier.

Nangong Cheng was stunned as he turned to look at her. "Dongfang girly, just relax. Look at this place, it's completely bright. Those shadows definitely won't come here. As long as we cross this forest, we will be able to reach the light that guides us to the realm of Gods. We are no longer in any sort of danger."

Zhu Yao turned to look at the darkness behind her, and then once again glanced at the greenery before them, frowning. "Do you guys know... what those shadows are?"

Nangong Cheng was startled. "What else can they be?"

"Sinister and ominous, undestroyable, being able to resurrect indefinitely, and carrying such immense hatred. With such characteristics, I can only think of a single thing."

Yu Yan frowned and coldly said. "Resentment!"

The group was stunned. Zhonggu Lu stepped forward. "How is that possible? Isn't resentment something that only exists in the Netherworld? Why would it appear in the Lightning Divine Tower? And on the final floor on the road to ascending into Gods nonetheless!"



“I’ve once visited the River of Forgetfulness in the Netherworld.” To be exact, she met the River of Forgetfulness himself. “The River of Forgetfulness is the only thing that bridges the Three Realms, and it flows throughout every corner of the Three Realms, guiding those depressed souls back to the Netherworld and sending them to their reincarnations. Since the River of Forgetfulness can be found in all of the Three Thousand Worlds, then it can naturally be found in the Divine Realm as well.”

Nangong Cheng grew even more confused. “What does these shadows have to do with the River of Forgetfulness?”

“All of the resentment of the Netherworld is being concealed in the depths of the River of Forgetfulness.” Yu Yan continued with a solemn voice.

“You’re saying, the River of Forgetfulness brought resentment into the Lightning Divine Tower?” Zhonggu Lu frowned. “However, even if those shadows are resentment, since we’re already here, they wouldn’t chase after us, right? Furthermore, after those resentment were chased away by Daoist Yue, they no longer appeared again. What does this have to do with the danger that you speak of?”

“Have neither of you felt anything strange about those shadows?”

The group exchanged glances, and even Yu Yan was confused as well.

“Master, I want to ask you something. In the Lower Realm, have you met someone that looks exactly the same as Sect Master Zi Mo?”

Yu Yan was stunned for a moment. As someone who was face-blind, Zi Mo’s face was one of few that he remembered. After pondering deeply for a while, as though he had thought of something, he solemnly said. “There was a heretic practitioner who deeply specialized in the arts of transformation, and he was

even capable of changing his aura. He once turned into Zi Mo's appearance and infiltrated my Ancient Hill Sect. He was then exposed by me."

"After that?"

"Naturally, he was killed."

"Did master personally do it?"

"Mn."

"As expected!" Zhu Yao sighed, and instantly a sense of powerlessness overwhelmed her.

"Dongfang girly, just what are you trying to get with those words of yours?" Nangong Cheng anxiously asked.

Zhu Yao turned to look at the four of them. "Did you all notice the appearances of the shadows formed by resentment?"

The group: "..."

"I saw them..." Zhu Yao solemnly said. "I saw a shadow that looked exactly the same as Zi Mo. That shadow was attacking my master. I even saw..." She turned to look at Yue Ying. "Xu Nuoyan! And he was attacking Yue Ying."

Her master and Yue Ying instantly widened their eyes. As though they had realized something, their faces instantly turned complicated.

"Just what do you mean?" Nangong Cheng was anxious. "And who is this Xu Nuoyan?"

"It doesn't matter who he is." Zhu Yao shook her head. "The important thing is, who they were killed by!"

Zhonggu Lu's expression changed. "You... You're saying, those resentment are formed by the people that we've once killed? And that is why they were desperately attacking us?"

"I wasn't certain in the beginning. However, have you all

thought about why no other shadows attacked us again after those resentment were chased away by the devillic aura back then?” Zhu Yao analysed. “Because the other resentment aren’t looking for us! They would only look for their creditors.”

This was also why at the very beginning, those resentment only attacked the four of them and completely avoided her. Because she had never taken a single human life, so naturally, there did not exist any so-called resentment seeking her for revenge. After that, she took the initiative to attack them, and only then were they lured over.

“Why would the River of Forgetfulness simply send these resentment into the Lightning Divine Tower? Also, after being filled by resentment for so many years, why hasn’t there been any signs of the Lightning Divine Tower collapsing?” Zhu Yao’s expression grew heavier. “If my guess is correct, the final test of this Lightning Divine Tower is actually a tribulation, a tribulation of karma! From the many deeds that we’d planted back then, we will receive the corresponding karma. Most likely, from everything that a practitioner has done in the past, everything would be returned on this very floor.”

“If that’s the case... Do you guys still feel that the place before us is really safe?”

“...” Everyone’s faces instantly paled.

# Chapter 378: The Fate of the Scheming Mary Sue

---

Among the people who could ascend and become Deities, which one of them would have clean hands? Especially in the case of such an environment where the strong would feast on the weak. Usually, the higher one stood, the more debts of blood he would hold, not to mention there were a Demonic Immortal and a Devil among them. Which one of them hadn't climbed up through a bloody slaughter?

“Dongfang girly, it might not be as bad as you say?” Nangong Cheng waved his hands without a mind and smiled. Just that that smile of his was clearly a little forced. “Look, we're already out of the territory. Even if those resentment originated from our killings back then, there shouldn't be anything else, right?”

“I don't know either. If this floor is truly a tribulation of karma, then how could killings be the only deeds that we'd planted?” Zhu Yao shook her head. “In any case, being cautious isn't wrong. After all, the road to the Light of Guidance is still long!”

The group sternly nodded. Compared to the lax and joy earlier, they were now more vigilant and serious instead, as every single one of them pressed forward with a hundred and twenty percent focus.

Yue Ying was their main battle force. As of now, he was the only one remaining who had the human GPS function, and so he took the initiative to walk at the front. Zhu Yao and her master was following behind, and they were responsible of inspecting the surrounding situation. Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu on the other hand were at the back.

After maintaining their current formation well, the group finally walked into the large green forest. The forest wasn't actually really dense. Compared to the forests in the Three Thousand Worlds that

were filled with spiritual and divine energy, this place was clearly a little dull, as though there wasn't any sign of life. The ground was filled with broken branches and dead leaves. Even the leaves on the trees had withered, and were at the verge of falling off.

They did not walk for too long when Yue Ying suddenly stopped. With a frown, he looked forward.

“What is it?” Zhu Yao asked.

He pointed to the front. “There seems to be something in front?”

The hell, so quick!

Their hearts suddenly tensed up, and after hearing carefully, the sounds of battle could be heard. They had initially planned on making a detour, but that place was somewhere they had to pass through no matter what. In order to prevent any incidents, they could not help but be more cautious of their surroundings.

The closer they approached, the louder the battle noises became. They had just walked a few meters when a large green field appeared before their eyes. A flustered voice crying for help could be heard.

“Save me. Hurry... Hurry and save me. Hurry and save me!!”

This voice...

They then got a closer look. Yo, it sure is a small world. Isn't the three men and one woman over there Mei Xue and her gang? Zhu Yao wondered if it was retribution, as they had once again encountered trouble.

A flower with the combined height of two people appeared on the field of grass. It had body dyed in bloody red, and its six wide-spread petals were as large as bathtubs. At the very center of the flower was actually a large bloody mouth, and sharp teeth were grown all around it. There were even thorny vines baring their teeth and dancing about in the air, their looks were especially terrifying.

Mei Xue and another man was being bitten by that flower, and half of their bodies were already in its mouth. The other two men were currently grabbing onto their hands, wanting to pull them out with all their might. Mei Xue had a fatigued look, and was already crying out from fear. Her hair was dishevelled and even her face was crumpled up. She was really crying now, losing all of the beauty of a pear blossom in tears. She was howling like a pig that was about to be slaughtered.

“Hurry, hurry and pull me out... Save me, hurry and save me!” As she waved about her hands, she hissed with her exhausted voice, crying out to the two men outside. The lower half of her body was already flowing out blood from the flower’s bite, and it was surging out even more than a woman’s auntie.

The two men outside grabbed onto each one of her arms and were using all of their strength to pull her out of the flower’s mouth. However, because they could not use their divine energy, they did not dare to go too close either. Furthermore, that flower was twice the size of an average person in the first place, so though they did not let go, their efforts were not very evident. She was already beginning to slowly slide into the flower’s innards.

The man that was similarly in the flower’s mouth saw that this wasn’t going to work out. Letting go of his hands, he then dragged Mei Xue’s waist in the opposite direction. “Mei Xue, save me after you’ve safely left!” With a strong lift, he immediately threw her out.

The power of three people were clearly effective. Seeing that she had escaped the flower’s mouth, the man joyfully reached out his hand, wanting to seek help. However, that flower seemed to be unwilling to see its prey escaping just like that. Its large mouth once again widened, and it then pounced forward.

It was unknown if she had done it with intention, but the moment Mei Xue got out, she suddenly sent a kick to the back, instantly kicking the man that was seeking their help into the

flower's innards. That gigantic flower retreated a few meters because of the rebound as well, though it seemed to have swallowed the man whole.

This scene happened so quickly. The man that dragged Mei Xue out did not even have the opportunity to be surprised when he disappeared into the gigantic flower's mouth. Mei Xue and the other two men on the other hand took this chance to escape the flower's active range. Their faces were miserably pale, and they looked as if they had been utterly frightened.

The two men who went to save them had terrible expressions, clearly, they saw the earlier scene with their very own eyes. However, under Mei Xue's cries, the two decided to ignore it and began to console her instead.

"Mei Xue, we're fine now, we're fine now? Don't be afraid."

"But big brother Ye Yu..."

"He died to save you, and he definitely did it out of his own free will as well."

"That's right, he won't blame you. He will definitely be able to pass away peacefully knowing that you're safe."

"He died for a purpose, and with that, he died with honour!"

The surrounding five spectators instantly carried darkened expressions, feeling as though they had swallowed crap.

"The hell. I'm sorry, I need to puke a little." Zhonggu Lu turned around and retched.

"I've never seen something so disgusting, and such a disgusting Deity practitioner." Nangong Cheng could not help but retort as well. "Dongfang girly, are all you Deities like this? Fortunately, I'm a Demonic Immortal."

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. "This is my first time seeing such an incredible Deity practitioner, alright?" Please

apologize to all of the Deity practitioners in the world, hey!

“It’s you people!” Mei Xue was stunned, a hint of fluster flashed across her face.

“We meet again.” Nangong Cheng coldly snorted. “Is this what’s known as retribution for one’s actions? Mei Xue, it’s time we settle our past debts.”

The other two men’s expression changed as well, as they wielded their weapons one after another and looked at their with alert expressions.

“If you want to harm Mei Xue, you should first ask the sword in my hand.”

“Hmph, you group of losers still dare to spout such presumptuous words. Mei Xue, don’t need to be afraid, we definitely won’t allow them to touch you the slightest bit.”

The two of them had determined looks as they firmly protected Mei Xue between them, who had a frail and fearful look on her face. However, the two of them understood that in term of numbers, they were basically not their match. They had no choice but to guard Mei Xue at the center and began to retreat.

Unfortunately, before Nangong Cheng could even make a move, with a sudden swoosh, two enormous vines suddenly pierced out from beneath the three’s feet, reaching up to a height of two meters. The vines twirled at the top and then suddenly split open. Instantly, two blood-coloured man-eater flowers, that looked exactly the same as the one before, bloomed. They then pounced towards the three of them.

Just as the three of them were once again about to enter the flowers’ mouth, Mei Xue who was standing in the center and was nearest to the flowers, suddenly screamed.

“Ah!~!!” She pushed out her two hands at the same time, successfully pushing the two into the incoming flowers’ mouths,



while she herself had rolled out of the range of the two flowers.

Before the two men could even react, while their pledge was still echoing in their ears, they were personally pushed into the gates of hell by their beloved. They did not even have the time to question her, as they disappeared within the enormous flowers with faces of utter disbelief and shock.

Zhu Yao wondered if they could still truly say that they died for a purpose, and hence died with honour!

Mei Xue did not even turn to look at the two of them. After crawling up, she instead ran towards the direction of Zhu Yao's group, as though she had discovered the danger of the grass plains and was trying to escape. Unfortunately, she was still too slow.

A few red vines charged out from the ground, instantly wrapping around Mei Xue's body and trapping her where she stood. The bloody red thorns on the vines stabbed directly into her flesh, punching several holes in her body.

Her face instantly paled, her eyes were filled with fear. She struggled wildly, wanting to crawl towards them. "Save me... Please, save me... Save me..."

Zhu Yao frowned and turned her head away. Yue Ying and Yu Yan did not have any reaction, while Zhonggu Lu simply rolled his eyes. Nangong Cheng even spat heavily in her direction.

If she hadn't schemed against them time and time again to steal their Nascent Divided Pearls, they might have pitied her a little. But now... even if there was something wrong with their brains, they wouldn't lend a helping hand, especially after seeing her unhesitantly pushing out even her own male companions. Calling her snake-hearted would even make snakes look bad!

Mei Xue did not struggle for too long. The vines wrapping around her body continued to increase, and fresh blood poured out from the holes in her body, which were then absorbed cleanly by those

green vines. Mei Xue's initial world-class appearance began to age at an astonishing speed, and in just a few moments, she had already turned into a white-haired old lady. Her body was also drying up at a speed visible to the naked eyes. As though the nourishment from her body was being absorbed, the vines began to turn greener and were even glowing with a faint glistening light.

Red flower buds began to pop out from the vines, and they crawled across the entire vines. They watched as the buds grew even larger, to the size of a fist. With a slight twirl, blood-coloured flowers that looked like red gems instantly bloomed. However, those flowers were different from the man-eater flowers from before, and only had five petals. Yet they looked as if they were formed out of crystals.

“Lasting Flowers!” Zhonggu Lu suddenly widened his eyes, his face instantly changed. “The pollens of these flowers carry a dangerous poison. Breathing it in would damage one's primordial spirit and cause one to suffocate.”

When Zhu Yao heard this, she immediately held her nose and mouth. The rest did the same as well.

As expected, the sharp flower petals let out a bright flash of red light, and after a few crisp crackling noises, they began to explode and instantly turned into red powder. The powder filled the entire sky, and then they sprinkled down onto the ground. Under the light from the sun, it was as if red stars were raining down.

Fifteen minutes later, those red powder finally sank into the grass field and disappeared without a trace. Mei Xue whose appearance could no longer be discerned had already been completely absorbed into the Lasting Flowers' vines. Suddenly, with a loud boom, the Lasting Flowers and the other gigantic red flowers began to sink back into the earth. Even the holes that they appeared from had disappeared without a trace.

The area in front of them turned into a flat and quiet field of

grass, as if the earlier catastrophe had never happened.

# Chapter 379: Realizing an Incredible Secret

---

When it came to Mei Xue's retribution, Zhu Yao was still sighing at how things turned out in the beginning. Out of rationality, she still silently lit a row of candles for Mei Xue in her heart. However, immediately after, she could no longer rationalize her thoughts.

She suddenly recalled. Momma's egg! How are we going to pass this grass field!? In other words, they were going to encounter those strange flowers beneath the earth as well. Recalling that enormous flower which didn't even burp after swallowing one of them whole, she could not help but tremble. She wondered if it was too late for them to make a retreat?

"The strange flowers and plants underneath the earth are definitely not limited to just that breed earlier." Zhonggu Lu's expression was especially terrible to look at. "Also, I can sense that these flowers most likely possess sentience."

"Sentience." Zhu Yao was stunned. "You're saying those earlier were all flower spirits?"

Zhonggu Lu nodded, a hint of doubt surfaced on his expression once more. "I'm a Plant Immortal, so I can naturally sense them. However, those flower spirits are a little different from flower spirits that cultivate normally. They seemed to be even more... violent than the rest."

The rest were all stunned for a moment. Spirits that were formed by plants usually had gentler and warmer personalities. After all, plants were creatures that were the hardest to develop sentience with. Also, compared to human practitioners and demonic beasts, they needed an extremely long time to grow, and they were not able to even move in their preliminary stages. That was why they would not develop any impatience, let alone violence.

"Take that Lasting Flower for example. Formerly, it's a Resident Flower. Only after developing sentience would it mutate into a

Lasting Flower.” Zhonggu Lu explained. “Also, it’s extremely hard for such flowers to grow, and so it’s extremely rare for one to cultivate into a spirit.”

Zhu Yao’s heart sank. Suddenly, she thought of something. “Then what are those three man-eater flowers called? Do you know what effects they have on practitioners?”

Zhonggu Lu’s expression changed, and he lamented in dissatisfaction. “You Deity practitioners are really... Why do you all first think of their effects when spiritual herbs are brought up?”

“Don’t care about that right now, just tell me.”

“The other breed must be the Heavenly Immortal Herb.” Zhonggu Lu pouted, but he still answered. “Though, the Heavenly Immortal Herbs are usually spiritual herbs that would only grow up to a few inches tall. I wonder why they could become so big. As for what effects they have on practitioners, I don’t know either. I’ve never eaten them anyway.”

“Resident Flowers can be used to refine the Immortal Pellet.” Yu Yan suddenly said. “This pellet can resurrect a dead person and allow his or her bones and flesh to regrow. As long as his soul does not dissipate, no matter how severe his injuries are, they can all be restored in just a single incense worth of time.”

The hell, it’s that overpowered?

“As for the Heavenly Immortal Herbs, it can be used to refine Realm Crossing Pellets. Taking one will enable a practitioner’s cultivation to immediately improve by a large realm.”

“A large realm!” Zhu Yao was stunned. “In other words, in the Lower Realm, if our initial cultivation is at the Nascent Soul stage, eating it will allow one to immediately become a Demigod? And if one is a Demigod, then he or she can immediately ascend?”

“It’s the same in the Divine Realm as well.” He added. “This is a divine herb in the first place.”

“.....”

“...”

Yu Yan frowned. “Though, the recipes for these two pellets have long disappeared. I’ve never heard of someone capable of refining it in the Divine Realm, let alone the Lower Realm.”

Was this Mei Xue’s cheat? She could refine Realm Crossing Pellets and immediately raise her level. This cheat was much more incredible than hers. It was no wonder her level was 1 while the others were all at level 2 when they first met in the second floor. Most likely, her cultivation had all come from eating pellets and medicine. Her foundation was not stable, and coincidentally, Lightning Divine Tower forbid dru-ah pui, forbid taking herbs?”

“Dongfang girly, have you thought of something?” Nangong Cheng took a step forward and said. “Share it with us so that we can come up with plans together.”

Zhu Yao felt like crying. “I just thought that, if this floor is truly the tribulation of karma, then all of the plants here are most likely materialized by the pellets that we’ve eaten before.”

“It... It can’t be!” Nangong Cheng was a little anxious. Who wouldn’t eat pellets or medicine all their path of cultivation? Even Zhonggu Lu, a Flower Deity, had swallowed high-ranking spiritual herbs in order to raise his cultivation as well. “Aren’t spiritual herbs supposed to be sentienceless? Also, when we gather them, we’ve never met any resistance either.”

“You already mentioned that they’re spiritual herbs.” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “That proves that they must contain spiritual and divine energies. Where do they come from? Do you think they would enter these herbs by themselves?”

“.....”

“...”

“People with divine or spiritual energies in their bodies can be

considered practitioners. Then, plants with divine or spiritual energies, can also be considered as sentient spirits. Though, the differences would simply lie in how long it has been since they blossom.” The same logic applied to how demonic beasts would have higher level of intelligence as their ranks increased. “Also, all pellets and medicines possess their own pellet poison, and this applies to divine herbs as well. Theoretically speaking, the bodies of spiritual herbs contain the purest divine or spiritual energies, so they should be able to take in energy just like spirit stones. Then why would they contain poison? And where does the poison come from? Could the so-called pellet poison is actually the final retribution by those herbs that had just awoken their sentience but has no means to fight back?”

The group was instantly silent.

“Dongfang girly, from how you’re putting it, I’m starting to feel anxious!” Nangong Cheng’s face instantly drooped down. He glanced at the field of grass before them, and then silently took a step back.

“There’s no need to worry.” Yu Yan said with a calm look, as he stroked his disciple’s head. “If this grass field is truly testing one’s karma with spiritual herbs, then we master and disciple have never eaten a single medicinal pellet. I believe passing this stage wouldn’t be hard.”

“Oh right!” Zhu Yao said with a enlightened expression. “Then why are we being afraid!?”

“I’ve never eaten one either!” Yue Ying immediately raised his hand and expressed himself.

“Good job.” Zhu Yao stroked his head.

Her beating little heart instantly calmed down. She felt rather domineering all of a sudden.

Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu: “...”

We ate them before, hey! Where's the promised love between teammates? Don't speak as if you three are the only ones here, hey!

"Dongfang girly..." Nangong Cheng pitifully tugged Zhu Yao's sleeves, and his hand was instantly shoved away by Yue Ying with a scornful look. My big sis's sleeves is mine! "What about us? What should we do?"

Zhu Yao was stunned, and only then did she regain her senses. "Oh right! I forgot you guys were still here."

"....."

"..."

From Mei Xue's situation earlier, those spiritual herbs seemed to appear based on the amount of aggro accumulated. The more one ate, the more frequent they would appear. "Come, tell us what medicine and pellets you two have eaten. How many flowers have you all destroyed? Just how many youthful spiritual plants have you all harmed altogether?"

"Uh..." Why did he feel as if he was a greedy beast now? "Not... Not... Not that much?" What's with this sense of shame I'm feeling all of a sudden? "I'm a Demonic Immortal. You should be aware that demonic beasts don't know how to refine medicine at all in the Lower Realm. When we encounter spiritual herbs, I would usually swallow them whole."

"The hell, you actually swallow them alive!" Before Zhu Yao could even speak, Zhonggu Lu had already retorted. "You're so murderous and violent! You're actually a beast like that!"

"Tch, you sound as if you haven't swallowed one before." Nangong Cheng glared at his good homosexual buddy. "When you first materialized into a human form back then, didn't you destroy an entire mountain peak worth of spiritual herbs?"

"That was subjugation based on my beauty!" Zhonggu Lu praised himself as he stroked his cheeks with his muscular arms. "That



was a battle concerning us Flower Deities, you don't understand!"

"That battle was a little too intense, don't you think? After all, you did swallow the flowers, their leaves, and even their roots. More importantly, you didn't distinguish them by gender, and took them all in. You're too much."

"We Flower Deities don't distinguish ourselves based on gender in the first place! We can be either a man or a woman!"

"May I ask just how are you a woman with that body of yours?" This daddy here has never seen such a muscular lady before, alright?

"You still dare to speak of it!? Your race allows you to choose a gender when taking up a human form in the first place. I already told you to become a female beastie, yet you chose to become male! Now that things turn out this way, you're blaming me for it!?" Who doesn't know how to argue and fight back, huh?

"Isn't it all because you said you can choose your gender when you're taking up a human form too? Otherwise, do you think things would have turned out this way?"

"You're clearly the one at fault!"

"It's you!"

"It's you!"

The group of three spectators: "... They seemed to have found out something incredible.

---

The two's argument on heartlessness, shamelessness, and nonsense lasted for exactly two hours, and Zhu Yao lost interest after watching for fifteen minutes. With her master and Yue Ying, they inspected the strange grass field before them.

The matter of throwing aside Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu had never crossed her mind. After all, this tribulation of karma

was just a guess she made. Though theoretically speaking, their family... ah pui! She, her master and Yue Ying had never eaten any pellets, but that did not mean they had never harmed any flowers or herbs. At the very least, she had caused the deaths of many cactuses in the modern era. If this grass field even took that into consideration, they she would be stabbed to death!

So they still had to look at this from a long-term perspective. However, they walked around the sides a few times, but they did not discover any loopholes. They couldn't make a detour around either. She immediately squatted next to it and silently dug a hole in the grass field with the size of a face, wanting to find out just what was being hidden underneath. However, it was all but a fruitless effort, as there was nothing to be found. Could these mutated flowers and plants simply like to play tricks? Why not dig a tunnel through then?

"There must be something unique hidden in this grass field." Yu Yan squatted down and held up his disciple's hands which was still trying to dig even deeper. Then, he filled the hole back. "It seems it will only activate once we truly take a step into it."

"..." So you're saying tunnels are useless?

"Most likely, the things that appear after entering it, are different from person to person." Yu Yan continued.

"Different from person to person..." Zhu Yao was stunned. "You're saying there's a formation underneath."

"To be capable of enveloping such a large grass field, materialize so many strange plants and flowers, and not to mention targeting different people with different plants, I'm afraid it's not something formations are able to do."

"Then..."

"Laws." Yu Yan solemnly said. "Only the laws of the heaven and earth can see through a person's everything. And only laws can

materialize those unreasonable creatures.”

“Laws of the heaven and earth...” Zhu Yao suddenly thought of Realmspirit. These so-called laws are made by that bastard, aren’t they? Why do I suddenly feel like I’m about to get trolled?

“In any case, we can only figure out the situation by entering it.” Yu Yan reached out his hand and held hers, tightening his grip. “This might be a hard battle. Are you prepared?”

Zhu Yao nodded heavily. “Mn.” Since they were already here, they had to reach the goal no matter what.

She took a deep breath and held tightly onto her master. Just as she was about to step into the grass field, she suddenly thought of something. She turned to look at the male and male (female and female) leads that were still acting out their drama, and the corner of her lips twitched. She then spoke to the person that had long been waiting next to her.

“Yue Ying, bring them over as well.”

Yue Ying’s eyes shone and happily raised his leg. With a kick, he sent the two people that were still in a heated argument into the field.

# Chapter 380: I Want to Eat Your Brains

---

Zhu Yao and gang had yet to reach the position where Mei Xue disappeared at, when the ground suddenly began to undergo a change. She instantly went on high alert. Her master had mentioned that the laws of the heaven and earth were present in this field, so she wondered just what was about to happen. The ground shook as if an earthquake was occurring, but the source of the quake was not beneath their feet, but the ground that was a hundred meters in front of them. There were things popping out of the ground one after another, and they continued to grow up to two meters in height. At the top, large yellow flowers began to bloom, and on their stems were four pieces of crisp green leaves. The leaves looked like little hands as they swayed about.

Eh? Why do I feel as though they look a little like sunflowers? They don't look as if they have killing instincts at all.

A moment later, the rows of sunflowers began to sway to the left and right, as though they were dancing. At the center of the flowers, pairs of cartoon-like eyes appeared, and they were blinking in their group's direction.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. These rows of flowers are so far away, are we about to play Plants vs Zombies here?

Just as she was in doubt, the ground suddenly shook once more. Less than a meter away from those rows of sunflowers, a plant once again popped out. Its entire body was jade-green in colour, and four gigantic leaves grew out of its stem. At its very top however was a bottle cap-like cylindrical shape, and floating behind it was a strip of foolish hair.

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched, and two words flashed in her mind – Pea Shooter.

“Why haven't I seen these two divine herbs before!” Zhonggu Lu had a stunned look. “I wonder just what's going to happen next?”

“Hoho... They might start shooting peas at us.”

“What?” Before Zhonggu Lu could ask further, that Pea Shooter aimed at them and shot out an enormous green ball, which charged straight towards them.

Zhu Yao: “...”

We’re really playing Plants VS Zombies here, hey!? So those rows of sunflowers at the back are used to gather light? Since the plants are out, does that mean we’re the zombies? Realmspirit, get out here! I guarantee I won’t beat you to death!

“Hurry and dodge!” Zhu Yao shouted out, and everyone hurriedly scattered in all directions. With a swoosh, that enormous green pea smashed onto the ground, and then it exploded with a loud boom. In an instant, a large crater of about four meters deep appeared on the ground.

Zhu Yao felt uncomfortable all over now. That’s not a pea, but a bomb, isn’t it!? This mutation is simply too terrifying. As a zombie, I express my dissatisfaction!

“It’s coming again!” Nangong Cheng shouted.

Suddenly, the ground shook a few times once more, and next to the Pea Shooter, four similar plants appeared one after another. Like the sunflowers behind, they lined up in a row and were even arranged rather neatly.

The moment the new Pea Shooters appeared, they immediately began a new wave of bomb attacks. Five peas shot out at the same time, erupting the earth. The five of them dodged with a great difficulty. Out of accident, Zhu Yao’s feet slipped, and she had almost fell head-first into one of the craters.

Momma’s egg! I feel like eating brains now.

Zhu Yao tightened her grip on her sword and shouted loudly. “First destroy the sunflowers that are gathering sunlight.”

The four were stunned.

“Which are sunflowers?”

“What’s gathering sunlight?”

The hell! I forgot they’re all teammates with zero experience!

She thus corrected herself. “Those rows of yellow flowers at the back are giving the plants sunli... they are the formation cores providing divine energy to the plants. If we destroy the formation cores, there won’t be anymore appearances of plants.”

Everyone instantly understood, and they charged towards the sunflowers with determined looks. However, the number of Pea Shooters continued to grow, and they were already nearing the number of sunflowers behind them. Everyone dodged the smashing peas in whichever direction they could, and basically did not make much progress in their advance. Furthermore, in front of the Pea Shooters, other breeds began to appear as well.

That brownish oval-shaped creature with a suffering expression is a Wall-nut, isn’t it!?

The ice-blue one that looks similar to the Pea Shooters, with a few more stupid hair on the back on its head, is a Snow Pea, right!?

And that one which is dyed entirely in purple with a wide-open mouth that’s prepared to bite people at any moment, is a Chomper, right!?

Just how deeply in love are these plants towards the game!? They are cosplaying with all their hearts right now, hey!

“Dongfang girly.” Nangong Cheng suddenly ran towards her while dodging three peas along the way. “I think...”

Before he could even finish, Zhu Yao was shocked. “Watch out for that Squash!” That’s an ultimate weapon that can squash anything, hey!

That green round-shaped plant had already stood up, and at this

critical moment, Nangong Cheng's good homosexual buddy Zhonggu Lu threw his meteor hammer towards him, smacking him out of the Squash's attack radius. The Squash missed, and simply created a hole as large as a water well when it landed.

"Aiya!" Nangong Cheng cried out. "My buttocks!"

Zhonggu Lu was ruthless with that throw. His meteor hammer was filled with sharp teeth, and not only did it pushed him away, it even stabbed deeply into a certain unspeakable part of his lower body. More importantly, it seemed like... it couldn't be pulled out.

Nangong Cheng cried out in pain. He turned back several times to pull out the impure meteor hammer, but he basically couldn't put any strength into it, and was unable to pull it out.

"Owww~~~~ It hurts!"

The echo of his cry reverberated a thousand times, hitting all the notes in his vocal range...

Zhu Yao: "..."

Yu Yan: "..."

Yue Ying: "..."

Zhu Yao's face darkened as she silently turned her head away. She definitely did not know people who did such shameless play!

She really wanted to type out: If you're below 18 years of age, please watch with parental guidance... scratch that, they can't watch as well!

Nangong Cheng's sinful howl continued for half an incense worth of time, while he still dodged the peas that were coming from all directions. His soul-trembling voice had even shaken the plants on the other side. Finally, student Zhonggu Lu directly put in some strength to pull the chains of his meteor hammer, pulling it out on Nangong Cheng's behalf. That's right, the meteor hammer was connected by chains. Don't ask her why it took

Zhonggu Lu half an incense worth of time to be reminded of that fact, she wanted to know as well!

When Nangong Cheng dragged his feet towards a distance of about five meters away from her, his lower body was already joyfully bleeding out a bucket full of uncles.

“Yue Ying.” Stop the blood.

Who would have thought that Yue Ying would reject her request for the first time. “His wound is over there. I won’t stop it.”

“Uh...” She had no choice but to pat on his shoulders. “Ahem! Little Huang, don’t be sad. Such days will come once every month, just get used to it!” Mn, the amount is rather huge. Should I recommend him to use sanitary pads?

“.....”

“...”

“Oh right, what did you want to say earlier?” Serious matters, serious matters! They’re still pushing the tower and clearing the instance!

As Nangong Cheng leapt about to dodge the peas and spread off his uncles, he loudly replied. “We can’t go on like this. Those strange plants will only increase. Brother Zhonggu Lu and I shall act as diversions to attract those plants’ attention. You three take the opportunity to charge in and destroy the formation cores.”

Zhu Yao pondered for a moment. Indeed! According to the game mechanics, the longer the gameplay, the harder it would become for the zombies. They had to take the initiative to charge in and eat their brains.

“Alright!” She nodded heavily. “The two of you, be careful. Stay further away from those green Squash and purple man-eating flowers. Also, if a red plant appears, run as fast as you can.” She was really afraid that a Strawberry Bomb or a Habenero would appear.



“Mn!” Nangong Cheng nodded. Then, he turned towards his good homosexual buddy Zhonggu Lu and ran over. The two of them exchanged glances, and then used their present strongest killing move at the same time – throwing their weapons!

Zhonggu Lu was using his meteor hammer. After spinning it twice, he threw it like a boomerang. Nangong Cheng’s weapon on the other hand was a violent spiked mace, and likewise, he threw it out. Two heavy class weapons flew towards the center, sweeping open a path and successfully striking the Pea Shooter at the very center.

With a crackling noise, that plant which was even taller than an average human was split into half, falling onto the ground. The ground which it was growing on once again shook, as it sank down as though it was being reclaimed.

“Master, Yue Ying!” Zhu Yao shouted as she directly charged towards the breach in the center. Using the strength she gained from experiencing the high school examinations, she sprinted wildly for over a hundred meters. Yue Ying and Yu Yan followed after as well. Clearly, the men’s PE scores were much better, and they were in front of Zhu Yao in just a few moments. With one hand grabbing onto each of theirs, they began to push forward.

The other Pea Shooters noticed what was happening on that side as well. With a few poofing sounds, a few peas came flying in their direction. The weapons that Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu threw were coincidentally making a turn back, dutifully protecting them. They first acted like boomerangs and struck down the peas that were pursuing them, causing them to explode in mid-air.

Because the two of them were large targets, they could attract the Pea Shooters’ firepower better. That was why the two good homosexual buddies moved together.

Zhu Yao and her group on the other hand successfully infiltrated through the breach as well. However, the breach once again shook.

It seemed like the replacement Pea Shooter was about to arrive.

“Hurry and destroy those sunflowers!” Zhu Yao said. Yue Ying and Yu Yan were already taking the two sides and hacking at the blinking sunflowers. Just as she had expected, those sunflowers did not have any combat power at all. With just a light swing, her master was able to slice down one of them.

Zhu Yao also ran towards the sunflower in the center, and with her sword raised, she forcefully swung it down. That sunflower however was different from the rest, as it suddenly bent down towards her. With its two gigantic leaves spread open, they reached out towards her. The moment she approached, the leaves actually gently wrapped around her, making a hugging action.

A clear and crisp sound rang in her ears. “Chi...”

Zhu Yao was stunned, but she could no longer stop the swing of her sword. The red blade directly slid through the sunflower’s stem, cutting it off. She raised her head in shock, only to see that sunflower blink at her one last time, before falling onto the ground. The two leaves that wrapped around her also slid down her arms as well. Those leaves were initially barbed, but some reason, they were suddenly retracted and she was not injured the slightest bit.

Her heart was in sudden turmoil. She once again looked at that sunflower. It was already beginning to turn yellow, yet it still desperately stretched out a half-yellow leaf. The leaf wrapped around her ankle, and it let out a crackling sound.

“Lo... rd.”

In the next moment, that sunflower had already been returned to the ground. Zhu Yao was stunned. Just what was going on? This sunflower did not look like it was trying to harm her at all. Yet the Pea Shooters on the other side were shooting those cannon shells so vigorously.

“Yu Yao!” Yu Yan charged over from the side, hugging his stupid disciple and then rolled onto the ground.

A loud explosion could be heard behind them, as a pea bomb exploded at the place where she was standing just earlier.

Yu Yan held her up. “Do not be distracted.”

“Mn.”

Zhu Yao nodded. This was not the time to think about such matters. Let’s first eat their “brains” and end this game!

## Chapter 381: Second Battle – Cob Cannon

---

Though there were many rows of sunflowers, with the three people's speedy harvest, in less than fifteen minutes, almost all of the sunflowers were brought down. After the sunflowers were reclaimed by the grass field, there were no signs of them growing back. The moment the final one fell onto the ground, the Pea Shooters that were attacking so wildly suddenly stiffened. As though the pause button had been clicked, they no longer shot out their peas.

The Chompers, Squash and the rest that were swaying about had also stopped moving as well. A few dozen seconds later, while making loud rumbling noises, they suddenly began to sink back into the ground. In just a short few minutes, they could no longer see a single figure of those strange plants above the field. Even the craters that were created from the explosions had all disappeared without a trace, restoring its previous plain and flat surface.

“We won!” Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu happily ran over, their faces were filled with the light of joy. “Dongfang girly, those strange flowers have retreated. Does that mean we've cleared this stage?”

“I don't know either!” Zhu Yao was stunned as she looked at the boundless grass field in front of her. For some reason, she felt that things weren't that simple. Earlier, they had just destroyed the sunflowers, so theoretically speaking, there were no reasons for the Pea Shooter to disappear as well!

“The Light of Guidance isn't far off.” Zhonggu Lu pointed at the path in front of them. From where they were, they were about five kilometers away from the golden pillar of light. “I think we should hurry over! If we stay here for too long, those strange flowers might resurrect.”

Zhu Yao nodded. Indeed, they had to hurry over. Thus, she no

longer hesitated and walked forward. However, after just walking a few steps, the ground began to shake tremendously, and it was more intense than before. Even Zhu Yao could barely stabilize herself. A hundred meters in front of them, dirt and mud flew as something enormous slowly rose.

The five of them gripped their weapons tightly as they stared in front of them. The thing from the ground first showed a hint of yellow. As its height increases, it then revealed a green body. Compared to the plants before, it was clearly much taller. It continued to rise, and rise...

Two meters... Three meters... Four meters... Finally, after reaching a height of three storeys, it revealed its entire body.

“Corn?” Zhu Yao was stunned.

“Such a huge corn cob!” Nangong Huang said.

“Can corn cobs grow so big?” Zhonggu Lu asked.

Immediately after, the corn cob suddenly straightened itself. In the next moment, the place where the five of them stood shone greatly, as a white circle of light that looked like a formation appeared on the ground. At the center, there was even a cross that looked like a target marker.

This is...

“Cob! Cannon!” Zhu Yao grabbed onto the people next to her with each hand and ran out of the glowing circle. “Run!”

She unleashed the strength she had from all the milk she had drunk in her lifetime and desperately ran out. With a swoosh, that enormous corn cob had already flown into the air, and was smashing down in the direction of that circle of light.

A loud boom could be heard as an enormous force assaulted from behind. She was pushed all the way forward by the shockwave of the explosion, and the ground beneath her feet began to crumble inch by inch. She used all of her strength to prevent herself from

falling, and continued her mad sprint, barely escaping the Cob Cannon's attack range. Her bones were already beginning to rattle, and before she could even catch her breath, a white object came smashing at her the moment she turned her head around. She was basically unable to dodge in time, and her chest began to hurt. It was as if she was smashed by a enormous bolder. She immediately spat out a mouthful of blood, yet she could smell a charred scent with her nose.

When she took a look, the thing that smashed onto her body was actually an enormous popcorn.

Zhu Yao once again spat out some old blood. Next time I'm watching a movie, I'm never going to eat popcorn again.

"Yu Yao." Yu Yan was startled. He pushed away the popcorn from her body, held up his disciple and then cupped her wrist.

Yue Ying was frightened as well, and even his face had turned pale. He hurriedly squatted down and stopped her from bleeding.

"Don't care about me!" Zhu Yao pulled her hand back. "Hurry! That Cob Cannon requires some time to fire off another corn cob, take this opportunity to destroy it! Hurry!"

"You..."

"I'm fine, hurry!" Zhu Yao pointed at the Cob Cannon that merely had its leaves left. "We must not allow it to fire off a second corn cob."

Yu Yan frowned. He then gripped onto his sword tightly and ran over with Yue Ying. The Cob Cannon was now in its weakened state and was basically unable to attack at all. However, it was simply too big, and Yu Yan could only strike its stem a slash at a time.

Zhu Yao turned to look at the two homosexual buddies Nangong Huang and Zhonggu Lu. Their injuries were not light as well, as they sat on the ground unmoving. Next to them were a few

popcorns that they barely managed to push off from their bodies. Beneath her feet, soft rumbling sounds could be heard. A large crater of about ten meters wide appeared from where the corn cob struck, and it was now beginning to be restored. Suddenly, the grass at the sides found an opportunity to use their automatic restorative abilities, and were beginning to cover up the empty spaces.

It was as if ghosts or gods were being involved in this. Zhu Yao really wanted to know what's underneath this surface. She took a deep breath, stood up, and then looked into a hole that yet to be completely restored. However, she suddenly held her breath, and she stood rooted to the ground.

“Dongfang girly, what's wrong?” Nangong Cheng saw her strange behaviour and struggled to his feet as well. He walked over to her side, but he widened his eyes immediately after. “This... This is...”

Black. Entirely black. Beneath the surface was actually a layer of boundless black substance. The substance was tumbling and bubbling, as if water was flowing out of a water tap.

“Resentment!” She never expected that resentment was buried underneath the entire surface. As she had thought, the plants were materialized from resentment.

Nangong Cheng unconsciously took a step back, his face instantly darkened. “What should we do?” If they were formed by resentment, then those plants could not be killed at all.

Before Zhu Yao could even answer, rumbling noises from the earth once again rang. Several meters away from the Cob Cannon, following after a few popping sounds, four plants popped out. Wearing yellow petals, they continued to grow.

The hell! The sunlight-gathering sunflowers again!

Nangong Cheng had an anxious look as well. The Cob Cannon

had yet to be removed, but the sunflowers had once again appeared. Yet, they couldn't move at all either. If Yu Yan and Yue Ying were to ignore the sunflowers, Pea Shooters would most likely fill the land again. If they were to let go of the Cob Cannon, once it were to completely regain its strength, they wouldn't be able to endure its next corn cob either. Unwilling to admit defeat, he gritted his teeth as he walked wobbly towards a sunflower. However, after taking just two steps, he fell onto the ground again, puking out a mouthful of blood.

“Dongfang... girly...” What do we do?

The ground had already begun to shake, and Zhu Yao fell onto the ground from the tremors. We're going to die, we're going to die, we're going to die. From the strength of this tremor, the one drilling out from the ground definitely isn't a Pea Shooter, but the next Cob Cannon!

Do they really have to play it this way? Why did the weapons suddenly upgrade, hey!?

Zhu Yao took a deep breath. Calm down, calm down! There must be other ways. Sunflower, sunflower, sunflo...

The hell! She suddenly recalled that these plants require sunlight!

“Yue Ying!” She used all of her strength to shout towards where the Cob Cannon was. “Hurry and use your devillic energy to cover the sun! Do not let the sunflowers absorb sunlight!”

Yue Ying was stunned for a moment, and then he immediately began to release a dark aura to the surroundings. Large masses of dark devillic energy emitted out from his body and rose into the air. Like clouds, they began to cover up a large half of the sky with layers upon layers. The area suddenly dimmed, as if time had instantly turned from high noon to sunset. The surroundings had already begun to turn darker.



As expected, in the next moment, the sunflowers that were still swaying about earlier lowered their heads after another, as though their liveliness had been seeped out. The intense tremors had instantly stopped as well.

The two zombies Yu Yan and Yue Ying finally destroyed the Cob Cannon. They then turned around and sprinted towards the row of sunflowers behind. They then continued their harvesting act.

Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief, and even her legs were beginning to give way.

“Dongfang girly, you sure know a lot.” Nangong Cheng pulled her up and even held onto Zhonggu Lu next to him. The three of them then limped towards Yu Yan’s and Yue Ying’s direction. “You’re actually able to see that those sunflowers need sunlight.”

“Hoho... I simply played a lot of games, that’s all.” As a professional game designer, she had especially spent some time to research on these games. “Furthermore, sunflowers are plants that direly need sunlight in the first place. As long as it’s night, we will be fine since there’s no sunlight to absorb. Unless there’s the appearance of...”

“Mushrooms?”

“That’s right! Sun-shrooms... What?” Nearby in front of them, a row of yellow mushrooms suddenly popped out.

There’s really sun-shrooms here, hey! Have we cut straight into night mode now!? Do you have to be this professional!? The ground shook once more. Clearly, the Sun-shrooms had already begun to generate sunlight.

“Pull them out directly!” The Sun-shrooms were closest to the three of them. Zhu Yao had no choice but to suppress the pain from her injuries, grit her teeth and run over. She hugged onto one of the bucket-sized yellow mushroom and pulled with all the might she gained from drinking milk. However, it wasn’t effective at all?

The Sun-shroom did not even budge.

Instead, it blinked at her in a cutesy way, and then suddenly dove into her embrace, emitting out a crisp sound. “Chi?”

Zhu Yao was stunned. It’s this sound again. Just what did it mean?

“Dongfang girly, these mushrooms are rooted too firmly, I can’t move it!” Nangong Cheng was also looking at her with a regretful expression. “I even tried moving it with my weapon, but it doesn’t even budge. What do we do?”

Yellow heads was already beginning to pop out from the surface. After a closer look, there were actually five of them.

Yu Yan and Yue Ying had already chopped off all the sunflowers and were rushing over. Zhu Yao lowered her head and looked at the blinking and unmoving Sun-shroom. Gritting her teeth, she shouted to Yue Ying. “Yue Ying, retract your devillc energy and release the sunlight.”

Yue Ying stopped his feet. With a wave of his hand, the devillc energy in the sky scattered, and the boundless sunlight scattered down. Coincidentally, it first shone right down at the Sun-shrooms.

She heard a weak cry from the mushroom in her embrace. “Chi...” Its pair of crystal-bright eyes began to slowly close, as if it was about to fall asleep. The tremor instantly stopped as well.

The mushrooms then began to sink down into the earth. The one which Zhu Yao was hugging suddenly shone with a bright golden light right before it sank, and a mass of yellow light flew towards her, entering her chest.

Zhu Yao instantly felt a warmth in her chest, and this heat instantly spread to all four of her limbs.

She stroked her chest in slight confusion. Her injuries... were healed!

# Chapter 382: The Sunflower Welcoming Group

---

That Sun-shroom healed my injuries? Why? Zhu Yao was a little confused as she instinctively sensed the conditions of her body, and realized that there wasn't any anomaly. Theoretically speaking, the Sun-shrooms were formed by resentment, so even if she carried the World Favourable Impression ability, as resentment was something without sentience, it should not harbour any favourable impression of her. Also, what was the light that flew into her body? It definitely wasn't resentment, otherwise it wouldn't have healed her injuries but shot a hole through her.

"Dongfang girly, are you fine?" Nangong Cheng looked at her worriedly.

Zhu Yao shook her head.

Yue Ying and Yu Yan walked over as well. They had initially wanted to check her pulse, but realized that not only weren't there any injuries on her body, even the bloodstains had disappeared.

There weren't any plants on the grass field now. Even the Cob Cannons that were exposing their yellow tips earlier had all returned to the earth.

"Do you feel any anomaly?" Yu Yan looked at his stupid disciple and could not help but feel worried, checking her pulse once more.

"I don't know what's going on as well." Zhu Yao shrugged as she explained her situation earlier.

Yu Yan frowned as he tightened his grip on the hand he was holding. "Do you have any plans?"

"I believe the plants here must be separated by regions. The further we go, the bigger the difficulty." Zhu Yao solemnly said. "We can't use mystic arts right now, and Little Yellow and Little Teal are both injured as well. Most likely, it will be really hard for

them to reach the Light of Guidance.”

“It’s all our fault.” Nangong Cheng said with a self-reprimanding look. “We’ve dragged you guys down. Why don’t you three continue on while fellow daoist Zhonggu Lu and I recuperate here. After we’re done, we will catch up with you three.”

“Little Yellow is right.” Zhonggu Lu nodded and said. “Only the three of you have hopes of becoming Gods. In our current situation...”

“What nonsense are you spouting?” Zhu Yao did not like to listen to such things. “Who said we’re going to throw you two aside? We were together since the first floor. If we really have to split up, this isn’t the right time either.”

“But...” Nangong Cheng frowned and turned to look in front of them. “We won’t know what will appear before us. Our injuries are too severe, and we will simply be burdens.”

“Even if you’re burdens, we’re carrying you two on our own will.” Zhu Yao squatted down and solemnly said. “Don’t worry, we won’t throw you two aside. Even if I have to carry you two, I will carry you two over to that side.”

Nangong Cheng was stunned. He exchanged glances with Zhonggu Lu, and then suddenly leaked out a laugh. “Dongfang girly, you’re a really... really different Deity practitioner.” Putting aside Deity practitioners who were usually heartless, even among Demonic Immortals, they would have been thrown aside in such situations, let alone in this top floor where dangers could be found everywhere. Everyone said that the Heavenly Dao was heartless, and ever since they began on this path, they had already gotten used to slaughter and betrayal. With how long they had lived, the concept of this so-called friendship had already turned faint. Never did he think that in such a situation, that there would actually be someone who would say that she would carry them over if she had to.

“Just recuperate your injuries here for now. After your injuries are better, we will set off.” Zhu Yao patted on Nangong Huang’s shoulder and said. “If my guess is correct, there shouldn’t be any danger nearby now. But...” She raised her head and looked about two hundred meters away. “If we cross the sunflowers’ boundary from earlier, I’m afraid another wave of new plants will appear.”

Yu Yan frowned and held onto her hand. “You’ve already made your decision.”

He said affirmatively, and not in a questioning manner.

Zhu Yao chuckled. “Master, I have an idea. I want to step out of that sunflowers’ boundary alone and take a look.”

“Nonsense!” Yu Yan’s expression turned cold. “That place is definitely even more dangerous. How are you going to deal with it alone?”

“Master... I have a feeling that these plants don’t really wish to harm me.” She stroked her healed chest.

His frown grew deeper. “If that’s the case, why were you injured before?” Though he knew that his disciple’s body was abnormal, from the situation earlier, the Cob Cannon and Pea Shooters did not have any intentions of avoiding her in their attacks in the least.

“Uh...” He made a lot of sense. “Actually, I’m talking about those sunflowers and mushrooms. Master, you saw it yourself, right? Those two plants gather sunlight... Uh, I mean, they’re formation cores. They are the keys behind the appearances of all the other plants, that’s why they are intentionally planted in such faraway positions. However, I feel that those plants are friendly to me. They must be different from the rest of the plants. Even if they’re formed by resentment, they’re definitely mixed with something else. I might... be able to speak to them.”

Yu Yan was still frowning. Clearly, he could not agree to her

risking her life.

“We have no other way now, and we can’t possibly sit here and await death.” Most importantly was that “chi” noise. She felt that this was a little strange. In the past, Wood Spirit was the only one who would call out in such a way. However, the Wood Spirit was in the faraway Desolate Land and it had long gained a human form. How could she possibly appear here?

Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu spent an entire two days to recuperate, and their bodies were finally in acceptable conditions. Though her master had already agreed to Zhu Yao taking the lead and let her enter the next region alone, he still stood guard at the boundary, so that he could provide aid the moment things were to go awry.

Zhu Yao took a deep breath before finally walking out of the place where the sunflowers last appeared. She had only walked a few steps when the earth began to shake once more. The others behind her instantly tensed up, instinctively gripping onto the swords in their hands.

A moment later, with a poof sound, a sunflower appeared as expected. However, it was not a hundred meters away, but had instead appeared right next to Zhu Yao. Its large petals spread open, and it looked at her while blinking its eyes.

It seemed to be stunned for a moment. Suddenly, it let out what seemed to be a joyful sound. “Chi!”

Zhu Yao stiffened and then waved her hand at it. “Hi~”

“Chi?” The sunflower let out a confused sound, as though it did not understand her words.

Zhu Yao had no choice but to change into the language of Chis, and let out the sound she learnt from it. “Chi chi?”

That sunflower instantly replied with incomparable joy. “Chi chi chi.”

Uh...

“Chi chi chi chi?” There’s nothing wrong with this reply right?

Thus, the conversation between a human and a sunflower began to develop in a strange direction.

“Chi chi chi chi chi.”

“Chi chi chi chi chi chi.”

“Chi chi chi chi chi chi chi.”

“Chi chi chi chi chi chi chi chi.”

Wait! What am I doing?

Why are we comparing who has more “Chi”s, hey?

“Incredible!” The unknowing spectator Nangong Cheng had a revering look. “Dongfang girly isn’t actually able to understand the sunflower’s words!”

Spectators: “...” I really want to break off relations from him!

“Haah! Umm...” Zhu Yao instantly found back her own mother tongue. Though she said she wanted to chat with the sunflowers about life, she actually didn’t know where she should begin, hey? “I say, Sunsun!”

“Chi!” The sunflower straightened up like a pole, looking as if it was listening seriously.

“Umm... Just what are you? Also, do you know me?”

“Chi...” It tilted its head, letting out a long sound. Suddenly, it stretched out an enormous leave and wrapped around her wrist. It then let out a crisp voice. “Lord!”

‘Lord’ again?

“What do you mean by ‘lord’? Why are you calling me that?”

The sunflower began to sway left and right. As if it was shouting out a slogan, it called out. “Lord, lord... Sunlight, sunlight... Lord,

lord...” With every movement it made, it would shout out once.

As though spring had appeared after the rain, even more sunflowers began to pop out from the ground. They lined up on her left and right, as though they were a welcoming group. Then, they began to sway as well.

At that moment, the entire grass field was filled with their echoes. “Lord, sunlight...” The same voice, their neat movements, and their uniform slogan made them look as if they were conducting a parade.

Zhu Yao was a little confused. It seemed like she had just received an incredible welcome.

The number of sunflowers continued to grow, and they were even spreading all the way forward, opening up a path all the way to the region where the Light of Guidance was. She suddenly felt as if she was making a friendly visit to the kingdom of sunflowers. Now this is a true green VIP passageway! So should she walk? Should she walk? Or should she walk?

The group of four spectators at the back were stunned as well. What’s with this friendly and harmonious scene?

“Dongfang girly...” Nangong Cheng shouted out. “This... Just what is this?”

“I don’t know either.” Zhu Yao shook her head. “The intelligence of these sunflowers isn’t high. Most likely, most of them are just moving on instinct. I’m not sure if I can speak through to them either. Master...” Zhu Yao looked at Yu Yan. “You’ve never eaten a single medicinal pellet, so their hatred for you should be the least. Why don’t you try walking over?”

Yu Yan nodded. He glanced at the surroundings before stepping out of the boundary. Almost at the same time, the sunflowers that were still happily welcoming her earlier, instantly quietened down. They turned to look at Yu Yan one after another.



Zhu Yao's heart tensed. However, in the next moment, those sunflowers once again turned around and continued to sway and chant out, "Lord... Sunlight." Yu Yan safely arrived next to Zhu Yao.

As she had thought, these plants would only react to people who had eaten too many medicinal pellets.

Yue Ying was up next. Different from Yu Yan who was ignored, when Yue Ying walked over, all of the sunflowers seemed to have leaned backwards in disgust. Zhu Yao guessed that the devillic aura emitting from his body was making them avoid him out of instinct.

Nangong Cheng and Little Teal remained. Zhu Yao could not help but push her focus up to a hundred and twenty percent. Yu Yan and Yue Ying were different. These plants were formed by the resentment of plants and flowers. The sunflowers ignored the two of them was because they had never eaten a single pellet, so they did harbour any hatred for the two in the first place. As for Nangong Cheng and Little Teal however...

"Nangong Huang, you take the lead." Zhu Yao solemnly said. "Be careful..."

Nangong Cheng naturally realized the situation as well. These plants most likely were targeting the two of them the entire time. In an instant, the guilt in his heart grew deeper. If the two of them weren't here, most likely, the three of them had already arrived at their destination. The moment he thought of this, he could no longer bear to cross over with his raised foot.

"Dongfang girly, why don't... you three leave first." If one can pass through, then he should head on first.

"The hell!" Zhu Yao felt like cussing out now. "What kind of nonsense are you spouting now? You're being wishy-washy here. Are you still a man?"

"... I'm a male beast!" He's not a human in the first place.

# Chapter 383: Friendly Visit to the Sunflower Country

---

“The hell!” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “Don’t play coy in front of me right now, alright? We’ve already made it all the way here, and it’s already too late to split up. You best thicken your skin and rush over to the Light of Guidance in a single breath. You’re thinking of staying here with Zhonggu Lu and live in your romantic world? No way! There’s no future for the both of you!”

Zhonggu Lu: “...” Why am I still dragged in when I’m so far away!?

Nangong Cheng’s eyes reddened. Momma’s egg. Dongfang girly, in such an emotional time, can you speak in a better way? We’re clean and pure! He turned to look at Yu Yan and Yue Ying, and then sighed. It seemed like they really weren’t going to leave them behind.

After taking a deep breath, Nangong Cheng gritted his teeth and then walked into the new region. Almost at the same time his foot landed on the ground, the ground reacted with a loud rumble, as if something was about to burst out.

Zhu Yao betted a cucumber that that definitely wasn’t a sunflower, but some sort of weapon of mass destruction. The sunflowers that were still harmonious like little suns suddenly stopped shouting out their slogan, and looked towards Nangong Cheng altogether. Though they were still blinking, Zhu Yao could see the lustre of vengeance in their eyes.

Oh no! It seems like it’s going to turn into Plants VS Zombies again! What to do, what to do? These plants are about to go into berserk mode!

Out of anxiety, Zhu Yao grabbed onto the flower head of one of the sunflowers on the side. “Calm down, calm down my fellow

friend! Give me some face!”

Suddenly, the tremors really stopped...

Uhh... It seems my face is really important!

The yellow and brilliant flower in her hands blinked its eyes extremely slowly. In the next moment, the entire flower was dyed with a strange hint of red.

Is it embarrassed?

Please! You're just a flower, hey! The hell! Why is its stem red as well? Do you have to be this humanized?

Eh! Wait a minute!

She recalled that plants seemed to be pollinate from the flowers to give birth to the next generation. Then the flowers were their... unspeakable parts.

“...” She suddenly felt uncomfortable all over.

Her eyes blurred for a moment, as the sunflowers nearest to her suddenly bent their stems over. Every one of them was leaning their flower heads closer, their little eyes constantly blinking in joy. It was as if they were saying: Touch me... touch me...

She wanted some peace and quiet.

Even more sunflowers began to lean their flower heads closer. Zhu Yao had to pass this stage through developing friendship ties with the sunflowers, otherwise, she was really afraid that they would go berserk if she rejected. However, she couldn't lay her hands on their huge flower heads, so she had no choice but to take a step back and silently pull one of their leaves. She shook them as if she was shaking hands, which can be considered as her greetings to them, but even that's the case...

Why are all your faces still red, hey? Aren't you all sunflowers? Then face the sun like you're supposed to, hey! Why are you all lowering your heads in embarrassment? And the one over there

that's using your leaves to cover your face! I've not done anything to you at all!!

Zhu Yao suddenly felt as if she had fallen into a sexual predator concentration camp of pure teenage girls, while she seemed to be the uke. She immediately hugged onto her master next to her to suppress her shock. Phew, fortunately, I still have my master.

Zhonggu Lu walked over as well. In the beginning, there wasn't any reaction from the grass field. However, as he moved closer to Nangong Cheng, the ground could no longer stay silent. No matter how Zhu Yao tried to form relationships with the sunflowers, they couldn't be suppressed. Half a Cob Cannon had already popped out of the ground nearby.

Zhu Yao's heart tensed. Could it be that hatred was additive? She immediately had the two of them stand further away from each other. As expected, the tremors of the ground finally stopped. Zhu Yao silently glanced at the two of them. See! This is why I say there's no future for you two!

It seemed like the situation had calmed down. Zhu Yao began to bring everyone forward. There was a distance of about three meters between each one of them, while there was at least a ten-meter distance between Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu. Zhu Yao was walking at the very front. As she walked, she did not forget to shake the hands of the sunflowers on her left and right.

The sunflowers were rather well-behaved. The moment they saw her passing by, they would extend their leaves by themselves. After the shake, they would hurriedly use their leaves to shyly cover their flower heads, looking as if they were both excited and embarrassed.

As Zhu Yao continued to shake hands, she began to feel like a country representative who was visiting an ally nation.

Hi citizens of Sunflower Country, I am a representative of the Human Country. Hello fellow comrades, it must have been tough

for you comrades.

Just like that, they progressed forward smoothly without any obstructions. Probably because her 'friendly visit' was truly effective, after using the power of her reputation, weapons of mass destruction no longer appeared in this wide grass field.

Mn, she loved peace! However... Her hands were about to break from all the handshaking, hey. Though shaking hands was not a hard work, one couldn't possibly shake hands for four hours straight! Yet, she did not dare to stop. She was afraid that the sunflowers would flip sides the moment she do.

The further they walked, the number of sunflower appearances grew. Initially, there were only two rows – one on her left and one on her right. Further back, the number of rows grew to three, four and five rows. When she finally reacted, other than the path they especially let off on the grass field, the place was filled with sunflowers.

There was too much sunlight stored, but because they had already made a compromise with the zombies, there were too many unused space, so they decided to just plant sunflowers... was that it?

Wait a minute, sunlight!

The plants here were formed by resentment initially. Resentment was inclined to darkness, while sunlight was inclined to light. The resentment underneath required the sunflowers to absorb sunlight in order to produce various weapons that could harm them. However, light and darkness could not complement. Light was supposed to be similar to spiritual energy and divine energy, the purest form of energy in this world. Though sunlight could not be used to eliminate resentment, it should at the very least suppress resentment. That was most likely why darkness filled the place where she first woke up. Also, no matter the shadows formed by resentment or these plants, they could not be

seen as the resentment that she witnessed in the Netherworld. Back then, she had become a Demigod, but she was still unable to do anything to resentment. It seemed like the yang energy of this world had been suppressing these resentment.

In the beginning, she treated everything as something similar to the brainless Gomoku and Sudoku settings, a real-life upgraded version of Plants VS Zombies. That was why she did not think about it too deeply. However, this was after all the final stage to becoming a God, so it couldn't just be a mere game. Furthermore, the sunflowers were such a fatal weakness. Adding the non-complementing nature of yin and yang, why were the sunflowers able to summon the other breeds by absorbing sunlight? It couldn't just be due to the settings of the game. Then the reason could only be...

Zhu Yao's heart sank. She suddenly recalled her master's words... Natural Law! Was the non-complementary of yin and yang the law here? Because of the law's limitations, the resentment here could only take form when the sunflowers take in sunlight. However, sunlight could suppress resentment. The sunflowers were so friendly to her because they had sunlight in them?

She was very familiar with the Wood Spirit, and because she had once placed it in her divine sense, it could be understood why these sunflowers, which were also plants, to be intimate with her as well. Furthermore she had also gone through Yi Ling's instance where she turned into a tree demon. Back then, she could hear the voice of plants and trees, and those trees were strangely friendly with her as well. Not to mention, the lower the cultivation of the spirits and demons, the better their relationships. When it came to Nangong Cheng and Zhonggu Lu who had already cultivated into Deities, especially with those demonic beasts and spirits in the Lightning Divine Tower, this form of intimacy no longer existed. They could only be treated as regular people or friends.

It was the same back when she ventured into Demonic

Immortals' continent. The red and yellow Demonic Immortals she encountered in the beginning still threw her into jail as they should, even though they had a favourable impression of her. They were completely different from the demonic beasts that acted cute and wanted to protect her with all their hearts in the Lower Realm. When it came to why those demonic beasts treated her well, rather than attributing it to the World Favourable Impression ability, it was rather due to... instinct! It was a form of subliminal suggestion that could not be resisted, where they would unconsciously treat her well.

This instinctive suggestion thus allowed these sunflowers, which had taken in sunlight and had suppressed the resentment in them, to regain the slightest bit of sentience to express their kindness towards her. Could this be why these sunflowers liked her so much?

However... Why did they call her 'lord'? She just couldn't understand this point.

---

The distance from the Light of Guidance was already shrinking, and Zhu Yao's hands were already turning numb from the handshaking. She could barely feel them now, let alone raise them up. Her master who was closest to her could still grab onto her hands to help move them in the beginning, relieving some of the numbness. However, this action would always result to the rejection of the plants. Every single time when she was not paying attention, they would either push her master away, or intentionally use their leaves to block him. It was as if they were a disapproved couple, and had to cross several "Sunflower Mountains" in order to meet. Later on, even Yu Yan had lost all strength as well. At the very end, she didn't have to take the initiative at all, as every step she took after that, the sunflowers on her left and right would automatically stretch out their leaves to wrap around her hands, treating that as handshakes.

Her heart was tired!

Momma's egg! Who wants to try shaking hands for three days and nights straight!?

In the beginning, it was still fine. However, the number of sunflowers continued to grow. Looking afar, other than the path that intentionally left empty, the place was filled with sparkling golden sunflowers, and the view was simply blinding to her eyes.

Yet, only the two rows of sunflowers next to her would get to shake her hands. Those which couldn't, could only blink their eyes and look at her with resentful expressions.

Hey hey hey... Don't turn sour now! You're all sunflowers, so even if you didn't get to shake my hands, don't change to something else now! Also, the one over there that's lying on the ground. You're planted too far away. Even if you lying on the ground, you won't get to grab my hand. Don't waste any more efforts already!

The passion of the "Sunflower Country" citizens had really made her from the "Human Country" speechless! Let's give it our all to dedicate to the friendship between the countries of Sunflowers and Humans! I will shake, I will shake, I will shake, shake, shake...

Zhu Yao's repeated actions were however extremely meaningful and sincere, as they actually had a smooth journey, and the Light of Guidance was soon right before their eyes. Of course, there were slight mishaps in-between, but it was largely due to a problem of distance. The distance between Zhonggu Lu and Nangong Huang before was very delicate. Being too far would be bad, as her favourable impression would be rendered ineffective and cause the plants to initiate attacks. If they were too close, the two's hatred would be added upon each other, and the plants would attack indiscriminately as well.

That was why there accidents would always happen on the way. Occasionally, one or two Pea Shooters would appear, constantly



shooting peas at them. Whenever this happened, Zhu Yao had no choice but to increase her pace in saluting the army and leave the attack range of the Pea Shooters. However, she did not initiate any attacks, in order to prevent them from pulling even more hatred.

# Chapter 384: Undefeatable Enemy

---

Four days later, though there were a few surprises, the group safely crossed “Sunflower Country”. Zhu Yao could finally see the Light of Guidance before her eyes. Compared to the Light of Guidance in the Divine Realm, there were barely any differences compared to this pillar of light. However for some reason, even though it clearly looked golden from afar, it was actually pure white when seeing it from such a near distance.

Furthermore, the ground surface about twenty to thirty meters away from the pillar of light was actually completely white. She unconsciously looked at the ground, and realized that it wasn’t tiled with white jade, but rather, it was just empty, as if even dust and dirt could not stain it. The surface was sacred and elegant, as though it was the purest object in the world. Just by looking at it, her heart would feel at ease.

Is this... the Light of Guidance for ascending to Godhood?

---

Zhu Yao finally shook the leaf of the final sunflower. She raised her head to look at the pillar of pure white light, and then once again looked at the receding greenery on the ground. They finally arrived at their destination. However, for some reason, she was not the least bit excited. Instead, an uncertain feeling rose in her heart.

She hesitated for a long while and did not proceed forward, until Zhonggu Lu and Nangong Cheng behind her came rushing over.

“So this is the Light of Guidance!” Nangong Cheng had a surprised look on his face. He stared a little blankly at the light as he walked in, and then he unconsciously stretched out his hand, as if he was trying to touch something. “I’ve never... seen such a pure colour.”

Zhonggu Lu had a similar expression as well.

The strange feeling in the depths of her heart grew even heavier, and for some reason, she felt a little anxious. Feeling uneasy, she turned around to look at the path they came from. The long field of sunflowers suddenly began to return to the earth, starting from the very far end. Like falling headlong down onto the ground, they disappeared without a trace.

When the sunflower that she last shook hands with saw her turning back, it tilted its large flower head and responded with a joyful look. “Chi!”

As it called out, it once again stretched out its leaf, wanting to shake hands with her once more. Zhu Yao wanted to respond out of instinct, but suddenly, she realized that the leaf it stretched out was beginning to disappear, as if it was being devoured by something. Its green leaf turned pale white inch by inch, and then it fragmented and disappeared. When Zhu Yao regained her senses, half of the leaf was already gone. What remained was a neat slice, as if it was cut off by something.

“Chi!” The sunflower cried out in shock, and then it shrank back into the ground, as if it was terrified by something.

The sunflowers... can't enter this region?

Before she could figure everything out, she suddenly heard a thud. Yue Ying was raising his fists and hitting something in the air. “Big sis... I can't get in!”

“.....”

“...”

When she turned around to look, Yue Ying seemed to be blocked out by a transparent barrier and could not take another step forward.

“How's that possible?” Zhonggu Lu turned around and carefully looked at the surroundings as well. Then, he walked back and

forth a few times. “There isn’t any formation or barrier here though?”

Zhu Yao’s heart clenched, and she walked back and forth to inspect the area as well. There indeed wasn’t any trace of mystic arts. “Just why is this so?”

“It’s because I’m a Devil.” Yue Ying lowered his head slightly with a depressed look. With a self-mocking tone, he muttered. “I never had the qualifications to become a God in the first place.”

Zhu Yao’s heart clenched, and everyone else turned silent as well.

“There must be another way.” Zhu Yao stroked his head. “Don’t worry, I said that I won’t throw anyone aside.”

Yue Ying finally raised his head, and his eyes seemed to glisten. After a moment, he carefully asked. “If... If you become a God, will you still come back?”

“Of course.” She said matter-of-factly. “I’m only here to clear the tower, and not to become a God...”

After speaking halfway through, she was stunned for a moment. Wait a minute, clearing the tower!?

Something instantly flashed in her mind, but she was unable to grasp it in an instant. Just as she was pondering about this, a green vine suddenly shot out from the ground, appearing right before them. Like a hemp rope, it split into two and came charging forward with their sharp tips.

“Big sis!” Startled, Yue Ying instinctively pulled Zhu Yao and they rolled onto the ground, dodging the vines. One of the vines instantly split into two once more and swept over towards Zhu Yao and Yue Ying. The vines however were instantly burnt into ash by the devillic energy which Yue Ying materialized. The vine on the other side had directly struck Zhonggu Lu, sending him flying several meters. He then fell into the midst of the sunflowers that had yet to completely disappear.

“Zhonggu Lu!” Zhu Yao cried out. She wasn’t in the grass field right now!

Almost at the same time he fell onto the ground, five Cob Cannons immediately appeared from the grass field. Five overlapping cross-hairs instantly appeared beneath Zhonggu Lu’s feet.

“Hurry and run!” Zhu Yao shouted out with all her strength and wanted to charge over to save him. However, she was already too late. Five enormous corn cobs had already been shot out. Even when Zhonggu Lu desperately ran out, he was still struck by the combined force of five corn cobs.

Five explosions rang out, and the place was instantly filled dust and white popcorns. Zhonggu Lu was already lying on the ground with a body covered entirely in blood. His legs were already a mesh of flesh and blood, while a large hole had already been pierced through his chest. Not the slightest bit of his human figure could be discerned.

“Hahahahaha...” A sinister and crazed laughter rang out several meters away. At its source was a person enveloped by thick tree barks. Her body was dyed entirely in blood-red, and streams of dark-red blood would occasionally drip out of the tree trunk. The face at the core of the tree could no longer be seen as human, as what remained was a pair of terrifying black holes. However, everyone present could recognize her at first glance.

“Mei Xue!” The hell, why is she still alive?

“Brother Zhonggu Lu!” Nangong Cheng’s eyes reddened and immediately wanted to charge out to save him. Zhu Yao desperately held him back. “What are you doing? Release me!”

“Calm down.”

“Calm down my ass!” He was instantly enraged. He immediately raised his hand against her, wanting to beat her hand off. “I’m

going to save him!”

Zhu Yao instantly stepped on his feet and lectured him while he was still tasting the pain. “Those plants harbour immense hatred for you in the first place, if you head out now, isn’t he just going to die even quicker? If you want to die, don’t motherf\*\*king drag us in!”

Nangong Cheng was startled, and then he immediately calmed down. If he were to head over, there was a chance that another five Cob Cannons would appear.

“Master, Yue Ying!” Zhu Yao shot a glance to the two of them, and then she and Yu Yan hurriedly ran towards Zhonggu Lu’s direction. Yue Ying immediately responded by releasing his devillic energy to cover the sunlight in the sky as well.

As expected, all of the sunflowers lowered their heads in the next moment, while the loading speed of the five Cob Cannons slowed down as well. Zhu Yao, along with her master, took this opportunity to carry out the disfigured Zhonggu Lu to the sides of the boundary.

“Yue Ying, hurry...” The moment they placed Zhonggu Lu down, Zhu Yao had Yue Ying immediately stop his bleeding. He was the only one here who could save him now.

Mei Xue on the other side had already gone insane. The pair of black holes was constantly leaking out blood, but she still glared at them with all her might. It was as if the hatred within those eyes wanted to swallow them whole. Her laughter continued to grow even sinister. “Hahaha... Even I’m in such a deplorable state, what makes you all qualified to become Gods? Die! All of you must die!!”

“I’m going to kill you!” Nangong Cheng charged towards Mei Xue with his weapon raised. However, before he could even approach her, three enormous red man-eating flowers appeared in her surroundings. They were completely different from the ones they saw before, though they looked exactly the same as the few men

who were swallowed along with Mei Xue.

“This...” He was stunned for a moment. Mei Xue could control these plants?

“Nangong Huang, return!” Zhu Yao shouted at him. She turned to look at Mei Xue and her expression sank. “She... is about to be completely swallowed by resentment. In essence, she’s already not much different from those flowers outside. The her now, most likely doesn’t even know who she is anymore.”

Nangong Cheng clenched his hands tightly, suppressing his intent of exacting revenge no matter what. He then turned to look back at his good friend on the ground, his eyes were instantly filled with incomparable pain.

“Kill, kill you all!” Mei Xue on the other side was crazily motioning her hands, yet there wasn’t the slightest bit of anxiety in her eyes. Several vines stretched out around her, flailing around meaninglessly as she strangely laughed out. “Hahahaha... I’m favoured by the Heavenly Dao, how could I possibly lose? I’ve never lost before! Right! I will never lose! It’s all your fault! It’s all because of all of you... All because you obstructed me despite the recklessness of it all! Those who obstructs me... shall die! Hahaha...”

She laughed crazily for a moment, and then she suddenly saw the pure white Light of Guidance. Her wilted face began to stretch open inch by inch, as if she was pulling a smile. She then stretched out a wilted branch. “Light of Guidance... I can become a God now... I can finally become a God...”

She suddenly began to move recklessly towards the Light of Guidance. However, she had already completely turned into a plant. With these movements of hers, her body began to crack even more. However, it was as if she was not feeling those cracks in her body as she desperately crawled over. The tree barks and leaves on her body immediately disappeared the moment they

came into contact with the white surface. She desperately crawled over, as though she was severing out a layer of skin out of her plant body, leaving behind a long trail of blood. However, she did not stop. It was as if too much madness was entangled inside that pair of black hole-like eyes.

A moment later, she was severed out of her initial plant body. She was swallowed for too long, and her body had long been meshed together with resentment. Her bones and skin were severed off, and not even a moment later, what remained on the ground was a cracked skeleton.

Yet, she continued to crawl. Slowly, towards the Light of Guidance. In the next moment, even that skeleton could persist no longer and crumble apart. Right at that moment, her body actually began to condense, and even her former features could be seen on her face.

Zhu Yao turned to look at the crumbled skeleton, especially the pair of black holes in the skull. She then looked at Mei Xue who was already a step away from the Light of Guidance, and sighed. Just how strong was her desire to become God? To the point where she couldn't even sense her own death and had to crawl in even with just a soul?

Mei Xue had made her way right before the Light of Guidance. With crazed joy in her eyes, she immediately crawled up and unhesitantly walked in. Zhu Yao thought that nothing would happen, but with a flash of bright, white light, what remained of Mei Xue's soul began to slowly rise within the ascending light. Joy filled her face, but that smile merely lasted for an instant. As she ascended even higher, the emotions on her face instead grew dimmer. Forget about happiness, not even a shred of hatred could be seen from the eyes she was looking at them with.

Zhu Yao's heart skipped a beat, as though she had realized something.



Could it be...

# Chapter 385: Ascend to Godhood, or Fall into Devilhood?

---

“Brother Zhonggu Lu.” Nangong Cheng’s voice was solemn. Looking at Zhonggu Lu whose aura was growing weaker by the second, his hands tightly clenched.

Zhu Yao’s heart tensed up as well. Though Zhonggu Lu had avoided the core of the Cob Cannons’ attack and was not struck directly, the combined force of five explosions held incredible power in them. It was already a miracle that Zhonggu Lu was holding onto his last breath.

However, his Dantian had already shattered and his primordial spirit had already scattered. There were even traces of his soul leaving his body. His injuries were incredibly severe, and even if everyone expended their divine energy, they wouldn’t be able to save him, let alone in a situation where they could not use any divine energy at all.

“Yue Ying...” Zhu Yao looked at the expressionless Yue Ying. Though after looking closely, his brows were actually a little creased. “Can you save him?” He was the only one who they could rely on right now.

Yue Ying raised his head and looked at her. Then, he once again looked at the gasping, disfigured Zhonggu Lu who merely had his upper body left. After a moment, he solemnly said. “There’s only a single way.”

“What is it?” Nangong Cheng immediately looked at him, his eyes instantly shone as he agitatedly reach out to pull Yue Ying’s hand. “Daoist Yue, you have a way to save him? Is that true?”

Frowning, Yue Ying immediately dodged. After throwing Nangong Cheng a glare, he then continued to look at Zhu Yao and said. “Flower Deities have frail bodies in the first place. Now that

his primordial spirit has scattered and his inner core is destroyed, his soul will leave his body in less than fifteen minutes. Unless...”

“Unless?” Zhu Yao pushed for his answer.

A hint of hesitation flashed across his face as he showed a slightly uneasy look. After a moment, he gritted his teeth as if he had made a decision, and said. “Unless he falls into Devilhood like me.”

“Fall into Devilhood!” Everyone was stunned, and even Nangong Cheng had a shocked look on his face. Almost out of reflex, he said. “No way! He’s a Deity... How can he possibly...”

“Then I can’t help him either.” Yue Ying immediately stood up and stood behind Zhu Yao once more, looking as if he had washed his hands off this matter.

Nangong Cheng looked at Zhonggu Lu who was holding onto his last breath as he clenched his fists even tighter. That’s right. If he were to fall into Devilhood, Zhonggu Lu could indeed recover immediately with the aid of devillic energy. However, Devils were often associated with slaughter, heartlessness and evil. In the first place, conducting evil acts was in nature of Devils, and they were the common enemies of the Three Realms. No matter if it’s demons or humans, they did not harbour any favourable impressions towards Devils. Though not many had actually seen once, it was a sense of disgust that seemed to have been ingrained in their blood, something they were born with.

Though Yue Ying was a Devil, and that they had indeed saw him unleash devillic energy as well, he had always been helping them throughout this journey. That was why they basically did not treat him as an unscrupulous, evil Devil from the depths of their hearts. However, the moment he heard that his good friend had to fall into Devilhood, he finally realized the difference between he and Yue Ying. Falling to Devilhood! Then Zhonggu Lu would be standing on his opposing side. Furthermore, devillic energy was the darkest form of energy in the world, he could not imagine if

Zhonggu Lu would remain the same after falling into Devilhood.

“There’s not much time left.” Yue Ying reminded. Zhonggu Lu’s aura continued to grow a lot weaker.

Nangong Cheng’s hands were already beginning to bleed from the clenching, and his heart was in an utter mess. “Maybe... Maybe he can be like Mei Xue...”

His eyes instantly shone and he said with an excited look. “Right, that’s right! He can ascend into Godhood, just like Mei Xue earlier. Even though she only had her soul remaining, she was able to pass through the Light of Guidance. Brother Zhonggu Lu will definitely be able to as well. I shall bring him over now.” As he said that, he immediately lowered his body and carried Zhonggu Lu up.

“Wait a minute!” Zhu Yao took a step to the side and blocked him.

“Dongfang girly!” Nangong Cheng grew anxious and solemnly said. “If you have anything to discuss, we can talk about it after Brother Zhonggu Lu become a God.”

“If I’m you, I won’t do such a thing. It’s best that we don’t get close to this Light of Guidance.” Zhu Yao raised her head and looked at the pillar of light. “Ascending to Godhood... might not be a good thing.”

“What do you mean?” Not just Nangong Cheng, everyone else looked towards Zhu Yao as well. Wasn’t their goal here to ascend to Godhood?

“Yu Yao...” Yu Yan took a step forward and looked at his own disciple. “Did you discover something?”

Zhu Yao was silent for a moment, then, she solemnly said. “I think... we might not be able to enter the Realm of Gods from here. Rather, I suspect that... the Realm of Gods... might not exist in this world.”

Nangong Cheng was stunned. “Dongfang girly, what are you

talking about? Isn't this the Light of Guidance towards the Realm of Gods?"

"This is a Light of Guidance alright. But who can be sure that it will guide Deities to the Realm of Gods?"

"....."

"..."

"I wish to ask you guys a question." Zhu Yao pointed at their surroundings. "Just what in the world is this Realm of Gods? And what do Gods look like? Has anyone seen one? Deities carry the same lifespan as the heaven and earth, and which one of them hadn't lived several tens of thousands of years before entering this tower? However, even after so many years, why haven't anyone seen these so-called Gods? Everything regarding Gods had been merely legends of their origin."

"This is one of the laws of the Heavenly Dao." Nangong Cheng guessed. "It's just like how people of the Divine Realm are unable to easily head down to the Lower Realm. Most likely, there's no access from the Realm of Gods to the Divine Realm?"

"Even if that's the case, the Lightning Divine Tower has existed for so many years, and this Light of Guidance has always been here and has never been closed. Is there really not a single curious God who wanted to come back down here for a look?"

"The laws of the Heavenly Dao cannot be broken so easily." Nangong Cheng said.

"You're saying Gods are not able to override the Heavenly Dao? And they are still given restrictions?"

"Y... Yes."

"Fine, if that's the case..." Zhu Yao looked at the group seriously. "Then why do we still wish to ascend to Godhood?"

"....."

“...”

“We are Deities. We possess eternal life and boundless mystic powers. Other than the Heavenly Dao, is there anything else a Deity can’t do? If the Realm of Gods is still a place governed by the Heavenly Dao, then what difference is there between the Realm of Gods and the Divine Realm?” Zhu Yao continued her analysis. “I’ve always had this doubt. If we become Deities in order to obtain eternal life, then why do we strive to become Gods? Why do all Gods treat entering the Lightning Divine Tower as an honour? Why do all Deities wish to become Gods? What’s the meaning in becoming Gods? Have you all thought about it?”

For a moment, the three of them were stunned, Yu Yan as well had a confused expression.

“Nangong Huang, tell me. Why did you enter the tower?”

“Back then, I did it to...” Halfway through his answer, he paused, and suddenly, cold sweat trickled down his body. At that moment, he realized that he really did not have any reason to become a God. It was as if ascending to Godhood was an instinct engraved in him. After obtaining a high cultivation, he naturally wanted to become a God. Not just him, this was the same for the rest of the people in the Divine Realm as well. No one had truly thought about the reason behind it. Why was this so?

If becoming Deities was for eternal life, then what’s the purpose in becoming Gods? Could increasing one’s cultivation simply be the reason? However, ever since they entered the tower, there wasn’t any significant improvement to their cultivation. Especially when they arrived in this final floor, all of their divine energy could not be used at all, let alone their cultivation. Legends mentioned that in the Realm of Gods lived people that could wield the laws of the Heavenly Dao, and that they could control fate. However, even after such a long time, not a single person had seen a true God. If they could really wield the Heavenly Dao, why hadn’t a single one of them returned?

After thinking about it carefully, cold sweat began to drip down the three's bodies.

Zhu Yao was a little shocked as well. She merely had a faint guess before, but the more she thought about it, the more afraid she became. It was as if this so-called Lightning Divine Tower, and this so-called 'ascension to Godhood', were part of an incredibly large fraud. It was as if this setting had been implanted in all of the Deities. As long as their cultivation were to reach a certain point, they would enter this tower.

Recalling the countless stages and difficult tests to get here, they could all lose their lives at the moment of carelessness. Everyone knew that they could become Gods by passing these tests, but no one knew about the actual benefits of becoming a God were. Deities had limitless lifespan in the first place, so what if they couldn't become Gods? Even the God races did not seem like they could manage the Divine Realm, so why would everyone come here to seek death for no reason?

It seemed as if there had always been a hidden hand pushing everyone forward, a hand called the "Heavenly Dao".

For some reason, after Zhu Yao's speech, the fiery will to ascend into Godhood in the depths of Nangong Cheng's heart was suddenly extinguished. However...

"What do we do about Zhonggu Lu?"

"Nangong Huang..." Zhu Yao solemnly said. "No matter if it's becoming a Devil or a God, I won't reject your decision. I just want you to think carefully before making that decision. No one exactly knows what the Realm of Gods is like, but when it comes to Devils..." She turned to look at Yue Ying. "At the very least, you've witnessed one for yourself."

Nangong Cheng lowered his head and looked at his good friend in his arms. Zhonggu Lu's breath could no longer be heard. Gritting his teeth, he raised his head. As he looked at the Light of Guidance

that was as white as snow, he said in a soft voice. “Dongfang girly, I know you said that for our own good. However, our goal here is to ascend into Godhood, and no matter what lies behind, the both of us wish to try stepping in.” He took a deep breath. “Since this is what the Heavenly Dao dictates, then I don’t wish to deny it.”

The hell! Zhu Yao really wanted to cuss out now! Just how was this any different from choosing death?

“You saw Mei Xue’s expression earlier yourself.” Zhu Yao took a step forward. “She clearly did not look like she had become a God. No one knows just what’s the purpose and consequence of entering this Light of Guidance. Even whether it truly brings one to the Realm of Gods, is something no one knows. Are you truly going to take this risk?”

“Dongfang girly...” Nangong Cheng turned around and looked at her. The clown-like look he usually carried had completely disappeared, and it was replaced with incomparable seriousness. Though, his eyes carried a hint of guilt. “If I was alone, I would have definitely trusted you, without a shred of hesitation. I also believe in Daoist Yue Ying, that it would be nothing much even if one turns into a Devil. However brother Zhonggu Lu... I know his personality very well. He is a Flower Deity birthed from the spiritual energy of nature. He has a simple personality, but isn’t tough enough. If he falls into Devilhood, he definitely won’t turn out like Yue Ying who has kept his sanity. He might not even be able to recognise me, and he might even do something irreparable. If that’s the case... Why not follow the will of the Heavenly Dao?”

“...” Zhu Yao turned silent. Indeed. Falling into Devilhood meant igniting all of the evil intentions in the depths of one’s heart, and expanding them boundlessly. Because Yue Ying was born a God race, he was able to suppress the instincts of a Devil and was willing to change. However, this did not mean that Zhonggu Lu could do the same.

Nangong Cheng did not explain any further as he slowly walked



towards the Light of Guidance with Zhonggu Lu in his arms.

“Nangong Huang...” Zhu Yao still wanted to try dissuading him.

# Chapter 386: Lightning Divine Tower Ceases to Exist

---

In the end, Zhu Yao failed to stop Nangong Cheng. She could only watch as he slowly walked into the white light. With every step he took, Zhonggu Lu's body would fade. Finally, his body disappeared, and a complete Zhonggu Lu appeared next to Nangong Huang. Presently, they were already enveloped by white light, as they arrived inside the Light of Guidance.

Nangong Cheng joyfully turned to look at him, but Zhonggu Lu's eyes were but an empty void.

He seemed to be stunned for a moment, but right after, the light in his eyes disappeared. Like Mei Xue, the two of them slowly rose with expressionless faces. Zhu Yao could not help but run a few steps forward, but they had already disappeared within the pillar of light.

"Big sis!" Suddenly, Yue Ying's anxious voice sounded from behind her.

Zhu Yao turned to look. The person next to her slipped past her, and was moving towards the white light. At that moment, she could hardly breathe as she pulled onto that person. "Master!"

Yu Yan however ignored her and continued forward, his eyes were looking straight at the Light of Guidance before him. Zhu Yao forcefully pulled him back. "Master, wait a minute! What's wrong with you?"

His feet paused, and only then did he turn to look at her. Though, his expression shook for a moment, and what rose from it was a completely foreign furious expression. "Let go!" He immediately stretched out his other hand and swept hers off.

She simply felt a sting in her heart, as a feeling of anxiety which she had never felt before surged. She immediately blocked his

path. “Master?”

“Move!” His voice instantly turned cold.

Zhu Yao was shocked, her eyes greatly widened. Her master had never before been this furious with her, even when his anger was at its peak. Why now? Could the Light of Guidance be the reason? She immediately reached out her hands to block his vision. “Master, what happened to you? Don’t scare me. You can’t head over there right now. That light...”

Before she could even finish, she was fiercely pushed away by Yu Yan. The ferocity of the force behind the push was not the least bit forgiving. She instantly fell down due to her moment of unpreparedness.

“Master!”

He still did not reply as he moved directly towards the Light of Guidance. His eyes grew even more focused, as if he was being summoned by something.

“Don’t go over there, master!”

“.....”

“...”

“Yu Yan, you best stop right there!”

However, it was useless. No matter how she called out to him, he seemed to have suddenly changed into an entirely different person, as he constantly moved towards the Light of Guidance.

It’s the light! It’s that Light of Guidance!

She hurriedly crawled up and tried several times to pull his arm or to block his path. However, every single time, she was pushed away. The furious look he carried even sent chills down her spine.

Just as he was about to enter the Light of Guidance, the void expressions of Nangong Cheng and Mei Xue instantly appeared in her mind. It was as if everything in the world had already

disappeared, their eyes were so hollow and devoid of emotions. Zhu Yao felt as if her heart had been stabbed by a knife. No! Master definitely can't end up that way! Definitely not! Her instincts were telling her that the Realm of Gods was not a good place.

Zhu Yao immediately pounced towards him, and used all of the strength in her body to hug his waist. "Master, wake up! Don't go over there! Look at me. I'm Yu Yao, I'm Yu Wang..." Don't be bewitched by that light.

His feet finally stopped. The eyes which had been staring intently at the light finally landed on her face.

"Master..."

Bang!

A palm strike without a shred of hesitation instantly landed on her back. A heart-wrenching pain immediately spread throughout her body, and at that moment, she felt as if her organs were splitting apart from the shockwave. She puked out a mouthful of blood, and the person before her dressed in a snow-white robe was instantly dyed blood-red.

"Mo..ve!" His face was expressionless, as if he was not able to see the blood on his robe. His tone felt as if it could freeze the blood in her entire body.

He had no intentions of stopping and continued to move forward. Zhu Yao hugged onto his waist tightly, not letting up a single bit. He once again raised his right palm and struck her hands. She could even hear the sounds of her bones shattering.

"Move!"

"....."

"..."

Thus, one palm strike connected with another...

"Big sis!" Yue Ying madly struck the invisible barrier, wanting to

charge in. However, no matter how much devillic energy he materialized, they would all dissipate within the white light before approaching them. He could only desperately knock against the invisible obstruction between them. “Big... sis... Hurry and come out! Stop getting in his way, big sis...”

Zhu Yao had never been in this much pain, a pain that burned through both her heart and body. However, no matter how she shouted, there was nothing else other than fury towards her in his master’s eyes. No! It wasn’t towards her, but the action of stopping him. There was no one else in his eyes.

Just what was this light? Why was even her master unable to resist it?

“Master...” Wake up. Don’t leave me alone.

Yu Yan still raised his hand with an expressionless face and forcefully pushed, instantly sweeping her away. Zhu Yao had long received severe injuries, and unable to stand stably any longer, she fell onto the ground. Yu Yan had already taken this time to walked forward.

“Master... Yu Yan!”

He still did not hear her words.

“You best stop right there!” She crawled a few steps forward.

He still did not stop, and just as he was about to step into the Light of Guidance, Zhu Yao felt as if her heart was about to stop beating as an immense fear surged within her. It was as if someone was digging out her heart. “Realmspirit! If you motherf\*\*king dare let my master walk in, this old lady here will destroy my own soul right now, and I will never ever forgive you!”

Ting!

A familiar sound rang.

In an instant, everything stopped. It was as if the entire world

had paused. The shuffling of the wind disappeared, the mystical melody of the Light of Guidance stopped, and even Yue Ying who was still knocking onto the barrier earlier had stopped shouting, his face still maintaining his former expression. Her master stopped moving forward as well. Suddenly, golden symbols appeared from empty air one after another, circling around Yu Yan's body. Those symbols were not were neither the runic symbols of talismans nor formations, but rather, they were like horizontal '8's. They were 'infinity' symbols!

Those symbols were constantly circling around him, slowly and unhurriedly. Zhu Yao felt a familiar feeling from them, a feeling similar to the Light of Guidance.

Zhu Yao gritted her teeth, took a deep breath, and then slowly crawled up. With wobbly legs, she walked over a step at a time. After looking at the circle of 'infinity' symbols for a short while, she directly reached out to grab them. The circle of symbols felt alive, as it began to wiggle about in her hand.

Ting!

The notification bell once again rang, and a notification window instantly popped out. However, there wasn't a choice to be made on it this time, but merely a row of blinding red words.

Warning: Law restriction is being released!!! Please pay serious attention when operating it!!!

Zhu Yao slightly raised her head and looked at the person before her. His eyes were completely cold.

In an instant, she no longer hesitated and squeezed her hand. With a crisp ring of the notification bell, the circle of 'infinity' symbols shattered resoundingly.

Zhu Yao immediately threw out a forceful palm strike, sending her master out of the white space and returning him to the grass field. The initially paused world was restored at this moment as

well.

Yu Yan was stunned for a moment. In that pair of eyes that was emotionlessly cold, a hint of light flashed past. He turned to look at Zhu Yao. “Yu Yao...”

“Don’t come over here!” Zhu Yao loudly stopped him. Yet another mass of blood tumbled within her, and then she puked out a mouthful of blood.

Yu Yan’s feet stopped as he looked at her body that was dyed in blood. “Yu Yao, you...”

“Master... I’m fine. Don’t come over here.” If he were to come over once more, she could not guarantee that Realmspirit would intervene again.

“...” Yu Yan stopped his feet, though he was clenching his fists hard as they trembled slightly. Even he did not know why he harmed her. Ever since he entered that white space, he was no longer himself, as though his thoughts were no longer in his control. “Yu... Yao...”

“I know...” Zhu Yao smiled. “There’s no need for explanations between the two of us.” I’ve always believed you, just like how you’ve always believed me.

She turned to look at the person next to him, whose eyes were already red. “Yue Ying, be obedient and help look after my master... Don’t let me come in again. You too!”

“...” Yue Ying tightly clenched his fists, and after a moment, he nodded.

“Yu Yao!” Yu Yan had an anxious look. “What are you trying to do? Hurry and come out of there. Not just the Light of Guidance, there’s a problem even with this surrounding white domain!”

“Don’t worry.” Zhu Yao waved her hand and said. “Nothing will happen to me. I’m just going to see an old friend.”

“.....”

“...”

“Though before that...” With a twist of her hand, she held onto that red ‘patch’ sword and took a step forward, her gaze fixated on the Light of Guidance. “I must first complete a small quest.”

She then walked into the light. With her two hands holding onto the hilt of the sword, she then stabbed it downwards on the base of the Light of Guidance with all her might, where that enormous ‘infinity’ symbol was.

In an instant, the pillar of light that shot through the skies disappeared, as if it had never appeared before.

Zhu Yao turned to look at the two people next to the grass field, and waved her hand. “Wait for me at home for dinner!”

Suddenly, crackling noises could be heard as the entire white domain began to crack open. Crack lines spread in all directions. Even the grass field next to it and the sky looked as they were about to shatter apart as lines of cracks appeared.

The heaven and earth shook. As if layer after layer of the sky and earth surface were being peeled apart, they began to collapse bit by bit. These cracks had spread throughout the entire Lightning Divine Tower. Even the scenery before their eyes was beginning to distort and change. Some sort of formless energy was presently pulling Yu Yan and Yue Ying out. Similar to a collapsed Secret Realm, people were being forcefully ejected.

“Yu Yao!” Yu Yan wanted to call out to his stupid disciple, but at where the pillar of light once was, his disciple’s figure was no longer there. What remained was an entirely red sword.

In the next instant, he had already appeared inside the Lightning Divine Palace. Before his eyes was the Lightning Divine Tower that could reach the high skies. However, the body of the white tower was collapsing, as large cracks began to tear apart, along with that



immensely huge 'bug' word.

Occasionally, rays of light would shoot out from the tower, and many foreign figures instantly appeared in the Lightning Divine Palace.

Everyone was ejected from the tower! And from that moment on, Lightning Divine Tower... ceased to exist in the Divine Realm.

---

There's nothing here? The crimson sun shone upon the great land, bringing to light the dry scars that filled the ground. The surroundings were barren, and looking afar, it was entirely flat. There was no wind, no water, no greenery, and not even the slightest bit of sand. Other than the countless shuffling expressionless human figures. They looked like they were dreamwalking, as they walked about with neither a goal nor the slightest bit of sentience. Their eyes were completely hollow.

“This is the Realm of Gods?”

A long while later...

“Mn.”

# Chapter 387: Become a CEO

---

Countless human figures brushed past her, yet not one of them stopped for a single moment as they continued to walk without a goal. Zhu Yao could not help but feel a chill in her heart. Though she had already mentally prepared herself when she destroyed the Light of Guidance, telling herself that the Realm of Gods was not a good place, it was still an astonishing sight when actually seeing it first-hand. This place was even worse than the Netherworld. Though the Netherworld was filled with ghastly air, at the very least, it wouldn't be as barren and cold as this place. Furthermore, though there were many human figures around, it was terrifyingly quiet. It was like a soundless movie, and one without any subtitles at that.

A familiar human figure walked past her. Zhu Yao's heart sank as she instinctively pulled onto him. "Nangong Cheng."

He turned around, but his two eyes were hollow. He seemed like he was looking at her, but there clearly wasn't any reflection in his pupils. And, Zhonggu Lu wasn't next to him.

Even though he cared about his homosexual buddy so much, he basically wasn't by his side right now.

Zhu Yao's hand shook for a moment, and she unconsciously released him. Nangong Cheng however simply changed a direction and continued walking forward. He did not reply, neither did he get angry, nor was there the slightest display of emotions. He was like a precise instrument walking on a predefined path, with neither sadness nor joy in him.

She suddenly recalled his final smile when he walked into the Light of Guidance. It was clearly filled with hope and expectations, as if he was obtaining a new lease of life. But now...

"What happened to him?" Zhu Yao fiercely turned around.

“He has lost all awareness of himself.” Realmspirit materialized into a look similar to hers, and then took a step forward to stand next to her. “The light above the Lightning Divine Tower is the first strand of light that scattered throughout the Three Realms at the very beginning of the creation of this world. It is also the purest light in this world... the Light of Purification.”

“Purification!” Zhu Yao was stunned. “Purify what?”

Realmspirit turned around and looked at her seriously. With a gentle voice, he said. “Resentment, obsession, love, joy, sadness, desire, fear, and everything else...”

She suddenly widened her eyes. “Their... seven emotions and six desires were purified!?”

Realmspirit nodded.

Zhu Yao took a step back and then looked at the human figures before her once more. No wonder... It’s no wonder these people looked as if they’re puppets.

“Why create a Realm of Gods such as this?” Zhu Yao’s chest felt heavy, as if something was pressing against it, preventing her from breathing properly. “Is there a need for this? Could this really be cultivation’s final stop? Is this the truth behind the Heavenly Dao?”

“Yaoyao...” He sighed. The scenery before her eyes instantly changed, and she arrived at place filled with flowers, a place that was as beautiful as the realm of fairies. “This is their own choice. Becoming Deities or Gods, they had chosen this path on their own.”

“But aren’t you the one guiding them onto this path?” Zhu Yao solemnly said. “Realmspirit, you’re the spirit of the Three Realms. The Three Realms are you, and you are this entire world. Aren’t all of the living beings in this world your children? Is it your wish to see their final resting place to be a barren land like that Realm of

Gods?”

“It’s naturally isn’t my wish to see that!” Realmspirit turned to look at her, as he pulled up the corners of his lips and smiled. “That’s why... I found you. My friend.”

“.....”

“... ”

“Yaoyao... I’m the spirit of the Three Realms, so naturally, I cherish this world.” He frowned. “However, all of the living beings in this world are the same. No matter if they’re humans, plants or demons, as long as they are able to gain sentience, they will be harassed by their seven emotions and six desires. As long as they have desires, they will never be satisfied. After becoming Deities, they will want to become Gods, and after becoming Gods, they will most likely wish to cultivate even further to become something else...” He sighed. “Though I am the spirit of the Three Realms, what I can do is however very limited. Luck, spiritual energy, and even the Heavenly Dao can all be changed according to my will. I’ve always wanted to change and save this world, but no matter what I changed, there will always be new problems surfacing.”

“New problems?”

He sighed. “Do you still remember those bugs?”

Zhu Yao was startled for a moment, and then she nodded, puzzled. Why did you suddenly bring that up?

“Actually, from the very start, they were not actually loopholes that could destroy the world. Rather, they were patches I made to save this world.”

“What!?” You’re motherf\*\*king kidding me? Those Mary Sues and Gary Stus are patches!?

“I know you won’t believe me, but that’s the truth.” He waved his hand, and in an instant, two screens appeared in mid-air. What were being displayed were the bugs that she had fixed, though the

two screens had different words labelled above them. On the left it was written 'Predicted Outcome', while on the right was 'Actual Outcome'.

"Take Xiao Yi for example." Realmspirit pointed, and the screens immediately displayed the scenes of the first bug she fixed. "He was born poor and frail, and he grew up from the very bottom. He understood the pain of practitioners of the lowest level the most, that was why I bestowed him immense luck. I hoped that, with this level of understanding, he could stop slaughters and prevent the birth of resentment. That way, it would reduce the burden of the Netherworld. However, I never expected that..." What were shown in the two screens were completely different. On the left, Xiao Yi was a great saviour, saving the injured and aiding the poor everywhere he went. Upholding justice, he walked on the path of a saint. On the other "Actual Outcome" side, it was the scenario that she received back then. He gathered the five spirits and ascended to the Higher Realm, resulting in the collapse of the world. "He directly destroyed a world, and the resentment that would have been accumulated was estimated to be several million times more."

"Uh..." This patch was indeed a little upsetting.

"Then there's Mu Meiyan." Realmspirit continued. "Her rebirth was initially to suppress the resurrection of the Devil. As long as her soul is undying, then the Devil will never be able to completely resurrect. The world will thus avoid a tribulation."

"Yi Ling as well. Her existence was initially to have the Devil, that taken over Lin Qi's soul, develop feelings. As long as Lin Qi develops feelings for her, then he would be able to suppress the Devil's nature within his body."

"Let alone Yi Ling, whose existence is a patch itself."

"And then..."

"Stop!" Zhu Yao did a stop gesture, and then scratched her head a little irritatedly. "In other words, these bugs were actually all

made by you?”

“Mn.” He nodded innocently.

“...” The hell! So she wasn’t here to save the world, but to help cover up his ass.

“Yaoyao, you must believe me. I really had no other choice but to call you here.” He said with an expression that looked as if he was about to cry. “I’ve looked for many people, but no matter if they’re humans or beasts, or even a living being that had awakened its sentience, they would all become the bugs of their respective worlds. The more powerful they were, the more they were possess, and the more severe the consequences would become. There had never been a person like you who stood fast to your beliefs.”

“Enough. There’s no need to let me wear a tophat. Just tell me your ultimate goal.” Zhu Yao waved her hands.

Realmspirit paused for a moment. Clenching his fists, he looked at her seriously in the eyes, and finally said with a heavy tone. “I want you to redraft the procedures of the Three Realms, rewrite the Heavenly Dao, and change everything in its entirety. I want you to become the manager of this Three Realms.”

“.....”

“...”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. With widened eyes, she sized him up from top to bottom, and then reached out to touch his forehead. “You’re not having a fever, right?” Though she’s a main game planner and could be considered as a small supervisor, she had never been a CEO.

“Yaoyao...” He immediately pulled down her hand, and he had a stern expression which she had never seen before. “You’re the only one who can stop the Three Realms from walking to its destruction.”

“Don’t make it sound so certain, hey.” Zhu Yao grew a little

anxious. “I’m someone who only knows how to make games, and I really haven’t done anything like this before.” What’s going to happen if I make a mistake?

“I believe you!”

“I don’t even have confidence myself, just where is your confidence coming from?”

“You can do it.” He revealed a brilliant smile. “Actually, ever since you came, this world has been changing in a good direction. You’ve already been to all of the Three Realms, so you should already have sufficient knowledge of this world. It’s fine as long as you speak out your thoughts.”

This is... He’s making me handover my post-experience reflection on my tour around the Three Realms?

Zhu Yao was silent for a moment, and then she slowly started. “Actually, I’ve already said the things that’s needed to be said. You’ve already understood the problems of this world, right?” She raised her head and looked at him. “When you closed all the Ascension Heavenly Doors of the various worlds, wasn’t that recognition for what I said about people who conducted countless slaughters basically not being worthy of becoming Deities?”

“.....”

“...”

“Realmspirit, you mentioned that you once dispatched many people to fix bugs, but all of them would turn into new loopholes in the end. Because they lost their beliefs on their journey, they then began to walk on the most extreme route. Then why didn’t you request everyone to hold fast to their beliefs right from the beginning?” She patted on his shoulders. “Actually, I just don’t get this practice of the strong eating the weak of this world. Because if we look at it from another perspective, slaughters enlarge people’s greed and desires. The hearts of people do not amount to just that.

As they say, ‘man at birth is fundamentally good in nature’, kindness actually exists in the depths of everyone’s hearts. However, after they lost their beliefs, they abandoned this kindness. Yet, the Heavenly Dao has never cared about this point. That’s why those who can ascend, ascends, and those who can become Deities, become Deities.”

She took a step forward and looked straight into Realmspirit’s eyes. “Realmspirit, have you ever thought that maybe, they didn’t lose their beliefs on their journeys? Rather, right from the beginning, the Heavenly Dao that you designed, has never requested them to maintain their beliefs?”

“...” He was stunned.

“Realmspirit, actually, all of the living beings in this world are the same. They are all born the same way, and there’s nothing different about them at all. It’s merely their experiences that influence their choices. If the world tells them that there’s no need to stick true to their beliefs, then they will throw them away without a shred of hesitation. If the world tells them that it’s the most important thing, then they will hold onto them forever.” Zhu Yao smiled. “You said that I’m the only person in this world who can save them, but that’s not right. I’m actually the same with everyone else. The only difference is that I lived in another plane, and my world tells me that slaughter, stealing, and scheming are all wrong. Such acts will be met with prosecution. My conscience tells me that they’re acts of utmost evil and cannot be forgiven. That’s why even if I die, I will never do such things.”

“Realmspirit, what this world lacks isn’t someone who can hold fast to their beliefs, but a power that can guide everyone to holding fast to their beliefs.”

“...”

“Or should I put it this way? There hasn’t been anything in the world that clearly tells everyone that they have to hold fast to their



beliefs.”

“ ... ”

Realmspirit was silent for a long while, before he slowly began to reveal a smile. Even though they had the same face right now, his smile looked as if the sun had finally come out of the clouds, brilliantly... blinding.

Uh... Why do I feel like I've lost? Can you change to another face?

“I understand what you mean now.”

T/N: Realmspirit is currently borrowing Zhu Yao's appearance, but I will be referring Realmspirit as 'he'.

## Chapter 388: Realmspirit's Plans

---

Zhu Yao did not know how long she had spent talking to Realmspirit. She merely told him all the things that she thought to be unreasonable, which she had seen and heard of. She could not guarantee that whatever she had said were true, but she simply felt that the world shouldn't just center around strong people, but also benevolent people. There was nothing wrong with the initial Heavenly Dao that guided living beings to the top. After all, without conflict, there wouldn't be improvements. If people did not have progressive mindsets, then the Three Realms will forever be stuck living in a prehistoric society. But during progression, people should not abandon their beliefs. As they say, 'when one drinks water, one must not forget its source'. No matter how powerful a Deity one is, he or she was still once a human.

"Realmspirit, there's still something that I don't understand." Zhu Yao looked at Realmspirit and said. "If my guess is correct, that is the final bug, right? I understand why you wish to sever the seven emotions and six desires of those who become Gods." If Gods truly had the power to fight against the Heavenly Dao, then 'Gods' would truly be too dangerous. Furthermore, according to the principle of the strong eating the weak, among these people who had climbed to the very top, which one of them wasn't someone who would use all possible means to obtain his or her objective? With just the slightest birth of evil intentions, the Three Realms would be faced with countless tribulations beyond redemption.

"But... If you do not wish for them to become Gods right from the start, then why come up with the Lightning Divine Tower? By doing so, you're giving the Deities the opportunity to become Gods, and you're guiding them to cultivate into Gods." Her master's irregular behaviour earlier was because of the Heavenly Dao's control, wasn't it? The seal of 'infinity' symbols that she

broke was actually a law of the Heavenly Dao. All of the Deities revered the Lightning Divine Tower so much, and even desperately wanted to enter it to become Gods. They would unhesitantly throw away their opportunities to hold onto their eternal life. Other than suggestions made by the Heavenly Dao, she really couldn't think of any other reason behind such behaviour.

Realmspirit sighed. "Yaoyao, have you ever thought that actually, the Realm of Gods might have never existed in this world in the first place?"

"What? Never existed!?" Zhu Yao was shocked. "Then the place I just saw was..." There was that barren place. She wasn't blind after all.

"That place is simply a temporary dimension, that was opened to accommodate the people that had been unexpectedly purified of their seven emotions and six desires. Realmspirit seriously said. "Yaoyao, I told you before. I'm the spirit of the Three Realms. Three realms, not four."

Zhu Yao was stunned. Divine Realm, Human Realm, and Netherworld. From what he said, there was truly only three realms. If the Realm of Gods was included...

"Just what are you trying to say? Speak clearly, hey." Why was he making her even more confused now?

"Yaoyao, within the Three Realms, what do you think is the main cause that would result in the immediate collapse of the Three Realms?" Realmspirit posed a serious question.

Zhu Yao pondered for a moment, and she then suddenly widened her eyes. "It's resentment!"

"Mn." Realmspirit nodded. "Resentment is birthed from living beings, yet they cannot die along with living beings. It is undying, indestructible, and filled with malice. If it enters any one world, it can result in the collapse of that world. Before you helped me with

finding a method to eliminate resentment, even the River of Forgetfulness had to suppress it beneath the river. If we wanted to exterminate resentment then, there's only a single way..."

"Light of Purification!" Zhu Yao continued.

Realmspirit nodded. "The Light of Purification is the first strand of sunlight at the beginning of the world's creation. It is the purest thing in the world and can purify everything in this world, including the seven emotions and six desires. That's why I designed the Lightning Divine Tower and led the River of Forgetfulness into it. It's all in order to purify the ever-expanding resentment kept under the River of Forgetfulness and prevent it from entering the Three Realms. However, I am after all an existence formed by the will of the Three Realms. Since the Lightning Divine Tower is designed by me, the tower naturally contains the aura of the Heavenly Dao. Furthermore, all of the practitioners in the world cultivate in order to reach the Heavenly Dao. That's why..."

"The people of the world then believed that the Lightning Divine Tower that you designed is actually the passageway to raising their level. That's why they entered the tower to seek a beating?"

He nodded.

The hell. In the end, it was all because those Deities were courting death on their own.

"Those souls who have their consciousness purified have no other places to return to, and because of the Light of Purification, they are unable to return to Netherworld through the River of Forgetfulness to reincarnate. That was why I opened up an accommodation, which is the Realm of Gods you saw back there. As long as they regain even the slightest bit of sentience, they will be able to follow along the River of Forgetfulness and reincarnate."

"..." What's drawing water with a sieve? This is! So there wasn't a Realm of Gods to begin with. A God's final resting place was

simply reincarnation all over again.

“Then what’s with the previous Realm of Gods?” She suddenly remembered about the God races. Those races which were met with such a tragic end.

Realmspirit was silent for a moment, and then solemnly said. “They are survivors from the former world.”

“Former world?”

“Yaoyao, this plane of ours has once met with destruction, and not just once...”

“What?” What did he mean by ‘not just once’? Wasn’t the great war between Gods and Devils the only one? That was why the Human Realm was split into the Three Thousand Worlds.

“Ever since the world’s creation, this plane had always been in a cycle of rejuvenation and destruction.” Realmspirit frowned, as if he had recalled something saddening. “Every ending was the same. Living beings would fight against each other, and then resentment would be birthed, which finally led to world collapses, and then its rejuvenation. This plane had been restructured in many, many different ways, and many different races had once existed in it. However, all of their endings were met with destruction, again and again, never-ending. Finally, this plane is no longer able to bear many more rejuvenations of such scale, and I appeared.”

He took a deep breath, and then continued. “Because it does not wish such an ending to repeat, the world materialized a spirit and wanted to stop this entirety. However, I realized that even if I gain sentience, I was unable to walk out of this cycle. That world with the God races was the first world I experienced after I awakened. However, it was still destroyed. After the rejuvenation, I had the world split into Three Thousand Worlds, all in order to reduce the casualties to the very minimum. I believed that even if one collapses, I can still save it in time. However, resentment continued to accumulate, and I can already foresee the final

ending. That's why I sought help in another plane."

"Wait a minute..." Zhu Yao was a little confused. "You mentioned that resentment causes world collapses, but back in the time where God races existed, there wasn't any resentment though?"

"Resentment is just a term used in this world." Realmspirit said. "In the previous world, it didn't use the same terminology."

Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment, and then her heart sank. "Devillic energy!"

"Mn."

"The hell!" Zhu Yao's head ached. In the end, devillic energy and resentment were one and the same? The only difference between them was that one of them was birthed in the former world, while the other was birthed in this world.

"Devillic energy was also the most fundamental reason behind that world's collapse."

"That's not right..." Zhu Yao frowned. "If devillic energy is just a remnant from the former world, then what's with those people who fall into Devilhood? Putting aside Yue Ying, what about Fa Yu? He clearly was a resident of this world, so was he still able to become a Devil?"

"Yaoyao, resentment is birthed from the feelings of unwillingness and hatred during a person's death. However, what if someone is able to give birth to this form of hatred before his death?"

"You're saying resentment comes after death, but one will fall into Devilhood when experiencing it before death?"

Realmspirit nodded. "Though, falling into Devilhood is better than giving birth to resentment. Because at the moment of death, what disperses is just devillic energy, and it will not give birth to resentment."

“But a Devil might cause even more innocent deaths, so the amount of resentment birthed would be much larger, right?”

“Indeed! Especially after the change in the Heavenly Dao, if future practitioners need to hold onto their beliefs, then there will definitely be people who lose their beliefs as well. I’m afraid that there will simply be even more people who fall into Devilhood, so there’s a need for someone to constrain them.”

Constrain? Zhu Yao was startled. “You’re saying Yue Ying!?”

“Mn.”

“Why him? He’s still a child. Furthermore, he doesn’t have any relations with the other Devils...” Halfway through, she suddenly stopped. With widened eyes, she continued. “He’s of the God race.”

Realmspirit nodded. “His existence is necessary. He’s neither a God nor a Devil. He’s a Devil God.”

“.....”

“...”

“Devils are initially people who walk on another extreme path that’s out of the Heavenly Dao’s domain. They are the darkest side of living beings, a race that abandons their humanity.” Realmspirit sighed and said. “Without the restraints of the Heavenly Dao, they might turn into an existence similar to ‘resentment’. That’s why only a Devil can restrain a Devil, and Yue Ying is the only Devil God in the world. He is the only one who can control the Devils.”

“But a Devil God is still a Devil.” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “And from what you’re saying, the Devil race is a race that ignores the laws of the Heavenly Dao and walks on an extreme path, then a Devil God would be the same, right? How are you so certain that a Devil God will listen to the words of the Heavenly Dao?”

Realmspirit smiled, and looked at her seriously. “Isn’t he already following the will of the Heavenly Dao?”

Zhu Yao was stunned, and then she immediately had an answer. “Me?”

He revealed an even cheaper smile.

“The hell, why am I being pulled into this again? I just wish to see him become a good child...” Uh, now that she thought about it, she was really the only one who could restrain Yue Ying’s devillic nature. Even in front of her, other than that one time where he attempted to kill little wimp, he did not lose his sanity like other Devils and become slaughter machine.

Zhu Yao swept a glance at Realmspirit, and then stared at him intensely. “This can’t possibly be your plan right from the start when you sent me to the God races, right?”

Realmspirit stiffened, and then let out a silly laugh. “Aiyaya, young maiden, don’t be that way. I just wanted you to show your face around, I never expected that you would really be able to do it. You’re awesome!”

“Scram!” Zhu Yao threw a kick at him. “Hurry and speak. What other things were your schemes?”

“Young maiden...” He showed a crying face. “How can you call them schemes? Aren’t they just friendly support between friends? I simply foretold the endings a little.”

Zhu Yao grabbed onto his cheeks and strongly pulled them to the sides. “Stop changing the topic. Hurry and talk!”

“It hurts, it hurts, it hurts... Young maiden, this is your face, you know. How can you do such a thing?”

“Tch, I’m not the one hurting anyway.”

“...” She made so much sense he actually had nothing to refute with.

“Hurry and talk!”

“Alright, only one.” He weakly stretched out a finger. “It’s



related to the aftermath.”

“Aftermath?” Zhu Yao released her hands.

“Yaoyao, just as you’ve said. There has already been changes to the Heavenly Dao. Only those who doesn’t lose their beliefs will be able to open the Door of Ascension, but... “ He rubbed his cheeks. “What are we going to do about those people who are still in the Divine Realm?”

“...” Indeed. The Divine Realm now was filled with Deities who slaughtered their way up here.

“Lightning Divine Tower has been destroyed now, and the Light of Purification has been withdrawn. These Deities can no longer cultivate into Gods, so will they truly stay in the Divine Realm peacefully?”

“...” Naturally, they wouldn’t.

“I can’t throw them all into the reincarnation wheel for reconstruction, so I can only provide constraints.”

Constraints again!

Zhu Yao paused for a moment. As though she had thought of something, she immediately exploded. “Greedy beast, what else are you trying to do to my master?”

# Chapter 389: A Very Mysterious Plane

## Management Office

---

“It hurts, it hurts, it hurts...” Realmspirit pulled onto her hands, wanting to have her let go of his cheeks. “Calm down, calm down... I just want him to manage the Divine Realm and constrain the Deities, while leading them to adapt to the new Heavenly Dao. Merely that.”

Startled, Zhu Yao loosened her grip. “You want my master to manage the Divine Realm?”

“Mn, mn, mn...” He nodded.

“No way!” Zhu Yao frowned. “Master’s cultivation is indeed incredible, but you should know what sort of place the Divine Realm is. Even if we put aside those Deities that were ejected from the Lightning Divine Tower, among those outside, which one of them would be willing to listen? It would’ve been possible when Lightning Divine Palace was still the manager of the Lightning Divine Tower, but now that the tower is gone, if those Deities were to come together... Furthermore, there’s only a couple of us in the Lightning Divine Palace.” If every one of them were to simply spit water at us, we can still die, alright? Let alone manage the entire Divine Realm.

“Yaoyao...” Realmspirit once again patted on her hands, hinting her to let go.

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes before releasing her hands.

“Other people might not be able to, but Yu Yan can definitely do it.” As he rubbed his face, he took in some cold air and said. “Though the current Divine Realm isn’t ideal, all of the Deities are still under the Heavenly Dao.”

“Tch, you sound as if my master isn’t under...” Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment, and then she suddenly widened her eyes.

“The hell, you did that on purpose, didn’t you?” Indeed, the people of the Divine Realm were under the control of the Heavenly Dao, but there was one person who wasn’t, and that’s her master. Because the Heavenly Dao’s control on him had just disappeared, and she was the one who personally shattered it – the circle of ‘infinity’ symbols that was swirling around him.

Back then, her hands were itchy because she wanted her master to be free of the Heavenly Dao’s control and prevent him from walking into the Light of Purification.

Back then, to while away time, Yu Jin released the Disciplinary Order and declared that the Lightning Divine Palace was a place that enacted punishments in the Divine Realm. In the end, Realmspirit really began to treat Lightning Divine Palace as Divine Realm’s management office.

Thinking about it, it was a rather tragic story. Among the two people next to her, one was going to become the future manager of the Devils, while the other one was immediately about to take up the position of chairman of the Divine Realm. So she was sent here to this world to help Realmspirit pick out talents? What was she? A HR manager?

“Realmspirit, you can’t possibly have counted me in as well, right?” Zhu Yao looked at him with narrow eyes. I don’t wish to work for you any longer.

“Hohohoho... How can that be!” Realmspirit chuckled. Why did she feel she was about to be trolled? “Oh right, Yaoyao. Your mission this time has been completed. It’s time to receive your mission reward!”

Zhu Yao was dumbfounded. “You’re talking about the Plane Movement Permits!?”

“That’s right. You can freely choose to travel between two planes limitlessly, you know?”

“Wasn’t that something you made up to trick me? Weren’t you the one who controlled my movement between the planes?”

“Of course not!” Realmspirit said with a serious face. “Though I’m the spirit of the Three Realms, I’m only limited to this plane. Other planes have their own managers, and I have no authority to enter them. In order to cross between two worlds, I naturally have to obtain permission from the plane manager from your side.”

“Manager?” Why did she think of a president of a country or a chairman of some sort? There couldn’t really be a management office or an agency like that, right?

“Yaoyao, the world you live in is actually really vast as well, and it’s not smaller than the Three Thousand Worlds. The things you understand on earth are just a small part of it. Though, when I sought help back then, your manager recommended you to me. It seems like it has been proven that he’s right.”

“You know the manager of our world?”

“But of course!” He said with pride. “Isn’t this just for the sake of developing friendly ties between planes?”

Friendly ties, your sister! Are you trying to build harmony between planes? Then what am I? A representative sent for a friendly visit to your plane?

“Stop with the bullcrap. Where’s the permits?” She immediately stretched out her hand. “Hurry and give them to me!”

“Uh...” Realmspirit’s expression stiffened. “Yaoyao, actually, if you’re coming from that world, I will definitely welcome you with open arms, and I won’t even need a permit from you. The difficult part starts when we have to send you to your plane from here. That’s when the permit is needed. That’s why when you’re going back and forth from here to your plane, there’s actually no need for a permit. The permit is actually issued by your plane to the citizens of my side. I don’t have the authority to hand new

permits.”

“Speak human.” What do you mean?

“In other words, I can’t make this permit. You have to look for your world’s manager.”

“The hell!” Zhu Yao raised her hand and slapped the back of his head. “If you can’t make it, why the hell did you spout so much nonsense?”

He pitifully rubbed his head. “I can’t make it, but I can bring you to the manager of your plane to make it!”

Zhu Yao’s hand stopped. “How are we going to get there?”

“Don’t worry, I’ve already set the route.” He raised his hand with an excited look, and instantly, the two screens merged into one. Then, it slowly enlarged itself, and the numbers 1 and 0 constantly flashed within the combined screen. They looked especially familiar. Were they similar to binary codes?

“What is this?”

“This is a mystic treasure that your plane manager gifted me.” He said with an expression of reverence. “It can analyze the routes of all matters that happen in the Three Realms in advance, and find the loopholes almost instantaneously. It even has various other features. Do you still remember the conversation windows that you often see? They were all displayed by this mystic treasure. The cheats that you carry are all sent by it as well.”

The hell. So those stupid conversation windows and the cheats that were filled with potential retorts to be made, were all made by this object. Why did she feel like she had entered a game world? This object was clearly a high-tech, intelligent piece of equipment, wasn’t it!? Just what kind of person was the manager of her plane? Why did she feel like he was becoming even more incredible?

“Done!” Realmspirit excitedly said. “The route towards the management office has been constructed.”

Zhu Yao raised her head to take a look, and her face instantly darkened as the corners of her lips twitched.

Why the hell did it turn into a door? And a pick one at that, hey? Do you think this is Doraemon's Anywhere Door?

"Oh right, we have to stick an address on it!" Realmspirit pulled out a pen and a piece of post-it note out of nowhere. In a flash, he wrote a row of words on it, and with a raise of his hand, he stuck it onto the door with a slam.

Destination: Plane Management Office.

Zhu Yao: "... Let me think where I should start retorting from!

It really was the Anywhere Door, hey! One could navigate through just by sticking a paper on it. As the manager of a plane, was it really fine for it to be this easy?

"Yaoyao!" Realmspirit pulled onto Zhu Yao, his face was filled with never-before-seen seriousness. "The Management Office is right behind this door. My abilities can only be applied on this plane, and I am unable to intervene in your world's matters. You can only rely on yourself to obtain the permit."

Hey, why did you suddenly turn so serious? You're making me anxious too, hey.

"Just what kind of person is my world's manager?"

Realmspirit was silent for a short while, but his expression continued to sink. He looked at Zhu Yao tremblingly, and after a long while, he said. "I can only say... he's a very... stern person."

Stern! In other words, he wasn't a good person to speak with. Then would she still be able to make the permit?

Why don't I... first present a gift?

No matter what, she definitely had to obtain the Plane Movement Permit. She did not want to be separated from her master for all eternity. Zhu Yao took a deep breath, prepared herself mentally for

a long while, and then finally held onto the door handle. She turned it strongly, and the door creaked.

A ray of white light instantly enveloped her, and the scenery before her changed, revealing a room.

Along with the warm decorations, the place was furnished a complete set of tables, chairs, coffee table, shoe rack, sofa and television. There was even a man dressed in an apron with his hands holding onto a mop, and was mopping the floor seriously. He took steps back as he mopped, and when he reached the entrance, he even coldly shouted. "Raise your feet."

"Ou!" Zhu Yao instinctively took a step back and stood on the entrance mat.

She silently stood there for several minutes, looking blankly at the foreign-looking man as he mopped the floor twice. He even cleaned the tables, wiped the mirrors, dried the clothes, and even made breakfast.

Zhu Yao then thought that something must had been wrong with the way she opened the door. Why don't she try going back to open it again?

How could the Plane Management Office be such a homely place!? Furthermore, it even had a two rooms and a living room.

Eh, wait a minute! Why does this place looks so familiar?

Why were the two cups on the table so similar to the pair she bought from a street stall? Also, the floral cloth on the coffee table, the sofa that was filled with scratches, and even pot of chlorophytum placed next to the television was so similar to the one her best friend Guoguo was growing.

"Time to eat!" The man placed down the bowls and chopsticks, and then shouted out loud. Compared to the tone he used when he told her to raise her feet, it was basically filled with gentleness.

When his voice fell, the door on the left creaked open. Walking

out of it was a girl dressed in a panda pyjamas.

“Guoguo!” Zhu Yao widened her eyes.

The girl turned her head around and was stunned for a moment. “Yaoyao, when did you arrive? Why didn’t you give me a call? Have you eaten breakfast yet?”

“No...”

“Then come over.” She said as she pointed at the table.

“Ou.” Zhu Yao changed her shoes, washed her hands, and settled down on reflex.

Wait a minute! Something’s off?

“The hell!” Zhu Yao suddenly leapt up from shock. She pointed at the foreign-looking man who was sitting on the other side and nibbling on a bun. “Who is he?”

Her good friend Feng Guoguo calmly glanced at her, and then said. “A passerby... who likes to court death?”

“You casually brought a passerby into your house to clean and make food for you?” And what’s this about liking to court death? That’s right. This place was the home of her good friend Guoguo in the modern era. It was the place where she settled down in after moving out.

“I didn’t bring him back here!” Guoguo still had that stiffened expression on her face. “He followed me here.”

“Guoguo, are you alright?” Zhu Yao held her forehead. “He followed you here and you let him stay? What if he’s a bad person? No, I’m going to call the police.”

She picked up the cellphone that Guoguo placed on the table. Just as she was about to call 110, the cellphone suddenly made crackling noises as sparks flew out. The screen instantly turned black.

“It’s the fourth one now.” Guoguo suddenly said.



“...” What’s with that ‘fortunately, you’re rich’ expression on your face? The cellphone isn’t the point here, hey!

With nibbling buns as his main profession, and sneaking glances at Guoguo as his sub, the man who had been silent the entire time suddenly raised his head and glanced at Zhu Yao. His eyes were as cold as ice. Zhu Yao unconsciously began to tremble. She looked at the wrecked phone in her hand and instantly understood.

“You’re... the Plane Manager.”

# Chapter 390: The Manager of Guoguo's Home

---

The man did not reply, acting as if he could not hear her. He simply picked up a small soup dumpling with his chopsticks and carefully placed it in Guoguo's bowl. After seeing Guoguo eat it, the smile he carried was as if his entire being had bloomed.

Hey, your character setting has collapsed!

“What is a Plane Manager?” Though Guoguo grew curious and asked.

Zhu Yao hesitated for a moment, and then pulled Guoguo, who was still grasping onto a bun, into the room. With a click, she locked the door. “Guoguo, I have something very serious to tell you. That person outside, he might not... be a regular person.”

“I know!” Guoguo said with a calm look.

“Hah?”

“He was still a fish when he first came here. Today...” Guoguo thought of the breakfast on the table. After hesitating for a moment, she said. “He's a ‘Mister Snail’, right?”

The hell is a Mister Snail? And the first time these two met, the man didn't appear in his human form either? Guoguo, just how thick are your nerves to actually stay this calm, hey!? This man definitely has some ulterior motives!

“Guoguo!” She grabbed onto her shoulders and shook her. “Just what is going on? How long have you known him? What has he done to you? Tell me everything!” My only good friend is about to be taken away by an unknown and dangerous creature!

“Stop... Stop shaking already. I will tell you... Actually, it's three months ago.” Guoguo sighed and said. “When I came back from my vacation, didn't I tell you about it?”

“Three months ago...” Zhu Yao dug into her memories. It should be the time when she returned from her transmigration, as Guoguo did indeed just return from her vacation back then. Back then, she seemed to have suddenly asked her a very strange question. (Chapter 262) “Mermaid!?”

She remembered now. Guoguo seemed to have suddenly asked her if mermaids actually existed in this world. Back then, she wondered if Guoguo had crossed over to another world as well and had seen a sharkman? After that, she had to head out because of her master’s incident, so she had forgotten about this matter.

“Could it be... you really saw one back then?”

“That’s right. When I was on my vacation back then, I saw him dragging his huge fishtail, and was this close to dying dry next to the road.”

“So... you saved him?”

Guoguo turned to look at her, and calmly said. “I didn’t?”

“Hah?” Zhu Yao felt her jaw had dropped. “You... didn’t save him?”

“That’s right!”

“Why?”

“After seeing an unknown creature collapse by the road, if I don’t run away, what else should I do? Stay behind and have lunch?”

Uh... She makes a lot of sense. That’s a human’s normal reaction.

“Then... After that?”

“After that, I came home?”

“...” Why don’t you act according to the usual script? “Then why is he here?”

“On the night you moved out, he suddenly appeared in the bathtub. His fishtail disappeared as well.” Guoguo raised the little

soup dumpling that was still clasped between her chopsticks, and with an ‘ahm’, she swallowed it down.

“A man suddenly appeared inside your house’s bathtub. Don’t you think it’s strange?” Where’s your common sense? Where are your nerves?

“It’s indeed rather strange.” Guoguo nodded and said with a puzzled look. “If he’s a fish and the place he was lying on did not have any water, why was he still able to run over to my house for water before being dried to death?”

“...” Was that the main point here, hey?

“Yaoyao, don’t worry. Compared to you, I have my own measures.”

“...” Why do I feel like I’m being looked down upon?

Guoguo immediately pulled her to the bed and settled her down. “Why don’t we talk about what’s happening to you instead?”

Zhu Yao turned to look at her. After hesitating for a moment, she still gritted her teeth and told her everything about how she was transmigrated to a cultivation world.

“That’s the story. Realmspirit told me that this place is where the Plane Management Office is, but that guy was the first person I saw the moment I got here. So he definitely isn’t normal.”

Guoguo looked at with a strange expression for a moment. “So what you’re saying is that you found a part-time job in another plane, brought back a man while doing it, and even solved your problem of being a leftover woman. The reason why you came back today is to obtain a visa for your boyfriend?”

“Uh... You can put it that way.” Her explanation was well-covered.

Guoguo’s expression turned even weirder. As though she was about to say something, there was a knock on the door at that

moment.

“Guoguo, do you want to drink a cup of milk?”

It's that man's voice.

Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. A mighty plane manager suddenly appeared here to wash clothes and make food for her best friend. She wondered just what was his motive? For a moment, she grew a little anxious. No, I must think of something...

“Guoguo, what are you doing?”

Before she could even clear up everything in her mind, Guoguo had already pulled open the door. The diligent housekeeper was standing outside with a cup of warm milk in his hand. He was currently looking at Guoguo with sparkling eyes. “Milk...”

Guoguo took it and proudly drank it all in one gulp. Then, she immediately went straight into the main point. “Yaoyao told me that you're a Plane Manager?”

“...” If you're asking so directly, it would be strange if he replies truthfully, right?

“That's right!” The man nodded.

The hell! He really went and answered her, hey! Do you have to be that direct!?

“Can you grant a plane visa?”

“Yes!”

“Then grant Yaoyao a few. It's really difficult for her to find a man at her age. They can't break up just because they're in different places.”

“Alright.”

Zhu Yao: “...” Uh, was a long-distance relationship the problem here? It's two Plane Movement Permits, you know? If it's solved so easily, I don't feel any sense of achievement!

The man pulled out a pen and a book out of nowhere, and then wrote down a few things. As he wrote, he even raised his head. “How many?”

“Uh...” Zhu Yao weakly stretched out two fingers. “Two.”

Guoguo suddenly widened her eyes as she swept them across Zhu Yao.

“One for my husband, and the other for my little brother!” Zhu Yao hurriedly explained. Withdraw that ‘you’re sitting on a fence’ expression of yours, hey!

“Name?”

“Yu Yan, Yue Ying.”

“Gender?”

“Male.”

“Occupation...”

“Uh... Temporarily unemployed.”

“Inch sized passport photographs.”

“...” Why is there even a need for photographs as well? Flips table! Realmspirit didn’t tell me that!

“Genetic information or soul fragments are fine as well.”

“Uh... I don’t have them!” Who the hell will carry someone else’s genes and soul fragments, hey!?

That man raised his head and coldly glared at her. With a smack, he closed the book in his hand. “Incomplete information, review on hold.”

“...” Don’t! The hell you mean by ‘review on hold’, hey!? Just how hard do you think it takes me to cross over to another world, hey? Zhu Yao looked at her best friend next to her with a pitiful expression.

Guoguo received her SOS signal, and immediately asked. “Are

photographs really necessary?”

That man’s face instantly bloomed with the warmth of spring, as he looked at Guoguo shyly. “Not... Not really.”

Then why the hell did you put my review on hold, hey!?

“Then Yaoyao doesn’t have to hand them over for her two applicants then.”

The man immediately nodded. “Alright!” He replied ever so readily.

Zhu Yao: “...” So, he was intentionally making things difficult for her?

The man tore out the two pages that he had just finished writing on, but instead of passing them to her, he presented them to Guoguo. “Done.”

Guoguo then passed them to Zhu Yao.

Written on lined papers were one large word: Movement! On each of the papers’ right corners, Yu Yan’s and Yue Ying’s names were written on them.

“This...” It’s done just like that? Isn’t this too simple? What happened to the promised luxurious movement permit issued by authorities? At the very least, provide me with guidelines on how to use them?

“Effective immediately.” As if he had guessed what she was thinking about, the man explained, though he was looking at her with a scornful look. “A guide must be present during a plane transfer. The permit holders can only come over when you return.”

In other words, her master and Yue Ying could only cross over with her at the same time. That was fine.

“The permits must be activated in two hours through verification. Otherwise, they will be invalid.” The man said, still

with the ice-cold tone.

“Activate? How to activate them?” Could it be that her master still needed to send a verification SMS?

The man frowned, and his expression grew even more scornful. “They will automatically activate once they make contact with their targets.”

In other words, she just had to hand the permits to her master and Yue Ying. Fortunately, she still had two hours.

“Guoguo...” Seeing how this person listened to Guoguo’s requests, it seemed like he was treating her sincerely? Otherwise, flowers wouldn’t bloom the moment he land his eyes on her. However, as her only good friend, she still had to instruct her on some matters. After all, this person had an incredible identity.

Before she could even speak, the man suddenly interrupted. “They will be invalid if they’re not activated.”

“Isn’t there still two hours?”

“One hour.”

“Hah?” Zhu Yao was startled.

The man’s expression turned colder, and continued to correct his own words. “Half an hour.”

“The hell, you can’t actually be chasing me out, right?”

“Twenty minutes...”

“Hey, hey, hey. Do you have to be that fickle?”

“Ten minutes.”

“...”

“Five minutes.”

“You’re ruthless, alright!” Zhu Yao turned and headed for the door. “Guoguo, I will come back and look for you once the permits are activated.”



Only then did the man's expression look better as he followed Yaoyao to the door.

Zhu Yao opened the door directly, only to see the familiar staircase. She then turned to look at that dangerous manager. "How am I supposed to return?"

The man did not reply and instead walked hurriedly over. She did not know what he did, but when he closed and opened the door again, the view outside had already been replaced by a white portal.

The hell, it turned into an Anywhere Door again!

Just as Zhu Yao was about to enter, an idea suddenly flashed in her mind. As though she had just understood something, she turned back to look at the person whose face was filled with the words "hurry and scram". She suddenly recalled Realmspirit's words, that the reason why he chose her was because someone recommended her. Then...

"You can't possibly be the person who recommended me to Realmspirit, right?"

The man's reply was... kicking her directly into the portal.

The hell! It really was him! She had always been a normal person without any incredible powers or identity. She had never stepped on any dog poop, nor was there any mysterious birthmark on her body that represented her identity or anything? Even if she were to participate in a lottery, she wouldn't win at all. So why was she chosen to transmigrate to another world?

In the end, it was all to have her move away and use that opportunity to get close to Guoguo. It had to be known that Guoguo was a girl that was even more shut-in than her.

As a Plane Manager, do you think you're a man by playing these kinds of tricks? Just you wait! This old lady will return and expose your true face of a lowly person in front of Guoguo!

Szz... Aiyo, my buttocks!

His kick was really ruthless!

“Young maiden, you’re back so quickly?” Realmspirit sprinted over with an excited look. He glanced at the two papers in her hand. “You really obtained them, you’re so incredible. As expected of the woman I chose.”

Zhu Yao just wanted to say, “Hoho...”

“Eh!?” He was stunned for a moment, and then she said ecstatically. “Your Plane Manager actually gave you a Plane Imprint as well.”

“What imprint?”

“It’s the authority to freely move between two planes. Initially, movement between two planes require a thousand years cooldown. With this imprint, then there’s no such restriction.”

“Where is it?” She glanced at the permits in her hand. I don’t see any imprints?

“Over here.”

Realmspirit waved his hand excitedly, and Zhu Yao simply felt a golden light flash behind her. Slowly, what rose was a... shoe print with the number 42 on it.

“.....”

“...”

The hell!

Mister Snail: There’s this Chinese folklore called ‘The Snail Girl’. A man brought back home a snail one day when he saw it by the road. In order to repay the debt of saving her, she turned into a girl and began caring for his house. So ‘Mister Snail’ is like a genderbent version of the story.

# Chapter 391: Realmspirit's Return

---

After she returned to Realmspirit's side, the two pieces of paper she brought back turned strings of characters and flew off to the distance. They had automatically gone to find Yu Yan and Yue Ying to activate the permits. That so-called Plane Imprint had directly entered her divine sense, openly floating at its very core.

A shoe print of size 42 was floating in her primordial spirit, Zhu Yao simply felt uncomfortable all over. This feeling of being stepped on by someone at every moment was simply heartstopping. Because of this point, she was never going to accept that lowly person being together with Guoguo. Even she had to tear the two of them apart, she was going to object to their relationship to the very end!

Hmph! She was a serious person like that.

"Yaoyao, even though it looks a little... It's still an imprint." Realmspirit patted on her shoulder, and suddenly suggested. "If you really dislike it, why don't I... modify it for you?"

Zhu Yao turned around. "Modify?" How are you going to modify it?

Realmspirit chuckled. With a wave of his hand, a light breeze swept past. A new mass of light appeared in Zhu Yao's primordial spirit, and the light slowly gathered and stretched. Then...

It turned into another shoe print.

Realmspirit had a satisfied look. "Now it's better!"

"Better, your sister!" Flips table! One shoe print is already troubling enough, why the hell did you want to make it a pair? "Do you believe me when I say I'm going to slice you to death?"

"It hurts, it hurts, it hurts..." Realmspirit breathed in cold air as he screamed. "Don't hit my face... Aiyoyoyoyo..."

“Hurry and remove that shoe print.” Momma’s egg. Earlier I was stepped on, and now I was stepped on a second time. Also, one of them is size 43, while the other is size 42? Even if the new one is colorful and has more patterns, please pay attention when you’re stepping on someone, alright?

“This is something very useful, the Three Realms Imprint...” Realmspirit said innocently.

“Three Realms Imprint? What’s that?” Zhu Yao loosened her grip. She suddenly had a bad feeling. She calmed her heart down and then looked at the new shoe print. She saw the curvy lines around the center of the imprint form three letters – CEO!

“The hell’s with this CEO? You best explain to me!” The hell, stop giving me weird things!

“Calm down, calm down!” Realmspirit looked at her with a pair of sparkling eyes. “This is the ultimate reward pack! Three Realms Imprint! With this, my powers are for you to use, and your friendship level with the Three Realms is instantly maxed out. Your journey to the Three Realms will be worriless and painless! It’s an essential product for travelling between planes, you know?”

“Why does it sound rather unreliable?” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes. “Say it again in human language!”

“In other words, you can freely move about in the Three Realms with this.”

“Really?” There’s something that good? “Are you certain there’s no side effects?”

“Hohoho, why would there be?”

“If there isn’t, why are you standing so far away from me?” Zhu Yao glanced at the distance between them. They were suddenly three meters apart.

“Uh...” Just as Realmspirit was planning to take another step back, he stiffened. After a while, he said. “Well, there is that really

small side effect...”

“Speak!”

“When it comes to the matters of the Three Realms in the future, there’s a need for you to temporarily manage them in my place.” His smile grew even more sly. “In other words, you’re the manager of this plane now! How awesome is that!”

“.....”

“...”

So she had been forcefully signed into doing a labour contract. Awesome, your sister! Who told you I want to become a manager now?

“Take back the imprint. Immediately. Now!”

“This imprint can’t be withdrawn. At the very least, before I awaken again.”

Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment. “Awaken? What do you mean?”

Realmspirit smiled with a satisfied look on his face, as his body began to turn transparent bit by bit.

“Hey, hey, hey... What’s happening to you?” Her heart sank as she grabbed onto his hand. “Why are you turning transparent all of a sudden!”

“It’s fine...” She said without a mind. “This is normal.”

“How is this normal? You’re about to disappear! Don’t scare me, hey.” Though he was a little detestable, she never thought that he would disappear. “At the very most, I won’t have you remove the shoe print for now. I will become a manager and help you with stamping papers.”

“Yaoyao...” Realmspirit held onto her hands. “I came into this world as a spirit and gained sentience because of this plane’s crisis. Now that you have helped me construct a brand new Heavenly

Dao, I naturally have no need to continue existing.”

“What do you mean by ‘no need’? You best not die!”

“Don’t worry. I’m the Three Realms. As long as the Three Realms exist, how can I possibly die?” Realmspirit said without a mind. “Now that order has been restored, there’s no longer a need for a spirit of the realms. I will just be returning to the main body of the Three Realms.”

How’s that any different from dying?

Zhu Yao clenched her fists. “It’s all because... I changed the Heavenly Dao?”

“Yaoyao... It’s fine. I will always be here.” Realmspirit smiled. “The Three Realms in their entirety are all me. I was incredibly sick in the past, and you helped me find the cure. Right now, I am just returning to my healthy state.”

Zhu Yao was silent for a moment. “Is there a need for you to disappear?”

“I am the manifestation of the old Heavenly Dao. Only after my return can the new order truly begin.” His body grew even more transparent, and only a faint image of his body was left. “That’s why, I’m requesting this of you. Before the awakening of the new Realmspirit, please help me safeguard this world, alright?”

Zhu Yao could not express the feelings in her heart in words, though something bitter was surging within her. “Are these like your final words?”

“You can put it that way!” He smiled. “This is my final request, alright?”

Zhu Yao took a step forward and hugged him. She was only able to suppress the emotions in her heart after taking a deep breath. “Realmspirit, thank you.”

He was dumbfounded for a moment. Right after, he revealed a

brilliant smile that was as warm as the sun of dawn.

How could Zhu Yao not understand the true purpose behind her managing the Three Realms? He was the spirit of the Three Realms, and the moment he were to disappear, no one would possess the ability to move across planes. In other words, she might not be able to return to her former world, let alone bringing her master over. After all, without a guide, the permits would be useless. That was why he entrusted the entire Three Realms to her and have her become their manager. That way, she would have the ability to cross planes.

“Yaoyao...”

“Mn?”

“Are we still friends?”

“Of course. We’ve always been.”

“Great.”

Zhu Yao continued to embrace him like that, until his figure grew fainter and finally turn into tiny spheres of light, disappearing before her eyes. She stood still for a few moments before regaining her senses. Her heart suddenly felt a little empty. She could sense that Realmspirit had truly disappeared this time.

No, disappearance wasn’t it. He had returned to his main body – every single plant, tree, and everything in the Three Realms. Just as he had said, he was everywhere.

However... He could no longer bicker or chat with her.

Speaking of which, there were times where Realmspirit’s actions had made her feel disgusted, but in the end, all of them were excusable. Just as he had said, the Three Realms were walking on a path of ruin, and he had simply sought help from her as a friend.

Now that she thought about it, she had known him in the modern era for five years. There were clearly countless

opportunities for him to have her transmigrate over, but he didn't. Rather, he only transferred her after obtaining her permission. Though there were some cover-ups, she could understand the reasons behind them now. If Realmspirit had told her of his identity right from the start, she most likely wouldn't have seen this world clearly. She would simply be an outsider giving a few suggestions. She wouldn't have been able to experience it with her own body and see things with her own eyes. Even if she had the opportunity to walk across the Three Realms, she would have simply done it in the perspective of a player.

That way, the opinions she give would most likely be limited, and there wouldn't have been a guarantee that this world's Heavenly Dao would be completely fixed. Furthermore, Realmspirit only had one chance. He was the spirit of the Three Realms, the materialization of the Heavenly Dao. If the Heavenly Dao had to be reconstructed, then he would definitely disappear.

Realmspirit made a very huge gamble by taking her in. He betted himself and the lives of all the living beings in the entire plane on her. Even if he couldn't see the results now, he still betted everything without turning back.

How could she possibly dare to fail such huge trust that was placed on her? That's why... seeing that they were friends, she had no choice but to continue working for him.

\*\*\*

Zhu Yao took a deep breath and carefully sensed the Three Realms Imprint in her primordial spirit. Everything in the Three Realms was displayed before her, and at that moment, she felt like she could control everything. This was different from pure power. Rather, it was like a form of will. Everything could be controlled at her whim. It's as if she was looking at... a game's main engine. All of the living beings here were like player accounts, while she had entered the game's back-end control system. She could alter any of the data and even change the game's modes.



Zhu Yao had a simple glance before immediately withdrawing from it. This authority was too huge, and she had to take her time to study it. She was truly a little worried that she would end up collapsing the game entirely if she changed something.

This was something that Realmspirit did not dare to casually change back then, so naturally she wouldn't make huge changes either. Back then, Realmspirit simply called out the Light of Purification to exterminate resentment, but it ended up birthing side effects such as the rumours of the Realm of Gods being in the Lightning Divine Tower. This led to Deities being washed away of their seven emotions and six desires, along with their qualifications of entering the reincarnation wheel. As a newcomer, there needn't to be said. Furthermore, the new Heavenly Dao had already been formed, so this was not the time to make changes either.

She just had to safeguard it properly, and if she were to be in a good mood, she would just have to fix a few of the remaining bugs. However, just how would she find out what were bugs?

Ting!

Suddenly, a familiar notification bell could be heard. The size 43 shoe print in her primordial spirit suddenly shot out a blue ray of light. A conversation window instantly appeared before her. This time, the choices and words on it were a lot more than before, and after looking at it properly, she found out that it was actually a long form. Written on it with large and bolded font was: System's New User Registration Form.

Below it were a dozen rows of cumbersome fields that required her account name, password, name, etcetera.

Zhu Yao: "..."

Is this a census?

Wait a minute!

She recalled that Realmspirit once mentioned the system was gifted to him by the manager of her plane. A certain unknown creature living in Guoguo's apartment suddenly flashed in her mind. The hell! This thing is actually made by him.

No, this can't do! I'm definitely going to head back and launch a complaint.

Zhu Yao resentfully filled up the form. At that moment, the screen flashed, and a few windows appeared before her eyes. All of the windows were different, though the same string of white words was written on them: Suspicious case of a bug! Not a threat as of now.

It seemed like it was an smart system of some sort that could predict and monitor the loopholes of the Three Realms.

She then sent a will and the screen disappeared, returning into her primordial spirit. With this, she no longer had to worry about finding bugs.

Taking a deep breath, she suddenly felt her shoulders being a little heavy. Realmspirit had handed the Three Realms to her. She could not guarantee that she could do her job well, but she did not want to let down the trust he had that made him bet everything on her. Clenching her fists, she accepted this role of CEO!

Until... the new Realmspirit awakens.

---

Wait a minute! Remove that horizontal line for now!

She just recalled something...

Realmspirit seemed to have mentioned that she was born as a spirit because the Three Realms were on the verge of collapse. Then, for the new Realmspirit to be born, wouldn't it only happen when...

The hell, why do I feel as though I have been tricked again!?

# Chapter 392: Divine Realm Management Plan

---

The Lightning Divine Tower had fallen. All of the Deities within had been sent out, and for a period of time, the Divine Realm had fallen into a state of chaos. No one knew what happened, but all of them had a faint feeling that from then on, no one could become Gods.

To Deities, this shock was undoubtedly immense. Ascending to Godhood was the life goal of all Deities. Now that the opportunity was gone just like that, which one of them wouldn't feel depressed? This was especially so for those who had entered the tower early and had struggled to climb to the ninth floor of the tower. They merely had to climb one more floor to attain Godhood, but the tower suddenly collapsed just like that and even ejected every single one of them.

Yet no one had the ability to build it up again. These Deities were utterly dispirited and devastated! With nowhere to vent their frustration, they could only aim their fury at the people of Lightning Divine Palace.

In the past, no one in the Divine Realm dared to offend the Lightning Divine Palace. Other than the facts that the disciples of Lightning Divine Palace had incredible cultivation and possessed lightning-type arts that boasted the most powerful offensive power, the most important reason was that they managed the Lightning Divine Tower.

Now, the tower was gone and tons of old ancestors had made their way out. Every single one possessed over-the-top cultivation and could casually suppress ten High Deities. Furthermore, since the reason behind the collapse of the Lightning Divine Tower was unclear, the main suspect would naturally be the people that managed the Lightning Divine Tower. Thus, every single one of

them pointed their spears at Lightning Divine Palace.

No matter if they're disciples of Demonic Immortals, disciples of divine sects, or even Wandering Deities, everyone believed that Lightning Divine Tower should provide them an explanation. Altogether, they came right to their doorsteps.

Actually, rather than seeking them out for an explanation, which one of them didn't harbour intentions of taking this opportunity to suppress Lightning Divine Palace? After all, everyone knew that the reputation behind Lightning Divine Palace was built upon real skills and abilities. Though they had now lost the backing known as the Lightning Divine Tower, based on the aptitudes of the disciples of the sect alone, they would be able to regain their composure in due time. If they were to miss this opportunity to make a move on the Lightning Divine Palace, they were afraid that they would still have to be suppressed in the future. After all, among these people who had entered the tower, who would be willing to stand beneath others?

Ever since the beginning of the Divine Realm, this was the first time the three factions had come together. With boiling rage, they were here together to have Lightning Divine Palace pay their debts, surrounding the sect in its entirety. They had even directly destroyed the lightning formations outside.

However, they did not expect that the disciples of Lightning Divine Palace that came to meet their challenge actually numbered more than ten people as well. Furthermore, every single one of them had incredible cultivation. Even the lowest among them had the cultivation of a High Deity. Other than the present Floor Master who was taking the lead, the rest possessed powers at the third floor and above. The person next to the Floor Master even possessed power at the tenth floor.

That was cultivation that only those who could enter the highest floor of Lightning Divine Tower could achieve! The crowd of Deities were utterly astonished. Yet, they couldn't not feel sorry

for him either. After all, he had already climbed to the highest floor, yet he wasn't able to become God either. Just how unfortunate was he!? He was definitely the most pitiful person in the tower, second to none!

A shred of caution rose in the hearts of the Deities, though they did not feel fear. Though power of a tenth floor achiever was incredible, he was only a single man. There were dozens on Deities who had reached the ninth floor on their side. Furthermore, the difference in power between floors in the tower was not as huge as a difference in a large cultivation realm. The more people there were, the less impossible it was to go against someone of a higher level. At the very most, they would have to spend a little more time. This battle was definitely a stable win for the side of the crowd of Deities. Lightning Divine Palace was going to disappear from the face of this world at this moment.

The crowd of Deities was filled with confidence, and Lightning Divine Palace sternly awaited their move.

Yu Jin could not help but feel a little worried as well. This was surely the biggest threat to Lightning Divine Palace yet, and even the joy from reuniting with his master could not suppress the heaviness in his heart. Lightning Divine Palace was going to meet its downfall on that day, unless a miracle were to occur.

And then... a miracle really occurred!

Yu Jin did not know what happened. He watched as the crowd of Deities charge forward with their surging killing intent as the huge war began. The moment he raised his sword, he suddenly caught a glimpse of a ray of light flash across his eyes. It instantly entered Yu Yan's forehead, and he couldn't even get a good look at it due to its sheer speed. A never-before-seen ∞ symbol suddenly floated out of Yu Yan's forehead.

Yu Yan was startled as well, as he touched his forehead in an understanding manner.

“Little Yanyan...” Just as he was about to ask, the crowd of Deities before them were already launching their attacks.

The situation after that was a complete reversal...

In just a single instant, Yu Yan released an incomparable might from his body. Terrifying pressure enveloped everyone present, and everyone felt as if the entire sky could collapse on them at any moment. It was so powerful, they did not even dare to think of resisting it.

Like drop dumplings, the crowd of Deities all fell down from the sky. Loud booms followed as every single one of their bodies sank thirty percent into the earth. They couldn't move at all. And this included... the people of Lightning Divine Palace.

The hell! Yu Jin felt like cussing out. Little Yanyan, this old man is on your side!

Possibly because he received his retort, the pressure on the people of Lightning Divine Palace disappeared the moment before they were about to sink into the earth.

Yu Yan was the only one remaining in the sky. Like usual, he simply stood there expressionlessly, though a golden halo seemed to be faintly shining behind his head. It sprinkled his entire body with lustrous light, as though he was a God of the Nine Heavens of legends.

God!?

Could it be that someone of Lightning Divine Palace have attained Godhood, and have yet to ascend to the Realm of Gods?

In an instant, the hearts of the crowd of Deities crumbled. Facing such terrifying and heavenly pressure, why in the ass would they still fight!? He had hundreds of methods to kill them if he wanted to.

However, this was not the end. The entire Lightning Divine Palace suddenly shook immensely. At the ruins of the collapsed

Lightning Divine Tower, white light suddenly shone. The white shattered rubbles began to fly up and gather together.

Yu Jin who had just returned to the skies was stunned. This... Could it be that the Lightning Divine Tower is able to reconstruct itself automatically?

The rubbles continued to pile up, but they did not form the structure of a tower, but instead gathered to form a platform, and the center of the platform was actually empty. White light glittered at the center like a well of light, and if one were to look at it from above, he or she could see the shadow of the Three Thousand Worlds. Furthermore, strings of white runic symbols were flashing all around.

An enormous white stone monument was erected on the right of the platform, and several red lights flashed across it. Three huge words then appeared on it – Divine Punishment Platform!

Yu Jin was stunned.

To think it was actually divine punishment! First it was the tower of ascending to Godhood, and now it was a platform for punishing Deities. This change was a little too big.

“Little Yanyan, this...” Just what is going on over here? Give me an explanation, yo.

“I don’t know.” Yu Yan shook his head. He simply felt like he had received a foreign power all of a sudden, and it seemed like it could overpower countless Deities. As for the Divine Punishment Platform that suddenly appeared, he was completely oblivious.

Yu Yan frowned, and only then did he turn to look at the “dumplings” on the ground.

“Scram!”

An incredibly simple command, yet overpowering like thunder, entered the ears of every single one of the “dumplings”, causing their hearts to tremble.

Yu Jin was dumbfounded. Just how long had it been since he entered the tower? When did Little Yanyan possess such incredible cultivation? Why wasn't he aware of it?

“Little Yanyan, you... Eh? Where are you going?” Before Yu Jin could finish, he saw Yu Yan flying towards Lightning Divine Palace.

Yu Yan did not stop, and simply replied as he flew. “My disciple is returning soon. I'm going to make dinner!”

People of Lightning Divine Palace: “...”

---

The crusade against Lightning Divine Palace led by countless Deities ended in failure. The various sects and clans had no choice but to hide their tails and behave themselves for a while, afraid that Lightning Divine Palace would slaughter their way in because of a moment of irritation. Though several ancestors had returned to the various sects from the Lightning Divine Tower and pulled up their strength by a huge margin, they could not hold a candle against an opponent who possessed overpowering strength akin to that of a God's! With the terrifying power he possessed, he merely had to release his pressure, and he would be able to strike fear on them to the point they wouldn't dare to raise their heads. Not to mention, the people that went to find fault with Lightning Divine Palace were the people that returned from Lightning Divine Tower!

Though that person had let them go back then, everyone could not help but stay tensed, fearfully waiting for him to settle the score after fall. However, this wait continued on for several months, and yet, not a single movement could be seen from Lightning Divine Palace. It was as if he had completely forgotten about this incident.

From the initial worry, anxiety, and helplessness, they were finally able to calmly accept the outcome. Most likely, he basically



did not take this matter to heart at all. With that person's strength, he might really not have taken these people of the Divine Realm seriously. Mn. Though it was a little depressing just from thinking about it, at the very least, the crisis of the various sects and clans had been averted.

Thus, everyone's tension began to loosen, and they calmly continued with their lives. They were now busy dealing with their internal affairs. Before, everyone had a common target, and so they could band together to fight with the Boss Monster. Now that the Boss Monster leveled up, the hidden troubles within the various sects appeared.

There was a considerable number of Deities who came out of Lightning Divine Tower back then. Every single one of them had a place to return to in name, after all, they just had to return to their own sects. However, it must be known that these people weren't all kind. Them coming out together, did not mean they had entered together. These people who could enter the Lightning Divine Tower back then, were all renown figures to begin with. Every single one of them was someone who had gotten used to giving orders. Now, here came the problem. Who should listen to who? Since they were in the same sect, there should be a hierarchy, right? Though they could use their strength to determine their positions, these people were not harmonious within the tower. Either too much time had passed and they did not recognize anyone, or they had harboured grudges in the tower. Without a common target like the Lightning Divine Palace, internal conflicts instantly erupted.

Almost every single sect and clan faced the same problem, while the Demonic Immortal Continent was faring a little better instead. After all, they were tied by bloodlines. Other than the pressure from the difference in strength, they merely had to conduct a few battles. They couldn't possibly lead to a huge fuss at all.

Deities were however different. Be they strategies at day or

schemes at night, every single one of them displayed their divine abilities. For a short while, the entire Deity Continent was covered in smoke as a huge war erupted. No one was willing to submit to the other. Just as a huge chaotic battle was about to ensue in the Divine Realm...

Suddenly, a voice transmission resounded through the skies.

“Ahem... Hey! Can you all hear me?”

This voice felt as if it had come from breaking through space, and it was clearly a female voice. It wasn't loud, but for some reason, it was clearly transmitted to every corner of the Divine Realm. For a moment, all the restless Deities were stunned, as they dumbfoundedly listened to the voice transmission that seemed to be coming from everywhere around them.

“Hello, friends of the Divine Realm! I'm calling from the broadcast station of Lightning Divine Palace! I'm now announcing an emergency notice. In order to create the perfect Divine Realm, build a harmonious society, and maintain the stable development of the Three Realms, the 'Lightning Divine Palace High Level Deity Court' shall officially be established today. The court is the highest legal institution of the Divine Realm, and has the authority to act on everything that happens in the Divine Realm. The court verdicts will be fair, justified, and open to public. Its goal will be to exterminate all evil in the Divine Realm. I shall now recite the first rule of the first section of the first paragraph of the Divine Realm Laws. From this day forth, as long as one is a citizen of the Divine Realm, irregardless of your sect or race, one is forbidden from all slaughtering activities. One who commits killings, will be meted with the highest form of punishment. He or she will be charged on the 'Divine Punishment Platform', stripped off their divine physique and celestial bones, and be banished to the mortal realm for reincarnation. This emperor... ah pui! Sincerely and respectfully, Lightning Divine Palace Advertisement Department. Day , month , year \*\*.”

Deities: “...” The heck?

# Chapter 393: The Final Finale

---

The heavenly voice came too suddenly, and it was even a female voice. The crowd of Deities and their little companions were all dumbfounded. After staring blankly in the air for a short while, they then regained their senses. The moment they digested the information, the entire Divine Realm instantly exploded.

The hell was a high level court? What's this authority to mete out punishments? And where was this Divine Punishment Platform? When did Lightning Divine Palace start managing such things? Not to mention not a single discussion was made about this at all? Were they trying to take over the Divine Realm?

And what's with this forbidding of all slaughtering activities? Though on the surface, the number of people killed for no reason in the Divine Realm was few, among those who could ascend and become Deities, who hadn't stained their hands in blood? Furthermore, in secret, putting aside taking others' lives, the number of measures they had taken to scatter souls and stop people from reincarnating were countless. Killing people and taking their treasures happened everywhere. With just a single announcement made by Lightning Divine Palace, they think it was possible to prohibit them from happening?

However, after experiencing the battle with Lightning Divine Palace back then, everyone knew that Lightning Divine Palace had birthed someone whose cultivation was comparable to a God's. With this experience still fresh, for a moment, the Deities maintained a doubtful attitude. After all, cultivating was tough. If they were truly going to be banished to the mortal realm with their cultivation crippled, they couldn't guarantee that they could make it back.

With thoughts of better being safe than sorry, the various Deities abided to the law for a period of time. The various sects in the continent had all commanded their disciples to restrain

themselves, and even the Scattered Fif Hall that was formed by Wandering Deities issued several warnings. The internal conflicts within the sects were now kept rather low-key. Though there were several verbal conflicts, there hadn't been a case where they actually truly made a move against each other.

The Divine Realm calmed down for a period of time, but this peace did not last for long.

As time passed, Lightning Divine Palace did not make anymore movements. Three months later, some people could no longer contain their urges, and there were traces of conflicts sprouting.

Another three months passed, yet there still wasn't any movement made by the Lightning Divine Palace. The Deities felt at ease now, so they went and did anything they wanted. They had completely thrown the strange heavenly voice they heard on that day out of their heads, believing that this was all an elaborate display made by Lightning Divine Palace to exaggerate their authority. How could controlling the entire Divine Realm be an easy feat? Furthermore, who would know if someone committed murder? Unless Lightning Divine Palace could follow behind every single person every single day and watch their every move?

However, just when everyone felt at ease and began to continue on their quest to level up, fight monsters, kill Deities and rob treasures, a new heavenly voice resounded across the skies once more.

“Disciple of Advent Cloud Hall, Zhao Xiangyan, disciple of Thisthower Mountain, Wei Junxiang, disciples of Fluorescent Wind Clan, Ji Bo and Qian Ning, disciple of Soaring Enlightenment Palace, Chai Yunliang, and Wandering Deity Dongfang Xi. These six abovementioned people robbed the belongings of their victims and led to the deaths of the victims. They are convicted of murder, and shall receive their punishments at the Divine Punishment Platform of Lightning Divine Palace at noon tomorrow.”

These words were straight to the point, and there was not the least bit intention to give any further explanation. The Deities were only stunned for a short moment, and they immediately exploded right after. Putting aside those that came from the prestigious Deity Sects, among the names listed, there were two of them who came out of Lightning Divine Tower. Among the various Deity Sects, their names were widely known. Even if they were to make mistakes, they should be dealt with within their own sects. What right did Lightning Divine Palace have to convict others? Furthermore, they even had to have their celestial bones removed and be banished to the mortal realm. How could they allow that to happen?

No, they could not agree to it at all.

The various sects clamoured exasperatedly, and they were not going to hand over the convicts at all costs. There were even voices declaring another massive attack on Lightning Divine Palace. However, the clamour did not last for long. When the various sects investigated, they realized the six people had all disappeared.

Everyone was dumbfounded, and only then did they recall that the heavenly voice did not request them to hand over the convicts at all. They made the move on their own. What shocked the people even more, was the fact that some of them had seen the six people right before the heavenly voice rang. However, after the declaration made by the heavenly voice, they disappeared. What did this prove? This proved that Lightning Divine Palace could mysteriously bring away six people at different locations in an instant, and without anyone noticing either. Such capabilities were simply out of the Deities' imagination.

The various sects began to feel a little afraid at that moment, and the thoughts of launching another attack on Lightning Divine Palace died down. Just like that, they made a ruckus for an entire day, and on noon of the second day, everyone headed towards Lightning Divine Palace while carrying different sentiments.

It wasn't for trouble this time. Rather, they wanted to see just how big this trouble was. Naturally, there were many who harboured intentions of taking this opportunity to snatch whoever they could. There were after all two people among them who were High Deities that had entered Lightning Divine Tower, how could the Deity Sects bear to let them go? After all, even if the heavenly voice said that the six people had committed murder, evidence of their acts were still needed. Lightning Divine Palace wouldn't possibly throw just anyone up onto the Divine Punishment Platform, right? The various Deity Sects had been in the Divine Realm for so many years, and each one of them had their own countermeasures. As long as they did not admit to their crimes, Lightning Divine Palace couldn't possibly do anything to them either.

Lightning Divine Palace was rather generous this time, as there was not the slightest bit of obstruction, and had even openly brought down their barrier, allowing Deities to enter and exit freely. However, the moment the crowd arrived at the so-called Divine Punishment Platform, all of them were dumbfounded. The rebuttals that they had spent an entire day preparing, had all been swallowed back into their bellies.

It's not because from witnessing the rumoured Divine Punishment Platform, but it was rather due to that white stone wall erected on the platform. It stood on the right of the platform, and six groups of videos were being played on loop on it. The main characters of the videos were the six people on the stage who had been binded like a dumpling with mystic arts. The videos that were being broadcasted were scenes of the six people murdering their victims and stealing their treasures.

The Deity Sects that were initially filled with confidence of getting back their disciples, instantly broke down. They silently looked for a corner to stand on, and acted like spectators among the crowd.

Other than the six convicts on the Divine Punishment Platform, a dozen other people were present as well. Other than a pink-robed woman at the back, the others were all people of Lightning Divine Palace that stood against them during the assault back then. Standing next to the woman was the person with immeasurable cultivation, who rained “dumplings” down onto the ground with just his power alone.

Strangely however, he was not the one in-charge, and the person standing at the center was instead the former Floor Master Yu Jin. Yu Jin did not seem to be in a good mood, as his expression was filled with bitterness. He was completely ignoring the increasing number of spectators, let alone giving them a warm welcome.

He raised his head and looked at the time. Right after, he solemnly said. “The time has come.” Then, with a wave of his sleeves, he straightforwardly pushed the six convicts to the center of the Divine Punishment Platform.

The six of them did not even have time to let out a scream when they disappeared without a trace. The auras of the six convicts had instantly been severed.

The Deities felt really conflicted.

“Why are you all still here?” Yu Jin’s tone was extremely venomous, as he swept a cold glance at the crowd. “Do you all wish to stay behind for lunch?”

The faces of the crowd stiffened. Those who rode on swords rode on swords, and those who rode on clouds rode on clouds, as every single one of them hurriedly left. The questions and suspicions that they had prepared for an entire day ended up stuck in their throats. Everything the heavenly voice had declared was true! Lightning Divine Palace really had a Divine Punishment Platform! Just by entering it, one would be sent into the recycling center. Furthermore, the heavenly might emitted from the platform could even leave the past Lightning Divine Tower to dust. It had to be



known that heavenly might would only appear in places that were heavily influenced by the Heavenly Dao, and since the Divine Punishment Platform possessed heavenly might, it proved that it was birthed from the Heavenly Dao. Since Lightning Divine Palace did not seek the opinions of the various sects and pulled out such a stunt, they must have comprehended bits of the heavenly path from it.

The Deities could go against the Lightning Divine Palace, but who had the ability to retaliate against the Heavenly Dao? Thus... The Divine Realm's second Lightning Divine Palace retaliation operation was once again declared a failure. From then on, the Deities understood that the prohibition was not a joke, and the number of deaths in the Divine Realm had a beeline drop. From that moment forth, the Divine Realm began to develop in a harmonious and beautiful direction.

Other than single person.

“Why me? Why is it still me? Why is it me again?” Yu Jin felt uncomfortable all over. The old ancestors of other sects were busy fighting to gain authority, but why was Lightning Divine Palace the exact opposite? “Why is Lightning Divine Palace still being managed by me? Even if we rank our aptitudes from top to bottom, or from bottom to top, I wouldn't even get a turn, right?” With a face filled with bitterness, he tugged onto the person next to him who had the highest seniority around here. “Old ancestor, you have already returned from the tower, and since we are all your disciples and grand disciples, this Floor Master position should be returned to you, right?”

The old ancestor stroked his beard with a smile, and then patted on his shoulders. “I say, Little Jin! Though I'm the oldest here, my cultivation isn't the highest. Furthermore, are you willing to see me continue working at my age?”

I'm willing!

“Also, it can be said to be fate that the Divine Punishment Platform appeared in our Lightning Divine Palace.” He said with a stern expression. “Furthermore, didn’t Little Yan and Little Yao explain to us? The heavenly path that they sensed was the reorganization of Divine Realm’s order. We Lightning Divine Palace are duty-bound to see it through.”

“What does whatever they sensed have to do with me?” Why am I executing everything? I want to cry so much.

Zhu Yao immediately turned around. “You’re our mighty and wise Floor Master, aren’t you? Who should we pass this important duty of protecting the Divine Realm to if not you?”

“Now that the tower is gone, why do I still have to a Floor Master?”

“Uh...” He made a lot of sense. “Why don’t we change the tile to... Platform Master?”

His expression turned darker. You’re the main character, your entire family is made of main characters!

“No, that can’t do. In any case, I’m done with being a Floor Master. Little Yanyan, the divine imprint is on your forehead, and you have the highest cultivation as well. No matter what, you should be the one taking this responsibility.” He switched targets and looked at Yu Yan, determined to not carry this burden. I want to escape, I want freedom, I want to live unrestrained.

“No, that can’t do!”

“Why?”

Yu Yan glanced at him, and coldly said. “Because you can’t beat me.”

“...” He was shot in the chest!

The hell, I really hate this type of people that goes according to facts.

“Then why not little little grand-disciple...”

“No, that can’t do!”

“Why?”

“Because you can’t beat my master.”

“...” The hell! This two husband and wife are bullying me!

“Master, let’s leave now! Otherwise, we won’t make it in time. They are about to close.” Zhu Yao pulled her master, and then turned and walked off.

“Mn.” Yu Yan nodded and held her hand in return.

Yu Jin was startled. “Wait a minute! Where are you two going?”

“Civil Affairs Bureau.”

Civil Affairs Bureau? What kind of Secret Realm is that?

Before he could even ask, the two had already completely disappeared.

---

Altering the Heavenly Dao was similar to changing the main engine of a game. Everything had to be changed. The Lightning Divine Tower had disappeared from the face of the Divine Realm, but there was now a Divine Punishment Platform that maintained order. However, the changes in the mortal realm could not be seen with the naked eyes.

Because of the closure of the Heavenly Doors, there was no longer anyone in the Three Realms who could breakthrough the Demigod stage and ascend. However, they slowly began to realize that after the Foundation stage, with every breakthrough, they had to face a heart-discovering trial. The content of the heart-discovering trial differed across people, and it usually came along with the lightning tribulations. There was only a single meaning behind this trial – do not forget your initial beliefs.

Other than that, with every improvement of a huge realm, the practitioners would also face a tribulation of karma, and they would all be absorbed into a karmic illusory realm. Those who conducted evil acts would receive the consequences of their actions in the illusory realms, and they would never be able to escape from the illusory realms. Instead, people with pure will and intentions who be able to clear the trial easily.

Furthermore, this trial was comparable to a heart demon, and could not be intervened in any way. Those who passed the trail would naturally grow further, while those who failed would easily lose their cultivation completely, with the worst case scenario being loss of life and entering the reincarnation wheel once more.

Cultivation reached an incredibly high level of difficulty for a short period of time. Practitioners labelled these two trials as the ‘cultivation of the heart’, and only by growing their state of mind together with their cultivation could they step into a higher cultivation realm.

Zhu Yao suddenly understood why Realmspirit decided to close all of the Heavenly Doors. If practitioners could hold fast to their beliefs and were unafraid of karma, then why would they be incapable of comprehending the path of ascension? The Heavenly Doors were indeed closed, but as long as one comprehended the path of ascension, then he could open the Door of Ascension himself. However, one would have to face more difficulties and spend even more time to study it, that’s all. This was especially so for the practitioners who were living in the era where the Heavenly Dao had just been updated.

However, time was something the current Three Realms had.

---

Modern era.

Two years later.

“Master, add two more dishes!” Zhu Yao put down her phone, turned to the kitchen and shouted. “Guoguo is coming over later for dinner.”

“Mn.” The person in the kitchen nodded.

Zhu Yao looked around. “Where’s Yue Ying? He was still here earlier.”

“Went out to buy soy sauce.” Yu Yan casually replied.

Zhu Yao was a little shocked that he took the initiative to buy soy sauce. He was making improvement. Back then when she first brought Yue Ying over to this world, probably because the environment was too foreign, he followed her around like her little tail like how he did when he was young. He was completely different from her master who had incredible curiosity and wanted to dismantle everything he saw.

However, two years had passed, and Yue Ying was much better now, and he could even go out on his own. She had all along known about Yue Ying’s problem, and had even thought of many solutions as well, but she was not a professional. There were, however, professionals in her world!

Back then when she decided to make a movement permit for him, she had considered this point. That’s why, when they arrived on this side, she brought him to a psychologist several times. She had even crammed tons of knowledge regarding psychology into her mind, before she was able to slowly alter Yue Ying’s extremely stubborn personality.

Though he still did not like to talk to others, at the very least, he was not entirely rejecting everything outside of his world. He was becoming more of an actual little brother. Even the empress of her family liked Yue Ying a lot, treating him like her own son. Though when it came to Zhu Yao, the empress gave her many cold shoulders, as though she was the one who was picked up from the streets instead.

Yue Ying's and Yu Yan's identification problem was solved by the manager on this side. With Guoguo's divine aid, he agreed without a single blink of his eyes. This proved how important it was to have a good homosexual buddy.

The matters over at the cultivation world were more or less solved. With Lightning Divine Palace being the legal authority of Divine Realm, the number of deaths had a beeline drop, and cases of murder and looting rarely appeared now. The number of opportunities for her master to make an appearance had decreased as well, and he had basically become the mascot-like existence in the Divine Realm. He would only show his face every once in a while when a stubborn convict were to appear. The number of fights in the Divine Realm reduced dramatically. Though there was no guarantee that these people who had gotten used to killing had truly changed for the better, at the very least, they were now behaving more like actual Deities.

Compared to her master, Yue Ying was walking on the path of an idol. Just as Realmspirit had warned, with the changes in the Heavenly Dao, when there was extreme kindness, there would be appearances of extreme evil as well. As the final boss monster of all Devils, Yue Ying had never appeared before a Devil, instead, he used the inheritance of devillish energy to directly imprint the existence of a Devil God in their minds. He thus became an existence to revere to, while at the same time he prevented the Devils from rebelling. It was similar to the bloodline inheritance of demonic beasts.

As for Zhu Yao, she was still running around the frontlines fixing bugs, and they were even bugs that Realmspirit had left behind back then. When she first started, dying from overwork was a legitimate concern of hers, and only recently did things finally calm down. It had been a long time since the system that checked for loopholes rang.

“Yaoyao.” A knocking sound could be heard from outside the

door.

“That quick?” She had just dropped the call, right? Zhu Yao immediately opened the door. “Guoguo, you...”

Before she could even finish, Guoguo had already walked in and pulled her into the house as well. Her brows were furrowed, looking a little angry.

“Yaoyao, I’m going to live here for a few days. I won’t be going back for a while.”

“Ah?” Zhu Yao was stunned. What’s this now? “Does that person in your house know about this?” It had to be known that the manager in her house was not someone to be messed with.

“Don’t bring him up already. I want some peace and quiet in your home for two days. I don’t want to see him.”

“You guys got into a fight?”

Guoguo glanced at her. “You think the two of us would even get into a fight?”

“Uh...” Indeed. The person in her house was a typical wife’s slave, and the type that was completely without any morals as well. The eyes that he had for Guoguo looked as if he would kneel down and lick her feet at any moment. “Then why?”

Guoguo picked up a cup of water from the coffee table and gulped it down. Zhu Yao casually filled it up for her once more, and then poured one for herself.

“He brought back a person.” Guoguo said with a strange expression.

Zhu Yao’s heart sank. “Male or female?”

She pondered for a moment, and after awhile, she said. “Female...”

“The hell, he’s cheating now?” Zhu Yao suddenly stood up. This old lady shall castrate him!

“No.” Guoguo’s expression turned even weirder. “He said... she was his child.”

“Ch... He was married in the past?”

“No.” Guoguo said with a stern expression. “What he meant was, that was ‘our’ child.”

Zhu Yao was stunned for a moment, and could not help but reach out to touch Guoguo’s belly. “You... When did you give birth?” Why wasn’t she aware of it? Yesterday, they still went to shop on the streets, and she actually did not see anything amiss at all.

Guoguo instantly slapped away her hand. “I’ve yet to give birth.”

“Then where did that child come from... Wait a minute!? Yet?” Zhu Yao suddenly widened her eyes. “You can’t be trying to tell me... that she’s your child from the future, right?”

“Mn.” She nodded. “I don’t know where he learnt the term ‘shotgun marriage’, but ever since then, he thinks that I will marry him once we have a child. Then...”

The hell! Such things are actually possible!? Guoguo was in the staying unmarried faction, and Zhu Yao knew of this point.

In order to chase after a wife, that person sure is putting out all the stops! Zhu Yao had to drink down a cup of water to calm her nerves.

However, when she thought about his identity, controlling time and seeing their future daughter might not be impossible after all.

“You don’t believe that she’s your child?”

“I do!” She nodded.

“Then why do you need to hide over at my place?”

The corner of her lips twitched. She turned around and carried out a round object from her bag, and then carefully presented it to Zhu Yao. “The main point here is... my child looks like this!”



Puuf...

Zhu Yao spat out a mouthful of warm water. “Kuh kuh... You... You gave birth to a ball!”

“No!” Guoguo shook her head, and explained with a stern face. “I wasn’t the one who gave birth to her, he gave birth to her.”

“...” Nani!? He was the one who gave birth!? He!? May I ask if it’s that ‘he’ without an ‘s’ in front?

Oh my god! Is this still the Earth that I’ve lived all my life in? I’m waiting online, I need an answer, quick!

\*\*\*\*

Zhu Yao felt like her mind was in a mess, and Yue Ying came back with a bottle of soy sauce in his hand at this moment. “Big sis...”

The moment his voice fell, the round ball that Guoguo was hugging suddenly flashed brightly white. It began to inflate at a speed visible to the naked eyes, and in a blink of an eye, it grew from the size of a rubber ball to that of a basketball. Pong! It bounced and then fell onto the ground.

“Baby!” Guoguo was frightened, and hurriedly held out her hands to grab it.

At the same time, Guoguo’s man appeared inside the house in a flash. Just as he was about to grab the ball, it did a turn and rolled towards Yue Ying. Pa. It bumped into his foot and stopped. Immediately after, crackling sounds could be heard. The ball actually split open! A white and tender little hand suddenly reached out and firmly tugged onto the corner of Yue Ying’s pants.

A small little head popped out from the ball’s interior, and she shouted crisply at Yue Ying. “Papa!”

Everyone present: “...” All of them turned to look at Guoguo.

Guoguo looked at the person next to her with narrow eyes. “What are you looking at? Aren’t you the one who gave birth to

the child?”

Manager: “...”

Zhu Yao: “...”

Yue Ying: “...”

Yu Yan: “Where’s the soy sauce?”

Why did it feel as if a storm was brewing...

(Story End)

T/N: And... we’re done! Hope you guys have enjoyed the story as much as I do! Though we don’t get to see what happened to the rest of Zhu Yao’s merry friends, I think that the story has wrapped up really nicely, compared to many other Xianxia or Xuanhuan novels that I’ve read. Well anyway, I will leave more of what I want to say in the afterword!

# Afterword

---

Hi everyone! It's been a long time since I started the series. According to my old blog, the first chapter of My Disciple Died Yet Again was posted on October 19, 2015. So it's been close to 3 years since I began. Though there has been many hiatuses here and there, I am glad that there are still many of you who managed to stick around for the entire journey. I really thank you all from the bottom of my heart! Strangely, I was most active while I was still in the army, and instead of an actual laptop or keyboard, I was typing away on this portable bluetooth microsoft keyboard while connected to Google Drive through my phone. This tells you how bored I was in there. Ohohoho.

Disciple isn't the first series that I started on, but it's the first series that I completed. There are definitely several issues that I could have addressed if I paid more attention, such as term consistency. I don't exactly have a full-blown glossary, because I'm lazy to make one. Huhu. Some of you have also sent me PMs wanting to edit for me in the past, but I declined, largely because I really wanted to try finishing something alone, and also I'm almost doing this for free, so I would feel bad if you edit for me and not get anything.

But yes, completing this translation project wouldn't have been possible without the help I received from my fellow friends over at the translators' discord, and also my real-life friends who supported me! I would like to especially give thanks to Solistia for adopting me into her web hosting server! There hasn't been a single downtime (I think?) ever since I moved over!

I would like to also extend my thanks to all the donors who donated to me! They really helped out a lot in funding my coffee breaks! I will be updating the donor page soon with all your names, so please let me know if you want to stay anonymous or anything!

Lastly, I would like to thank all of you readers out there that

stayed with me throughout this journey! Really! Every single one of you has been really supportive and friendly, and it's not an exaggeration to say that you guys are the reason why I continue to translate. I really appreciate all of you for pointing out the mistakes in the comments whenever you see them too! Though I try to make sure my grammar and everything is flawless, I would still make some mistakes every now and then. So really, thank you all!

Well, with that, this concludes my afterword for the series. Hope to see you all in the next series I do(?)~

# Table of Contents

[My Disciple Died Yet Again](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301: Please Give a Proper Croak](#)

[Chapter 302: A Radish in a Single Hole](#)

[Chapter 303: Even in Death, I Must be Beautiful](#)

[Chapter 304: Picking Up Beasts Everyday](#)

[Chapter 305: Towards Wandering City](#)

[Chapter 306: Practitioners' Great Tournament Reality TV](#)

[Chapter 307: Rising New Star](#)

[Chapter 308: Hua Lin, Don't Cry](#)

[Chapter 309: Run, Little Tyrant](#)

[Chapter 310: Hua Lin Sent a Friend Verification Notification](#)

[Chapter 311: Can the Gift be Converted to Cash?](#)

[Chapter 312: Suicide Attack](#)

[Chapter 313: Protect the Dandelions](#)

[Chapter 314: Victims' Delusional Stone](#)

[Chapter 315: You Should Have a Heart Demon Inside You](#)

[Chapter 316: Heart Demon Immunity Skill](#)

[Chapter 317: Removing the Bug of Righteousness](#)

[Chapter 318 Come One Come All, Let's Conduct a Meeting](#)

[Chapter 319: Truth Behind the Sect Massacre](#)

[Chapter 320: Villains Should Not Talk So Much Crap](#)

[Chapter 321: Don't Want to be a Good Girl](#)

[Chapter 322: Packing Up and Heading Home](#)

[Chapter 323: Forced Disconnection](#)

[Chapter 324: All-round Technical Support](#)

[Chapter 325: High-Level Scenario](#)

[Chapter 326: The Magical Brush](#)

[Chapter 327: A Clown That Could Topple Countries](#)

[Chapter 328: Female Lead's Night Assault](#)

[Chapter 329: Spewing All Over Your Face](#)

[Chapter 330: I Can Read](#)

[Chapter 331: Contracting the Spirit Guiding Beast](#)

[Chapter 332: Five Words Floated in the Air](#)

[Chapter 333: Cheat has Disconnected](#)

[Chapter 334: Let Me Conduct Some Research](#)  
[Chapter 335: Open \(the Path\) Sesame](#)  
[Chapter 336: All Roads Lead to the Female Lead](#)  
[Chapter 337: The Young Man Still Has Two Other Faces](#)  
[Chapter 338: Avatar Download Complete](#)  
[Chapter 339: A Godly Development Suddenly Unfolds](#)  
[Chapter 340: It's Time to Disconnect](#)  
[Chapter 341: Become One with the Darkness, Single Puppy](#)  
[Chapter 442: Awakening Notice](#)  
[Chapter 343: Curse of the FFF Inquisition](#)  
[Chapter 344: Stupider Than an Idiot](#)  
[Chapter 345: Barrierless Two-Way Switch](#)  
[Chapter 346: I Dare You to Try Being Impudent](#)  
[Chapter 347: Heaven or Hell, Look for My Disciple I Shall](#)  
[Chapter 348: The Hell is a Female Sword?](#)  
[Chapter 349: Let Me Quietly Get Zapped](#)  
[Chapter 350: I Have Just Hit Menopause, I Want Some Peace and Quiet](#)  
[Chapter 351: Floor Master's Dignity Recovery Plan](#)  
[Chapter 352: The Promised Blissful Life](#)  
[Chapter 353: The Worries of Beasties](#)  
[Chapter 354: Sesame is Trash](#)  
[Chapter 355: Realm Escaping Godly Artifact](#)  
[Chapter 356: Go and Seek Abuse, Young Man!](#)  
[Chapter 357: Let's Chat About Life](#)  
[Chapter 358: How to Abandon Delusion Treatment](#)  
[Chapter 359: Your Sister's a Life Artifact](#)  
[Chapter 360: Let's Clear the Tower Together, Young Maiden](#)  
[Chapter 361: The Biology Teacher Left Early](#)  
[Chapter 362: Look At My Pure and Clear Eyes](#)  
[Chapter 363: Don't Be Abstract, Be Realistic](#)  
[Chapter 364: Demonic Beast Raid Guide](#)  
[Chapter 365: Exorcism Squad](#)  
[Chapter 366: Poke the Demonic Beast For Show](#)  
[Chapter 367: The Three Levels of Bastard Aura](#)  
[Chapter 368: Meeting Another Mary Sue](#)  
[Chapter 369: Please Call Me Lei Feng](#)  
[Chapter 370: It's Definitely Not That Easy](#)  
[Chapter 371: Two-Person Instance](#)  
[Chapter 372: National Big Giveaway](#)

[Chapter 373: Evolved Heart Demon Tribulation](#)  
[Chapter 374: Please Speak Politely](#)  
[Chapter 375: This Sure is Fate](#)  
[Chapter 376: Don't Pull Aggro Off Tanks](#)  
[Chapter 377: The Truth Behind the Final Floor](#)  
[Chapter 378: The Fate of the Scheming Mary Sue](#)  
[Chapter 379: Realizing an Incredible Secret](#)  
[Chapter 380: I Want to Eat Your Brains](#)  
[Chapter 381: Second Battle – Cob Cannon](#)  
[Chapter 382: The Sunflower Welcoming Group](#)  
[Chapter 383: Friendly Visit to the Sunflower Country](#)  
[Chapter 384: Undefeatable Enemy](#)  
[Chapter 385: Ascend to Godhood, or Fall into Devilhood?](#)  
[Chapter 386: Lightning Divine Tower Ceases to Exist](#)  
[Chapter 387: Become a CEO](#)  
[Chapter 388: Realmspirit's Plans](#)  
[Chapter 389: A Very Mysterious Plane Management Office](#)  
[Chapter 390: The Manager of Guoguo's Home](#)  
[Chapter 391: Realmspirit's Return](#)  
[Chapter 392: Divine Realm Management Plan](#)  
[Chapter 393: The Final Finale](#)  
[Afterword](#)